

# Pearls of Wisdom - Year 1990

Inspired in

**Elizabeth Clare Prophet**

# Contents

1	Beloved Lord Maitreya - January 7, 1990	1
2	Beloved Gautama Buddha - January 14, 1990	11
3	Serapis Bey - January 21, 1990	19
4	The Messenger - January 28, 1990	29
5	The Messenger - February 4, 1990	39
6	The Messenger - February 11, 1990	47
7	The Messenger - February 18, 1990	67
8	The Messenger - February 25, 1990	79
9	The Messenger - March 4, 1990	99
10	The Messenger - March 11, 1990	115
11	The Messenger - March 18, 1990	121
12	The Messenger - March 25, 1990	137
13	Beloved El Morya - April 8, 1990	145
14	Beloved Lanello - April 15, 1990	155
15	Beloved Saint Germain - April 22, 1990	163
16	Beloved Jesus Christ - April 29, 1990	171
17	Beloved Gautama Buddha - May 6, 1990	179
18	Beloved Jesus Christ - May 13, 1990	185
19	The Beloved Maha Chohan - May 20, 1990	191

<b>20 Beloved Listening Angel - May 27, 1990</b>	<b>201</b>
20.1 The Messenger - May 27, 1990 . . . . .	204
<b>21 Beloved Queen of Light - June 3, 1990</b>	<b>207</b>
<b>22 Beloved Rose of Light - June 10, 1990</b>	<b>213</b>
<b>23 Beloved Mother Mary - June 17, 1990</b>	<b>219</b>
<b>24 John the Beloved - June 24, 1990</b>	<b>227</b>
<b>25 Beloved Theosophia, the Goddess of Wisdom - July 1, 1990</b>	<b>239</b>
25.1 I AM the Witness - July 1, 1990 . . . . .	247
<b>26 The Beloved God and Goddess Meru - July 8, 1990</b>	<b>249</b>
26.1 I AM the Witness - July 8, 1990 . . . . .	253
<b>27 Beloved Archangel Uriel and Aurora - July 15, 1990</b>	<b>255</b>
27.1 I AM the Witness - July 15, 1990 . . . . .	262
<b>28 Beloved Saint Germain and Portia - July 22, 1990</b>	<b>265</b>
28.1 I AM the Witness - July 22, 1990 . . . . .	272
<b>29 Beloved Ratnasambhava - July 29, 1990</b>	<b>275</b>
29.1 I AM the Witness - July 29, 1990 . . . . .	279
<b>30 Beloved Godfre and Lotus - August 5, 1990</b>	<b>283</b>
30.1 I AM the Witness - August 5, 1990 . . . . .	290
<b>31 The Beloved Goddess of Liberty - August 12, 1990</b>	<b>293</b>
31.1 I AM the Witness - August 12, 1990 . . . . .	299
<b>32 Beloved Oromasis and Diana - August 19, 1990</b>	<b>301</b>
32.1 I AM the Witness - August 19, 1990 . . . . .	307
<b>33 Beloved Jesus Christ - August 26, 1990</b>	<b>311</b>
33.1 I AM the Witness - August 26, 1990 . . . . .	315
<b>34 Beloved El Morya - September 2, 1990</b>	<b>319</b>
34.1 I AM the Witness - September 2, 1990 . . . . .	325
<b>35 Beloved El Morya - September 9, 1990</b>	<b>329</b>
35.1 I AM the Witness - September 9, 1990 . . . . .	336

<b>36 Beloved Mother Mary - September 16, 1990</b>	<b>337</b>
36.1 Novena to Beloved El Morya - September 16, 1990 . . . . .	345
36.2 I AM the Witness - September 16, 1990 . . . . .	347
<b>37 Beloved Cyclopea and Virginia - September 23, 1990</b>	<b>351</b>
<b>38 John the Beloved - September 30, 1990</b>	<b>357</b>
38.1 I AM the Witness - September 30, 1990 . . . . .	367
<b>39 Beloved Hilarion - October 7, 1990</b>	<b>369</b>
<b>40 Beloved Lady Master Venus - October 14, 1990</b>	<b>379</b>
<b>41 Beloved Mother Mary - October 21, 1990</b>	<b>387</b>
<b>42 Beloved Cyclopea - October 28, 1990</b>	<b>397</b>
42.1 I AM the Witness - October 28, 1990 . . . . .	401
<b>43 The Ascended Master Nicholas Roerich - November 11, 1990</b>	<b>403</b>
<b>44 Lady Master Leto - November 18, 1990</b>	<b>409</b>
44.1 I AM the Witness - November 18, 1990 . . . . .	415
<b>45 Beloved Jesus Christ - November 25, 1990</b>	<b>419</b>
<b>46 Beloved Lanello - December 2, 1990</b>	<b>429</b>
<b>47 Beloved Mother Mary - December 9, 1990</b>	<b>437</b>
47.1 I AM the Witness - December 9, 1990 . . . . .	443
<b>48 Beloved Jesus Christ - December 16, 1990</b>	<b>447</b>
48.1 I AM the Witness - December 16, 1990 . . . . .	454

# Chapter 1

## Beloved Lord Maitreya - January 7, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 1 - Beloved Lord Maitreya - January 7, 1990

A New Year's Retreat

I

Fearless Compassion and The Eternal Flame of Hope

My beloved hearts of Light, I embrace you each one and place upon your forehead the kiss of Cosmic Christ peace. May you find surcease from all outer turbulence in my Electronic Presence, which I joyously place upon you, O my beloved.

I come with a rejoicing heart and a heart of lamentation. I come with the whole world in my right eye; and in my right hand the fire of transmutation takes on the violet, the purple, the white fire, the secret-ray colors and the ruby of the Buddha of the Ruby Ray.

Therefore, let earth be passed through the right hand of the Cosmic Christ that I AM. And let every atom of the planetary body know the promise of Light that consumes Darkness, that does transcend it and that is the eternal Flame of Hope - hope for an opportunity lost that may be regained, hope eternal as the lily of the ascension flame of the blessed Mother Mary,<sup>1</sup> hope in the single shoe attached to the staff of Bodhidharma as he was seen making his way [to India] after his transition, hope in the other shoe that [was] the sole remains [found when they dug up] the grave where the body had been placed by his disciples.<sup>2</sup>

Bodhidharma did reincarnate again and again and did take his ascension in this century, beloved. Thus, there are many facets to Zen, many sides of Zen. [In subsequent incarnations prior to his ascension] Bodhidharma sowed the seeds of the teachings of the Cosmic Christ [that you now study] on the Cosmic Clock, which balance his original message.

Hope, beloved, springs eternal in the heart of the chela. I speak of hope, therefore, rather than regret. Thus my Messenger has passed the torch [to my staff] for the sealing of the 1984 volumes of the Pearls of Wisdom, containing many of my dictations and much of my teaching given through the Ascended Masters [on the path of personal Christhood] and that which comes down through the traditions of Buddhism.

Blessed hearts, I place my hope in the eternal Dharma, in the Teaching itself, that does live on as

---

<sup>1</sup>Tradition has it that when the disciples opened Mother Mary's tomb three days after her burial they found that her body was gone and the tomb was full of lilies and roses.

<sup>2</sup>According to one legend, a Chinese official came upon Bodhidharma (6th-century Indian missionary to China) in the mountains of Central Asia three years after his death. The master, carrying a staff from which hung a single sandal, told the official that he was returning to India. Upon hearing of this encounter, the monks in China opened Bodhidharma's tomb and, to their amazement, found it empty except for a sandal; thus Bodhidharma's immortality is assured in the traditions of Zen Buddhism, of which he is the acknowledged founder.

a thread which the Divine Mother does take, sewing as [with] needle and thread through the garment of each Bodhisattva. And therefore that thread, in and out, establishes the thread of contact as a mighty antahkarana [between] the Bodhisattvas and the Buddhas and the Christed ones.

All bow before the Light of the eternal Krishna of your heart. Thus, go not here and go not there, for the kingdom of God is within you.<sup>3</sup> Fear not to realize it, to face it, to become it. For there is a fear, beloved, that keeps individuals upon the planetary body seeking God outside of themselves and even neglecting to water the tree of life that is within. There is no fear in the perfect Love of the internal oneness of the soul in Christ.

Therefore, beloved, I place these books upon the altar of your heart. I pray that they will be upon the altar of the stupa<sup>4</sup> of the Buddha that you build, which name has been given to your shelters in the earth.

O how comforting is Mother Earth and the Buddhas in the heart of the earth! How comforted are the bodhisattvas in the very heart of Virgo and Pelleur. Therefore, beloved ones, in profound gratitude for this teaching I desire to infire by my own Word<sup>5</sup> the reading of a portion to you in this hour from the introduction to Book II.

Each of these introductions [to Books I and II] is approximately seventy-five pages. Every line and word is a teaching vast, and many new releases from El Morya as directed from our heart will give you details heretofore not released in the spoken or the written dictations. These teachings I give to you, beloved, as a flame of hope - as fiery, as tangible, as physical, as spiritual as the [candle] you hold [in this midnight vigil you keep with the Lord of the World].<sup>6</sup> These writings that came forth from my heart in that year [1984] and in many [past] years embody the Dharma - they embody the essence of the original flame of Sanat Kumara.

I pray, therefore, that you receive them as I in my heart, in the name of Lord Gautama Buddha, my brother Manjushri, my beloved Jesus Christ and Kuthumi, dedicate these volumes to the eternal flame of Sanat Kumara. [For his is] a flame of illumination that will kindle in you, awaken in you and enliven in you your eternal understanding of the Inner Buddha, the Inner Sangha, the Inner Dharma.

(Beloved hearts, the practicalities of our press time and our printing schedules are upon us. If therefore you will indicate to our staff whether you choose to have these books in the physical octave, we will be able to determine how many must be printed and published. This is most necessary that we may meet our schedules.)

Now, beloved, as an interlude in this dictation, I read to you from this gift of my heart as the gift of the Messenger and chelas who have all so lovingly assisted in its preparation. I read to you, beloved, in the heart of the Jeweled One.

Kindness, Fearless Compassion and Virya

Maitreya exemplifies the Bodhisattva's virtues of kindness, fearless compassion and virya, or vigor. As you will remember, the name Maitreya is derived from the Sanskrit word maitri, meaning "kindness" or "love." Some commentators also trace the word maitri to mitra, meaning "friend," and matr, which means "mother."

Maitri is one of the four brahma-viharas, or sublime states of mind, literally "Brahma-like, godlike or divine abodes." The other three brahma-viharas are karuna (compassion), mudita (limitless joy) and upeksha (equanimity).

Har Dayal, in his compendium on The Bodhisattva Doctrine in Buddhist Sanskrit Literature,

---

<sup>3</sup>Luke 17:20, 21.

<sup>4</sup>Stupa. See 1989 PoW, p. 645 n. 7.

<sup>5</sup>i.e., by the Word incarnate within me

<sup>6</sup>The members of the congregation were holding candles as they participated in this candlelight service.

notes that in Buddhist writings the quality of maitri is considered to be the opposite of malice:

[Maitri] is characterized by the desire to do good to others and to provide them with what is useful. . . . Maitri is regarded as a great power in the universe. It prompts a bodhisattva to hope, pray and wish for the welfare of others, without passion or expectation of reward. It can tame wild beasts and venomous serpents. It prevents and allays physical and mental pain and evil. It establishes peace and concord among mankind. . . . The perfect Buddhas can emit rays of maitri from their bodies, which are diffused [all] over the world and promote peace and joy everywhere.<sup>7</sup>

The diffused rays of maitri can be visualized coming from the heart chakra and from the threefold flame, which is sealed in the Eighth Ray chakra, the secret chamber of the heart. Call to your Holy Christ Self and to your Mighty I AM Presence to send forth powerful needlelike rays of Divine Love and Wisdom that reach all sentient life. True loving-kindness is indeed the perfect balance of Love/Wisdom crowned with Power, expressed as loving care toward the evolutions of God.

In the Buddhist text called the Milindapanha (or Milinda's Questions), King Milinda asks the learned monk Nagasena about the quality of maitri, translated here as "loving-kindness":

"Revered Nagasena, this too was said by the Lord: 'If the freedom of mind that is loving-kindness is practiced, developed, made much of, made a vehicle, made a basis, persisted in, become familiar with and well established, eleven advantages may be expected: one sleeps in comfort, wakes in comfort, dreams no evil dream, he is dear to human beings, dear to nonhuman beings, devatas guard him, fire, poison and weapons do not affect him, his mind is easily concentrated, the expression of his face is serene, he does his (karmic) time unconfused, and if he penetrates no higher (to arhatship than the attainment of loving-kindness) he reaches the Brahma-world<sup>8</sup> (on deceasing from this life).' But on the other hand you say: 'The boy Sama, a dweller in loving-kindness, was roaming about in a forest surrounded by a herd of deer when, on being pierced by a poisoned arrow shot by the king Piliyakka, he fell down fainting on that very spot.' . . .

[Nagasena replies,] "What was the reason for that? These (advantages resulting from developing loving-kindness), sire, are not a man's special qualities; these are special qualities due to developing loving-kindness. At the moment when the boy Sama, sire, was lifting up his pitcher of water he was neglectful of the development of loving-kindness. At the moment, sire, when a man is filled with loving-kindness neither fire nor poison nor weapons affect him, and when those who desire his woe approach him they do not see him, they have no chance over him. . . .

"It is wonderful, revered Nagasena, it is marvellous, revered Nagasena, how the development of loving-kindness is a warding off of all evil."

"The development of loving-kindness, sire, brings all special qualities of skill both for those (desiring) weal and for those (desiring) woe. The development of loving-kindness which is of great advantage should be communicated to all those beings who are bound to consciousness."<sup>9</sup>

Sangharakshita, a Buddhist monk and scholar, explains that in addition to wisdom and compassion the Bodhisattva ideal encompasses the quality of virya.

Despite the emphasis on compassion the Bodhisattva is no mere sentimentalist. Nor, for all his tenderness, is he an effeminate weakling. He is the Great Hero, the embodiment not only of wisdom and compassion, but also of virya, or vigour, a word which like the etymologically equivalent 'virility' signifies both energy and masculine potency. This aspect of the Bodhisattva's personality is prominent in the well-known Ahicchatra image of Maitreya, with its powerful torso, massive yet graceful limbs. . . . The right hand is raised palm facing outwards and fingers slightly curved in the

---

<sup>7</sup>Har Dayal, *The Bodhisattva Doctrine in Buddhist Sanskrit Literature* (1932; reprint, New York: Samuel Weiser, 1978), pp. 227, 228.

<sup>8</sup>Sanskrit, Brahma-loka: the highest of the seven higher worlds; the realm where Brahma dwells.

<sup>9</sup>I. B. Horner, trans., *Milinda's Questions*, vol. 1 (London: Luzac and Company, 1963), pp. 286, 287, 289.

symbolical gesture of bestowing fearlessness (abhaya-mudra).<sup>10</sup>

We learn from these teachings that compassion and loving-kindness, the bywords of the Bodhisattva, of necessity embody fearlessness. Saint Germain gave us his definition of fearless compassion in his April 16, 1988 dictation:

My emphasis as I tutor your souls is in the development of the heart as a fiery furnace, [a] vortex of transmutation, and a place where the threefold flame is balanced, [out of which] one can extend the borders of being and love to enfold so many who suffer.

Think upon these words of the Bodhisattva vow: fearless compassion! Ah, what a state of mind to be in perpetually! Fearlessness to give of the fount of one's being, to extend compassion instead of criticism and backbiting, to give such flood tides of love as to fill in the chinks and cracks of another's shortcomings.

Fearless compassion means one no longer fears to lose oneself or to loose oneself to become such a grid for the Light to pass through that the Infinite One never ceases to be the Compassionate One through you.<sup>11</sup>

Kuan Yin described fearless compassion as the epitome of a Bodhisattva's love in her dictation given July 1, 1988:

I will tell you what has impelled us to reach beyond our ability, and I speak of all the ascended hosts. It is because we saw a need so great and had such compassion for the one who had that need, and [we] saw that none other stood by to help that one, none other would come if we did not extend the hand. In that moment, beloved, Love itself supplied the intensity, the [sacred] fire whereby we could leap to the rescue, to the side of [one in distress], or enter some course of study [so] that we might become proficient in [the] knowledge that was needed.

This [response], then, this love that could forget itself and leap to save a life, this, beloved, was the opening for the great fire of the Holy Spirit to enter the heart, to dissolve recalcitrance there, to melt the impediments to those twelve petals [of the heart chakra] and their unique vibration, to take from us hardness of heart, physical encrustations, disease, fear, doubt, records of death. All of these could vanish in the ardor of service.<sup>12</sup>

Ardor is, in essence, another word for virya. In Buddhist teachings virya is one of the ten paramitas ("perfect virtues" or "highest perfections") that one must practice and perfect as a prerequisite to the attainment of Bodhisattvahood. Virya has been translated as "strength," "energy," "strenuousness," "manliness," "zeal," "courage," "power," "diligence," or "vigor." Har Dayal writes:

The Dhamma-sangani defines it thus: "The striving and onward effort, the exertion and endeavour, the zeal and ardour, the vigour and fortitude, the state of unfaltering effort, the state of sustained desire, the state of not putting down the yoke and the burden, the solid grip of the yoke and the burden, energy, right endeavour, this is virya." ...

Virya is often praised by the Mahayanist writers, and its fundamental importance is indicated in unequivocal terms. Enlightenment depends entirely on virya; where there is virya, there is bodhi. Virya is the chief and paramount cause of all the auspicious principles that are conducive to Enlightenment. It promotes a bodhisattva's material and spiritual well-being. It is far better to live only for a day with full virya than to vegetate without energy during a hundred years.<sup>13</sup>

Helena Roerich, who in the 1920s began releasing the teachings of El Morya through the Agni Yoga books, wrote of Maitreya and the path of the Bodhisattva. In her book Foundations of Buddhism

---

<sup>10</sup>Maha Sthavira Sangharakshita, *The Three Jewels: An Introduction to Buddhism* (1967; reprint, London: Windhorse Publications, 1977), pp. 170-71.

<sup>11</sup>Saint Germain, April 16, 1988, 1988 PoW, p. 404.

<sup>12</sup>Kuan Yin, July 1, 1988, 1988 PoW, p. 475.

<sup>13</sup>Dayal, *Bodhisattva Doctrine in Buddhist Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 216-17.



she presents a profile of the Bodhisattva and lists energy among his chief qualities:

What qualities must a Bodhisattva possess? In the Teaching of Gotama Buddha and in the Teaching of Bodhisattva Maitreya, given by him to Asanga according to tradition in the fourth century (Mahayana-Sutralankara), the maximum development of energy, courage, patience, constancy of striving, and fearlessness was underlined first of all. Energy is the basis of everything, for it alone contains all possibilities.

“Buddhas are eternally in action; immovability is unknown to them; like the eternal motion in space the actions of the Sons of Conquerors manifest themselves in the worlds.”

“Mighty, valiant, firm in his step, not rejecting the burden of an achievement for the General Good.”

“There are three joys of Bodhisattvas: the joy of giving, the joy of helping, and the joy of eternal perception. Patience always, in all, and everywhere. The Sons of Buddhas, the Sons of Conquerors, Bodhisattvas in their active compassion are Mothers to All-Existence.”<sup>14</sup>

This “active compassion” of the Bodhisattva, embracing both fearlessness and virya, finds its ultimate expression as forgiveness. It is impossible to extend compassion to someone if you have not first forgiven him for his transgressions. And in order to be charitable or forgiving, you need virya. If you don’t have strength, you have nothing to give - you don’t even have the energy to forgive. It takes strength to fulfill your own needs and then have something left over to give to others.

In Buddhism, the quality of forgiveness is an aspect of the paramita known as ksanti, which is translated as “patience,” “forbearance” or “endurance.” It is recorded in the Majjhima-Nikaya that Gautama Buddha instructed his monks to train themselves in this virtue:

When men speak evil of ye, thus must ye train yourselves: “Our heart shall be unwavering, no evil word will we send forth, but compassionate of other’s welfare will we abide, of kindly heart without resentment: and that man who thus speaks will we suffuse with thoughts accompanied by love, and so abide; and, making that our standpoint, we will suffuse the whole world with loving thoughts, far-reaching, wide-spreading, boundless, free from hate, free from ill-will, and so abide.” Thus, brethren, must ye train yourselves.<sup>15</sup>

Har Dayal, in his summary of the perfection of ksanti, says:

A bodhisattva knows that the Buddhas are “the ocean of forbearance”; gentle forbearance is their spiritual garment. He cultivates this virtue in its full perfection. He forgives others for all kinds of injury, insult, contumely, abuse and censure. He forgives them everywhere, in secret and in public. He forgives them at all times, in the forenoon, at noon and in the afternoon, by day and by night. He forgives them for what has been done in the past, for what is being done at present and for what will be done in the future. . . . He forgives all without exception, his friends, his enemies, and those who are neither.”<sup>16</sup>

For those who would espouse the path of the Bodhisattva, Saint Germain gave a profound teaching on the ritual of forgiveness and the danger of harboring resentment in his July 4, 1968 address:

In truth, when men understand the ritual of forgiveness and the ritual of honor, they will understand that as they reach out from their hearts to enfold one whom they meet with true and unbiased love, there flows from their hearts to that one an energy of upliftment that in contacting the receptive heart is raised exponentially into higher dimensions until, by the power of the square root, the cosmic cube glows within that energy and amplifies it by love. This positively charged energy then returns to the sender, assuring him that the blessings he will reap for the joy he has released to another will be a permanent part of his world forever. . . .

---

<sup>14</sup>Helena Roerich, *Foundations of Buddhism* (New York: Agni Yoga Society, 1971), pp. 141-42.

<sup>15</sup>Bhikshu Sangharakshita, *A Survey of Buddhism*, 5th ed. (Boulder, Co.: Shambhala, 1980), p. 434.

<sup>16</sup>Dayal, *Bodhisattva Doctrine in Buddhist Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 209-10.

We urge, then, upon all an understanding of the ritual of the heart. When an individual does some bit of harm to you, precious ones, whether it be mischievous or intentional, you who are the wise ones will immediately seize upon the opportunity to forgive him.

For when the essence of forgiveness is released from your heart, not only does it create a passion for freedom in the erring one but it intensifies remorse in his heart, thereby bringing him to the feet of his own divinity. Thus he is able once again to laugh at the wind and the wave and the seasons and the buffetings of life and understand that all is a chastening to unfold his soul's reality.

Do you see, then, gracious ones, that courtesy as an expression of forgiveness and affection between hearts is a spiritual activity that brings about great soul expansion, which is intended to bring every man from serfdom to a state of lordship where he is the master of his world?

Yet we sometimes look askance, even from our octave, at those individuals who have long been under our tutelage and our radiation who upon receipt of some trivial offense immediately begin to send out a vibration of great resentment against the one who performs this offense against their lifestreams.

Quite frequently there is a mounting of intense reactionary resentment; this creates a great karma for the student of Ascended Master law, who ought to know better. And through the rupture that is thereby created in the emotional body, there is a pressing in from the sinister force of disturbing vibrations that not only flow through the aura and lifestream of the one who has taken offense but also puncture the peace and harmony of the supposed offender.

Do you not see, then, by contrast what a gracious thing the ritual of forgiveness can be? And O how wonderful it would be if our students would truly understand the law of forgiveness! It is a sweet gift from the heart of God and one that people ought to welcome into their worlds so that they may freely give it to others, even as they have freely received it.

Whenever someone does something that is not to your liking, precious ones, this is your great opportunity. This is your opportunity to say, "I will use God's energy and love to erase one more blight upon the universe! I will see to it that the blackboard of life becomes a radiant screen of white perfection, and I will put my perfection-patterns into manifestation. For these patterns are from the Father, and I am the Son representing the Father and I must show forth Light and not Darkness."

Don't you think it a bit strange, gracious ones, that from time to time people insist upon doing just the opposite? With their mouths they attempt to draw near to God as they speak and prattle of brotherly love; but when the moment of testing comes they are the first ones to rise up and say, "Vengeance is mine!" What a mockery this makes of "pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father."<sup>17</sup>

Let us, then, seek not after lust or luster but let us seek after the perfectionment of life. The perfectionment of life lives within you. It is quite natural to draw light from within your heart and send it out into the world. This is the virtue that creates the seamless garment. Do you realize that your tube of light is the seamless garment of the Christ? Do you realize when you call forth from God the perfection of his light-radiance to surround you that you are weaving the seamless garment around yourself?

Precious ones, I want you all to understand tonight that the moment that you have in your thought and feeling world resentment against any individual or any group of individuals on earth, you are immediately sending forth through the qualification of your energy the substance which will create a boomerang that will bring to your doorstep a great deal of unhappiness.

You do not wish to reap the fruit of unhappiness, do you? Then I am certain you will understand that even if you do not always feel like forgiving, it is that discretion which is the better part, in fact the best part, of valor.

---

<sup>17</sup>James 1:27.

In his dictation of November 21, 1976, Lord Maitreya told us how the challenge to embody the virtue of loving-kindness motivated him on the Path:

I come to initiate the line of Bodhisattvas of the New Age. I come to inquire: Are there any among you who care enough for Terra to live and to love, and to live and to serve until this people held in the hand of God come into the center of the One? . . .

Here I AM and, startling as it may seem, I have always been with you, even in the darkest hours of your aloneness, even in the hour of your rejection of my presence when you have cried out, "Whither shall I flee from thy presence?" For you have known in your soul that although you would ascend to heaven or be in the depths of the underworld,<sup>18</sup> you would find Maitreya Buddha answering the call of Gautama Buddha, of Sanat Kumara. For long ago I took my vow:

I will not leave thee, O my God!

I will not leave thee, O my God!

And I saw my God imprisoned in flesh. I saw the Word imprisoned in hearts of stone. I saw my God interred in souls bound to the ways of the wicked. And I said again:

I will not leave thee, O my God!

I will tend that fire.

I will adore that flame.

And by and by some will aspire to be with me -

To be Maitreya.

And one day I sat, my head in my hand, deep in thought, and Lord Gautama said to me, "What are you thinking, my Son?" And I said, "My Father, can we win them with kindness and with love? Will they respond to Love?" And my Father said to me, "If you hold within your heart, my Son, the full orchestration of Love, 144,000 tones of Love, if you yourself will come to know Love, then, yes, you will win them with Love."

My heart leaped for joy. My Father had given to me the challenge to know Love, to be Love, not for the sake of mere love and loving Love, not for the sake of the mere bliss of the communion of Love, but for the salvation of souls, for the reaching out unto my God in humanity.<sup>19</sup>

Most blessed ones, I ask you to consider these [teachings as] components of the thousand-petaled lotus of my crown and of the rose of Light of my heart. I ask you to take them as though you would pluck them from my crown chakra and from my heart chakra this night and take them to your own chakras of wisdom and love.

Take them, beloved, ere this year end. Take them, beloved, and have them for the friend that you meet in the way of life. Messengers of heaven are friends. Messengers of hell are friends. For all bring lessons and opportunities for virya, for the release of sacred fire, divine love, transmutation, forgiveness.

Blessed hearts, I ask you to enter this year in the full majesty of that fearless compassion, [whose definition] comes down to the point of forgiveness. Forgiveness is that which will erase the record untoward, soften the recalcitrance of hardness of heart, of arthritis and diseases of the bones, even the calcification of the brain.

Understand that forgiveness is needed; [it is needful] that it arise out of the fount of your soul in this hour in such a concentrate of mercy's ray that it may contact and reach all who have ever wronged you in the way. Blessed hearts, the Lord of Love, the Lord of Mercy and Compassion

---

<sup>18</sup>Ps. 139:7, 8.

<sup>19</sup>Elizabeth Clare Prophet, Introduction II, "The Path of the Bodhisattva: The Historical Maitreya," in 1984 PoW, Book II, pp. 3-13.

may then greet you in the first day of the year to bring you that forgiveness of your wrongs that you need so much but [that] is withheld [from you by the Great Law for] your own withholding [of forgiveness from those who have wronged you]. Blessed ones, this withholding is even as [a] record in the unconscious, as [a] component of the dweller-on-the-threshold, as [a] record in the electronic belt and the subconscious.

Therefore, as you meditate upon Beethoven's "Ode to Joy," I ask you to pray fervently and to draw from your I AM Presence and Holy Christ Self and your threefold flame all of the forgiveness that you can draw forth. Send it to all, beloved, all, I say, who have ever wronged you. Send it also to all whom you have wronged. Therefore [at this dawn of the final decade of the centuries], let the scales be better balanced as much as the Law will allow. Let it be done now as you pray softly while this music is playing.

[Meditation music, "Ode to Joy" from Beethoven's Ninth Symphony, played while congregation prays softly.]

In the internal sounding of the Word, I AM Maitreya, I AM Buddha, I AM Mother. I stand betwixt time and space, the Master of both. Yet I abide in neither but I abide in the heart of the chela and in the stupa of the Buddha.

I come out of the Tushita heaven, where I have been discoursing this night with Bodhisattvas who have attained to that level of God Self-mastery and enlightenment [that is required of those who abide in this realm]. When you attain to that level, beloved, you may also go there; for this is a plane of heaven that is reserved for those having [the Bodhisattva attainment] or greater.

Thus, in many art forms you will see depicted the Buddha surrounded by many Bodhisattvas [abiding] in this [Tushita] heaven. These blessed unascended ones look to the day of my coming in the earth when they may reincarnate with me to be messengers of the Dharma of the New Age. They are filled with wonder that intimations of this Dharma and full cups of it are given through the dictations of the Ascended Masters through the Messengers, that those in embodiment who are also on the path of the Bodhisattva may be forerunners and indeed anchor the new age of Aquarius for our coming.

I am here, beloved, in the fullness of the Coming Buddha who has indeed come. But I may one day come with my Bodhisattvas to a certain level of incarnation if there shall be a golden age upon earth. Thus, many sweet smiling faces of these blessed ones look upon you as their point of hope for fulfillment of the long-awaited dream. It is their Dharma to embody, beloved, whether or not I do; for they must fulfill their path of the ascension and [in the process] become teachers of the Dharma.

Thus they think [to themselves] on such a night as this when cycles turn with [the] intensity [of the new decade upon us] that perhaps they may be the grandchildren - the great, great, great, great grandchildren - of yourselves; and thus you, as Ascended Masters, or [as] unascended masters, may one day be smiling down upon them from the Tushita heaven, [you yourselves] once again awaiting your turn to finish your work upon earth in an advanced age of enlightenment.

There is therefore, beloved, a blessed opportunity at hand; and I for one perceive my opportunity to be as near to the physical octave as the Great Law does allow. Thus I descend to the etheric level. I shall come and go at that level and you may see me if you prepare the physical and the spiritual vessels for that inner perception. I will not hide from you, but your vision must be able to penetrate the etheric octave. Remember that your responses to the Light come with many forms of perception - the sensing of the heart, the tangible vibration, the sense of the nearness [of our bands], the capturing of our glance in the snowflake, the flower, the blade of grass, or Venus smiling at you each evening.

I come, therefore, to assure you that I am with you. I assure you that [it was upon my request that] the Chief of the Darjeeling Council of the Great White Brotherhood, who does represent me in so many key ways as Guru [before this Community], put forth the very serious recommendation that

your preparedness be full on this day and date. Thus through the Messenger he has sent a [message] to members of our staff [requiring them] to report back to the Messenger and to the students [in the outer Community what is] their progress in preparedness.

This has become necessary [because] many have not heeded the word to be fully prepared by this date. I assure you that if you could see El Morya in this moment you would see him moving about this Community with his own clipboard and pad taking notes here and there and everywhere, very concerned that chelas have understood neither the testing of this path of chelaship nor the equation at hand. Therefore the Chief is most pleased that the Actions Speak Louder than Words lecture is now available to you to study and to multiply as the All-Seeing Eye of God upon the issues of our time.

Blessed ones, make no mistake, the Guru El Morya, who does represent me to yourselves in this Community by his additional sponsorship, has given you a true assignment of chelaship. You must look at it as the assignment of Marpa to Milarepa<sup>20</sup> and be done with it. You must take [your preparedness] as an initiation on the path of your own Bodhisattvahood and cease the delay and cease being confounded as to the reasons why[, according] to your own private analysis of the world situation, [the prophecies will or will not come to pass].

There comes a time in the life of a chela when his desire for self-mastery and his love of the Guru El Morya must supersede his sense of superiority [in matters of judgment] and when the sincere one on the Path [must] simply take up the work of the Guru and say, "I must work the works of him that sent me."<sup>21</sup>

Now, beloved, if you do not know by now who has sent you, I pity you and I say, God pity you. For in this hour it is indeed El Morya who has placed himself on the line to shorten the distance between the chelas of the Cosmic Christ and my heart. Therefore I am forever indebted to El Morya and stand by him in this effort, as does every member of the Darjeeling Council.

The beloved El Morya will therefore speak to you on the first day of the year, and coming with him on the morrow is Serapis Bey. May you hear these Great Adepts, who [each] have a tremendous Causal Body and an inner attainment far beyond that which would be required to occupy [the position of] Guru [to] yourselves. In other words, beloved ones, your chelaship may not merit these two [Great Adepts; nevertheless] they come in their great Light. For they have the compassionate heart and the fearless compassion that is maitri, that is forgiveness.

Thus I trust that those of you who have received Morya's representatives, sent at his behest and the behest of the Messenger, have not taken offense in them but have welcomed them in the offices under which they are sent. [For we have also said,] "If the messenger be an ant, heed him." Do not spurn him but rejoice. For the hour has come when the cycles must be known by the builders and by the occupants, and all must strive together as a team of Light to the completion of this task. We have said many times, a word to the wise is sufficient. Either the word has not been sufficient to the wise, else those who have received our word are not the wise.

Blessed hearts, I trust that you are the wise ones or that you shall swiftly become them. And therefore understand the very depth of our love, the very depth of our reason for being, the very depth of nirvana itself, out of which we have come, to which state we have returned again and again, now serving in the world close at hand, now retreating to those inner planes to hold the balance for you, beloved, or perhaps for our twin flames or chelas of long ago who are yet in the field to earn their karmic potential that we might once again take them on.

---

<sup>20</sup>For the Messenger's teaching on Milarepa, his assignments and initiations from his guru, Marpa, see Elizabeth Clare Prophet, November 6, 1988, "The Path of the Bodhisattva: The Guru-Chela Relationship: Marpa and Milarepa," on three 90-min. audiocassettes, A88142. See also W. Y. Evans-Wentz, ed., *Tibet's Great Yogi, Milarepa: A Biography from the Tibetan*, 2d ed. (New York: Oxford University Press, 1951), available through Summit University Press.

<sup>21</sup>John 9:4; 4:34; 5:30, 36; 17:4.

I therefore acquaint you now with the thousand-petaled lotus of forgiveness. May you understand that the study of mercy is a deep study. To know mercy one must know God. To know the incarnation of the mercy of God go to the Avalokitesvara/Kuan Yin. See the fierceness of her mercy. See how mercy does become, upon contact with the aura of the individual, precisely the individual's quality of mercy, whether there be lack or largess of that mercy flame.

Mercy is as mercy does. Mercy is the great teacher that does teach the individual how little gain there is from the paucity of mercy. Mercy is the vastness of a cosmos with all of the creation having itself come forth to give to child-man the merciful opportunity to become God.

There are cycles of the going forth of mercy as opportunity and there are cycles when that merciful opportunity returns to the heart of God, as God does take mercy unto himself and is merciful unto himself. Thus the great in-breath of mercy, beloved, results in the canceling out of the nonmerciful, the unmerciful denial of God's mercy. May you think upon these things. May you still the mind in the full activity of the labor [so] that on another track you may contemplate the Infinite One.

I am Maitreya, true to my vow to be in the earth in the Mystery School. I shall not leave this place so long as a single Bodhisattva remains an adequate chalice for my coming. This heart of this Messenger is truly the heart of the Bodhisattva. Thus may you become your own Bodhisattva to assure that the cup of flame is always lit on Terra. May the chain of mercy never end. Thus there shall always be a Bodhisattva in embodiment.

I now bow before the Lord of the World Gautama, who does approach to address you.

This dictation by Lord Maitreya was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on New Year's Eve, December 31, 1989, 10:30-11:34 p.m. MST, during the six-day conference A New Year's Retreat held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. In the service prior to the dictation, the Messenger read Isaiah 66. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Lord Maitreya's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

## Chapter 2

# Beloved Gautama Buddha - January 14, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 2 - Beloved Gautama Buddha - January 14, 1990

A New Year's Retreat

II

The Resurrection May Not Be Postponed

“Save the Soul and Seal the Self in God”

The Thoughtform for the Decade of the 1990s:

A Multidimensional Map of Planet Earth

The veil in the temple is drawn. Thus, the profane may no longer look upon the Holy of holies.

I, Gautama, come for the sealing of a decade and a century and many centuries of opportunity. I come in the hour when resurrection's fires can no longer be withheld: the power of the resurrection [flame can no longer be withheld from the planetary body], beloved. And [the effect of] this flame upon the environment where it descends may be comparable to the energy released in the splitting of the atom.

By resurrection's flame not only was the stone rolled away but, beloved, boulders were cleaved asunder, the mountains moved, the thunder and the lightning descended; and that which was mortal was set aside as Jesus walked the earth to complete his life span and service, fully the embodiment of the Spirit of the Resurrection. The blessed one, as the Son of man, did demonstrate what must be demonstrated [by the evolutions of] the planet in this hour.

Thus, beloved, [know that] such unpreparedness [as you see on the part of the vast majority of the people of earth] for the resurrection experience may itself be the cause of cataclysm or war or turmoil or disease outcropping when resurrection's fires [are released]. Understand that the nonpreparedness of a humanity at the conclusion of 25,800 years of cycles of the coming of the Buddhas and the Bodhisattvas must now be dealt with.<sup>1</sup>

It is not that calamity may not be postponed. It is that the resurrection may not be postponed! And the Second Coming of Maitreya and of Jesus Christ will be in the hearts of all.

Blessed ones, the resurrection cannot save that which does not present itself [vibrationally] as the equivalency of the resurrection. You must provide the negative polarity, the Omega, [for the

---

<sup>1</sup>Elizabeth Clare Prophet, May 21, 1989, “Prophecy for the 1990s III,” 1989 PoW; and 1989 PoW, pp. 411, 414, 468-69, 509-10, 617.

positive polarity, the Alpha,] of the resurrection flame and thus you will be fused to Christ when that resurrection fire does descend.

The Lord God has said that those who are to be saved must be sealed. But lest you think that the ritual of the sealing of the servants of God in their foreheads with the Emerald Matrix through the right hand of the Messenger can be the fullness of the sealing, I come to speak to you now of the self-sealing. You must have the sealing of the self, beloved, so that you may receive the sealing that comes by the Seventh Ray, by the ray of Saint Germain through that Emerald Matrix.

I give you, then, until the morrow to truly seal the self by innermost devotion as you seek to become your Christ, [and by prayer to the Holy Spirit who “itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered,” as Paul said].<sup>2</sup> Seal yourself with the right hand upon the forehead and upon the crown [chakra] and the heart. Seal the body as the bidding place of the Lord Christ. Invoke resurrection’s fire, beloved, which will only come to those who have forgiveness [for themselves as well as for their fellow servants in Christ].

Thus, the beginning and the ending of the mission of the Lord - the forgiveness of the waters of the human consciousness till they become the wine of the Spirit and the spiritual consciousness<sup>3</sup> - must be that “this mortal must put on immortality, this corruptible must put on incorruption.”<sup>4</sup>

Therefore in the cycle of the night and the day may you come to the point of embracing the Spirit of the Resurrection by fearlessness flame . . . fearlessness flame . . . fearlessness flame: the very presence of Divine Love. Divine Love will embrace the Spirit of the Resurrection, that great being of God from the Central Sun who may seal you if you first seal yourself.

I give you, then, the two most dangerous points [of vulnerability] on the path of initiation. The [first is the soul] being out of alignment with the will and the law of God on the four o’clock line - and with God as Love, as Wisdom, as Power. [The initiations of the flame of God-Obedience charted on this line in polarity with the flame of God-Vision on the ten o’clock line] involve the use of the All-Seeing Eye of God to behold the Divine Lawgiver and to embrace Him. [It is spiritual blindness caused by selfishness, self-love and self-pity (charted on the ten o’clock line) that produces] the out-of-alignment state with my heart as I also sit on [the four o’clock] line waiting, waiting for you to come into my heart of Taurus.

I AM the Buddha, with Godfre, keeping this flame for you, beloved. Do not circumvent this [10/4 axis] any longer. By the violation of the All-Seeing Eye of God through the ignorance, [or the ignoring,] of the Law - by your failure to study it or by your defiance of the Law, having knowledge of it yet going against it - you may still lose everything though you feel quite safe and content in our Western Shamballa. This, then, must needs be corrected.

Blessed hearts, I pray you will seek Cyclopea’s All-Seeing Eye of God to correct misconceptions, misstatements, misalignments. Give Cyclopea a twenty-four-hour cycle to answer a round of decrees to that mighty Elohim of the Fifth Ray to enlighten you, to correct your vision that you might see what you should see. Each time you decide to cross the line of the Law [of Love], beloved, give a round of Cyclopeas and see what you see in twenty-four hours before deciding to go ahead with your ill-conceived plans that may seem so right in the moment.

Now, beloved, the second [point] of vulnerability by which you may also lose all is the eleven o’clock line. Whereas God-Obedience is the key that unlocks the Western Shamballa, so that flame of God-Victory (charted on the eleven o’clock line) does unlock the door to the Retreat of the Divine Mother. [For the Divine Mother] does not receive anyone, no matter what their supposed standing in life, who yet retains the momentums of resentment or the need for revenge or retaliation and their corollary, that despicable state of [self-]ignorance which sinks into envy and jealousy [for want of

---

<sup>2</sup>Rom. 8:26.

<sup>3</sup>John 2:1-11.

<sup>4</sup>I Cor. 15:53.



that self-knowledge in Christ which knows that all things are possible in God to the one who knows himself as the manifestation of God].

Have you known the story, then, of the ancient teacher [Bodhidharma] who when he [had transmitted the patriarchship of his lineage to] the best of all his followers, his chief disciple and exponent of the Law, was on the morrow poisoned by another disciple who was jealous of that appointment? Think of that, beloved! Think of such a karma [for the slaying of the Guru,] which comes from the poison of ignorance - [the ignorance that does not see that if one upholds the Teacher today,] one may be on the morrow the chosen one.<sup>5</sup>

Now, forgiveness has much to do with the correction of the misuses of the brightest flames of God-Victory and God-Obedience, forgiving oneself on the one hand for one's out-of-alignment state [and, on the other hand], forgiving God for one's plight [of non-victory - being willing to admit that one is always] the victim of one's own free will and karma, [rather than blaming another, even God, for one's shortcomings].

Forgiveness [invoked for the transmutation of all misqualified energy] on the four o'clock line, beloved, is such a tremendous gift; for on this line you send intense violet rays of mercy to all the transgressors, to all the enemies, to all the fallen ones, and suddenly they are cut from you as the sword of the Buddha cuts the rope that has bound you to them by [your own] nonforgiveness of self and others and [your own] out-of-alignment state.

Beloved ones, I have shown this action to the Messenger during your prayers for forgiveness unto others. [I have shown her how] the Bodhisattvas of Maitreya and his angels have taken their curved swords and cut the ropes, cut your ties to the fallen ones who have wronged you. But you have truly paved the way [for this activity of mercy] by sending such intense and all-consuming mercy from your heart [to all who have ever wronged you]. When the rope is cut, beloved, they fall into the abyss of their own unmerciful hearts.

Thus, you see, by [tricking you into] feeding that momentum of the misqualification of the eleven o'clock line, feeding the sense of resentment, deep-seated, for wrongs that others have committed against you, the fallen ones have tricked you into remaining tied to them, [so that you are] continually burdened by these records, continually revolving what might have been had someone not done this or that to you.

Many cords are cut. Continue to make the call; for we would see you fly as the bird of mercy's flame.

Blessed hearts, forgive your Holy Christ Self for being intolerant of your dweller-on-the-threshold and forgive the Messenger for being the perpetual challenger of that dweller. You would do well [to do this], beloved, for by forgiving your Christ Self and the Messenger you would then find in your life the full momentum of [both your Christ Self and the Messenger] to assist you in so many ways.

Do not put giant rubber tubes around yourself to distance yourself and protect yourself from the deliverer but take the part of the deliverer yourself! Defend the deliverer, your Holy Christ Self. Defend the Messenger's right to challenge your not-self. And you will find that working together with both, you shall defeat that adversary and be O so glad that you did!

Thus you see, beloved, it is most amusing, but not always so, that the Guru is found in the position of having to declare war and to fight not only against the dweller but against the individual himself who refuses to take the side of the deliverer. Thus, two wars are being eternally waged by those who come with the flame of the Saviour: the war to rescue the soul from the darkest self and the war against the carnal mind or perhaps the intellect that does rather champion the dweller than the soul.

Thus it does seem at times a thankless task. But, beloved ones, we have seen this for long, long

---

<sup>5</sup>Gen. 4:1-15.

centuries. We have come to be grateful for small gifts and inches of progress as long as those inches are retained.

We pray that you consider [1990 to be] a year of Maitreya and of Maitreya's coming into your temple and into your life. Maitreya, being the representative of the Cosmic Christ, beloved, comes for no less purpose than to slay the anti-Cosmic Christ. Thus, you see, Armageddon does extend across planetary systems and even galaxies.

Expect no hilarious reception from the world and do not be shocked, dismayed, saddened or pulled this way and that emotionally at the world's reactions [to your activities]. They will mock while they have mockery to vent, while they have a press they are in control of or [the media networks or] other areas of [communication]. Do not be amazed. Be amused and move on. They have their day. And such small satisfaction do they derive, can anyone derive, from sarcasm, from mockery of another's religion or the prophets in the land.

"What is that to thee? Follow thou me."<sup>6</sup> It is all foreknown. They must play their parts. [They must exercise their free will. But in the end they will pay the piper.] And as they squeak out their final attempt to ridicule the Lord within you, know that for some it is the last gasp that they can muster. Such a minor manifestation, beloved. To think that for this they sell their souls and have done so for so long, for these meager titillations, as they have [their day<sup>7</sup> and] their chuckles.

Precious ones, no one who is real in God would exchange for Divine Reality in eternity such a paltry nothingness as that which marches across the type of the newspapers of the world [in place of Truth]. We have better things to talk about this night, and may you also have better things to think about and to lend the energies of your feeling worlds to as you come across such manifestations.

May you not be bruised or hurt, painful as it is to be opposed continually by representatives of the so-called government of the area. They take their stabs as well but your hearts are untouchable. Your hearts are untouchable, beloved! For the hour has struck and you must move on.

[Forgive seventy times seven, then, and be comforted by the counsel of the apostle Paul:

Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.

For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.]<sup>8</sup>

I say, then, O thou glorious one from out the Great Central Sun,<sup>9</sup> I AM come for the opening of the era of the resurrection and the chemicalization of a world. May all understand that this has taken place before and that it will take place again. And our goal is that with each round there might be a subtle gradation of increase of Light and that the graduates from earth's schoolroom might now achieve their victory in a cycle that is determinately for that victory.

Blessed hearts, I tell you there is not one among you who has not been waiting for thousands upon thousands of years for the opportunity that is at hand to enter the resurrection spiral; [it is] an opportunity that you have not had for a long, long time. This opportunity was renewed in the physical octave with the coming of Jesus Christ, with Maitreya as his Guru and sponsor.

Therefore, beloved, [what a joy it is] to know that the blessed one, Jesus, did walk the earth in the resurrection flame from the hour when he did quit the area of Palestine, did take his leave for other assignments and ultimately did finish out that beautiful life on earth at the age of eighty-one in the power of the nine and the nine-times-nine and the three-times-three. Such a beautiful fulfillment,

---

<sup>6</sup>John 21:22.

<sup>7</sup>Luke 22:53.

<sup>8</sup>Gal. 6:7-9.

<sup>9</sup>referred to as the Spirit of the Resurrection

beloved! All of these years the earth received the anchoring [of his resurrection flame] through the mountain chains and the waters, through the fastnesses of the Himalayas.

Thus, the Lord and the Saviour did fulfill all things, even the fullness of the law of the resurrection, that you might follow in his footsteps. Thus did the blessed one abide in Kashmir. Thus did the blessed one ascend from the very heart of Shamballa.

Know this, beloved, unto every one of you is given this opportunity. Yet [is it not surprising that] those of you who have had this Teaching for many years have not understood the threading of the eye of the needle by forgiveness flame, by resurrection's flame and all in between that it takes to arrive at this goal of the mastery [of the self]? Thus, though the Teaching be present and the Path be made plain and the heart be desirous, you have in some instances left off of the very first principles of the resolution of your soul with your Christ Self, of the resolution of your soul with all others. Are these [first steps] not the very [rudiments] of the Path?

Some of you think you have this resolution, beloved, but I see the eyes that lack the luster of a fiery Christhood, [the tell-tale sign] of a Light squandered, of a spiritual pride that begets spiritual blindness. [Thus blinded as to the causes of the poor plight of the lesser self,] you do not see how the denial of love for the brother, for the sister, for the Teacher, for all things [of the Creation by Elohim] is depriving you of fulfilling this victory.

Now take to heart my words and seek to seal yourselves this night. For I would send to you on the morrow once again, and for a final once again, beloved, the opportunity for the physical sealing of the third eye by the Emerald Matrix. This will be the conclusion of New Year's Day following the dictations of El Morya and Serapis Bey.

Thus, those who seal themselves will receive a sealing, a true sealing that is for the saving of their souls. But, that it accomplish the saving of the soul, each one must also save his own soul. Thus, you have two assignments: save the soul and seal the self in God, in Love. May you take this cycle of hours as though it were 25,800 years and compress into it your absolute love, your uncompromising love, for your God; and through that love, melt away, simply melt away any residual nonforgiveness or resentment toward any part of life, beginning with yourself, extending to your past lives, to all parents, authority figures, teachers, until you reach the point [on the track of time] when you did not forgive Maitreya, when you began to resent him and therefore began to set up your justification for the rejection of Maitreya and the Mystery School. Thus, beloved ones, it is usual that when the individual leaves off [the service of] such a one as Maitreya or a real and living Guru, one begins to stack up the reasons why that one is not fit to hold that office and that mantle.

You have come full circle, beloved. To forgive Maitreya you must forgive yourself. To forgive yourself you must forgive Maitreya. For the law of cosmos is binding and that law says that where you have left off [the service] of the true and living Guru in any life whatsoever, when you come to the place that you desire to take up the Path again you must go back to the feet of that Christed One, take those lessons again, confess that Christ lives in that temple and thereby immediately know that the Christ-potential also lives in you.

To deny the Christ in any part of life, as you know, results in the vacating of your own temple by that Christ. Thus, even to deny [the Christ of] these little ones, the children in your midst or anyone, one who may not even have the measure of a chela, let alone the Guru, is to stop one's path completely.<sup>10</sup>

Many who imagine, therefore, that they make progress [on the Path] do not. And the stumbling block [is still there lying on the road at] an ancient point in time. And all things have ceased to evolve, though one may give the appearance of having accrued to oneself intellectual accomplishments, success and many lessons learned by the bitter path of experience, of karma and the exercise of free will; yet always [these are routes taken] in the avoidance of the shortest distance between two points,

---

<sup>10</sup>Matt. 10:32, 33; 18:5-7, 10; Mark 9:42; Luke 12:8, 9.

which is the Guru-chela relationship.

Blessed ones, there is no time left. Therefore, we create out of the cycle from this moment to the morrow an eternity for you, for your own inner reckoning. May you take it and truly come to the point of true inner resolution by Love that casts out all fear, fear to be close, so very close, to one's God - [for fear] that one's God will consume that cherished unreality of the unreal self.

To be unafraid of this process is truly the first step [on the Path]. Whether of Zen, whether of the thought of Confucius or Lao-tzu, whatever the path, beloved, fearlessness, fearlessness as Divine Love, must give way to the fullness of mercy's flame.

Be merciful unto your God. Let your God consume [the unmerciful self]. Let your God perform the surgery that you will never [be able to] perform upon yourself in a million years. Let your God perform it as you would submit to the best surgeon in the world if you were told on the morrow that you had a cancer and in order to live you must part with some precious portion of your own flesh. Sometimes it is necessary to excise something of the self, [whether of the body, the mind or the spirit,] in order to move on in the cycles of the renewal of everlasting Life.<sup>11</sup>

Blessed ones, a being of Light from the Central Sun does deliver to me the thoughtform for the year 1990. It is the thoughtform not only for this year but for this decade and some cycles beyond.

This thoughtform, beloved, is truly a cosmic masterpiece! For this being does unveil something that there are not words in the English language to describe. It is a device, shall we say, that does illustrate in three and four dimensions, through a great sphere, every step of transformation through which the earth body and its evolutions must pass in order to come to the New Day when the resurrection flame may once again be the option of the embodied Lightbearers.

Blessed ones, increment by increment of change may be dialed on this great sphere that is a many-dimensional map of the earth body, showing the earth from the very center to extended levels of the atmosphere and beyond into that space that is around the planet. Thus, by using this very complex computer, if you would call it that, you may dial to the present moment, to any month or day of the year of this period and see what the Light requires as transmutation, as transfiguration, as change and see how the earth does respond to that step-up and what, then, may be the consequences.

Since the element of free will is at hand, one can see what would be the difference if certain percentages of the lifewaves of earth did embody the flames of God, how this would make the difference in what would transpire or what would be the power of chemicalization and the abruptness or the smoothness [of the process]. Therefore you may dial in the consequences of many choices [and know by a projection into the future exactly what the consequences of humanity's exercise of free will might be].

This is the type of instrument that one would see in the retreat of Cuzco<sup>12</sup> or in the God Star, Sirius. Now it is placed within the retreat of Cuzco and, as you know, only Ascended Masters frequent this retreat. It is there for the use of the Ascended Masters in guiding the humanity and the evolutions of this planet through their course. But its very presence in the earth means, beloved, that by meditation, by inner attunement, you may gain an inner awareness of these cycles.

Lend yourselves to them, lend your decrees to them and see how you can be instrumental in the very best outcome that can be admitted. It is a thoughtform, beloved, immensely useful to the entire Spirit of the Great White Brotherhood and hence to you as chelas of the Ascended Masters.

Powerful angels of Light of Surya transport this instrument to the location prepared for it in Cuzco's retreat. From time to time you will receive dictations giving you the awareness of where the planet is in this process of transformation.

I am placing a point of Light, a particle of Light of myself in the secret chamber of your heart, by

---

<sup>11</sup>Matt. 5:29, 30; 18:8, 9; Mark 9:43, 45, 47.

<sup>12</sup>See 1988 PoW, p. 54 n. 1.

leave of your soul's free will and of your Holy Christ Self, to establish a certain point of contact, a certain increase of energy, of helpfulness as well as a [nucleus of] Teaching that perpetually emanates [the awareness of your Inner Reality; the illumination from this nucleus] does suffuse the inner being, giving you a sense of self-knowledge and well-being.

Self-knowledge is the key, beloved. Few have it. Many think they have it. And amongst the population very few seek it. They are more concerned with their awareness of others [and with others' awareness of them. And what people think of them is of far greater concern to them than what God thinks of them or what they know to be the true and the false of their own identity].

Therefore know the mind of self. Know the nature of self. Know what is the measure of the flame of self. Some of you think you know these three, but you do not know them. Either you overestimate or you underestimate. Be confident in the point of Light that is the point of your Christhood and the particle of Light that I give you [as a source of] some sense of co-measurement and an easier attunement with my heart.

This night I minister to all lifestreams upon earth no matter what their evolution. I must tend to this, beloved.

I have given you the keys whereby you can fulfill the resurrection for the rest of your life as Jesus Christ did. Beloved ones, take these keys from my heart. Take them. I am not ashamed to say to you, I beg you to take them. For I know the time frames. And the time frames into the future when I may offer you this opportunity again would seem to you as almost infinite. Therefore, I beg you to take these keys now. I may yet put on my [saffron] robe and carry my begging bowl [up and down the highways of the earth] for this purpose, beloved, the saving of a single soul and the many among you.

Blessed ones, may I present to you as I take my leave of you the Lord Buddha Jesus Christ, the Lord Buddha Kuthumi, who stand before you fully arrayed in their Buddhahood and [fully capable of] taking you on the long, long yet very short journey to your own Buddhahood.

It is a question of perspective, is it not?

Receive my Sons, beloved, as I withdraw to my service.

This dictation by Gautama Buddha was delivered by the Messenger Elizabeth Clare Prophet on New Year's Eve, December 31, 1989, 11:53 p.m.-January 1, 1990, 12:35 a.m. MST, at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Gautama Buddha's direction for clarity in the written word.]



# Chapter 3

## Serapis Bey - January 21, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 3 - Serapis Bey - January 21, 1990

A New Year's Retreat

III

Motivation

“What Is the Most Important Thing I Can Do to Become a Candidate for the Ascension?”

Hail, sons and daughters of ascension's flame!

Awake to your ancient heritage of the Sun!

Let the veils part for this moment. Remember the point of origin. Remember the Great Central Sun. Remember that you did descend by the same white fire whereby you shall ascend.

I come in the Divine Love which gave birth to that sacred fire, which is life everlasting. Though the white fire be the intensity of Alpha and Omega, know that that intensity is the fullness of the sacred fire out of which the whole of the creation did spring.

Elohim keep their appointments in their courses and in their coursings. My beloved, you also have appointments, dates that are set and appointments from God that are assignments.

May you be seated, then, to consider the hour of responsibility, the hour to respond to your ability to fulfill your divine plan. All of you have the ability to fulfill that plan in this life.

I, Serapis, keep my notebook. I have your names, beloved, for some of you are candidates for the ascension and some of you are precandidates, preparing to be accepted as candidates. Some of you know how much preparation is needed to get into the finest schools and universities of learning in this earth. Thus, beloved, you also prepare as candidates for our retreat and for this victory.

I tell you that the ascension is possible for many more than those who attain it. Those who do not try are those who think that they are still too human, too possessed or obsessed with their human creation. Beloved, it is not so! You must know and understand that all of you can [make your ascension], if you will it so. You may begin this day with your resolutions according to the priorities set.

Beloved, the highest priority is the ascension. The assignment at hand is the means - the means for the preparation of all faculties. To accomplish, therefore, this current assignment and not to see it as the means to the end is a pity. This preparation is not an end in itself. War or nonwar is not an end in itself. War is the means whereby the individual may show his courage and what he is willing to give to pay the price, even to buy time for his countrymen and even to lay down his life for that purpose.

We remember! We remember Sparta and Thermopylae, and so should you. Will you be the thousand or two thousand or five or ten [of whom it will be said,] “They held the pass”?

What is this pass, after all, beloved? Is it not the pass that you hold and do not give up and maintain that is the means whereby many evolutions may pass over into the Mystery School, into the Teaching, into self-mastery? Consider, then, that you hold the pass for evolutions who are not yet ready for the sacrifices required and who do not particularly desire the victory that is to be gained.

Now, then, let there be a stilling [of your four lower bodies], beloved; and those who are not able to refrain from their coughing had best exit at this time. It is a question of the thread of contact, and the holding of that thread is the responsibility of the Messenger. And therefore, intrusions of sound that crisscross the room do not help this challenge.

What I have come to say, beloved, is that it is possible to ascend in this life. Some who know the Messenger know that the Messenger has often greeted them with such words as “What can I do for you?” “How may I pray for you?” “What would you like to tell me this day?” “Is there anything that I should know?”

Beloved ones, so often when chelas hear [such questions] they are overcome in the presence of the Messenger and cannot think of a thing to say or ask. So I will tell you what to ask the Messenger when you find yourself in the way with the Messenger, and this includes those who have a familiarity by more frequent or intimate contact.

Blessed ones, you must ask, “What is the most important thing I can do to become a candidate for the ascension?” I can assure you that you will see the Messenger pause and listen and receive from my heart the pinpointing of the condition of the mind or consciousness or the life-style [that requires your attention for an alchemical change that cosmic law mandates if you are to be accepted as a candidate for the ascension].

Blessed ones, I have longed to be able to transmit this [message] to you, for you need the spoken word and the direction. But this question should not come to the Messenger [in the form of] a letter or any other type of [written] communication but should simply [be spoken by you] when you happen to find yourself in the way with the Messenger. Thus maintaining the stance of propriety and politeness, you will not, I am sure, interfere with the Messenger’s comings and goings but you will understand the perspective in which I give you this counsel [and the circumstances under which it is or is not appropriate for you to exercise your option].

As [a rule], beloved, most people have a blind spot concerning that which does keep them from the daily victories whereby they could achieve the goal. Thus, it is apt to be the very least thing that is on your mind that may be the point [on which] you should focus the ray of your I AM Presence.

I say this, beloved, because the possibilities are almost without limit as to what you may accomplish in this lifetime. Many more of you than think you are even on this track can make it. But I kid you not! It does take all of your striving and your love and your trust. It is a trust that says, “I know my God will do the very best for me if I have the courage to face my karma and to do my duty.”

Blessed ones, there is a saying at our retreat among the wise ones who have had ample experience with me, “If we do our best, Serapis will do the rest.” There is a great confidence in this commitment of the Guru to the chela and the chela to the Guru. And those who have proven this Law again and again do not fear to give their most and their all, knowing that the reward will come as surely as the pendulum of life does swing.

Now, therefore, beloved, understand that there is a science to the withholding of the gift, the gift that you are capable of giving, whether it be a service or whether it be a new level of attainment to offer to your Guru. The science of withholding is the following. Individuals are unable to give or to give of themselves because there is a tie-up of energy, there is not the complete flow of [the energy



in] the chakras [that there should be]. Blessed ones, the flow of the chakras does come up from the center and form a complete circle and thus establish the circle of the aura, and it does continually and perpetually flow in those who have that particular attainment.

Where there is a block in the chakras, that energy is simply stopped up because there is not a balance, because there is not a purification. The blocks in the chakras effect the blocks in the organs, in the spine, in the central nervous system. So where there are blocks in the physical body, the individual does not feel the flow and cannot extend the heart and the givingness and the joy and the caring and the forgiveness.

One needs to have this flow in order to be a Bodhisattva.

Thus, beloved, take command of the physical body. Take command of all of the bodies and look after those areas that are creating the greatest tie-up of energy preventing the self-givingness unto God and one another and to oneself. The withholding of the kind word, the withholding of forgiveness, the withholding of information that is needed, the withholding of a helping hand, all these things show the blocks that are there from karma, from fear, from records of death, from whatever line of the Clock you may find yourself positioned on.

So, blessed ones, as you continually prime the pump on the path of the Bodhisattva ideal, you find that you are pumping greater and greater rivers of life that flow forth from you, and you can truly embrace many with your helpfulness and become the divine helper.

There are those, beloved, who have this flow in reverse.<sup>1</sup> They have somehow found the means whereby they act as suction cups and, [in order to have a flow of energy in their own worlds, they] suck the light from others and allow this to circulate through themselves to their own adornment, their own satisfaction, their own life; for they have not had the heart to develop their own sun center [in their heart chakra] as a source [for the transmission of the universal energy to their bodies].

Beware such individuals, beloved, for they also move among spiritual communities and they are there only to suck the light, to create a counterclockwise spiral that is a false and pseudo self and identity. These individuals become endangered, therefore, when they are threatened with the thought that they may be cut off from the Lightbearers by some means or another.

Blessed ones, it is time to reverse the spirals and let the Light be primed from the pump of Life, sacred fire of the Mother, the Light of the I AM Presence. The more you pump [and] the more you intensify, the more you give; [and the more you give,] the more you are infilled with the sacred fire breath and the limitless energy of virya, which I know you shall pursue, as Maitreya has spoken to you of this very special quality.

So, beloved, the key to the path of the ascension is that one has given oneself two million times and more, for that is the key to right decision. [The “two million right decisions” that Saint Germain is famous for among his chelas are really his giving of himself two million times.] And in the giving, beloved, so much light has flowed through the body and the being that that light returning as positive karma has truly filled all of one’s house, all of one’s house. And the zeal of the house of your Mighty I AM Presence has eaten up the karmic self, the lesser self,<sup>2</sup> and one is all Light, all Light, all Light, perpetually in the mode of filling, giving, infilling and self-emptying.

One has become an Ascended Master in the process. Like Saint Germain, one has hardly taken note [of the alchemical change from the unascended to the ascended state]. For when Saint Germain stepped forth as the Ascended Master, as you have been told, there was scarcely a difference in his being in the before and the after, and so he himself did scarcely notice the change.

Blessed hearts, this may sound incredible to you, but you must know that there comes a moment when you are yet in this octave when you are so filled with Light for the very love of every part of

---

<sup>1</sup>1987 PoW, pp. 622-23.

<sup>2</sup>Ps. 69:9; John 2:17.

life around you that truly and indeed all that remains [for you] is the ritual of the ascension itself. This is possible. Do not deny that present possibility by rehearsing the frailties and the limits of the personal self.

There may be some among you whose karma decrees another embodiment, perhaps a shorter embodiment. But, beloved ones, what is that? It is nothing. That is still the present as we count eternity.

Those who are engaged and truly engage with their hearts and minds and beings in this walk with God that we have prepared for you in these mountains and in these valleys and in the austerity of this climate so that there is nothing but you and God and a growing relationship in the heart of God - those who truly are willing to lock gears with this God consciousness and manifestation, you, beloved, you can achieve this end. You are achieving it and you should not so lightly turn aside opportunity.

Opportunity knocks, beloved, but opportunity does not knock all day and all night. Opportunity knocks at opportune moments in your life. Do not take for granted her knocking.

Now, beloved ones, since I am known as the disciplinarian and [since] I command legions of light untold in my office, I too have come to prepare the troops for the victory and to prepare you to enter in to the willingness of the divine union. [14-second pause]

Out of my chakras the Light does pour. I am assisting you, beloved. I am helping you in the self-sealing process. And this was also the purpose of El Morya's coming, to motivate you to seal yourself unto the heart of your Holy Christ Self.

Your Holy Christ Self is the only avatar that really counts in your life. Though Maitreya may come, Jesus may come and the Buddhas may come, unless you become your own avatar through your own Christ Self, carefully remaining under the tutelage of those who have attained that goal, there is nothing that can be gained by having associations with avatars. This is why the Ascended Masters are not physically visible. For when the pupil is ready to become the Christ of his being, that very desiring does impel the presence of the great ones [who are] specifically tied to that one's lifestream.

Motivation, then, is the name of these two dictations. We are giving you our very best heart so that when you pass by the Messenger momentarily, you will have accomplished the best you can accomplish of the sealing of the soul unto the Christ by your own surrender to your own Christhood.

As you know from the writings of Saint John of the Cross, the soul's approach to the Inner Christ is a painful process of desiring acceptance and yet hearing the word, "Not yet, not yet." Blessed ones, be not the soul who fears to try again and again to receive the love of her Lord. Your Lord loves you and the closer you come to this sealing oneness, the more you will see of yourself that cannot enter in to the Holy of holies.

But your soul does pant after the living God. And the soul reaches the moment where no other desire fulfilled can equate with being received by the Lord. In that moment, beloved, there is an aloneness and a loneliness that is indescribable, for no one else can experience [with you] the mourning of the soul who is separated from her God yet almost entering in. That is why it does require special counsellors, special ministering servants to counsel those who may become, in moments, despondent; for they are so very near to that alchemical marriage and yet not quite.

Beloved ones, until the Divine Husband, the Bridegroom, has finally stretched forth the hand to say, "O soul, enter," one is in a state of fear that one has been rejected, one is not acceptable, one is not clean enough, one has not measured up to that level. In a human sense of the word, many have experienced the rejection of a human lover or the friend or the parent to the ultimate sadness and agony. Beloved, this prepares one for the rounds and the many rounds one must make until finally

the Bridegroom steps forth with outstretched arms to receive the waiting bride.<sup>3</sup>

You are indeed the waiting brides of Sanat Kumara.<sup>4</sup> The full sealing cannot come in a day, but this is your self-sealing day. This is the day you determine that when your Bridegroom proposes to you, your mind is made up. You will accept. You will accept.

Is not life a preparation for this moment? This is the hour of the sealing of your heart. Press your hands to your heart, to your heart chakra, and feel your hands press in upon the heart. And let your will be made known to your heart by the pressing in of your hands, saying:

O Be Sealed, My Heart

O be sealed, my heart, this day in the heart of God!

O be sealed, my soul, this day, in the heart of God!

O be sealed, my mind, this day in the heart of God!

O be sealed, my desire, this day in the heart of God!

O be sealed, my inner vision, this day in the heart of God!

For I desire only to see my God, my God.

I will not fear rejection this day.

I will not fear that I am not ready.

Though I come in rags . . .

I know that my Bridegroom shall wait for me

Until I shall have woven my seamless garment.

Thus, beloved, it is well to admit that certain thoughts and feelings, actions, accusations and conditions of consciousness are indeed not acceptable to the Holy Christ Self. You must get over the terror of such a consideration and deal with the reality that you are in this octave precisely because there are elements [in your personality] that are not acceptable [as a part of your Personhood in God].

So the great psalmist did pray, "Let the words of my mouth and the meditation of my heart be acceptable in thy sight, O Lord, my [Strength and my] Redeemer." And did not the poet say, "Yet in my flesh shall I see God"? Are not these words of souls in the earth a testimony of their absolute faith and trust that God is ready to receive the soul with outstretched arms and that the soul has the ability for self-perfectionment and that God will not condemn the effort but God will surely isolate and show the striving one what are those elements [of error] that this day must be plucked, taken away, put into the flame?

The Lord's Spirit is a Spirit of noncondemnation! Come, little ones ([I call you thusly,] for the soul is also the little child) - come, little ones, fear not this process.

This day you may press your hands to your chakras and seal what you have to seal in God, and on the morrow seal again what you have to seal in God. With this self-sealing, with this believing, with this knowing, with this confidence that you shall leave behind the rags of karma, that God will receive you and that you can win the prize, you will have truly begun a walk with God, beloved, that may take you into the valleys of despair and the astral plane and again exalt you into perceptions of heaven.

Whatever the road, know it is God's road. Stay on the road, beloved. Remember those words. Do not get off the track. It is almost as though you would imagine yourself in a giant amusement

---

<sup>3</sup>1985 PoW, p. 300; 1981 PoW, pp. 307-26.

<sup>4</sup>1989 PoW, pp. 745-46, 754.

park on a toy train that should carry you through every type of climate and land and even into the darkness with simulated horror and astral-plane figures and screeching ghosts and then again pass through realms of angels and [angel] choirs.

Remember that you are in God's cart on God's track and you are on a journey through your karma, good and bad. If you jump out of the cart and your cart is derailed and you begin wandering in your attachment to a particular scene, round and round in that scene, well, you see, beloved, you will go nowhere.

Keep on the road. Keep on the track. Stay in the car God has given you for this journey. And whatever you pass through, don't let it stick, beloved. Don't let it stick. Look at it objectively. Direct the sacred fire into it. And see to it that by the time you pass through that place, that trial, that problem, that group of people that you are involved with, you have so intensely directed the sacred fire that your last glimpse of that situation is an aura of violet light, transmutation and no more attachments or ties or entanglements.

This is what life in the stage of the reaper can be. You are reapers. The day you determine to turn and face the Sun of your Mighty I AM Presence, you are reapers. You reap positive karma and negative karma. The mathematical equation, beloved, is to transmute the negative karma and send out such a Light that that [Light] shall return to you as positive karma. And pretty soon you [will find that you] are receiving on a daily basis more returning positive karma than negative karma.

Blessed ones, it is good to get over the sense that life should be easy and if it gets tough, life is not for you. You need to flex the muscles of the mind, wrestle with Zen koans and the conundrums of the day that seem nigh impossible to crack. You will have to crack the nut without a nutcracker. You will have to solve the puzzle and put the pieces together without directions. You will have to follow the treasure map to the treasure without compass and without specific locations defined. Such is the test, beloved.

Accept the known course. Accept the path of the Great White Brotherhood and do not pull against the Lord when the Lord gives you today a mountain of karma to shovel and move. [Whenever you are required to work] under the most arduous conditions, remember that the children of Israel were required to make bricks without straw.

May you understand, therefore, that God gives you a mountain of karma while you have your vigor and your ardor and the fire of your body because if it is not balanced today, on the morrow you may not have the strength to deal with it and disease and old age may overtake you before you have won your victory. Therefore shirk not the difficulties of the day but greet them as the wisdom of your Lord, Maitreya.

Thus we have spoken of the sealing of the soul. Let us speak a bit of the saving of the soul. There is a part of your being, the part of you that senses the presence of your Christhood with you, who must be the saviour of your own soul, who must take the soul in hand and with great firmness command the soul to come up higher. There is a part of you that must speak the fiat for the binding of the dweller. That part of you is the charioteer in the very center and centeredness of your being.

There is a part of you that must go after that which is lost, where in conditions of extreme trauma the soul has been fragmented<sup>5</sup> and must be put back together again as Humpty-Dumpty. There is a part of you that must become a fiery magnet to magnetize the elements of self lost in the sea of samsara and [that same part of you must] also magnetize the elements of the Higher Self into this lower octave so that you are not forever dealing with the silly and supercilious conditions of repetitive misdemeanors of the human consciousness.

This Charioteer is the Christ and more. The charioteer of your being in this octave is your spirit, and this is your spirit as opposed to the soul. It is not the spirit with a capital S, which is your I AM

---

<sup>5</sup>1977 PoW, pp. 38-39.

Presence, but it is your spirit with a lowercased s. And that spirit is a certain masculine identity that you have built, internalized and become in all embodiments.

Thus, the question is asked, what is the spirit of a man?<sup>6</sup> And some will say, “That one is laconic or melancholy or perpetually pessimistic or overly optimistic.” We are speaking of the spirit of the individual. Some may say, “The spirit of that man is evil,” or “That man has a jealous spirit.” It is the abiding presence of a certain identity in this octave. And that spirit of the individual must overcome the poisons with the antidotes of the Buddhas.

That spirit has will and freedom. That spirit is already the charioteer with a lowercased c, directing the course of that one’s life for good or for ill, going off the course and going here and there and sometimes driving the horses wild.

Thus, you see, this charioteer must become one with or at least invoke the mantle of the Christ Self and be in that position of being the director of life, of schedule, of the day, of purpose, of getting things done, of accomplishment so that it may be said of you, one and all, “The spirit of that man is a spirit of victory, of accomplishment, of success in all things. I will go to that man, for I will always receive a wise counsel. For that man has a spirit of wisdom.”

Thus, you see, it is that developed identity that is becoming the unascended master. And it is that very one that must command and compel the soul to rise and to be who she really is. Thus there is, as it were, in the lower self, the masculine and the feminine self. And the masculine is the spirit and the feminine is the soul.

Thus, the spirit of an individual as that cumulative identity is in a position to be the one who decides what the progress of the soul will be. How very important it is, therefore, that that spirit be a positive one, else what can be done? What can be done for such individuals whose spirits [produce only] the flowers of evil?

Thus, Maitreya does speak of “karmic potential.” And the karmic potential of an individual is measured by the quality of the spirit and how that spirit perceives itself, [and how that spirit] will submit itself to the refiner’s fire; how that spirit will compel the soul to rise, will make the decision of the mind not to give in to the old ways; how that spirit will determine to drive the four lower bodies and compel them to a performance of excellence.

When you awaken in the morning, the spirit of yourself that is truly strengthened by the sacred breath determines whether to get up, whether to stay in bed, whether to overcome the lethargy of the body and the mind and to charge or to roll over and play dead. Such is the spirit, beloved. And there is a conditioning of the spirit by the conditioning of the body. For the spirit is one with the body and the spirit does leave the body at the moment of death.

Thus, beloved, know the difference between the spirit and the ka, which is the astral sheath, which does contain the dripping emotions and the records and the past, et cetera. Let not this astral self overwhelm the self with its heaving emotions, its sobbings and sighings and terror in the night. Let the spirit command it, “Peace, be still! Peace, be still!” You see, when you are in that posture, beloved, [the spirit] is you. It is your spirit who commands and it is the expression of your free will.

And therefore the determined ones have overcome; [they] have overcome enormous adversities, infirmities, weaknesses of the body. They have accomplished far more than those who have had perfect health and all things in life that they wanted. If you could have seen the saints, beloved, and what they bore in their bodies and by the will of the spirit what they achieved, you would understand that there is nothing in this octave that can stop a warrior who has this true spirit. And this truly is a definition of virya.

Virya is more than physical strength, even more than the will of the mind. It is this presence of the spirit of a man and the spirit of a woman.

---

<sup>6</sup>I Cor. 2:11; 1988 PoW, p. 591; 1989 PoW, pp. 187-88.

Let your children develop that spirit with courage, with self-effacement, enjoying the Work of the Lord and the Word. Give them the opportunity to excel ultimately, to flex their muscles, to study hard, to love with all their hearts, to give, to rejoice and to experience the true joy of victory. Deprive not your children of their daily victories by indulging them in lesser states, giving them lesser hurdles when they are capable of accomplishing so much more. Do not praise them for what comes easy. Let them strive and show you they have the fortitude to earn what is hard and to enjoy the prize and to know the self-confidence of gaining a victory that was tough.

Blessed ones, you are creating the progenitors of a new race. It is folly not to set the standards high. We have sent you stallions, Arabian horses. We have sent you the finest! Do not treat them as mules. Do not treat them as ordinary horses, beloved. They require a very special training. And they will love you and respect you. They will obey their inner spirit and they will obey their Master when he comes to claim them.

And fear not that the Master will come to claim them! You who have indulged your own so that they would not even hear the Master when he came, you shall regret this for long time to come, even in those embodiments to come that are necessitated [solely] by your improper dealing with those lifestreams who have been sent to you.<sup>7</sup>

Such a pity, beloved, that some have thought that their children needed the indulgences that they [themselves] had from their parents. We are determined to break this spiral in this Community, but parents must see that this generation is capable of much more. And you only build in them resentment and the spoiled-child syndrome of anger toward the parent when you do not give them the true challenges that they are capable of meeting.

Thus, we begin with what we have and we say, rise to the level of the challenge that is set before you! And let each day be an accomplishment whereby you can see that by striving your attainment is greater than yesterday's, your love is greater than yesterday's, your selflessness is greater than yesterday's. No one will ask of you more, not the least your own Bridegroom. An inch of progress that is kept is a diamond, a diamond on a strand.

Save your diamonds, beloved. They are for barter. Thus, when the Guru comes you may offer him diamonds. And thus, the Guru may receive you in kind - and receive in kind and give in kind.

Only the proud attempt to scale the wall, fail, fall back, give up and say, "It wasn't worth the effort anyway. It wasn't worth the effort anyway." Then there are those who are so proud that they do not even deign to try, beloved, for fear that their peers or those whom they deem lesser than themselves will watch them fail. They are so afraid of failure that they do not even take a step. This is the only despicable consciousness I know. There is nothing despicable about the chela who tries and falls and gets up and [tries and] falls and tries again.

Every newborn child is a chela. He does it a thousand times until he learns to walk. His urge to be is far greater than any sense of embarrassment as to how many times he is getting up and down until he can walk.

Save your soul, beloved, for you must present that soul at a certain level before that soul is permanently tied to Maitreya. Thus, the hour is come for the sealing.

May my words be pondered [and] listened to and may you read your notes in your notebooks to remind yourself that I have spoken. For there are birds of prey who enter the mind. As ravens they come, beloved, to steal the precious gems of wisdom as though you had never heard them<sup>8</sup> and to replace them with baubles and trinkets that the mind will fondle in place of the gems of Truth.

I am Serapis. I AM Serapis! I AM WHO I AM Serapis Bey.

May you also be who you really are. [55-second pause]

---

<sup>7</sup>1988 PoW, pp. 664-65.

<sup>8</sup>Matt. 13:3, 4, 18, 19; Mark 4:3, 4, 14, 15; Luke 8:4, 5, 11, 12.

This dictation by Serapis Bey was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on New Year's Day, January 1, 1990, 5:32-6:21 p.m. MST, during the six-day conference A New Year's Retreat held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Serapis Bey's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.





# Chapter 4

## The Messenger - January 28, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 4 - The Messenger - January 28, 1990

Prophecies for the 1990s

III by

Elizabeth Clare Prophet

1

My Vision of the Four Horsemen: A Prophecy of Returning Karma

I think that I have the most unpopular role in the New Age. My calling is to be a prophet of God. Prophet comes from the Greek prophetes, literally “to speak for,” hence a messenger.

In the spring of 1961 the Ascended Master El Morya directed me to go to Washington, D.C., where he would train me through Mark L. Prophet to be a Messenger for the Ascended Masters. And so Mark, himself a Messenger at the time, having been trained by El Morya throughout the 1950s, was the instrument of the Master’s tutoring of my soul until 1964. That Easter Saint Germain anointed me and gave me the mantle of Messenger for the Great White Brotherhood and Prophet unto the people in the service of the Lord God and his emissaries.

The Great White Brotherhood consists of all those who have reunited with God in the ritual of the ascension. They are referred to in the Book of Revelation as the saints robed in white who come as a “great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues.”<sup>1</sup> The term “white” describes the great aura of Light that surrounds them. It is written that they have “washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb,”<sup>2</sup> meaning that they have transmuted their karma and purified their souls; and so they wear the Deathless Solar Body, that garment that is the wedding garment. And they surround the throne of God.

Those who arise and attain union with God are not from any one school of thought, time, region, race, religion or profession. They come as devotees of Light who have served God’s people on earth, served the Lord in his Word and his Work, and are freed from the wheel of rebirth, having balanced their karma.

The Ascended Masters have mastered life in time and space by controlling their thoughts and feelings, their words and actions. They have brought themselves by many means (whether by any religion or none, it doesn’t matter) into alignment with the Spirit of the Lord, the Spirit of God, and they have walked with him. At the conclusion of their lifetime they have laid aside their physical garments, their four lower bodies, and entered in to the fiery coil of the ascension by which their souls were assumed into the plane of the I AM THAT I AM.

---

<sup>1</sup>Rev. 7:9.

<sup>2</sup>Rev. 7:14.

The Ascended Masters are one with God. They are extensions of God, as are the Archangels and the Elohim. They are his emissaries who deliver to us his teaching. And they are not only our teachers, but they are also our brothers and sisters who have walked the Path of the ascension before us.

Those who would misunderstand this teaching willfully or ignorantly say that we worship many gods. There is only one God, one I AM Presence, one Light, one Flame and one divine spark. This Presence is individualized for every one of us in time and space.

#### A Message from Your Mighty I AM Presence

Above you now is your Mighty I AM Presence, or Inner Buddha, and beneath that is your Holy Christ Self, or Inner Christ. In the Chart of Your Real Self, which is published in my books, you can see your I AM Presence as the upper figure and your Holy Christ Self as the middle figure. The lower figure in the Chart is you standing in the violet flame. When we are able to assimilate the Inner Christ, we become anointed by that middle figure in the Chart and we walk the earth in grace and in Light. And those who have inner sight can see that Light in us and know that we are climbing the highest mountain of being.

It is rare for anyone to walk the earth in the fullness of his Mighty I AM Presence because the Mighty I AM Presence is the absolute perfection of God. And therefore Jesus the Anointed One was called Jesus the Christ, Christos, from the Greek, meaning “anointed” of the Light of the Sun of God, the I AM Presence.

And if, at the conclusion of this life, we have fulfilled the Law and the Love of God and his Wisdom, we reunite with the I AM Presence. That union is defined as the ascension. We are assumed into that body of Light because the physical vehicle we wear cannot contain that God. When we ascend, we are called to higher octaves and higher worlds of perfection, where the golden ages we remember are in progress.

I come, then, as the Messenger of your I AM Presence, the one Lord who has broken his Body universally for each of us. Time and space make us see many raindrops, but when we get to eternity we see one River of Life. So the one-times-one-times-one manifestation of your God with you, of your I AM Presence and the threefold flame of the heart, still equals one. Hear, O Israel: the Lord our God is one Lord.<sup>3</sup> Let us commune in that Lord today.

When I deliver the message of God and of the Great White Brotherhood, I first give you their prophecy. But since the prophecy may be unbelievable or incomprehensible because it doesn't agree with what we see on TV or read in the newspapers or with what our teachers and pastors and priests and rabbis have told us, I take the naked truth and confirm it with knowledge of other disciplines.

I relate it to politics, to military strategy East and West, to the prophecies of Nostradamus, to the warnings of Mother Mary at Fatima and Medjugorje, Yugoslavia, and to astrology itself, which tells the tale of our returning karma as the handwriting in the skies.<sup>4</sup> And so I give you this prophecy in the context of explaining to you how and why it could be reasonable, it could be possible, it could be real.

Prophecy is easy to receive and difficult to deliver. It is not unusual for a people to reject its prophets, persecute them or totally deny the message, given the state of their karma and their national psychology. The word of the prophet is always to challenge corruption wherever it is, to challenge unreality, to pierce the veil and show what is real. The people of Israel and Judah ignored the prophets in their midst. And the price they paid was the destruction of their cities and exile into Assyria and Babylon.<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>3</sup>Deut. 6:4.

<sup>4</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, “Prophecy for the 1990s,” 1988 PoW, Book I, Introduction I; Book II, Introduction II.

<sup>5</sup>See II Kings 17:1-24; II Chron. 36:1-21; Jer. 25:1-11.

I ask you, then, to hear me through to the end. It is perfectly all right if you disagree with me. I have no desire that people believe everything I say. I would like you to maintain your own separate person and identity and evaluate and analyze what I am saying; put on the shelf what you disagree with or throw it out entirely, but hear me to the end so that you will have the message. Once you have it, you can pray directly to Archangel Michael and the Lord God and ask them to come and teach you through your own heart and show you the reality or the unreality of what I am saying.

I trust that you will not become angry with me but that you will merely listen with your inner ear and with your heart and contemplate these things as you observe the scenes of the times.

Prophecy is not psychic prediction. Prophecy is exhortation. It is teaching. It is admonishment. Prophecy comes in the context of free will, never with finality, so that the sons and daughters of God are still free to turn it back.

Prophecy means that God is showing you what will happen to you personally or to the nations if you do not come into alignment with his will and his law and forsake your disobedience to him. If you act in time and heed the warning, then all will go well for you. If you do not, that which is foretold in the handwriting on the wall will come to pass. As men and nations sow, so they reap.<sup>6</sup> If you do not bend the knee before your God, nothing will stand between you and the inexorable law of karma, and therefore what is scheduled to descend will descend.

The great mitigating factor of prophecy is our calling upon the name of the Lord and our use of the gift of the violet flame from the heart of Saint Germain. When we invoke the violet flame and the other six rays of God, we can inject transmutation into the polluted planetary stream. This is our answer to the pollution of the environment, the pollution of the consciousness of the people, the pollution of our physical bodies and our food.

The violet flame is a way out. And so I have produced four 90-minute violet flame cassettes, *Save the World With Violet Flame!* by Saint Germain 1-4 (along with booklets containing all the words). In addition, I have released more than a dozen cassettes that you can decree along with.<sup>7</sup>

Therefore, prophecy is not final and we are not fatalistic about it. It does not have to happen. There does come a time, however, when opportunity for change runs out - when the cycles of returning karma are upon us and nearly physical. At that moment, when we see that the world and its people have not turned around and have not changed, we can be concerned that these prophecies may become physical. "But of that day and that hour," wrote Mark, "knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father."<sup>8</sup>

The only joy I have in giving you this message is to know that if you receive it, you still have time to invoke the law of change, the science of alchemy through the violet flame, for yourself, your family, your community, your nation and our world.

#### The Four Horsemen: September 1986

First of all, I would like to give you the vision that the Lord God gave to me in September 1986, just before we moved our headquarters near Malibu, California, to Park County, Montana. As Saint Germain stood at my side, God showed me the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse. Let us read directly from scripture to determine who these Four Horsemen are and what they portend.

---

<sup>6</sup>Gal. 6:7.

<sup>7</sup>*Save the World with Violet Flame!* by Saint Germain 1-4, 1989 PoW, p. 26 n. 1; *El Morya, Lord of the First Ray: Dynamic Decrees with Prayers and Ballads for Chelas of the Will of God* 1-3, 94 min. audiocassettes with booklets of words, cassette 1, A88125; cassette 2, B88126; cassette 3, B88127; *Lanto, Lord of the Second Ray*, 1989 PoW, p. 182 n. 2; *Decrees and Songs to Archangel Michael*, 1989 PoW, p. 486 n. 16; *Kuan Yin's Crystal Rosary*, 1989 PoW, p. 552 n. 25; *Archangel Michael's Rosary for Armageddon*, 1989 PoW, p. 51 n. 5; *Mantras of the Ascended Masters for the Initiation of the Chakras*, 1989 PoW, p. 824 n. 2; *Saint Germain's Heart Meditation I and II*, 1989 PoW, p. 682 n. 7; *Decrees and Songs by the Messenger Mark L. Prophet*, 2-audiocassette album, 3 hr., A8202.

<sup>8</sup>Mark 13:32.

In the Book of Revelation, the last book of the New Testament, chapter 6, we read: “And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts saying, Come!”<sup>9</sup>

The Lamb is before the throne of God, and guarding this throne are four Cosmic Beings of such dimension and God consciousness as to be beyond our imagination. They are called the Four Beasts. These four Cosmic Beings are the guardians of the four quadrants of Matter in time and space. The four quadrants are the etheric, mental, emotional and physical bodies of planets and their people, which correspond to the four elements: fire, air, water and earth. The Four Beasts are described in Revelation 4 as the Lion, the Calf, the Man and the Flying Eagle.

One of the Four Beasts says, “Come!” And he is speaking to the first of the Four Horsemen. As he gives the command “Come!” John says, “And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.”<sup>10</sup>

The Four Beasts, or the four Cosmic Beings, are sending forth four riders on four different-colored horses. These riders are the harbingers of personal and planetary karma. As they ride they deliver the karma of past misuses of God’s Light and past disobedience to the laws of God. Revelation continues:

And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come!

And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.

And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come! And I beheld, and lo a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.

And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine.

And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come!

And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.<sup>11</sup>

When God first showed me these Four Horsemen, the thunder of their hoofbeats preceded them. They were moving toward me in a straight line. Those nearest me signified imminent karma; those at a greater distance signified that which was yet to be.

I had the impression that their crisscrossing of the United States would encompass a five-year period. But we know that the days of the Lord’s prophecy can be shortened or lengthened for the elect’s sake<sup>12</sup> by the Holy Spirit.

The Four Horsemen are cloaked. I cannot see their faces. They are leaning over their horses, man and beast one as they gallop through the night. The night is bright. It is illumined by a full moon, whose magnetic pull on the emotions signifies that the astral bodies of mankind are vulnerable to their karma. But despite the brightness of the night, the riders are dark silhouettes against an age of spiritual darkness that is illumined only by the borrowed light of materialism, sensual pleasure and

---

<sup>9</sup>Rev. 6:1. The Revised Standard Version and the Jerusalem Bible omit the words “and see,” which appear in the King James Version after the word “Come” in Rev. 6:1, 3, 5 and 7. The Interpreter’s Bible says that the additional words “and see” are “not well attested.” “Come!” is a command upon which the horses appear in turn. The words “and see” are extraneous and change the meaning of the verses. Consequently, they are omitted in this citation of the King James Version.

<sup>10</sup>Rev. 6:2.

<sup>11</sup>Rev. 6:3-8.

<sup>12</sup>Matt. 24:22; Mark 13:20.

a technology of which the people are not the masters.

The Four Horsemen represent the four lower bodies of a planet and a people - each one measuring and empowered by the very karma they deliver upon the nations.

When I first beheld them, the Four Horsemen were well on their way and had been for some time, whereas John wrote his vision at the moment of the opening of the first, second, third and fourth seals. So as I see them, they are descending from other dimensions into the nexus of history. Karmic history, rather than Revelation 6, now dictates the order of their appearing.

The first horse I saw was not the white horse as noted by John but the black horse, the third in his sequence. This immense and awesome creature was 12 feet from me, and his coat shone a black-silvery-green in the moonlight. This horseman is regarded as the one who delivers famine upon the earth, and so he does. But famine comes through economic problems as well as adverse weather conditions and improper food distribution. As I watched, Saint Germain explained that the role of this horseman was to deliver the karma for the abuse of the economies of the nations.

The voice "in the midst of the four beasts" sounds like an auctioneer in the marketplace auctioning off our wheat, our barley and our grains, the staff of life: "A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny." And the voice warns us not to hurt "the oil and the wine," for we need both the wine of the Spirit (Father) for our spiritual life and the oil of the earth (Mother) for our material existence to keep the gears of civilization running.

So the black horseman delivers the karma of the manipulators of the economies of the nations and of the abundant life God gave us. The scarcity of commodities prophesied shows that the value of the people's sacred labor, hence their self-worth, is being compromised by those who make merchandise of men, those who take the profits that belong to the farmers, the laborers and the working people. I will give you an expose on the manipulation of the American farmer in part 2 of this series. The ultimate result of this manipulation by the archdeceivers of mankind will be world famine.

According to The Interpreter's Bible, the prices for wheat and barley quoted by the voice "were famine prices." The Revised Standard Version translates the sentence as "A quart of wheat for a denarius, and three quarts of barley for a denarius."

"A denarius was a small silver coin which was approximately equivalent to twenty cents, and was the ordinary wage for a day's labor," says the Interpreter's Bible, "while a choenix, or quart, of wheat was a day's ration or allowance. The price for wheat, then, was quite exorbitant, probably eight to sixteen times normal; the price for barley was likewise far out of line."<sup>13</sup>

The black horseman is the first to deliver his karma into the physical octave. The second horse in my vision is the white horse. "And he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer." At this point in history the white horse represents the United States engaged in wars small and great outside of her borders.

The third horse is the angry red horse breathing fire, right on the tail of the white horse. "Power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword." In this vision, the red horse represents the Soviet Union and her amassing of nuclear weapons and armies.

The fourth horse is the pale horse. "His name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth." The pale horse is not right behind the other three but at a great distance. His karma is not yet due.

The pale horse comes through famine, plague, war, AIDS, cancer, new viruses, suicide, rock music, drugs, alcohol and nicotine, even sugar as a drug - all things, actions, substances that in this age

---

<sup>13</sup>George Arthur Buttrich et al., eds., The Interpreter's Bible, 12 vols. (Nashville, Tenn.: Abingdon Press, 1951-57), 12:412.

lead either to slow, sweet death or to sudden cataclysm, economic collapse or nuclear war.

### The Black Horse Rides

More than two months after I received this vision, on Thanksgiving 1986, Saint Germain said:

Economic debacle is foreseen. Prepare. Setbacks will be sudden. Be not lulled by the heyday. Many Band-Aids upon the economy, the money system, the banking houses. These will not prevent the collapse of nations and banking houses built on sands of human greed, ambition, and manipulation of the lifeblood of the people of God.

For they shall not prevail who have built their empires on the backs of the children of God who bear in their bodies the very Blood of Christ. The people, then, who bear that Light may no longer be used as foundation stones for the Cain civilization. . . .

Seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness. Seek ye first to live, to endure, to survive the age. And know that it is possible to live through the worst of prophecy.

I may speak it, but I am not the origin of prophecy! Every living soul upon this earth and fallen angels and godless ones - all are harbingers of that which must descend. For the law of karma is inexorable, irrevocable, saving where the violet flame, the sacred fire, does consume [mankind's karma].<sup>14</sup>

In February 1987 Saint Germain said in Minneapolis:

My hand is raised now, for it has been raised by Keepers of the Flame who have given to me a mandate and a day's vigil of violet fire. I, therefore, raise the hand before the oncoming black horse. I raise my hand, beloved, and I ask you to do likewise in your prayers, saying, "Thus far and no farther! God in me and in all of Cosmos is the Resurrection and the Life of the divine economy on earth!"

Remember the twinkling of the eye of God. It is the eye in the capstone of the pyramid and it is on your dollar bill. See it well. It is the key to the healing of the economies of the nations and the defeat of the karma-bearing black horse.<sup>15</sup>

The Ascended Masters are great intermediaries. They have chosen to stand between mankind and their oncoming personal and planetary karma. And this they can do by establishing a tie with those of us who are embodied as their students, if we allow ourselves to be the instrument of their release of Light.

We who are their students have also chosen to go to the altar of God day after day and to invoke that Light that will stand between the earth and returning karma and between the elementals and the tremendous burdens they bear for man's pollution of the environment. We invoke the Light of God to hold back that returning karma and buy time for the Lightbearers to bring these teachings to the many and to the millions so that they might realize the God Presence within them and begin to expand the divine spark in their hearts. The embodied students of the Ascended Masters desire to continually act as intercessors and mediators with the ascended hosts.

By September 1987 our headquarters had moved from Malibu, California, to the Royal Teton Ranch in Montana, bordering on Yellowstone National Park. I was at the altar of our chapel there and I was conducting a vigil of invocations and prayers for the healing of the economy. As I looked up I saw that the black horse was no longer 12 feet from me but had reached me. He was directly in front of me.

I raised my right hand and called to Almighty God to put his right hand over mine to stop the black horse, whereupon the black horse reared up on its hind legs and remained frozen in his stance

---

<sup>14</sup>Saint Germain, November 27, 1986, 1986 PoW, Book II, pp. 647-48; Saint Germain On Prophecy, Book Four, pp. 207-8.

<sup>15</sup>Saint Germain, February 22, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, p. 132.

by the Right Hand of God. That night I knew in my heart that the moment the horse came down, there would be a crisis in the economy.

I conducted a four-day conference in New York City from October 1 to 4, 1987. On the night of October 3, Saint Germain spoke regarding the ride of the black horse: "Thus, the 'spiritual wickedness in high places' of this city . . . is a manipulation in money matters beyond conception. And therefore I say, Woe! Woe! Woe! Let the judgments descend upon those who manipulate the abundant life of a people of God and subject them to a slavery untold far beyond that of the Egyptian taskmasters!"<sup>16</sup>

Now, the pronouncements of the woes that we read in the Book of Revelation mean "May your karma descend." That is what Saint Germain was saying to those who manipulate the money and the economy of the people.

In the very midst of this dictation Saint Germain was overshadowed by the Lord God and there was a tremendous step-up in the light and vibration. And the Lord God himself spoke in New York City and said:

And the golden-calf civilization does go down! And the Cain civilization is judged! For no longer is the Cain civilization protected by the mark of Cain. It is no more.

And therefore, let the fallen ones know that the hour is come that they must pay the price for the shedding of the blood of the holy innocents and of the sons of God and of the prophets and of the Christs. Therefore, let them tremble! For I come into their citadel of international power and moneyed interests. And I AM, of the Lord God, do declare unto you that through my Archangels they shall know the judgment.<sup>17</sup>

That was Saturday the third of October; on Tuesday the sixth, the market plunged 91.55 points, ending a five-year bull market.

On Wednesday, October 14, awakened in the wee hours of the morning, I saw a change in the position of the black horse. His forelegs touched the ground and the sight of it sent through me a wave of terror. He touched the ground a number of times and reared up again. On that day the market dropped 95.46 points, the biggest daily drop since World War II, and on Friday the market dropped 108 points.

At 3 a.m. EST Monday, October 19, I was awakened by Saint Germain. I saw the black horse and I did not want to see him. I saw him come down on all four hooves, race around me and go beyond me, the white horse galloping after. There was no stopping either of them. This scene was repeated again and again like a replay as I lay there in those pre-dawn hours, my Christ Self making certain that I would not block out the vision.

I knew that the karma of the economies of the nations had descended. And that war would be next. On that day the market dropped 508 points, 22.6 percent, the biggest drop in history, and the United States destroyed two Iranian oil platforms, escalating the crisis in the Persian gulf. The market had fallen only 12.8 percent during the crash of October 28, 1929, that started the Great Depression.

That same night, October 19, in Toledo, Ohio, the Divine Mother who is known as Vesta stated:  
This day does mark, surely, a turning point in the nations.

Can there be a regrouping of forces? Can there be a rise again? Yes, there can be a rise again, beloved, but never as steady as before. Thus, the sudden setbacks are experienced. Prepare, then, for there is truly a way and a path to endure and to survive unto thine own Ascension in the Light. Therefore, seek the path of reunion with God and know that I, Vesta, AM with you.<sup>18</sup>

---

<sup>16</sup>Saint Germain, October 3, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 484-85.

<sup>17</sup>Ibid., pp. 487-88.

<sup>18</sup>Vesta, October 19, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 544-45.

## The Economy Is Vulnerable

Since October 19 the market has rallied and even exceeded its pre-crash highs. Regardless of the rise, the signs of the times and the handwriting on the wall do not augur well for the economy. The United States and international economies have already demonstrated that they are vulnerable to a crash and a depression. Inside sources say that some people in the banking and government circles are trying to put a good face on the economy. But in private, most of them are concerned or in a state of panic - and with good reason.

The long-standing debt problems have not been and almost certainly will not be solved, starting with the debt bomb - the trillion or so dollars that developing nations have borrowed from Western banks. The debtor nations can't afford to pay their debts and the lenders can't sustain the losses related to nonpayment. When, not if, the liquidation begins, it will herald an economic crisis without equal in recorded history.

In the United States an arsenal of debt bombs is waiting to go off at any moment: the farm debt, the energy debt, the consumer debt, the corporate debt and the national debt. These debts are like astral beasts that hang over the people - the people who owe this money to the bankers and to their governments. This irresponsible lending and borrowing of money is the siphoning off of the lifeblood of the people.

It is clear that there is just too much debt for the United States economy to bear. But what is not clear is when and where the debt liquidation will begin. Remember that all debts are debts of karma. So when money is owed nation to nation, or to the banking houses, or to one another, it increases our individual and personal karma. That is why it is always good to pay as you go and not to be caught in the traps of the fallen angels.

One longtime banking insider believes that the debt liquidation, and hence the crash, will start right in Wall Street and the banking industry. His analysis goes like this:

The economy is now saturated with debt. Consumers are reaching their limit of borrowing. And the national debt is beyond the limits of manageability. But the most acute problem lies within the banking community and Wall Street. During the 1980s Wall Street made most of its money through mergers and acquisitions rather than through the sale of stock. In fact, in the late 1980s, stock sales dropped to only 17 percent of the total Wall Street revenues, compared to 50 percent in 1970.

But buying and selling companies can't go on forever. It is profitable in the short run but devastating to the economy in the long run because it adds debt without a commensurate addition of assets. Not only does the mergers and acquisitions market hurt the economy by creating debt that must be paid, but it is also drying up. After the crash of October 19, 1987, profits from buying and selling stocks dropped even further due to a low trading volume.

The brokerage houses cannot cut their expenses simply by laying off people. Many of them purchased fancy buildings and expensive computer systems in the 1980s that they are still paying for.

I delivered this lecture on May 21, 1989. As I prepare the manuscript for print, we see confirmation of this prophecy in the news of the forced resignation of Peter A. Cohen, chairman of Shearson Lehman Hutton. Newsweek reported on February 12, 1990, that Cohen built Shearson into the nation's second largest securities company by buying Lehman Brothers Kuhn Loeb and E.F. Hutton. But Shearson, under Cohen's leadership, paid nearly \$1 billion for Hutton "on the premise that the retail brokerage business would grow - even after the stock market crash in October 1987," Newsweek reported. "When trading went into a tailspin, the combined firm was left with massive overhead costs for offices and computers that ate up profits."<sup>19</sup>

In the past, Wall Street firms and the big New York banks have been able to stay one step ahead

---

<sup>19</sup>Larry Reibstein and Carolyn Friday, "Open Season on Wall Street," Newsweek, 12 February 1990, p. 38.



of financial disaster by thinking up something new to buy or sell, but now they have run out of ideas. And that's why the panic has already set in. They're between the devil and the deep blue sea: a high and rising level of debt on one side and shrinking markets on the other. They can survive as long as they keep refinancing their debt, but the end is in sight. The great debt liquidation could begin right in Wall Street itself.

We have already started to see the fulfillment of this prophecy. Although it is difficult to mark a single point where the "great debt liquidation" began, it may have indeed been on Wall Street.

The Wall Street Journal declared in a headline to a February 14, 1990 story announcing the demise of what was once Wall Street's most profitable firm: "Wall Street Era Ends as Drexel Burnham Decides to Liquidate." The Journal reported: "Drexel Burnham Lambert's remarkable journey from Wall Street mediocrity to junk-bond powerhouse to admitted felon ended last night when the securities firm's parent announced plans to file for bankruptcy. ...Drexel officials said the firm's assets will be liquidated and it will cease doing business."<sup>20</sup>

Although the financial markets did not react noticeably to the announcement, Drexel's fall is likely to have an enormous impact on the economy. Associated Press financial writer Rick Gladstone wrote, "The effect of Drexel Burnham Lambert Inc.'s stunning decline reaches like an octopus beyond Wall Street and junk bonds, potentially threatening many businesses that depend on financial markets to raise money. The Drexel bankruptcy filing could inject more sellers into the already depressed junk bond market which the firm dominates, creating a confidence crisis that might spread into stocks, higher-grade corporate debt and other securities."<sup>21</sup>

The story goes on to say that, according to some financial strategists, "banks, insurers, pension funds, mutual funds and other investors who bought junk bonds because they promised such high rates of interest could wind up owning nearly worthless pieces of paper."<sup>22</sup>

N.B.: "Prophecy for the 1990s III" is based on a lecture given by Elizabeth Clare Prophet May 21, 1989, Sheraton Centre Hotel, New York, updated for publication in the 1990 Pearls of Wisdom.

Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

<sup>20</sup> "Wall Street Era Ends As Drexel Burnham Decides to Liquidate," Wall Street Journal, 14 February 1990, p. 1.

<sup>21</sup> Rick Gladstone, "Drexel's Drop Seen As Threat to Wall Street," Billings Gazette, 14 February 1990, p. 2A.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid.



# Chapter 5

## The Messenger - February 4, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 5 - The Messenger - February 4, 1990

Prophecy for the 1990s

III by

Elizabeth Clare Prophet

2

A Measure of Wheat for a Day's Wages:  
The Manipulation of Grain Leads to Famine

As we contemplate the ride of the black horse, I would like to discuss the manipulation of the American farmer by the power elite represented in the grain companies. This is a classic case study of manipulation by the fallen angels in embodiment. They are pushing an agricultural policy in the name of helping the farmer while they are really lining their own pockets.

Many of the United States agricultural policies originated with large multinational grain companies, such as Cargill, Continental Grain Company and ConAgra,<sup>1</sup> and then were sold to Congress as being in the interest of the farmer and the public. But far from being in the public interest, these policies transfer wealth from the farmers to the grain companies, cost the taxpayer a fortune, and are likely to cause food shortages or famine in the near future.

For the most part, neither Congress nor the American people understand these policies. Mark Ritchie, agricultural trade policy analyst for the Minnesota Department of Agriculture, and Rod Leonard, a former United States Department of Agriculture (USDA) official<sup>2</sup> who is now the executive director of the Community Nutrition Institute, explain how they work.

The grain companies have enormous economic and political power. They have greater control of the grain trade than the big oil companies have of the oil market. And they are even more secretive. But most importantly, they control USDA policy. They finance candidates for Congress who support their objectives and lobby them once they get to Washington. And although grain company representatives have never been elected to office, Ritchie says that "it's grain company people who write the policies and go to work for the USDA and administer them."<sup>3</sup>

Congress, through legislation formulated at the behest of the grain companies, sets the price for wheat, corn and other grains by fixing what is known as the "loan rate." Barring shortages, the loan

---

<sup>1</sup>Other large multinational grain companies include Bunge Corporation, Louis Dreyfus Company, Andre and Archer-Daniels-Midland Company.

<sup>2</sup>Rod Leonard held a number of positions at USDA during the Kennedy-Johnson years including press secretary and Deputy Assistant Secretary for Marketing and Consumer Programs.

<sup>3</sup>Mark Ritchie, telephone interview, February 14, 1990.

rate becomes the domestic market price. Here's why.

Each year following the harvest, the USDA lends farmers money at the loan rate - let's say \$1.50 for each bushel of corn a farmer produced that year, using his crop as collateral. If the grain companies, which buy virtually all the grain produced in the United States, drive the market price below the loan rate, the farmer can forfeit (sell) his crop to the government for \$1.50 a bushel. As a result, the farmer will never sell his corn for less than \$1.50 a bushel since the government has already tacitly agreed to buy it at that price. Therefore, the loan rate establishes a minimum price, or floor, below which the farmers will not sell to the grain companies because the government is a ready buyer at that price.

But the loan rate also establishes a price ceiling, because the grain companies will not buy grain at much above that price. They don't need to, because American farmers are so productive (especially when driven by the artificially low prices) that there is always a grain surplus, which keeps prices low, except when unusually bad weather causes a shortage.

Not only does the loan rate become the domestic price but it also becomes the world price. The reason for this is simple. The United States dominates the world grain market. It supplies an even larger share of grain to the international grain market than OPEC supplies oil to the international oil market. Over the last decade the United States has typically supplied 60 to 70 percent of the corn, 60 to 80 percent of the soybeans, and 35 to 45 percent of the wheat to the international grain export market annually. Thus the loan rate, set by Congress for the grain companies, becomes the U.S. domestic price and the world price.

We would like to be able to agree with those who say this system could be helpful to farmers. But there is a catch. The grain companies, working through Congress and the USDA, set the loan rate below the farmer's cost of production.

Since farmers cannot produce grain at a loss for long, Congress also sets a "target price," which in the early 1970s was roughly the cost of production. Then the government (that is, the taxpayer) pays the farmer a subsidy called a "deficiency payment" to make up the difference between the loan rate and the target price in order to keep the farmer from going out of business. Farmers could stay in business (just barely) but they could not make a decent profit.

In the mid-1970s the rules changed. Congress began setting the target price for grain below the cost of production. Then many farmers could not make any profit at all. And if they wanted to stay in business, they were forced to operate at a loss and to borrow heavily - literally another year older and deeper in debt. The farm debt grew from \$100 billion to \$224 billion and the stage was set for the farm crisis of the 1980s.

Contrary to what many have been led to believe, the billions of dollars in subsidies paid out annually to farmers are not a political payoff to a powerful constituency. Nor do government funds keep large numbers of inefficient farmers in business. Ritchie says, "This system is aimed at taking commodities from farmers at prices far below the cost of production and giving them to multinational corporations and then making up for part of the loss that the farmers suffer by a payment from the taxpayers to the farmers. It's a brilliant system because it makes it look like farmers are the ones who are being subsidized."<sup>4</sup>

#### The Grain Export Market: Profiting from Low Prices

Why do the grain merchants go to so much trouble to set low prices? Simple economics. Grain companies make money on every bushel they handle. The lower the price, the more bushels they export, the more money they make.

Because of the heavy subsidies and low prices, grain companies can sell American grain more cheaply than farmers in other nations can grow it. This helps some of our biggest customers like the

---

<sup>4</sup>Mark Ritchie, telephone interview, March 22, 1989.

Soviets and the Chinese.

But subsidized American grain also puts farmers in developing nations out of business. In fact, developing countries such as Egypt, Tunisia, Liberia and Senegal have become dependent on exports from the United States because many of their farmers, unable to grow grain as cheaply as the grain companies sell subsidized American grain, can't afford to farm. So not only do the low prices hurt the American farmer, but they also keep other nations from becoming self-sufficient.

There is a second reason why the grain companies like low prices. Grain companies are no longer simply grain exporters. They have become the biggest domestic grain users for their burgeoning livestock industry.

"These big corporations - Cargill, Continental, ConAgra - are now among the biggest beef raisers, the biggest chicken feeders, the biggest pork raisers, the biggest producers of corn-based sweeteners," Ritchie says. "They set low prices and use taxpayer subsidies to keep farmers going, using the promise of more exports to justify them. But the truth of the matter is that they want to set the price very low for their own internal domestic buying and consumption of these products."<sup>5</sup>

Don't Blame the Farmers!

Barring a drought or a famine that pushes prices up, the farmer cannot earn a decent profit for his labor. As a result, 200,000 to 300,000 farms went out of business due to foreclosures and unmanageable debt between 1980 and 1988.<sup>6</sup> And with so many farmers selling out, the price of farm land dropped 60 percent by the mid-1980s and destroyed much of the value of the land, making it even more difficult for farmers to borrow to stay afloat.

At its peak in the '80s, the farm debt was \$224 billion. Now it is \$136 billion. That means that \$88 billion worth of farm debt has already been liquidated, mostly by bankruptcies, foreclosures and the sale of assets to pay off loans. The Farmers Home Administration, a federal agency set up to lend money to farmers, estimates that its losses from bad debts between fiscal years 1990-92 will total \$22.2 billion. "That's roughly three times the losses estimated from the HUD scandal," reported Newsweek on September 18, 1989, "and compares to the taxpayers' \$100 billion-plus bill for the S&L debacle." Newsweek went on to say that "as with the S&L and HUD scandals, the taxpayer will pick up the tab."<sup>7</sup>

But losses could be even larger. About one-third of all farmers have 40 percent more debt than assets and could easily go under. And there is a complicating factor. In the farm shakeout of the 1980s, 299 agricultural banks failed. That exacerbates economic conditions in depressed farm areas because farmers and businessmen in those areas have no readily available source of credit to finance their investments.

Most of the farmers who are left just hang on, hoping for exceptional weather that will bring them a bumper crop or for shortages elsewhere that will drive the price up and allow them to make good money. That happens occasionally, perhaps once in five years. But farmers can't count on luck or the caprice of nature.

Older, established farmers with more equity in their land have an easier time staying in business. Younger farmers go out of business and lose their land more easily. But young or old, most farmers are now operating at a loss. They tighten their belts and try to cut corners by squeezing an extra year out of a tractor, canceling health insurance, putting off dental work or cutting costs in other ways. They also try to produce a few more bushels per acre by using more fertilizer or pesticides. But farmers can only cut costs in this way for so long.

Besides devastating the farmer, this system robs the taxpayer. In 1986, for example, taxpayers

---

<sup>5</sup>Ibid.

<sup>6</sup>Jerry Stam, USDA, telephone interview, February 23, 1990.

<sup>7</sup>Rich Thomas, "Harvest of Red Ink," Newsweek, 18 September 1989, pp. 38, 39.

(via the U.S. government) paid out \$12 billion in subsidies in order to enable the grain merchants to export \$4 billion in corn. Likewise, taxpayers paid out \$4 billion in subsidies to export \$3 billion of wheat. And for every dollar of rice we exported in 1986, we spent two on rice subsidies.<sup>8</sup>

Besides being touted as good for the farmer, the government's agricultural export policy is often defended as helping to decrease the trade deficit. We do export about \$25 billion to \$40 billion worth of food annually, mostly grain. However, we could be exporting a higher dollar value of grain if the government would simply allow the farmer to sell his product for the cost of production plus a reasonable profit based on whatever the market would bear.

Without artificially low prices, we would export less grain but we would take in more money - and not have to pay out billions in subsidies. The farmer would make more money, the trade deficit would be lower, the treasury would be richer and more farmers in developing nations would be able to produce grain locally. Only the grain companies stand to lose from higher, market-oriented prices.

Higher grain prices would not seriously affect most food prices at the supermarket cash register since the price of grain makes up a small percentage of the cost of packaged foods. For example, the corn in cornflakes makes up only 10 percent of the cost; the rest is processing, packaging, marketing and advertising.

### Poisoning Mother Earth

There is yet another reason why artificially high export volume hurts the balance of trade. In order to meet export demand, the government pressures farmers to get ever higher yields from their land. But this requires that farmers purchase extra fuel, petroleum-based fertilizer and chemical-based pesticides, much of which is imported, thereby increasing the trade deficit.

And there are environmental side-effects. The extra pesticides needed to increase yield per acre contribute to an environmental problem of staggering proportions. As it is, 40,000 people are poisoned by pesticides each year in the United States. Three thousand of those are hospitalized and 200 die. A National Academy of Sciences study estimates that "pesticides contaminating the most common American foods may be responsible for as many as 20,000 cancer deaths a year."<sup>9</sup> And pesticides are poisoning our agricultural water supply.

### Low Grain Reserves

In addition to the subsidies paid to farmers, the federal government pays the grain companies subsidies of about \$500 million to \$750 million a year under the Export Enhancement Program to enable them to further lower grain prices and make sure that U.S. grain is "competitive" on the world market. In other words, the government increases exports on behalf of the grain companies at the expense of farmers and taxpayers. As James Bovard explains in *The Farm Fiasco*:

Between 1986 and 1988 the Reagan administration provided over half a billion dollars in subsidies for sales to the Soviet Union, China, Bulgaria, Poland, Hungary, and Rumania to buy American crops. American wheat is cheaper in Moscow than it is in Kansas City, and traditional American customers such as Japan are being discriminated against in order to attract communist customers. The United States has provided a subsidy for Russia that is equal to half of the annual subsidy that the Soviets provide to Nicaragua. Even though Poland effectively defaulted on a billion dollars in previous USDA loans, Poland benefited from almost \$100 million in USDA export subsidies in 1987. The USDA provided almost a billion dollars of credit to Iraq in 1988, thereby allowing American taxpayers to underwrite the Iraqi war machine.<sup>10</sup>

Because USDA policy is designed to export the maximum volume rather than the highest dollar

---

<sup>8</sup>Institute for Agriculture and Trade Policy, "Value vs. Volume - the U.S. Farm Export Debate," (mimeographed), p. 3.

<sup>9</sup>Mark Ritchie, "Toxic Hazard Prevention in Agriculture," (mimeographed), p. 1.

<sup>10</sup>James Bovard, *The Farm Fiasco* (San Francisco, Calif.: ICS Press, 1989), p. 166.

value of grain, little thought is given to ensure the safety of our own food supply. Although most people think the United States is continually burdened by food surpluses, we are vulnerable to shortages.

Unfavorable weather conditions have reduced world grain surpluses to dangerously low levels. World grain consumption is about 1.7 billion metric tons a year. In mid-1987 the total world carry-over stock (or surplus from the previous year) of all grains was 458 million tons. As of February 1990, it is 287 million tons - enough to feed the world for 62 days.<sup>11</sup>

That is a dangerously low supply. "The experts figure 60 days is a threshold because at that point you don't have enough grain to supply the pipeline," says Leonard. "What happens at 60 days is that the countries that are buying wheat or relying on imports for some part of their grain supply will buy it up at any price, which will drive up the prices and further reduce the pipeline stock."<sup>12</sup>

If the world grain supply drops to 60 days, nations will hit the panic button. In 1973, after huge sales of U.S. grain to the Soviet Union lowered world grain reserves, the world supply dropped to about 60 days and buyers frantically bid up the price of grain.

In the United States, food prices rose more than 20 percent. Dairy products were up 22.5 percent; meat, fish and poultry rose 26.4 percent; and cereals and baked goods went up 28.2 percent.<sup>13</sup> Food prices rose sharply again in 1974. While this did not cause widespread starvation in the United States, the price increases strained family budgets and hit poor families and people with fixed incomes the hardest.

The decrease in world grain stocks is related to the decline in U.S. grain surpluses. The United States is the only grain-exporting country that normally carries reserves. Other grain-producing nations keep pipeline stocks that are exhausted by annual consumption. But they don't carry surpluses or reserves. Thus, most of the world's grain reserves, not including pipeline stocks, are in the United States.

But U.S. reserves are dwindling, in part because of the obsessive drive to export. In 1986 the United States had a carry-over stock of 2 billion bushels (54.4 million tons) of wheat. But in 1987 the carry-over stock declined to 1.8 billion bushels. In 1988 it dropped to 1.2 billion. And in 1989, following the severe drought of '88, it dropped to just 700 million bushels. Experts expect it to drop to 435 million bushels (about 11.8 million tons) by June of 1990. And due to low levels of soil moisture, the U.S. carry-over stock of wheat is expected to drop again in 1991, with or without a drought.

But drought conditions, which by 1988 had reduced world grain stocks to their lowest in 15 years, continued in the winter wheat belt in 1989 and 1990. The 1989 Kansas winter wheat crop, which experts had hoped would rebuild diminishing supplies, was 34 percent smaller than the 1988 crop. And as a result of persistent drought and low ground moisture, crop yields in 1990 and 1991 are expected to be down in both the winter wheat and Western corn belts.

To make matters worse, in 1988 and 1989, the federal government reduced reserves even further. It used 3 million tons of a 4 million-ton "Food Security Wheat Reserve," a strategic reserve set aside for emergencies, for the government's Food for Peace program, which supplies grain to developing countries such as the Philippines, Iraq, Morocco, Egypt, Pakistan and Bangladesh.

We are now dangerously close to the 60-day threshold. A two percent drop in world production could drop us below the 60-day mark and spark panic buying. If we have a bigger loss, we could have a global catastrophe.

And that is almost certain to happen. Ethiopia is in the midst of a drought and is suffering

---

<sup>11</sup>Rod Leonard, telephone interview, February 13, 1990.

<sup>12</sup>Ibid.

<sup>13</sup>James Trager, *The Great Grain Robbery* (New York: Ballantine Books, 1975), p. 3.

from food shortages. These are exacerbated by an ongoing civil war between the Soviet-backed government of Mengistu Haile Mariam and guerillas in the northern provinces of Eritrea and Tigre. The combination could cause a famine in the 1990s as deadly as the famine of 1986.

Somalia and the Sudan also have serious drought conditions. There are droughts in parts of the Philippines and in agricultural areas of northern and eastern Australia. Large areas in Western Europe and the Balkan states are very dry. And the Soviet Union, as usual, will have trouble with its grain harvest no matter how the weather turns out.

Things in the United States could reach crisis proportions quicker than most people think is possible. Don Wilhite, director of the International Drought Information Center, says that as of March 1, 1990, 26 percent of the nation has either severe or extreme drought - and that includes the nation's spring and winter wheat belts and the western corn belt. If you add in the areas troubled by moderate drought, then 50 percent of the nation is affected.

Since our grain stocks are very low and drought persists in some of the most important U.S. agricultural areas and weather is likely to be erratic in the near future (see part 5), we may be due for food shortages, double-digit food price increases or even famine.

Don't count on the U.S. government to figure out what's happening and save you in the nick of time. Wilhite says that our government, like most governments, responds poorly to droughts, does not learn from its mistakes in handling past droughts, and does not coordinate its drought planning with its export policy.

"In fact," Wilhite says, "there has been a great deal of concern about the USDA downplaying the severity of the droughts of '88 and '89 in order for there not to be an impact on some of the export markets." Wilhite says that he thinks the USDA intentionally downplayed the potential impact of the 1989 drought on the winter wheat crop so that it would have minimal impact on the amount of grain that the grain companies would be allowed to export. "They finally revised some of their estimates [to come in line with reality]," Wilhite says, "but it took them up to the last minute to do that."<sup>14</sup>

Meanwhile, much of the U.S. grain reserves had been sent overseas for the profit of the grain companies.

"Prophecy for the 1990s III" is based on a lecture given by Elizabeth Clare Prophet May 21, 1989, Sheraton Centre Hotel, New York, updated for publication in the 1990 Pearls of Wisdom. Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

Decree for Freedom's Holy Light  
by Saint Germain

Mighty Cosmic Light!  
My own I AM Presence bright,  
Proclaim Freedom everywhere -  
In order and by God control  
I AM making all things whole!

Mighty Cosmic Light!  
Stop the lawless hordes of night,  
Proclaim Freedom everywhere -  
In justice and in service true  
I AM coming, God, to you!

---

<sup>14</sup>Don Wilhite, telephone interview, February 26, 1990.



Mighty Cosmic Light!  
I AM Law's prevailing might,  
Proclaim Freedom everywhere -  
In magnifying all goodwill  
I AM Freedom living still!

Mighty Cosmic Light!  
Now make all things right,  
Proclaim Freedom everywhere -  
In Love's victory all shall go,  
I AM the wisdom all shall know!

I AM Freedom's holy Light  
Nevermore despairing!  
I AM Freedom's holy Light  
Evermore I'm sharing!  
Freedom, Freedom, Freedom!  
Expand, expand, expand!  
I AM, I AM, I AM  
Forevermore I AM Freedom!



# Chapter 6

## The Messenger - February 11, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 6 - The Messenger - February 11, 1990

Prophecy for the 1990s

III by

Elizabeth Clare Prophet

3

The Four Horsemen:

A 2,000-Year Ride

On February 22, 1989, the LORD God gave me another vision of the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse. I have chosen the occasion of my speaking to you in New York City, May 21, 1989, to give you this revelation.

The vision that I received in September 1986 was not the complete ride of the Four Horsemen. I was seeing a slice of a ride that had begun in a.d. 2, which John wrote down in Revelation in a.d. 90. It will conclude in the year 2002.

In my February 22 vision, God revealed to me that the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse have ridden throughout the centuries of the Christian era. John saw them riding through his time and through his history. I am seeing them ride through our time and our history.

What is even more astounding is that for the last 2,000 years the Four Horsemen have been delivering a 25,800-year package of personal and planetary karma! This means that the cumulative karma of earth's evolutions from 11 past ages fell due at the dawn of the Piscean age.

Had it not been for the avatar Jesus Christ stepping in to mitigate that karma of 25,800 years in the tradition of the adepts of the East, as Lord Maitreya, Gautama Buddha and Sanat Kumara had borne this karma before him, that karma would have descended in full at the beginning of the Piscean age.

But because Jesus chose to take embodiment and to fulfill his mission, this karma was mitigated by percentages and allowed to descend in a series of cycles that would last throughout the age.

As the Four Horsemen move through the cycles of time, they appear to be riding around a racetrack. With each cycle - during which they pass through the 12 signs of the zodiac delivering mankind's karma on the 12 lines of the "Cosmic Clock" - they are coming closer to the center, and the cycles are getting shorter, taking less time to complete.

The first cycle, which began 2,000 years ago, took 365 years to complete. The last cycle, which encompasses the decade of the 1990s, will take just 12 years. And so, during their relentless ride of

20 centuries the Four Horsemen have been drawing around us a tighter and tighter coil of energy that has been coming closer and closer to the physical octave.

The figure 25,800 years corresponds to cosmic cycles. It also has to do with what we call the New Age. The New Age is related to the phenomenon known in astronomy as the “precession of the equinoxes,” the slow backward rotation of the earth around its polar axis during which the point of the spring equinox moves backwards through the signs of the zodiac.

It takes about 25,800 years for the earth to make one complete backward rotation around its polar axis and approximately 2,150 years to go through 30 degrees of the zodiac, or one astrological sign. Since the earth rotates, or precesses, backwards, the order of the ages is also backwards through the zodiac.

About the year 2000 b.c. we entered the age of Aries. Two thousand years ago we entered the age of Pisces. And now we are entering the age of Aquarius. As we pass through each of the 12 signs of the zodiac, we receive a dispensation from the Great Central Sun whereby the Four and Twenty Elders and the Four Cosmic Forces impart to the evolutions of the planet a new awareness of self in relationship to a new awareness of God.

In the age of Aries we received the gift of knowing God the Father, the I AM THAT I AM; in the age of Pisces, God the Son; and in the age of Aquarius, God the Holy Spirit and God the Mother. We see these signs of man’s awareness of his God appearing throughout these thousands of years in religion East and West.

Abraham and the Hebrew patriarchs brought us the awareness of the Most High God (El Elyon) and Almighty God (El Shaddai). They knew the Person of the Father in the Ancient of Days. The Egyptian pharaoh Ikhnaton (c. 1380 b.c.) gave us the understanding of the one God represented as the sun. He saw its many rays ending in human hands, giving and sustaining all life. Moses, who some believe had been trained in the tradition of monotheism while living in Egypt, revealed the I AM THAT I AM as the identity of the Father individualized as the one God.

Jesus the Christ, as well as the Buddhas Maitreya and Gautama, gave us the example of the Son as the incarnation of the Christ or the Buddha so that we could realize within ourselves and multiply in grace for others that Word who “was the true Light, which,” as John declared, “lighteth every man that cometh into the world.”<sup>1</sup>

Today, we see the reemergence of reverence for the Divine Mother that we knew in past ages. And the Holy Spirit is moving among us fulfilling the Lord’s prophecy through Joel: “I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions. . . . And whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord I AM THAT I AM shall be delivered.”<sup>2</sup>

In order to explain the law of cycles that governs the ride of the Four Horsemen, I need to tell you about the Cosmic Clock, which Mother Mary gave to me in 1963.<sup>3</sup>

#### The Book of Revelation and the Cosmic Clock

The Cosmic Clock is relevant to the Book of Revelation.

---

<sup>1</sup>John 1:9.

<sup>2</sup>Joel 2:28, 32.

<sup>3</sup>For teachings on the Cosmic Clock, see Elizabeth Clare Prophet, “The Cosmic Clock: Psychology for the Aquarian Man and Woman,” in *The Great White Brotherhood in the Culture, History and Religion of America*, pp. 173-206; *The ABC’s of Your Psychology on the Cosmic Clock*, 8-audiocassette album, 12 lectures, 12 hr., A85056; “Seminar on the Cosmic Clock: Charting the Cycles of Your Karma, Psychology and Spiritual Powers on the Cosmic Clock,” 4 audiocassettes, 5 hr. 50 min., A88087. Accompanying packet of study tools: Diagrams of the Cosmic Clock; work sheet with Cosmic Clock for individual charting of cycles; Traditional Astrological Information; sample Natal, Heliocentric, Progressed and Solar Return Charts; Summit University Astrology Insert and Aspect Calls; and Lord Maitreya’s March 24, 1985 dictation, “Astrology for Twin Flames,” #2368.

God gave his Revelation to Jesus Christ so that his servants might know beforehand “things which must shortly come to pass.” Our Lord delivered this Revelation to his apostle John the Beloved, “sent and signified by his angel.”<sup>4</sup>

The Book of Revelation is God’s gift to all who have answered his call to walk the path of initiation unto Christhood in the footsteps of our Elder Brother Jesus Christ. Its 22 chapters are a study in the psychology of the soul and the soul’s testings under the hierarchy of the Great White Brotherhood. These she must master on her homeward path leading to reunion with Alpha and Omega, the Father-Mother God.

Mother Mary has taught me how to chart the 404 verses that make up the chapters of Revelation on the 12 lines of the Cosmic Clock. The Blessed Mother told me to place one verse on each line of the Clock, beginning with the 12 o’clock line. This results in a single spiral of 33-2/3 turns, which reveal a path of initiation that each soul in her season must pass through in the temples of the 12 Hierarchies of the Sun if she would ascend to God.

Mother Mary teaches us in her New Age astrology that at any point in time and space in any century, the soul on the path of reunion with God may experience in sequence, one after the other, the initiations encoded in the 22 chapters of Revelation; these correspond to the symbology of the 22 letters of the Hebrew alphabet.

According to their soul pattern, evolution and attainment, Lightbearers of the world are experiencing all of the leaves of Revelation; and each of those leaves is tumbling in its time and space, though not necessarily in the same dimension, for we are multidimensional beings.

Revelation portrays the juxtaposition of the soul and the collective planetary evolution between the forces of Light and Darkness as these are engaged in Armageddon. The outcome of this warfare of the spirit is either the soul’s resurrection unto eternal life or her final judgment. By free will the soul must choose either the path of initiation under the Lamb of God and his hosts or the path of Lucifer and the fallen angels in their rebellion against the Lord God and his Christ.

The Book of Revelation is an outline of these two paths and a prophecy of the outcome of freewill choices made - to be or not to be - each step of the way. Through a preordained series of lifetimes God gives each soul the opportunity (1) to serve the Lord and glorify him in her members or (2) to deify the ego, the synthetic self and the carnal mind while swearing enmity with God and his Christ and making war with the remnant of the seed of the Divine Mother.<sup>5</sup>

At the end of this cycle of opportunity the Keeper of the Scrolls reads the soul’s record before the Ancient of Days, who sits on the great white throne at the Court of the Sacred Fire; and before the Four Beasts and the Twenty-four Elders “every man is judged according to his works.”<sup>6</sup>

In the course of dealing with personal and planetary psychology and the karma of the cycles, the soul will encounter the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse. These impressive Cosmic Beings sent by God through the Four Beasts come as initiators of the soul of the planet. They are emissaries from the Court of the Sacred Fire. Though they are fearsome, we ought not to fear them. For in them we meet our God. Through them we know God as the Lawgiver, whose law of karma is inexorable.

Thus the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse are Cosmic Initiators who are providing the final karmic testing at the conclusion of this 25,800-year cycle to all of earth’s evolutions. None are exempt.

The Four Quadrants, the Four Lower Bodies and the Four Persons of the Godhead on the Cosmic Clock

I would like to show you how we derive the Cosmic Clock. First we take a circle and we divide

---

<sup>4</sup>Rev. 1:1.

<sup>5</sup>Rev. 12:17.

<sup>6</sup>Rev. 20:12, 13.

it into the T'ai Chi, the Tao, two halves of the Divine Whole (fig. 1a). Then we divide each of the halves in two, making four quadrants, fire, air, water and earth, which are governed by the Four Beasts (fig. 1b).

The planet has four planes of being: etheric, mental, astral and physical (fig. 1c). The higher etheric plane is actually the heaven-world of the planet. The lower etheric plane is contaminated by the karmic patterns of the earth. The mental plane corresponds with the mind and the thinking process. The astral plane corresponds with the emotions, the desires and the subconscious. Finally, the physical is just what it says, the physical planet and the physical plane, which includes the collective unconscious.

Just as the planet has four planes of being, or four lower bodies, so do we. These are energy fields, four interpenetrating sheaths of consciousness, each vibrating in its own dimension. Together they are a microcosm of the planetary macrocosm.

These sheaths are also designated as the etheric, mental, emotional (astral) and physical bodies of man. They surround the soul and are her vehicles of expression in the material world of form - as opposed to the three higher bodies: the Holy Christ Self, or Higher Consciousness; the Mighty I AM Presence, or Divine Monad; and the Causal Body, consisting of seven outer and five inner concentric solar spheres surrounding the sacred fire center, the Holy of Holies. The higher bodies are for the soul's expression and expansion in the spiritual world of the formless after the resurrection and the ascension in the Light.

We could not function here below as an integrated personality in God without the four pillars of our temple. The etheric body gives us memory and the records of all our existences in the Matter universe. It is also called the envelope of the soul and it contains the divine blueprint and plan of our perfection. The mental body gives us cogitation and reason and the continuity of thought processes through the computer of the mind and the intellect. Through the desire body we express our free will and the strength of our desiring. And through the physical body we have physical action and physical expression.

These four lower bodies act as one. They are the vessel for our soul's integration in God. By his grace we can draw forth the Light of our I AM Presence through this vessel that God has given us and prepare it to be the temple of the Inner Christ and the Inner Buddha so that our soul might merge with her inner reality and walk the earth as the Anointed One.

The four quadrants of the Cosmic Clock are ruled by the Persons of God: God the Father on the 12 o'clock line, God the Son on the 3 o'clock line, God the Holy Spirit on the 9 o'clock line and God the Mother on the 6 o'clock line (fig. 1d). We derive the 12 lines of the clock by dividing each quadrant into three parts. We then place the four cardinal signs of the zodiac on the lines of the clock. Capricorn is on the 12 o'clock line. Cancer is on the 6; Aries on the 3; Libra, the 9; and so on (fig. 2) as the fixed and mutable signs take their places in between.

All cycles begin at the hour of 12. Whenever you initiate a cycle or begin a new beginning, break ground on a project or enter into or dissolve partnerships, embark on a journey or set out on an adventure - or whenever you get the idea and start planning for any of the above - you always start on the 12 o'clock line under the hierarchy of Capricorn.

The year you are born is always your Capricorn year. From there you take one year to go through each sign of the zodiac. So from age 0 through the first 12 months of your life, you take your initiations under the hierarchy of Capricorn on the 12 o'clock line. You celebrate your first birthday on the 1 o'clock line and take your initiations for the next 12 months under the hierarchy of Aquarius. At age 2 you move on to the testings of the Piscean Masters, and so on until you return to the 12 o'clock line at age 12 for your second round under the Capricorn hierarchy. At age 13 you are back to the 1 o'clock line with the Aquarian adepts, and so it goes, round and round the Cosmic Clock for a lifetime. Within each year you also receive the initiations of the 12 hierarchies month by month

## Diagrams of the Cosmic Clock

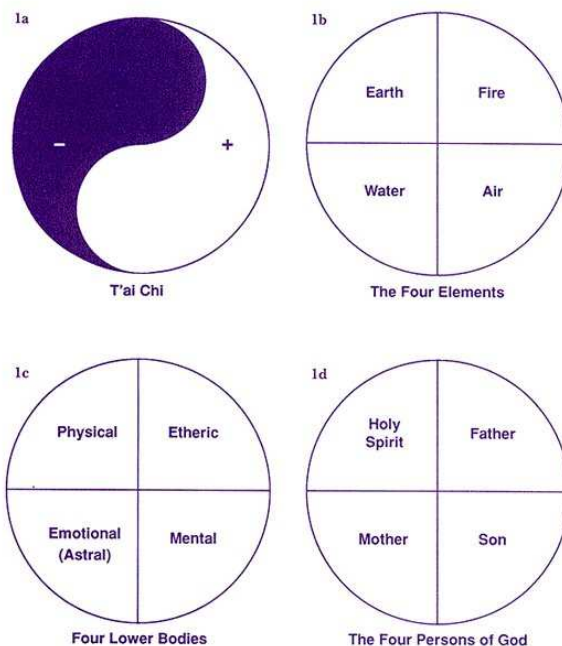


FIGURE 1 These illustrations show how the Cosmic Clock is derived. First of all, a circle is divided into the T'ai Chi, the Tao, two halves of the Divine Whole (1a). Then it is divided into four quadrants. Each quadrant has its own quality, which is defined by one of the four elements, the four planes of being and the four Persons of God. The four elements—fire, air, water and earth—fall into the quadrants as shown (1b). Every person, as well as every planet, has four planes of being: etheric, mental, emotional (astral) and physical (1c). The four quadrants on the Cosmic Clock are ruled by the four Persons of God: Father, Son, Holy Spirit and Mother (1d).

## The Twelve Solar Hierarchies on the Cosmic Clock

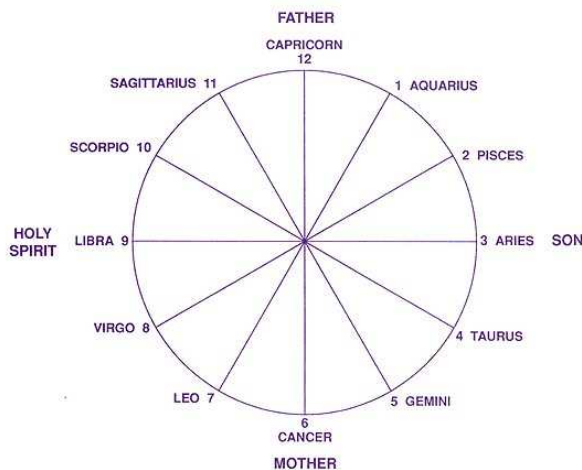


FIGURE 2 There are 12 solar hierarchies of Cosmic Beings and Ascended Masters who release God's Light through specific constellations of stars. We know each hierarchy by the name of its constellation. In astrology, the 12 signs of the zodiac are named for the same 12 constellations. The 12 solar hierarchies are charted in fixed positions on the Cosmic Clock. When we chart cycles on the Cosmic Clock, Capricorn is always at the 12 o'clock line, Aries on the 3, et cetera. Any cycle—a person's life, a project, a nation's history—can be plotted on the Cosmic Clock, moving through one line of the clock for every year. There are cycles within cycles; thus months and days can also be plotted—one for each line of the clock.

around the clock.

With each succeeding 12-year cycle you are intended to reach new levels of God-Self mastery. You are either building on the foundations of past victories or having to go over and over failed tests until the soul is strengthened through the God-flames that embody the God-quality on each line. (This method of charting cycles is separate and apart from the method used in astrology to chart your Sun, Moon, rising sign and planets.)

The Cosmic Clock predicts the soul's outpicturing of her psychology through the cycles of returning positive and negative karma. Astrology is also an indicator of returning karma and of the unfinished business and carryovers from past lives. You can use the science of the Cosmic Clock concurrently with personal and planetary astrology charts to discover the nature of your present and ongoing karmic testings and your Christic initiations as well.

Using these tools of self-knowledge together with dynamic decrees to invoke the Light to displace the Darkness, the soul who is determined to be a conqueror of self and circumstance can indeed succeed. And the great multitude, which no man could number, of saints who stand before the throne of God and before the Lamb clothed with white robes,<sup>7</sup> is proof that this path is not for the few, but the many. This path is winnable. It says that we can be winners!

Every cycle in our lives can be charted on the Cosmic Clock, enabling us to determine under which signs of the zodiac we are being tested. Each sign has its hierarchy of Masters and their God-qualities as well as the human perversions of those qualities (figs. 3a and 3b).

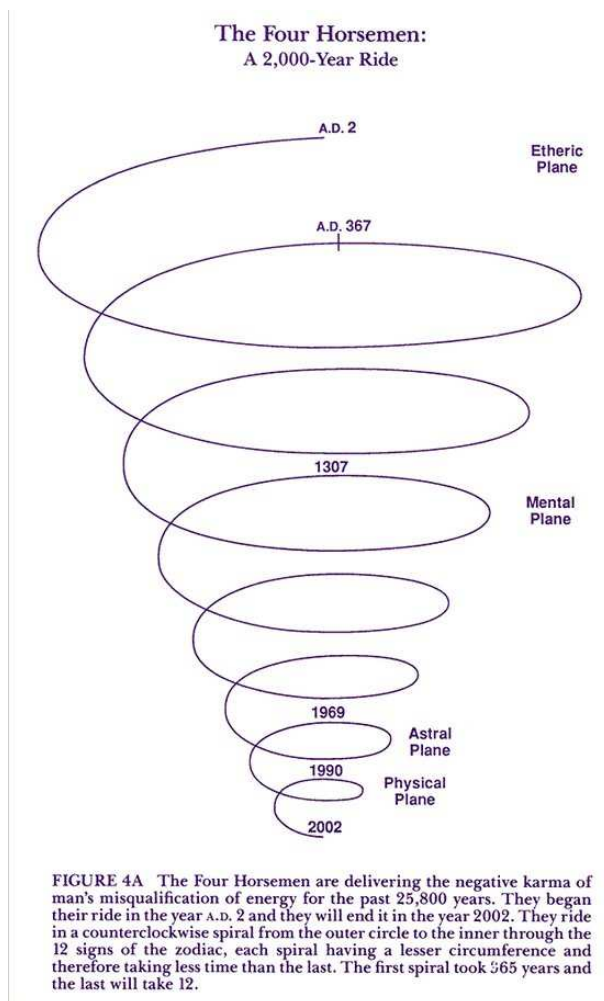


### The Four Horsemen Deliver Karma in the Four Quadrants

<sup>7</sup>Rev. 7:9.



As the ride of the Four Horsemen is charted on the Cosmic Clock, there are lesser cycles of time within greater epochs. The Four Horsemen ride round and round the Cosmic Clock delivering the karma of the four quadrants (fig. 4a).

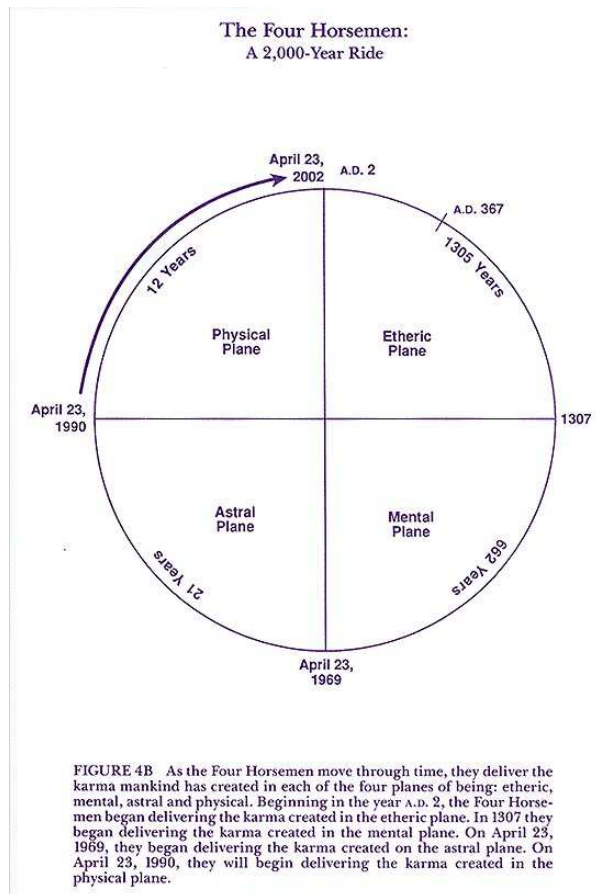


The karma they are delivering is the karma mankind has created in each of the four planes of being: the etheric, mental, astral and physical (fig. 4b). In the year a.d. 2 they began delivering mankind's karma created in the etheric plane. In 1307 they began delivering mankind's karma created in the mental plane. On April 23, 1969, they began delivering mankind's karma created in the astral plane. And on April 23, 1990, the Four Horsemen will begin delivering mankind's karma created in the physical plane through the physical body.

When the karma is descending in the etheric quadrant, only 25 percent of it is physical. When the karma is descending in the mental quadrant, 50 percent of it is physical. When the karma is descending in the astral quadrant, 75 percent of it is physical. And when it is descending in the physical quadrant, the entire force and weight of that karma descends.

Another way of looking at it is: When you create karma in your etheric body, 75 percent of it returns to you in your etheric body and 25 percent of it returns to you in your physical body. When you create karma in the mental body, you receive 50 percent of it in your mental body and 50 percent in your physical body. When you create karma in your emotional body, you receive 25 percent of it in your emotional body and 75 percent of it in your physical body. And when you create karma in your physical body, you receive 100 percent of it in your physical body.

Now, the equations of karma are complex. The number of permutations and variables is almost infinite. What I am giving you is an oversimplification; but it is a needed one. Karma returns like ocean waves. This formula of the ride of the Four Horsemen will not tell you when each ripple and eddy of your personal karma will pass by; but it will give you a pretty good idea of when to expect



tidal waves and when it is imperative to get out of the way of tidal waves and move on to the higher ground of your I AM Presence.

At a subconscious level, the evolutions of earth sense the wave of returning karma that will come crashing down April 23, 1990, or thereabouts. Times have gotten a lot tougher lately. People talk about the heavy vibrations of the cities and of the earth itself. This is the weighing in upon us of the karma that is layered in the etheric, the mental, the astral and the physical planes. We can feel it as a weight upon the heart and the spirit, although we might be perfectly well physically. The very pores of the earth are clogged!

But not all of us are even physically well. For the last plagues are already spilling over into the physical plane. And they cover our four lower bodies just like the oil from the Exxon Valdez and subsequent oil spills covers the sea, the rocks and the wildlife. And the calamities we have seen are a foreshadowing of what will come to pass on April 23, 1990, and following. We might use the expression "You ain't seen nothin' yet." As bad as things already are, there is more personal and planetary karma waiting in the wings for its April 23 cue.

Before karma becomes physical it is much easier to turn back. You can turn back cancer and dread diseases such as AIDS when the karma that causes them to outpicture in the physical body is yet lodged in the etheric, mental and astral bodies. You can invoke the sacred fire of God to consume the cause and core of your karma before you reap and weep in the physical, where karma kills day in, day out.

The violet flame is the alchemist's universal solvent and the physician's panacea for all our karmic ailments. But when these diseases become physical, although the violet flame does work, it becomes a matter of whether or not the karmic time will run out before the violet flame can complete the necessary cycles of transmutation. And so it goes with world karma as well.

The earth body is already sick with a supersaturated solution of karmic salts. We have had the last 50 years to clean up the environment with the violet flame on an as-you-go basis. If we had used

the violet flame side by side with protective environmental measures, we would be ready to start shoveling in this 12-year cycle when our physical karma gets dumped on our doorstep.

But since the earth patient is so overloaded with toxins, it's beginning to look like only cataclysm can adjust the cycles and restore the balance of Light in her four lower bodies and those of her people. It takes a Herculean effort to fight off the invaders of the earth body. And there aren't too many Herculeses around these days.

We may be karmic victims of our diseases, or we may be victims of antichrists who have mismanaged the health sciences and the field of medicine and put chemicals into our food and into everything else. We may be victims of a conspired or accidental introduction of the AIDS virus into our bodies by scientists, researchers or public health officials. (If you are interested in that topic, I would suggest you get the video- or audiotapes of my Summit University Forum with Dr. Robert Strecker and others who discussed their theories about AIDS as a man-made virus.<sup>8</sup>)

In ages past, as well as in the present, mankind have been victims of the experiments of geneticists and even aliens,<sup>9</sup> not necessarily as a result of their karma but as a result of their vulnerability - because they have forsaken their God and disobeyed his laws. If we were not vulnerable within ourselves, we would not be subject to the abuses of the powers that be. So all is not well in the earth, and we have yet to see the full impact of the ride of the Four Horsemen delivering their karma in the physical octave.

April 23, 2002, marks the end of the ride of the Four Horsemen through the physical quadrant and the end of the return of the karma of 25,800 years. Remember, we all have positive karma. The good and the beautiful of our karma is sealed in our Causal Body. It's there as a positive momentum to see us through the hard times. Yes, we have a lot going for us. And that's our momentum that gets us here and gets us back.

But today's challenge lies not in what we've done right but in what we've done wrong. It is the hour when the Lord is reckoning our accounts. And he looks at our books and he sees our accounts payable - what we owe to Life, what is our cumulative debt of 25,800 years. Then he looks at our accounts receivable; and if we've done meritorious deeds and rendered service to life, he may balance some of our accounts payable with the positive karma of our good words and works in our accounts receivable, thereby lessening the karmic debt. So where the accounts receivable show that life owes us for "services rendered," our karmic debt may be reduced proportionately.

The Four Horsemen are delivering the unbalanced debt. This is the debt bomb of karma. It is by

---

<sup>8</sup>"The AIDS Conspiracy: Establishment Cover-up, Pharmaceutical Scam or Biological Warfare?" on 3 videocassettes, 4-1/2 hr., GP88078; 4 audiocassettes, 4-3/4 hr. See also 1988 PoW, Book II, Appendix A. The Tuskegee syphilis study is a classic example of the unethical experimentation on the American people. From 1932 to 1972 the United States Public Health Service conducted an investigation of the natural history of syphilis. The development of the stages of the disease was studied in a group of black men from Tuskegee, Alabama. These men were intentionally not given any form of treatment, including penicillin, which was recognized in 1943 as an effective medication for syphilis, nor were they informed that they were not receiving any treatment. These men remained infectious and they transmitted the disease to their wives and children. Some professionals in the medical field justify this study on the grounds of the historical context in which it took place. According to Drs. William Boyd and Huntington Sheldon, "Experimentation with human life is a complex ethical issue, but we should be careful not to use modern ethical standards to judge events that occurred in a different intellectual climate" (Introduction to the Study of Disease [Philadelphia: Lea and Febiger, 1980], p. 186).

<sup>9</sup>In order to comprehend the gravity of the threat of aliens in our midst, it is essential to secure and listen to the tapes of the Summit University Forum expose by Elizabeth Clare Prophet and her guests on the government cover-up of aliens, "The UFO Connection: Alien Spacecraft and Government Secrecy," July 1, 1988. Three videocassettes, 4 hr. 50 min., P88048. Five 1-hr. cable TV shows for home use: "Anatomy of a Cover-up," HL88038; "Abducted by Aliens: The Common Threads of Experience," HL88039; "Crashed Saucer and Government Cover-up at Roswell/The Secrets of Operation Majestic 12," HL88040; "UFOs and the Mystery of Animal Mutilations/A Presidential Briefing Paper on UFOs," HL88041; "The Skeleton-Key Effect: Unlocking the Secrets of Alien Abductions," HL88042; Four audiocassettes, 4 hr. 49 min., A88118. See Budd Hopkins, *Intruders: The Incredible Visitations at Copley Woods* (New York: Random House, 1987).

far the greatest of all the debt bombs the nations are facing.

### The Dark Cycle

You may wonder what is significant about April 23. It is the date that in 1969 marked the beginning of the Dark Cycle. When the clock struck midnight the Lords of Karma unleashed an accelerated spiral of personal and planetary karma upon all of earth's evolutions.

The Lords of Karma are seven beings of Light who adjudicate the descent of the individual and collective karma of the billions of souls assigned to this world. They are divine intercessors who serve under the Twenty-four Elders as mediators between a people and their karma.

Whereas Jesus Christ had borne that portion of the world's karma that had been lawful for him to carry, lo, these 2,000 years, the hour had struck when the Lords of Karma decreed: "Every man shall henceforth bear his own burden."

Jesus Christ came for the mitigation of the returning karma of 25,800 years and through his sacrifice he gained the dispensation that it should be doled out in a spiral over 2,000 years. After his ascension, he continued to bear this karma. To bear world karma is to be that point of balance which prevents the descent of the cumulative weight of mankind's sins. In the case of planet earth, the weight is so great that had it not been for the intercession of the Saviour Jesus Christ it should have already caused the destruction of the earth.

However, it has been necessary that the saints in the earth bear in their bodies the karma that was being held in abeyance, either by focusing great Light or by suffering diseases and burdens. Jesus is able to offer them great assistance from higher octaves, but the requirement is for the saints in embodiment to bear that weight.

In bearing world karma, Jesus did not simply take upon himself the individual karma of every single lifestream on the planet, nor did he act as a shield to hide people from the face of their karma; but he was the mitigator and the mitigating factor who extended to earth's evolutions the opportunity to avert the coming cataclysm. That means that he held the balance of a sufficient amount of Light against that karma so that it would not destroy the opportunity for life on the planet. Therefore Jesus said: "As long as I AM in the world, I AM the Light of the world."<sup>10</sup>

On April 23, 1969, when the ride of the Four Horsemen entered the emotional quadrant, the full weight of mankind's karma created in the emotional quadrant descended. They would receive 25 percent in their emotional bodies and 75 percent in their physical bodies.

As earth stood still between two ages, the Twenty-four Elders gave a final opportunity to the people of this planet to take the violet flame to balance all injustices committed against the Great Law. This open portal would remain open until the last day of the age of Pisces.

Most people engage in the misuse of God's Light that flows to them from their Mighty I AM Presence over the crystal cord to such an extent that they create for themselves vastly more negative karma than positive karma. In dealing with this situation, cosmic councils have often decided that there is great benefit for an evolution to be on the receiving end of causes they have set in motion in the past.

By having to deal directly with the effects of these causes - their karma - it is hoped that they will thereby learn the lessons of their misuses of free will and through karmic adversity be humbled before their God and his Great Law. The coming of the Dark Cycle attests to the decision of the Lords of Karma that it is better for the souls evolving on planet earth today and for the planet itself that the karma of the ages should descend in accelerating cycles.

Thus, this stepped-up return of mankind's karma that takes place in a "Dark Cycle" is a calculated curtailment of mankind's blatant disregard for the golden rule: "Do unto others as you would have

---

<sup>10</sup>John 9:5.

them do unto you.” Had this Christic Truth been heeded with Christic compassion by all, there would be no Dark Cycle today and I would not be speaking to you about my most recent vision of the Four Horsemen.

The chief purpose of the Dark Cycle is to so tie up people in their old bad karma that they simply don't have time or space or energy to make new bad karma. The reality is that returning negative karma keeps people from making more negative karma. For above all, karma is limiting. It limits free will and its free expression. It limits the expansion of mind and heart. It limits people's ability to do anything they might want to do. Karma, and specifically the karmic return of this Dark Cycle, is, simply put, a roadblock.

When karma descends it feels like molasses; it is so sticky and so heavy that it reduces the people's capacity to wreak havoc and work evil. Karma is a tar baby. Karma descends to limit the destructivity of mankind and to preserve their option to do good. And therefore since April 23, 1969, people have become literally stuck in the sticky stuff of their karma.

We first heard that the Lords of Karma were contemplating the release of the Dark Cycle on November 5, 1966, when the Great Divine Director said through Mark Prophet:

The accumulation of human effluvia, the accretion of mankind's neglect, has risen higher than ever before in history. In fact, it was only 75 percent of the present height when the decision was made [by those Four Cosmic Beings and the Four and Twenty Elders with them] to overthrow the [Atlantean and other] civilizations that existed in the time of Noah.

The concepts of Nimrod had reached into the hearts of the people and they desired to seek for material pleasures exclusively and thus it came about that the Flood descended. You must understand, gracious ones, that in every time when destruction has come forth unto mankind it has been because of ignorance and the perpetuation of ignorance. . . .

Now has come the time, precious ones, when [students of Light] may call and the [Great Karmic] Board cannot answer. . . . The will of God has clearly delineated that if the present course is to be pursued, [that is, the present karma-making course of 99 percent of the people of the planet,] the entire planet will of necessity be blotted out of the planetary chain and those righteous individuals who are here be removed to other [planetary homes to dwell among their] evolutions. . . .

Therefore, we sound forth tonight the edict that unless mankind shall change and correct [their ways] and mend some of the terrible flaws now existent in society, certainly the elementals [Mother Nature] will be unable to hold back the tide of human creation that now stands behind them, held in [abeyance in] the name of cosmic mercy.<sup>11</sup>

The Lords of Karma unleash the karma of persons and planets through the hierarchs of the Nature kingdom, who oversee the elemental beings of fire, air, water and earth. Called salamanders, sylphs, undines and gnomes, these servants of God and man in Nature take their direction from the Masterful Beings Oromasis and Diana, Aries and Thor, Neptune and Luara and Virgo and Pelleur. The latter are responsible before the Twenty-four Elders, the Four Beasts and the Seven Mighty Elohim for keeping the balance of forces in the earth body.

When the Karmic Lords release a spiral of karma of the magnitude we are seeing, the entire Nature kingdom plays a part in its descent, which is always according to the law of cycles. And it is the law of cycles that is illustrated in our work with the Cosmic Clock.

In this capacity the elementals have been the foremost instruments of the karmic return of mankind's discord. The earliest memory we have of this phenomenon, which some have likened to Atlas shrugging, is the sinking of the continent of Lemuria beneath the Pacific 50,000 years ago for the karma of the abuse of the sacred fire by priests and priestesses at the altars of God.

---

<sup>11</sup>Great Divine Director, November 5, 1966 (unpublished).

The theme was a war of the gods, who misused atomic energy - hurling and heaping destruction upon one another from one end of the continent to the other until cataclysm destroyed that continent by fire. I myself remember seeing Lemuria break up in flames. Then, of course, there was the sinking of Atlantis 11,500 years ago, described as the Noachian deluge. And history records cataclysm on a smaller scale, as in the sudden burying of Pompeii and Herculaneum by the eruption of Mt. Vesuvius in a.d. 79.

The rise in hostilities in the Middle East was a key factor in the decision by the Lords of Karma to begin the Dark Cycle on April 23, 1969. There has been no real period of peace in the Middle East since Israel declared its independence at midnight on May 14, 1948. Many of the world's current economic, political and military problems are rooted in ancient strife revisited by the evolutions embodied in the Middle East. It goes back to the time of Sumer and beyond to their planets of origin.

This strife has been ongoing in that piece of territory for 10,000 years and more. Some of the lifewaves who are a part of that strife have reincarnated again and again to deal with the karma of past struggles. Theirs are ancient animosities that antedate their current modes of consciousness.

The Dark Cycle of the accelerated return of mankind's karma was scheduled to begin January 18, 1969, but by a dispensation from Lord Gautama Buddha it was postponed. On January 19, 1969, Gautama Buddha warned that "the warlike manifestations currently being exercised in the Holy Land represent to us the most dangerous single factor that is calculated to plunge mankind headlong into a holocaust of planetary destructivity."<sup>12</sup>

This is because if these battles had escalated, the United States would have taken the side of Israel and the Soviet Union would have taken the side of the Arab states, beginning a global war based on the karmic records of their animosities.

On April 22, 1969, U Thant, secretary-general of the United Nations, said that Israel and Egypt were in "a virtual state of active war" and that the UN cease-fire had become "totally ineffective in the Suez Canal sector."<sup>13</sup>

The following day, April 23, Egypt formally repudiated the cease-fire and the Dark Cycle began. Its purpose: to let the karma descend and therefore diminish the destructive capacity of both sides, thus controlling the damage. And the Dark Cycle is exactly that, damage control.

But the period of a Dark Cycle does not eliminate free will. And people have to work to do better in order to do better.

There are laggard evolutions on the planet today who despite their heavy karma have figured out how to outwit the odds, dodge their karma and use the Dark Cycle to their ends: they wage war, manage both sides of the conflict, and use the chaos to rearrange the territory so that their net gain is more power, money and control over the people and the planetary resources. And the Lightbearers have less, and less, and less each time the formula is reapplied.

Even after the Dark Cycle began, the United States and the Soviet Union were nearly drawn into a war in the Middle East. On October 24, 1973, the threat of direct Soviet intervention in the Yom Kippur war between Israel and a coalition of Arab states almost provoked a nuclear exchange.

We might ask ourselves, then, why Jesus Christ, the avatar of the age of Pisces, has been bearing our karma for these long centuries. Jesus was indeed chosen by God to be the example of the Christ for the Piscean age and, in counsel with the hierarchies of Light, he volunteered to descend to earth to bear the cross of world karma for a 2,000-year period.

Before Christ's coming, it was evident to all of the host of heaven that the failure of the sons and

---

<sup>12</sup>Gautama Buddha, January 19, 1969, 1969 PoW, Book I, p. 10.

<sup>13</sup>The Middle East: U.S. Policy, Israel, Oil and the Arabs, 4th ed. (Washington, D.C.: Congressional Quarterly, 1979), p. 195.

daughters of God upon earth to deal either with their karma or with the karma of the laggards and fallen angels, and their failure as well to lead the people in Light, was due in great measure to their being deprived of the truths of the divine doctrine that is being given to us today by the Lord God through the Ascended Masters. Of course, this doctrine is not confined to any religious tradition.

It was the assessment of the Twenty-four Elders and the Lords of Karma that the people were not prepared to deal with the karma that was to be delivered through the ride of the Four Horsemen. Jesus perceived their pitiful plight and agreed to take embodiment at this crucial hour of earth's dark cycle to show the children of God the way of the incarnation of the Word that others might follow. His life revealed a path of discipleship in the chain of Hierarchy descending through the great lights of the Far East. His teacher was Lord Maitreya, whose teacher was Gautama Buddha, whose teacher was Sanat Kumara.<sup>14</sup> His life was a journey of footsteps all could follow - of learning and practicing the Law.

Jesus' 17 "lost" years that are unaccounted for in the Bible, from age 13 to 29, were spent in the East. He went there to show that the Master-disciple path was a necessary path and that by the inner Work and Word of the Lord, by receiving initiations, by bearing a portion of world karma, we could also realize the Light of the Inner Buddha and the Inner Christ within our body temples.

What happened, then, is what had happened before. The fallen angels in embodiment, who had caused the fall of man and led us, together with our twin flame (our spiritual "other half"), away from the octaves of perfection, were ready to strike again.

They embodied in the hierarchy of the early Catholic church and effectively destroyed the teaching of Jesus Christ, our brother. They made of him a god, one who would be unreachable and untouchable.

Jesus cried out in despair over the fate of Jerusalem before his final appearances in Palestine, saying, "O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord."<sup>15</sup> Here our Lord was announcing the dark cycle that was about to descend on Jerusalem and Rome for their rejection and crucifixion of the Christed One.

Jesus also lamented because the people did not recognize in him the one who had sent him. They did not recognize the Father, who was with him in the Mighty I AM Presence and in the person of his Teacher, Lord Maitreya. Nor did they embrace the path of the ascension that he demonstrated, which was also theirs to walk. He wanted them to worship the Light within themselves and not his flesh-and-blood person - and through that Light to contact the same fount that was the Source of his own Light.

Jesus cried and said, "He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. And he that seeth me seeth him that sent me. I am come a Light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in Darkness. . . . I have many things to say and to judge of you: but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him. . . . When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things."<sup>16</sup>

An inner circle of disciples kept this teaching and passed it on to those who in later centuries called themselves Gnostics. For their rejection of the authority and teachings of the orthodox Christian church, which the Gnostics believed did not reflect the true teachings of Jesus, these devotees were persecuted and labeled heretics. Gnostic scriptures were suppressed and almost completely destroyed.

---

<sup>14</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, 1984 PoW, Book II, Introduction II, pp. 52-56.

<sup>15</sup>Matt. 23:37-39.

<sup>16</sup>John 12:44-46; 8:26, 28.

Some of these texts have been discovered again in modern times. I have examined them and they corroborate the Teachings of the Ascended Masters.

The fallen angels denied the people of this planetary home a personal path of individual Christhood, a path we should have been following for the last 2,000 years. All that Jesus was and is we are intended to be. We have an I AM Presence as he did, and we have a Holy Christ Self as he did. We have the divine spark in our hearts. We are not second-class citizens but joint-heirs with Jesus Christ, as Paul wrote: "The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together."<sup>17</sup>

If we had been taught these teachings in our churches, in our synagogues, in our mosques, in our temples East and West (for Jesus came to bring this message to all people), we would have been able to balance our karma embodiments ago. We would have had the opportunity to become initiates of the Christ and the Buddha and by the grace of God we could have been ready to deal with the challenges of these final hours of the Piscean age.

In order to save us for our own path of personal Christhood, Jesus took upon himself the sins of the world as much as the Great Law would allow, and he has borne the karma that has been descending these 2,000 years with the continuous ride of the Four Horsemen around the Cosmic Clock. At the conclusion of his life he stood as the Mediator, the avatar, which means the God-man, or incarnation of God, even as he stood as the Ascended Master. And Jesus bore that portion of karma until April 23, 1969.

On that day and date this dispensation and grace for the planet came to a conclusion. Mankind began to know what it meant to have no Mediator. Now it was up to those in embodiment to be the mediators, to be Christed ones, to be the saints and the faithful, either inside or outside of world religion, to intercede by words and deeds and fervent prayer. Yes, to invoke the violet flame and to keep the Flame of Life alive.

However, Jesus did retain the further dispensation to bear the karma of those individuals who embodied the Christ. To the extent that a person embodies the Christ, Jesus can bear that one's sins. Jesus also has a dispensation to assist certain of those who have the potential to embody the Christ, even though they may not have brought any significant portion of their Christhood into manifestation.

By April 23, 1969, the people of earth had had 40 years to take up the teachings of the Ascended Masters, to know their Mighty I AM Presence and to develop a momentum on giving violet flame decrees. Saint Germain originally released this dispensation of the violet flame through Guy and Edna Ballard, who founded the I AM Activity in 1932. At one time their members numbered in the hundreds of thousands, if not in the millions.

It was Saint Germain's hope to provide the people of earth with the necessary impetus and acceleration to bring in the Golden Age of Aquarius. Working with Jesus at the conclusion of the Piscean age, Saint Germain came as the hierarch of the Aquarian age to deliver to the children of the Light the grace of the outer knowledge of the violet flame and its specific application in the transmutation of world karma.

When Guy Ballard was embodied as George Washington, Saint Germain anointed him our first president. In this century the Master called upon him to reembody and to work with the American people, this time to give them the knowledge of the I AM Presence and of themselves as the "I AM" Race. The I AM Race is composed of citizens of all nations who have the I AM Presence and the divine spark within them. So the one whom we know today as the Ascended Master Godfre returned in this century to deliver to us the missing link to our spiritual identity and to our placing the capstone on the pyramid of our civilization.

---

<sup>17</sup>Rom. 8:16, 17.





9, 10 and 11 o'clock lines.

This means that the physical momentums of the physical quadrant and its hierarchies will be greatly intensifying the nature of the physical karma. When the Dark Cycle hits Capricorn on April 23, 1993, we will have another year of the same. Capricorn is a powerful earth sign and it will do its work to ground the descending physical karma. Having made one complete round on the Cosmic Clock from Libra to Virgo by April 22, 2002, the Four Horsemen will have delivered earth's physical karma of this 2,000-year ride of the Four Horsemen under every sign of the zodiac. By this time we should be seeing the Light of the Cosmic Christ at the end of the tunnel.

### The Karma of the Fallen Angels

There are some differences I would note between my vision of the Four Horsemen and John's vision. In John's vision, the order of the horses was the white, the red, the black and the pale. In my September 1986 vision, the order was the black, the white, the red and the pale. As the horses gallop around the "racetrack," they periodically pass each other up so that they can deliver a designated bundle of karma, then fall back into their original order. For they are on a cosmic timetable beyond our ken.

In my September 1986 vision the black had passed up the white and the red. During the twentieth century, the white horse has for the most part been in the lead, acting primarily as the instrument of the United States - bringing false hope, false freedom, the love of money and material possessions, and junk food for soul and body; these bring about the deceptive death of the soul imperceptibly.

If the red horse were to come before the black, as John saw it, we would see the judgment of the nations before the judgment of the manipulators of their economies. Today the weapons of mass destruction are such that after a war there would be no economies - at least, not as we know them. So in our time, karma in the economy is delivered either before or simultaneously with the karma of war. Today the karma for the abuse of power in the governments and the economies of the nations, delivered by the red horse and the black horse, has surely fallen due.

The karma for the misuse of abundance and the abuse of power in the economy comes through the introduction of World Communism and World Socialism earlier in this century and through the destruction of the free enterprise system by the monopoly capitalists and the international bankers - the real organized crime.

One big businessman, Frederick Howe, wrote, "These are the rules of big business. ...Get a monopoly; let Society work for you."<sup>18</sup>

The fallen ones are karma dodgers. They avoid their karma by getting the people to carry it (and them) on their backs and they get the people all tangled up in their schemes. And today the people are about to be caught in the returning karma of the fallen angels in our midst who have sown their nefarious deeds on this planet for tens of thousands of years.

The power elite, a.k.a. "the Establishment," are of a different breed than the rest of us. Of old known as "the Watchers," they are not the sons and daughters of God, nor do they have any part with the children of the Light. They are not joint-heirs of the kingdom with Jesus Christ. Nor do they bend the knee before Almighty God and his Krishna.

The fallen angels were cast out of heaven into the earth because they betrayed God's people and challenged not only the Son of God, the Universal Christ, whose Light sparked the threefold flame of eternal Life in each and every one of us, but also the Woman clothed with the Sun, who bore him and delivered him as the Manchild to the hearts of the issue of God in all planes and worlds whatsoever.

The Watchers and their laggard lackeys have run Wall Street and the big banks and the U.S.

---

<sup>18</sup>Frederick C. Howe, *Confessions of a Monoplist*, quoted in Antony Sutton, *Wall Street and the Bolshevik Revolution* (New Rochelle, N.Y.: Arlington House Publishers, 1974), p. 16.

economy and the international economy into the ground, and the people with them. But that doesn't bother them a bit. They are cold, calculating, cunning and without mercy. They see the "common people" not as children of the Divine Mother, not as unique lifestreams with God-given rights, but as chattel (i.e., cattle) that they own and control and live off of.

These fallen ones are devils. They are called devils because devil means one who "deifies Evil" rather than Good, one who takes God's Light and qualifies it with the Darkness of Antichrist instead of with the Light of the Christ. And their karma has finally come due.

As it is written, "And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God; that ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men. ..." <sup>19</sup> Yes, the hour of their judgment is nigh, as it is prophesied in the Book of Revelation. They are coming to the hour when they must face the Final Judgment before God, before the Four and Twenty Elders, as it is written in the writings of Enoch. <sup>20</sup>

In my book *The Forbidden Mysteries of Enoch*, I published all of the extant writings of Enoch with an introduction explaining the modus operandi of these fallen angels. <sup>21</sup> It gives you an understanding of the struggle between Light and Darkness and an explanation of how there can be Absolute Evil: It is the absolute dedication of fallen angels against God and his people and his Christ embodied in them.

The Watchers have created this international debt bomb. These archdeceivers of mankind have done it, and they have thereby brought us to the brink of nuclear war. Their karma will fall due and it will come upon them in their citadels of money and power that they have stolen from the people - on Wall Street, in the markets, in the banking houses. That karma will come upon them as surely as the Night turns into Day and the Day turns into Night.

Therefore we must hearken unto the ancient cry of Joshua, "Come apart and be a separate people." <sup>22</sup> Because when their world economic order comes tumbling down, if you are tied to it - because in your greed you have been lured by their illusions, lured by your ungodly desires instead of being satisfied with the soul's true inner desiring for her God - then you will lose not only your fortunes but your life with them.

From the beginning the fallen angels have manipulated the children of God into taking the rap for their karma. And this is why when Jesus was crucified he said of the people who shouted, "Crucify him! Crucify him!" "Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do." <sup>23</sup> They were tricked into taking upon themselves the karma for the crucifixion of Jesus Christ when it was actually the Watchers of Rome and Jerusalem who plotted the death not only of the Christ in Jesus, but also of the Christ in all sons and daughters of God who would follow in his footsteps.

The fallen angels have infiltrated all peoples, all races, all governments, all institutions. They are not unique to any race. And the way they divide and conquer is that they incarnate in this or that race or group or religion. Then the people associate either their "evil" behavior or their "good" behavior with the group or cause and become pro this and anti that. And the people become tools of the fallen angels' hatred of the Christ within the people! This is why the people need true shepherds, true Christs and true prophets to lead them.

And so the fallen angels have been using these ploys against the people from time immemorial, taking advantage of the people's ignorance and their faithlessness to Divine Love and to Unity, when

---

<sup>19</sup>Rev. 19:17, 18.

<sup>20</sup>I Enoch 92:13-17.

<sup>21</sup>For Enoch's revelations and warnings about the fallen angels called Watchers, with exegesis and expose by Elizabeth Clare Prophet, see *Forbidden Mysteries of Enoch: The Untold Story of Men and Angels*, containing all the Enoch texts, including the Book of Enoch and the Book of the Secrets of Enoch.

<sup>22</sup>Josh. 24:14-27.

<sup>23</sup>Mark 15:13, 14; Luke 23:21, 34; John 19:15.

they should be loving one another as brethren.

All of us together, no matter who we are or where we came from, are brothers and sisters in Christ, one with the Ascended Masters, our elder brothers and sisters in heaven. But divide and conquer is the tactic of the fallen angels, and they have carried it to such great lengths that they actually get us to line up on the battlefield to destroy one another in their wars for territory, for commodities, for the wine and the oil, and for money and power.

The fallen angels are behind the karma of both the black horse and the red horse. They know the cycles of karma and they use them in their war against the Lightbearers. In fact, they have set up the collapse of the economies through their abuse of the money supply. They have loaned our savings deposited in New York banks to Third World nations who, they should have had a pretty good idea, would not be able to properly manage that money or ever pay it back.

Of course, because oil prices had been artificially high, they thought they would remain high and that oil-producing nations such as Mexico and Venezuela would be able to repay the loans because of their income from oil. Then oil dropped, again as part of descending karma, and it became apparent that the nations, both those who produced oil and those who imported it, would never be able to pay back their debt.

I would like to remind you of what the God and Goddess Meru told us on February 27, 1983:

Realize, then, that when power was at their hand OPEC would use the price of oil to nearly destroy the free economies of the earth.<sup>24</sup> And now you must realize that with the sudden drop in the price of oil internationally, the balance of payments, the loans to Third World nations become even more burdensome, as they are not able to pay back their debts to the international banks.

The sign of the descent of the price of oil must be noted by the soul, your own soul. For you must realize that you have known for millennia that the manipulation of the oil and the wheat,<sup>25</sup> commodities that are fundamental to life, would signal the beginning of the end of a world economy or even the beginning of world cataclysm.<sup>26</sup>

It is an hour, then, when little by little the pieces in this puzzle are coming together. We saw the atrocities in Vietnam. We saw a no-win war where our soldiers went to battle and were killed or maimed for life and then rejected by their countrymen. We see the outrage in nations around the world where freedom fighters will fight for freedom without the necessary backing from the United States to win a decisive victory. And then we have the media cooperating with World Communism in its effort to put on a human face.

In summing up this chapter on my visions of the Four Horsemen, what I see of their current ride is that they are running on a large racetrack. This track is so large that when they're on the other side of it, they go over the horizon. Right now the white horse is in the lead, as he has generally been since April 23, 1969, as I said, although the black horse temporarily passed him in September 1986, when I was seeing the warnings of the October crash. The black horse remained in the lead until October 19, 1987, when the black and the white horses galloped by me.

Today I see the black horse and the red horse neck and neck. They are riding close together, the cycles have accelerated and we're down to the wire in the timetables. At this writing it appears that the judgment will descend simultaneously upon the economy and the nation.

On August 8, 1988, El Morya said: "Understand, then, beloved, that as you know the signs written by Nostradamus, foretold by Mary, by Jesus, by the signs in the heavens, a break in the economy

---

<sup>24</sup>Between 1971 and 1981 oil prices drastically increased over 1,800 percent in a market largely controlled by the powerful Organization of Petroleum Exporting Countries (OPEC) cartel. "Over the past decade," reported Newsweek on March 7, 1983, "OPEC engineered the largest transfer of wealth in history. [1]"

<sup>25</sup>Rev. 6:6.

<sup>26</sup>God and Goddess Meru, February 27, 1983 (unpublished).

itself is the precursor to war and the sign and signal of it. I pray you understand why preparedness, setting one's financial house in order, is so essential and [why] the immediacy, then, of preparing those shelters is also upon you."<sup>27</sup>

I would like to remind you that there is a divine solution to the handwriting on the wall that we read. And unless some of us are willing to enter into the seriousness of what we are facing as a planet, to look at it squarely and not be afraid to accept it as our challenge, it will come to pass.

But if we are willing to adjust our lives to deal with the exigencies of the hour and make the time to invoke the Light of God and secure our own place prepared, we will see that we can make the difference as those who are determined to hold our finger in the dike, if not on a planetary scale, then at least in our personal lives.

And the Lord, the Mighty I AM Presence, will help those who help themselves.

"Prophecy for the 1990s III" is based on a lecture given by Elizabeth Clare Prophet May 21, 1989, Sheraton Centre Hotel, New York, updated for publication in the 1990 Pearls of Wisdom. Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

More Violet Fire

by Hilarion

Lovely God Presence, I AM in me,  
Hear me now I do decree:  
Bring to pass each blessing for which I call  
Upon the Holy Christ Self of each and all!

Let Violet Fire of Freedom roll  
Round the world to make all whole  
Saturate the earth and its people, too,  
With increasing Christ-radiance  
shining through!

I AM this action from God above  
Sustained by the hand of heaven's Love,  
Transmuting the causes of discord here,  
Removing the cores so that none do fear.

I AM, I AM, I AM  
The full power of Freedom's Love  
Raising all earth to heaven above  
Violet Fire now blazing bright  
In living beauty is God's own Light

Which right now and forever  
Sets the world, myself, and all life  
Eternally free in Ascended Master perfection!  
Almighty I AM! Almighty I AM! Almighty I AM!

And in full Faith I consciously accept this manifest, manifest, manifest! (3x) right here and now with full Power, eternally sustained, all-powerfully active, ever expanding, and world enfolding until all are wholly ascended in the Light and free!

---

<sup>27</sup>El Morya, August 8, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book II, p. 601.

Beloved I AM! Beloved I AM! Beloved I AM!

# Chapter 7

## The Messenger - February 18, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 7 - The Messenger - February 18, 1990

Prophecy for the 1990s

III by

Elizabeth Clare Prophet

4

The Lord God Gives the Interpretation of the Roles of the Four Horsemen:  
Warfare Against the Father, the Son, the Holy Spirit and the Mother

In addition to the vision of the 2,000-year ride of the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse that I received on February 22, 1989, the Lord God gave me the interpretation of the Four Horsemen in terms of cosmic cycles. He showed me that each of the Four Horsemen mirrors mankind's state of consciousness in the four quadrants. Each one represents the warfare waged against the Persons of the Godhead by the not-self, the synthetic self, which is called the dweller-on-the-threshold.

Like the Guru who hung a mirror around his neck so his chelas would understand that they see in the Guru the mirror-image of their untransmuted self, so God has sent his Four Horsemen to appear as the embodiment of the collective untransmuted self of the race. In the Four Horsemen we see the untransmuted self face to face. Whatever they bring, whatever they do is the reflection of what mankind themselves have brought and done.

Remember, the Father, Son, Holy Spirit and Mother govern the four quadrants of being. Consequently, as each of the Four Horsemen corresponds to one of the four quadrants, so they come under the jurisdiction of the Person of the Godhead who is the authority for that quadrant as well as the hierarchs who initiate the evolutions of earth on the lines of the Cosmic Clock within the quadrants.

Sent by God at the command of the Four Beasts, who pronounce the "Come!" that is their signal to ride, these emissaries are the sign and the wonder of the infamy of an entire lifewave. The Four Horsemen are empowered by the karma they bring; for their warfare of the spirit waged against Father, Son, Holy Spirit and Mother in the midst of the people is, after all, the people's war against the Godhead turned back upon themselves.

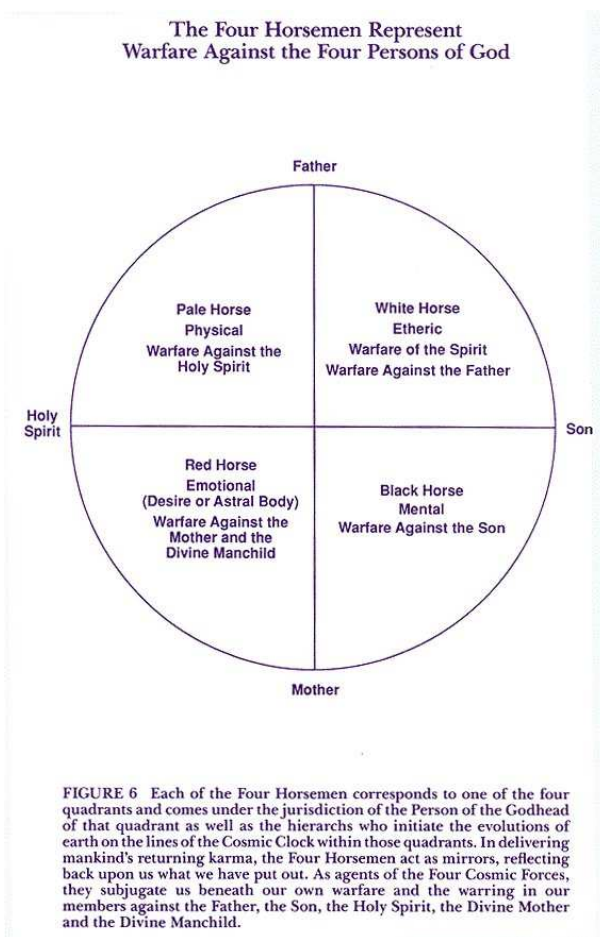
The white horse occupies the first quadrant. His domain is the etheric body of the people and their planet. This is the body of memory and records, hence of identity, both divine and human.

"And I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts saying, Come! And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given to him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer."<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>Rev. 6:1, 2.

The white horseman represents the warfare of the spirit - against the Father and against the Father's manifestation of himself to his children on earth (fig. 6).



The bow of the white horseman is for shooting the arrows that destroy the spirit (and the spirits) of the people. It typifies the mind of this horseman. His warfare takes place at a distance. Arrows that are shot by the mind can wound us from afar and tear down our spirits without actual contact between the bowman and the target. These arrows demoralize God's people by attacking their spirits.

Our spirit is expressed in our sacred labor, in what we take pride in, in the work of our hands, and in what we do that contributes to our community. The spirit represents our calling - what we give our life to. Our spirit is intended to soar to the heights of the Holy Spirit.

### The Warfare of the Spirit

The color of the white horse is deceptive because white is traditionally the color of the "good guys"; some students of the Bible have mistakenly compared this rider with the Faithful and True, who leads the armies of heaven in Armageddon. He, The Word, and those with him are clothed in white and they ride white horses (Rev. 19:11-14). But the first of the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse has naught to do with the legions victorious who defeat the adversary in Armageddon. And the white of this horse only disguises his tremendous powers of deception. His warfare of the spirit is unseen and unfelt by a sleeping civilization.

The crown he wears is the false laurels that society places upon those who have caused its death, for they know not whence the death has come. In reality the death has come from themselves, from the records of the subconscious and the unconscious, as they have crowned their basest desires and passions. These desires and passions are crowned king when the white horse rides.

Who is king in our society? Whoever has the most sex appeal and the most money - the rock stars, the celebrities, the jet set. Who do the people worship? Those who brazenly live for their basest desires and passions. The people are fascinated with them (in some cases, fascinated and



repulsed simultaneously) and therefore they become tied to them. They are slaves to their lusts for money, power and sex, even as they are enslaved to the gods themselves.

Other players in this warfare of the spirit are the false teachers and the false teachings that come out of every organized religion today, which are the perversion complete of the Great White Brotherhood's true teachings on the sacred mysteries of Life. Every false religion, every phony theology, every belief system that intrudes itself between a man and his God, a soul and her Lord is a part of the warfare of the spirit.

World Communism is a false ideology. It is the perversion of the Community of the Holy Spirit. And in this "communalism," this so-called socialism, every individual is reduced to the lowest common denominator of the human evolution. By denying individual accountability, Communism denies people their right to a sacred labor and to a standard of excellence as they execute the work of their hearts, their heads and their hands. It gives them absolutely no incentive to strive for Christhood.

World Communism cancels out the path of initiation of the Guru-chela relationship, wherein day by day everyone can reap what he sows and show forth his handiwork. He can see that his input determines his output and that his output determines his reward - and make a determined freewill decision to increase his input if he wants to increase his output and therefore his reward. As Paul said to the Galatians, "Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap."<sup>2</sup> This is the Law and the Lawgiver that World Communism denies.

Reaping what we sow, no more and no less, we can see the multiplication of our effort day by day because we are willing to strive for quality both in our work and in ourselves. This is the path of discipleship. In America we are all intended to be on the path of individual self-mastery through our Holy Christ Self. And a lot of us would be, had it not been for the abuse and the takeover of the free enterprise system by the monopoly capitalists, Wall Street and the international bankers.

Even so, we have more drive than the people in Communist countries, where it doesn't matter whether you try or you don't - either way you stand in line. You show up for work, you punch in, but the system provides no incentive for you to take pride in your work because you're worth something. For in a Communist country you have no worth because your labor has no worth. This is the killing of the human spirit. And this is what the white horse brings.

Modern Christianity, in my estimation, is just as bad as World Communism because it separates the people from their God and provides them with a phony panacea, a placebo. It sets up Jesus as an idol who will automatically save all Christians and it keeps from the people Jesus' real message of salvation - that he came to show us how to walk the path of personal Christhood so that each one of us could walk it and win it for ourself.

World Capitalism itself is a sham. It is as corrupt and corrupting as Hell. Its by-products are materialism, greed, self-indulgence and selfishness, along with the wanton destruction of Mother Earth. It is polluted and it is callous. But that's because the Nephilim gods and their godless creation have ruined it and civilization with it.

The embodied fallen angels, "the Establishment," have made us vulnerable to the ride of the Four Horsemen by bringing upon us the karma for their pollution of the earth body as well as the bodies of the people and animal life. For our bodies are our Mother's even as our spirits are our Father's. And these gods of the West, who control basic commodities, business, industry, money, the farmers, the workers, the government, and everything else they have managed to get their hands on, have used their power and our money to build the enemy of the East, whose military might is about to destroy all that Saint Germain has built and stood for.

But God is not mocked by the white horseman. God is not mocked by the returning karma of the people. God is not mocked by our sowings or our reapings. Let us not be mocked by them either.

---

<sup>2</sup>Gal. 6:7.

## The Warring in the Members

The red horse occupies the third quadrant. His domain is the astral body of the people and their planet (see fig. 6). This is the body of desire and the emotions, of the subconscious, and of the electronic belt that contains our karmic patterns.

“And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come! And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.”<sup>3</sup>

The red horseman brings the warfare against the World Mother on earth and the Divine Mother in heaven. The war waged and lost by the fallen angels against the Woman clothed with the Sun and her Manchild is recorded in Revelation 12. Archangel Michael and his legions defeated the fallen angels and cast them out of heaven into the earth, where they continue to make war with the Woman and her seed.

The red horseman is the scourge of the earth, bringing war and bloodshed and strife. Men will die because they place their hopes in the false gods and the false theology of civilization instead of in the true and living God, their Mighty I AM Presence with them.

When they give in to the white horse, they open themselves up to the red horse, who visits upon them their harvest of misdeeds, including their hatred of the Mother. This hatred is often transferred to their own souls and bodies as they visit upon this temple of the Mother bad food, drugs, alcohol, nicotine, sugar and unhealthy, unwholesome activities. The hatred of the Mother extends to her Manchild, the emergent Christ in all of us, through child abuse, pornography and poor education.

The power of the red horse to take peace from the earth is the power of the returning karma of war.

Where did this war originate? Paul told us. He described what we have all experienced at one time or another:

For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.

Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me.

For I delight in the law of God after the inward man:

But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.<sup>4</sup>

Paul perceived a warring in his members, right in his own subconscious, right in his own four lower bodies. The causes of war on a planetary scale are the warring in the subconscious and the divisions within our own psyche that we do not resolve because we do not put the will of God first.

These psychological problems cannot be resolved until we finally bend the knee and confess that the Lord our God is one Lord and that he rules in our temple and in our lives. And that means that we challenge the not-self and surrender ourselves and our free will to his will. For in our state of ignorance, and in the absence of a fully integrated Christhood, we lack the capacity to know and to be God's will until we surrender all of our self-idolatries and inordinate desires. The red horseman would have no power over the children of God and no entree into our worlds if it were not for the warring in our members.

The great sword that the red horseman bears represents the weapons and the armies that have been created by what Saint Germain calls the International Capitalist/Communist Conspiracy, made up of the betrayers of the people East and West. They are aligned with one another on the astral

---

<sup>3</sup>Rev. 6:3, 4.

<sup>4</sup>Rom. 7:19-23.

plane because they are of the same seed - the seed of the Wicked One - and because they have the same enemy: the Christ who lives in the hearts of the children of the Mother.

They do not need to be outwardly connected when they are of the same ilk and vibration, when they work for the same ends and when they have the same genetic enmity against Christ. They are birds of a feather and they always flock together. No matter what their outward appearance, inwardly they are one.

#### The False Father and the False Mother

Both sides have built their arsenals. But for the most part, it is the capitalists and the international bankers who, through the sale of technology and manufacturing plants that are used to produce weapons, have armed World Communism and placed in the hands of the Soviet Union this great sword. It is the capitalists who have given the red horse the capacity to take peace from the earth.<sup>5</sup>

We see in the white and the red horses the perversion of the Body and Blood of Christ. As the red horse represents the Soviet Union, so the whole Communist system becomes the perversion of the Mystical Body of God. Instead of Mother Russia being the place of the Sangha, of the Community of the Buddha and of the path of Christic initiation, it has become a gray, drab, monochromatic plane of World Socialism. The system, and those who perpetuate it by Hell's reinforcements, is a violation of the Mother Flame of Russia, of Mother Russia herself, and of the Holy Spirit in the people.

On one level the red and the white horses act as the International Capitalist/Communist Conspiracy, the false father and the false mother. Whereas in two wars our sons and daughters liberated the world, the agreements made at the end of the wars by the fallen ones in our governments caused the failure of our mission just as we raised the cup of victory to our lips. And thus, millions of lives were lost in vain. The Treaty of Versailles created the conditions that led to World War II.<sup>6</sup> The agreement at Yalta set up the enslavement of Eastern Europe.<sup>7</sup>

The people gave their lives to liberate Europe in World War II, another war to end all wars, and then the fallen ones sit down at the conference table and give Eastern Europe to Stalin! It is absolutely the crime beyond the crime of the century!

And the U.S. betrayal of Chiang Kai-shek in China in the late 1940s had the same result: World Communism devouring a nation that now has more than a billion people. And it was practically a gift to Mao Tse-tung from the powers that be in the White House and the U.S. State Department.<sup>8</sup>

This is why we are "America the vulnerable." We have allowed the fallen angels in our midst to betray the people of the whole world, country by country, when America's destiny was, is and ever shall be to defend that flame of freedom and to give to each nation the concept of self-government in a representative democracy.

I was a student in Switzerland during the Hungarian revolution in 1956. I will never forget the

---

<sup>5</sup>For more factual information on capitalist support for the Communist war machine, see 1988 PoW Book I, Introduction I, p. 180; Saint Germain On Prophecy, Book 2, pp. 36-47, 93-104.

<sup>6</sup>The Treaty of Versailles was signed on June 28, 1919, by the United States, France, England, Italy and Germany. The responsibility for World War I was formally placed on Germany and its allies, and Germany was required to make large reparation payments. A number of German territories were awarded to European nations: Alsace and Lorraine were restored to France; most of West Prussia was awarded to Poland; and Danzig was established as a free city. Plebiscites (popular votes of an entire country or district expressing an opinion for or against a choice of government or ruler) resulted in the transfer of lands to Belgium, Denmark and Poland. The Allies were to occupy the Rhineland for 15 years and the French were given administrative authority over the Saar Territory for an equal period. The German army and navy each were reduced to 100,000 men, the country was forbidden to build major offensive weapons, and the right bank of the Rhine was to be permanently demilitarized. The rise of National Socialism, the Nazi movement, was attributed in part to the German dissatisfaction with the terms of the treaty. Hitler unilaterally canceled the military clauses of the treaty in 1935 and began the remilitarization of the Rhineland in 1936.

<sup>7</sup>President Franklin D. Roosevelt, Prime Minister Winston Churchill and Premier Joseph Stalin met in Yalta February 4-11, 1945. [2]

<sup>8</sup>See 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 181-84.

scenes of Soviet tanks moving into Budapest and crushing the youth in the streets. I will never forget the Hungarian refugees who arrived in Switzerland and the Swiss people demonstrating against this horrendous crime.

And the justification by the United States for her failure to come to the aid of every nation in Eastern Europe has always been the philosophy of noninterference in “internal affairs.” Even though in 1956 we could have stopped the Soviet invasion of Hungary without fear of nuclear annihilation, we chose not to stand between the people and these vicious fallen angels who have arrived at the leadership of the Soviet Union.

### Warfare Against the Son

The black horse occupies the second quadrant. His domain is the mental body of the people and their planet. This is the body of the intellect and of cogitation. But it can also be the body of the conniving of the carnal mind. Hence, it is the body of duality, where the higher and the lower consciousness vie for the allegiance of the soul.

“And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come! And I beheld, and lo a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand. And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine.”<sup>9</sup>

The black horseman represents the warfare against the Son and his manifestation of the Christ in God’s children on earth (fig. 6). This warfare is directed against all that proceeds from the Christ Mind and against all creative endeavors that are based on the standards of the Son of God, all that is good and beautiful and ennobling of the soul. The black horseman systematically opposes all that uplifts, all that increases the potential of the individual to internalize the Word and to embody the Light.

The black horseman represents the perversion of the conscious and the subconscious mind. He carries the black despair that settles at all levels of the lower mind, which, in its state of being out of alignment with the Higher Mind, knows that it is separate from God. The misqualified energy of karma is stored in the “electronic belt” of the subconscious. And the archetypal absolutes of antipathy towards the four Persons of the Godhead are locked in the unconscious.<sup>10</sup>

The unconscious is that portion of the self that shall never return to God. And the only way that our soul can return to God is if we disassociate ourselves from the non-Being and the non-Reality that has collected as we have self-identified beneath the level of our Christhood, which is our Real Self. We must stand apart from this synthetic self and through God, the Mighty I AM Presence, direct the violet flame and the sacred fire into it that it might be utterly consumed.

The black horseman holds up his scales to deliver the message that this civilization has been weighed in the balances and has been found wanting:<sup>11</sup>

The people of this civilization have misused God’s Light, the oil and the wine, that has been given to them, by bartering for men’s souls as if they were commodities.

They have misused the oil of the Mother and the wine of the Father in every area of life. Therefore these shall be taken from them.

The people of this planet have pinned their hopes and their civilization on a banking establishment and a power elite that shall not stand! And the Darkness that they have created shall return one-thousandfold to haunt them.

---

<sup>9</sup>Rev. 6:5, 6.

<sup>10</sup>The term “subconscious” is defined as the mental activities just below the threshold of consciousness which can be easily brought to consciousness; the aspect of the mind that is an entity or a part of the mental apparatus overlapping, equivalent to, or distinct from the unconscious. [3]

<sup>11</sup>Daniel 5:27.

That is the word of the Lord God spoken to me on February 22, 1989.

### Death Rides in the Unconscious

The pale horse occupies the fourth quadrant. His domain is the physical earth body of the people and their planet. This body is the gift of the Father-Mother God, the necessary vehicle for fulfilling our karma on planet earth. Truly it is the temple of the living God that our souls inhabit for life's journey. The bodies of man and woman and the body of the earth are sacred and we must not desecrate them. Speaking of the four lower bodies as an integrated whole, Paul said, "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?"<sup>12</sup>

"And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come! And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth."<sup>13</sup>

The pale horseman represents the warfare against the Holy Spirit. Unless there is a rallying of the Lightbearers of the world who can receive and understand this message and who will call for divine intervention, this prophecy of the pale horse may very well come to pass between April 23, 1990, and April 23, 2002. We may anticipate the early signs of it at the end of 1989 and continuing through March and April 1990.

The pale horse brings the remainder of returning karma. He brings up the rear and delivers to our doorstep whatever is left after the first three have passed through. The stronghold of Death is the physical body. The stronghold of Hell is the unconscious. He whose name is Death embodies the elements of our mortality, our "mortalness," if you will. He whose name is Hell embodies the absolute antipathies of the dweller-on-the-threshold that occupies the realm of the unconscious.

When Death rides he takes the souls of those who are "the dead," whether they are alive or dead in the physical sense. The Death Rider overtakes the people who have not already overtaken him and gone beyond him. He will find you whether you are alive or dead in the physical octave. If your soul is anchored in everlasting life, he will have no power over you. For our Lord Jesus has promised us: "I AM the resurrection and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die."<sup>14</sup>

We must be ready for the fourth horseman before he gets here. We must meet the initiations before they are upon us. We have to know that our God within us is the victor over Death and Hell.

The unconscious contains records that are not easily contacted, our own records of Death and Hell that we have sown for centuries or that we have accepted from without. These must be exorcised in the name I AM THAT I AM Jesus Christ. We must clear our temples so that God may descend in the midst of them and be our everlasting life, so that when this pale horse confronts us, we will have no part with him and he will have no part with us. As Jesus said of the approaching Tempter: "The prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me."<sup>15</sup> The Jerusalem Bible translation reads: "The prince of this world is on his way. He has no power over me."

I would like to see every one of us be able to say, "Through God in me I have no point of vulnerability to the Four Horsemen!" Therefore we must use the time and space of these hours and days and months ahead to invoke the all-consuming fire of God and direct it into the negative karma, the negative momentums and the negative vibrations that we perceive in our souls and our four lower bodies.

As you give your violet flame decrees, momentums of doubt, fear, depression, death, aggression

---

<sup>12</sup>I Cor. 3:16.

<sup>13</sup>Rev. 6:8.

<sup>14</sup>John 11:25, 26.

<sup>15</sup>John 14:30.

and anger may surface from both the subconscious and the unconscious. These surfacings of layers of repressed and unresolved emotions are the tip of the iceberg of our human creation. Once they are uncovered, we must acknowledge them for what they are and then cast them into the sacred fire, allowing the next layer and the next and the next to rise to the surface to be cast into the sacred fire and be consumed.

You can sit in front of your fireplace before a roaring fire while you give your violet flame decrees. As you feel misqualified energies coming up for transmutation, write down those conditions and ask the Holy Spirit to consume them as you cast your slips of paper one by one into the fire. The key is to identify the momentum, name it, and then cast it out in the name Jesus Christ.

It is important to enlist the aid of the Seven Archangels in this struggle. During your violet flame sessions, offer the following prayer:

Beloved Archangel Michael! Jophiel! Chamuel! Gabriel! Raphael! Uriel! Zadkiel! Enter my four lower bodies, my electronic belt, my subconscious and my unconscious now!

In the name of Jesus Christ, bind and cast out all discarnate entities and all momentums of doubt, fear, human questioning of God, depression, death, aggression and anger! Cast out all animal magnetism connected with them.

Beloved Archangel Zadkiel, Blaze forth;BO the violet flame! to consume now all layers of repressed and unresolved emotions. I cast them into the flame!

Beloved Archangel Michael, I call to you to excise the genetic tares of the fallen ones sown in the folds of the garment of my consciousness by the enemy while I was asleep. I ask you to sow the good wheat of the Christ Mind in its place.

I implore my God, my own beloved Mighty I AM Presence, to exorcise from me the cause, effect, record and memory of all negative conditions of consciousness (name conditions) .

The prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me!

(The prince of this world is on his way.

He has no power over me!)

Through God in me

I have no point of vulnerability to the karma delivered by the Four Horsemen!

I accept it done this hour in the full

Power, Wisdom and Love of the Cosmic Christ!

When you feel at peace and see the smiling face of your Holy Christ Self before you, seal your session with decrees to Archangel Michael and Astrea for the protection of the spiritual work you have accomplished. Then follow Jesus' admonishment: "Go and sin no more, lest a worse thing come upon thee."<sup>16</sup>

Concerning the tares and the wheat of our psychology, Jesus told the multitudes:

The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field.

But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that

---

<sup>16</sup>John 5:14.

we go and gather them up?

But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.<sup>17</sup>

The meaning of this mystery is that through our own carnal-mindedness the fallen angels are able to plant seeds of Darkness in the fallow fields of our four lower bodies. When these tares spring up and we find them growing side by side with our wheat we say, "Where has this come from? How could these tares be growing in my field?"

In order to separate out the tares from the wheat in the field of the subconscious mind, and even in the unconscious, we have to be astute in our calls, always asking the Holy Spirit to teach us how to pray and what we ought to pray for. And then we have to be incisive in delivering our fiats in the full power of the spoken Word, which will separate the tares from the wheat and consume them without consuming the wheat.

Hell follows with the Death Rider. Hell consists of mankind's collective human creation. Its denizens are demons, discarnates and fallen angels, tagging behind the Death Rider. Hell is the collective unconscious of the planet where all the latent fears, desires and suppressed hatreds go. To those who create their own reality I say, you have also created your own Hell; and that which you have created will come back to haunt you when the pale horse rides. So now is the time to call to God to bind the Death and Hell of your own human creation. Then when the pale horse rides, you will be counted among the untouchables.

#### The Astral Plane

The fourth part of the earth that Death is given power over according to John's vision is the lowest vibrating part of the planet. And if you already live in the lower vibrations of the astral body of the earth, the pale horse will find you. Now, many people think that "the fourth part of the earth" means a quarter of the population or a quarter of the geographical area. But far more than a quarter of the people live in that lowest vibrating part of the earth - the astral plane, the state of consciousness called Hell.

The astral plane defines the bottom 25 percent of the karmic ladder. Today those who occupy the bottom 25 percent of the karmic ladder are most of the people on the planet, thanks to rock music, drugs and the junk that's on television, which is nothing but the astral sewer regurgitated day after day. That sewer is being pumped into the people who spend hours and hours of their week, year in and year out, in front of the TV set.

To be precise, 85 percent of earth's evolutions today - in or out of embodiment (and there are many out of embodiment) - are functioning at the low end of the spectrum of the astral plane.

It's amazing how quickly you can get soiled and saturated with the scum of the astral plane if you don't invoke the Light of God on a daily basis and transmute that silt that collects in the world's astral body and your own. You have to keep it off of you and out of you. If your consciousness and your vibrations gravitate to the daily soap opera rounds that people make of their lives, then you are in the astral plane; and when the pale horse rides, you will be subjugated by him.

What is so boring about the plots of soap operas on TV and "real life" and in the movies being produced today is that they no longer take into account the real dramas of our lives, which deal with the warfare of the spirit and the forces of Good and Evil and Light and Darkness. Instead of the inconsequential sequences we see on the screen today, we need to grapple with the challenges of Life and Death, where free will and right and wrong decisions make the difference as to whether or not

---

<sup>17</sup>Matt. 13:24-30.

individuals and nations survive. This generation needs to experience the classic confrontations that Life presents to every soul, such as those found in Shakespeare, in the Bible, in our history books and in classical literature.

The problem is that people would rather be rocked in the cradle of fantasy as they escape to an illusory world of titillations and terror, temptresses and tycoons, where all of their unfulfilled desires can be vicariously fulfilled. People don't want Reality, so they don't get it - from God or the media.

Great drama comes from the themes of the world's scriptures, from the ancient story of the warfare in heaven, for instance, when Archangel Michael and his legions of Light prevailed over the fallen angels who were cast out of heaven into the earth plane.<sup>18</sup> Or from the Fall of Adam and Eve and all the subsequent trials and testings of heroes and antiheroes.

So instead of showing the sequences of karma and the cumulative effects of past lives, instead of portraying the real life story of the soul, and of many souls who pass through this world the victors over Death and Hell, television parades the melodramas of the synthetic self, which has no end and no new beginnings. It just runs on and on like a lost spacecraft drifting endlessly through space - the timeless space of the astral plane.

It is sad but true that this is where the pale horse will find the bulk of the people when he rides the physical plane in the decade of the 1990s. And I suppose that until the hour of confrontation children and adults alike will continue to prop themselves up before the TV.

And it is so hypnotic that they can just sit there hour after hour mesmerized. It's so bad that when the fourth horse-man comes they may not even know it. As Seneca said, "They are unwilling to live, and yet they do not know how to die," and Mark Prophet echoed, "They have never lived. They can wait to die."

If they have an I AM Presence and a Holy Christ Self, all the Light that is flowing to them that they should be using to overcome their karma and to pursue their sacred labor with creativity and excellence will flow instead into the people on TV. It goes into the actors and actresses, into the goods that are advertised and into the corporations that display their lifeless foods and their wares that destroy the environment.

While absorbing the low vibrations of everything that is unreal, these couch potatoes feed these empty personas their life and light simply in the process of riveting their "eyes" on them. So you give everything you've got to the TV set and what do you get? A sack of potatoes!

And those who follow soap operas get to the place where they believe that the characters are real people. They hang on every event and eventuality, which are simply maya - products of somebody else's fantasizing. They vicariously experience life through the TV and wind up with no real experiences in their own lives. Life is no longer real.

So that's how I can say that 85 percent of earth's evolutions live in the astral plane. The media and the entertainment industry are everywhere. There are TV sets in the jungles of Ghana in mud huts. I have seen them. I went into one of these huts to chat with a mother and to my astonishment there was a TV set on the mud floor! This comes back to the indoctrination by the white horse, which destroys the spirit of the people of the world through the consumer products of America that have gone to every nation and to the farthest corners of the planet.

#### The Powers Given to Death and Hell

In my February 22 vision, the Lord God gave me an interpretation of the four powers given to Death, and to Hell that follows with him:

1- Death and Hell have the power "to kill with sword." This means they kill with the misuse of the sacred word. That's the true meaning of sword. S-word - s stands for sacred and word stands for

---

<sup>18</sup>Rev. 12:7-9.



Word. The sharp sword that proceeds out of the mouth of the Faithful and True is the Sacred Word. But this sword in the mouths of the unredeemed can be misused. The sacred word that we use as we qualify God's Light through our throat chakras either can become the sword of the Spirit to bring Good into manifestation by our dynamic decrees and good words and works, or it can become a sword of Evil.

The ultimate misuse of the sacred word is rock music, drugs, sugar, alcohol, nicotine, black magic, witchcraft, Satanism, death worship, lying and murder. It is also the perversion of the sacred fire in perverted sex and in all of the seven chakras.

The ultimate misuse of the sacred word returns as cataclysm. It is written in scripture, "All they that take the sword shall perish with the sword."<sup>19</sup> Elohim have pronounced, "He who misuses the sacred word shall die through the return karma of that sacred word misused." The misuse of the sacred word in all areas of life is more prevalent today than it has been since the days of Atlantis.

2- Death and Hell have the power "to kill with hunger." The people will be hungry. They will be physically hungry and they will also be possessed of the hunger that comes from not being able to find God. It is a desperate hunger.

3- They have the power "to kill with Death." The Death Rider kills with the death that the people have sent forth. For they have visited their death (their death consciousness) upon the earth.

4- They have the power "to kill with the beasts of the earth." The beasts of the earth are the people's passions and emotions that they unleash. These are personified as entities and demons. The Ascended Masters have given us many decrees and invocations for the exorcism of these "beasts" from our four lower bodies, our chakras and our electronic belts.

We see, then, that it is imperative (and I have preached sermon after sermon on this subject) that we withdraw our energy from everything that is of the astral plane and everything that would pull our Light from us. By so doing we can escape the Death Rider and receive renewed opportunity to serve in embodiment on earth.

When Jesus was confronted by the chief priests and captains of the temple guard and elders before he was arrested, he said, "This is your hour, and the power of darkness."<sup>20</sup> We have to understand that the hour of Light's power will come. But before that hour come, there is the hour of karma and of the judgment of the self-styled rulers of this world. They have had their day, their karma is on its way as surely as Four Horsemen ride, and they will be judged "every man according to their works."<sup>21</sup>

We have to recognize those things that tie us to Death and Hell and separate ourselves out from them so that we will not be caught by the pale horse delivering the karma of the physical quadrant. We must balance our karma by words and works worthy of the Lord. And let us not be caught on the astral plane - in or out of the body, whether in life or in death - when the Death Rider rides, with Hell following after.

"Prophecy for the 1990s III" is based on a lecture given by Elizabeth Clare Prophet May 21, 1989, Sheraton Centre Hotel, New York, updated for publication in the 1990 Pearls of Wisdom. Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

<sup>19</sup>Matt. 26:52; Rev. 13:10.

<sup>20</sup>Luke 22:53.

<sup>21</sup>Rev. 20:13.



# Chapter 8

## The Messenger - February 25, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 8 - The Messenger - February 25, 1990

Prophecy for the 1990s

III by

Elizabeth Clare Prophet

5

Astrology Heralds the Four Horsemen: A Corroboration of My Vision

In delivering the prophecy of the Lord, I look to astrology for corroboration. By astrology it is possible to chart the time and manner in which persons, institutions, nations and planets receive their karma and their initiations. Every sign of the zodiac and every planet is an initiator and can play the role of guru in our life.

It is not our astrology that creates us but it is we who create our astrology. That's why we could have 10 people in this room all born at the same time and the same place - in other words, with identical birth charts - and yet every one of them would be different.

Our astrology at birth has encoded within it the sum of karma that the Lords of Karma have decreed we will face in this life. And when karma returns we are tested. How will we meet it? Will we collapse and fold up, or will we decide to face it and conquer it? Each individual will respond to his astrology, hence his karma, according to the psychology of personality developed through many embodiments.

If we look at astrology as a psychic prediction that is final, then we might as well believe in predestination and accept that we are hapless victims of our fate. Not so the sons and daughters of God. We see our astrology, our karma and our initiations as challenges to be relished. We run to greet them. When we see potentially negative configurations in our charts, we rise to the occasion and to the altar. We call to God and we direct his Light into that point of vulnerability within ourselves.

What we think of as "bad" astrology really indicates our own karmic vulnerability. It tells us that we will be vulnerable to a particular transit and the momentums it will deposit on our doorstep on a day and hour that can be foreknown. And the Ascended Masters tell us that unless we reinforce the Light in our chakras and give our violet flame decrees to transmute that returning karma which the transit portends, we will suffer loss.

All of the planets in this solar system have a collective unconscious, a collective momentum of the negatives that their evolutions have brought forth. They also have a collective Higher Consciousness, which consists of the positive momentums that their evolutions have brought forth. This is true of

stars and more distant energy sources as well. So when we reap good karma and bad karma, both are multiplied by the energy field of the planets as they are configured in our astrological charts.

#### Four Planets in Capricorn: Saturn the Tester

Let us examine the rare and powerful astrological configuration that occurred on February 22-23, 1988, when four planets - Mars, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune - formed a conjunction<sup>0</sup> in Capricorn (fig. 7). This conjunction marks the formal starting point of a period of upheaval and change on the planet. Due to the influence of Capricorn and its ruling planet, Saturn, it also indicates the start of an extended period of karmic reckoning.

Capricorn is an earth sign governed by the planet Saturn. It tends to limit or bring to an end unrealistic behavior. Capricorn is associated with hard times, difficult challenges, recessions and depressions, delays, lack of opportunity, and the limitation or loss of freedom as a result of increased governmental authority. Under its influence, people are often pessimistic and depressed; they become the victims of their own sense of limitation.

Remember, when I explained the Cosmic Clock I said that Capricorn is the point of origin of all cycles. And I pointed out that the Dark Cycle, although it began under the sign of Taurus, is charted from Capricorn on the 12 o'clock line. This Capricorn conjunction presents the opportunity for a cycle of Light as well as of Darkness. It all depends on where you are in your solar evolution and whether you have been able to dispel or transmute the Darkness in your world by the Light of your I AM Presence.

Like the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse, the four planets in Capricorn will affect each one of us differently, even as they will affect the planet as a whole. They come to tell us that the testing and the initiation of ourselves and our planet is at hand.

The Ascended Masters elaborate on the astrological configurations that corroborate the prophecy I receive from the Lord God. The Maha Chohan, a being of Light who is the representative of the Holy Spirit to the planet, dictated on February 21, 1988, when I was stumping for Saint Germain's Coming Revolution in Higher Consciousness in Beverly Hills. He said:

I am known as the Maha Chohan; and therefore, beloved, understand that I represent to you not only the Holy Spirit but the initiations of that Spirit.

I have come, then, to deliver to this city the mandate of the Holy Spirit. . . .

Blessed ones, you have heard the interpretation of the four planets in Capricorn. One must understand that they represent the deliverance of the Holy Spirit's initiations to a planet; and as the result of the consequences of the violation of the Holy Ghost in little children, in Nature and [in] the defilement of the body and the soul, you will see that unless these things are turned around and a people invoke the Light of their God and fulfill the Law of Love, those things projected will come to pass.

This [astrological] configuration is the testing of the four lower bodies of a planet and a people.<sup>1</sup>

Mars has moved on, but Saturn, Uranus and Neptune will continue to form a series of conjunctions in Capricorn until Saturn moves into Aquarius in February 1991.

Saturn-Uranus-Neptune conjunctions are extremely rare. The last one took place nearly 700 years ago in the year 1307 in the sign of Scorpio. It initiated a century that is known for its violence and social chaos. Historian Barbara Tuchman called it "a violent, tormented, bewildered, suffering and disintegrating age, a time, as many thought, of Satan triumphant."<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>0</sup>An exact conjunction occurs when planets occupy the same degree of the zodiac. The orb, or space in which a conjunction is effective, is 10 degrees. Conjunctions combine planetary influences and start a cycle of experience.

<sup>1</sup>Maha Chohan, February 21, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book I, p. 225.

<sup>2</sup>Barbara W. Tuchman, *A Distant Mirror: The Calamitous Fourteenth Century* (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1978), p. xii.

At that time, popular belief held that the Four Horsemen were riding across the nations. And so they were - heralded by Mars, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune forming a tight conjunction between 11 and 13 degrees Scorpio from January 7 to 9, 1307.

This conjunction was the primary astrological impulse for the Black Death (bubonic plague), which eventually killed one-third of the population of Europe. Since Saturn-Uranus-Neptune conjunctions are rare, they inaugurate long-term cycles and their effects may not be felt immediately. The bubonic plague, for example, did not originate until 25 years after the conjunction and did not spread across Europe until 40 years afterwards.

Today the Four Horsemen are riding up and down the nation. In fact, they're globe-trotting. They are about to deliver a physical karma to a people who are physically unprepared. At the subconscious level the souls of the people know this. So the depression of their own subconscious sets in and they say: "We're not ready for this. We can't handle it. How are we going to deal with it?"

The chelas of the Ascended Masters deal with it by calling to the Holy Spirit for the violet flame and then directing it into those troublesome conditions of consciousness and the planetary sense of foreboding. We call to the legions of Light to bind that astral force of depression. We call to the Seven Archangels for divine intercession and we sing to them.

And through this calling upon the name of the Lord, I AM THAT I AM, as the prophet Joel said, we are delivered.<sup>3</sup> And we see a clearing of the depression and a lifting of the weight so that we can truly deal with the challenges of the physical karma that the Four Horsemen deliver. But tackling this misqualified substance on a planetary scale is no small challenge.

A Capricorn conjunction was one of the primary astrological impulses for the Great Depression. A conjunction of five planets occurred in Capricorn on December 30, 1929. Remember that the effects of a configuration can manifest for a period of time before and after that configuration actually occurs.

The February 1988 Capricorn conjunction marked the beginning of a period of economic contraction that could be even more severe than the Great Depression. The earliest sign of this Capricorn cycle was the great stock market crash of October 19, 1987. We have now entered a period of economic downturn during which the era of financial expansion related to oil and international finance has come to a halt and national economies have started and will continue to contract.

There are a number of things we can expect in the years following this conjunction in Capricorn. Nations will become conservative and reactionary, there will be massive debt liquidation, the real price of commodities will fall and a pessimistic mood will sweep the earth. A crash in the real estate market is likely. The potential for war is great and the United States government will be in danger of being destroyed or reformed beyond recognition. In the United States we could either see revolution or a collapse into fascist repression. We can also expect major cataclysm.

On November 13, 1989, Saturn made an exact conjunction to Neptune at 10 degrees 22 minutes Capricorn, and both made an exact opposition<sup>4</sup> to Jupiter at 10 degrees 29 minutes Cancer (fig. 8). This configuration heralds the next big drop in the economy. I predicted in February 1988 that the next big drop in the market was likely to come around this configuration. And so it did. On October 13, 1989, the stock market dropped 190 points, the biggest drop since the stock market crashed 508 points on October 19, 1987. There may be further drops ahead. Since Saturn and Neptune are slow-moving planets, their conjunctions occur about every 36 years and have a three-to six-month period in which their direct effects can be felt.

While most astroeconomists expected more dramatic events on or around November 13, there

---

<sup>3</sup>Joel 2:32.

<sup>4</sup>An exact opposition occurs when planets are 180 degrees apart from each other in the zodiac. The orb, or space in which an opposition is effective, is 10 degrees. Oppositions show either union and cooperation or separation and conflict.

have been signs of economic weakness and debt liquidation, including the Savings and Loan bailout. And the pace of debt liquidation is likely to increase as the economy moves into a recession.

The opposition of Saturn and Neptune to Jupiter will affect more than the New York Stock Exchange and other stock, bond and commodity markets. It will be a critical factor in triggering major debt liquidation and could lead to the dissolution of much of the Western banking system. It could even precipitate an economic crisis so severe as to provoke revolution or lead to the dissolution of the U.S. government.

As I present these configurations, I am telling you what could happen if there occurred an unrestrained release of the karma that these astrological configurations portend. But these conditions can be mitigated if the Lightbearers call forth the Light and sustain it. When we do our work and hold our prayer vigils worldwide, we can see a lessening of the effects of these astrological portents.

You have to realize that your God Presence is able to change the entire planet through you. You must not feel puny and decide that your mantras do not have an effect. They have a stupendous effect. You are a multiplier of God's Light that flows through your chakras.

### The Astrological Chart of the Dark Cycle

The Dark Cycle also amplifies the conjunction of Mars, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune in Capricorn that was at its tightest on February 22 to 23, 1988. (Students of the Cosmic Clock will be interested to note that the conjunction took place at the beginning of the 10 o'clock month of the Dark Cycle in Cancer.)

The chart for April 23, 1969, the beginning of the Dark Cycle, is characterized by not one but two Fingers of God (fig. 9). The appearance of one Finger of God is infrequent. The appearance of two is rare. A Finger of God (also called a Yod) is formed when two planets that are sextile (60 degrees apart) are both quincunx (150 degrees apart from) a third planet. They form an acute, fingerlike isosceles triangle in space.

The more prominent of the two Fingers of God dominates this chart. It contains six planets, including the Sun and all of the outer planets - Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, Neptune and Pluto. This Finger of God is formed by a conjunction of Saturn at 29 degrees Aries and the Sun at 2 degrees Taurus quincunx Neptune at 28 degrees Scorpio and also quincunx a rare Jupiter-Uranus-Pluto conjunction - Pluto at 22 degrees Virgo, Jupiter at 27 degrees Virgo and Uranus at 0 degrees Libra. It points to the karmic necessity for self-sacrificing, innovative spiritual solutions and activity in a practical mode in the spheres of government, the economy, social institutions and agriculture.

The second Finger of God is formed by a sextile of Mercury at 17 degrees Taurus to the Moon at 12 degrees Cancer, both quincunx Mars at 16 degrees Sagittarius. This shows the potential for a periodic eruption of wars and battles due to anger, resentment and unconscious aggressive forces.

This chart does not have any planets in Capricorn. But the Dark Cycle itself, like all cycles, starts on the 12 o'clock line in the sign of Capricorn and progresses around the Cosmic Clock from the Capricorn point of origin.

On March 25, 1989, Surya said:

You are given to understand that the Dark Cycles that are appearing are a conclusion of ages of the return of karma; and this karma is becoming physical. And therefore as you go from the Dark Cycle of April 23, 1989, to April 23, 1990 and 1991, you will be seeing a greater physical manifestation of that which is now predominantly in the astral plane, although there be much in the physical octave that is the returning karma of thousands of years.<sup>5</sup>

### The Astrology of War

Let us look at the astrology of war. There are three major astrological indexes of peace and war

---

<sup>5</sup>Surya, March 25, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 205-6.

that have accurately predicted positive periods of harmony, growth, optimism and peace as well as negative periods of destabilization, disruption and decay. In the late 1980s and early 1990s these indexes will be in the depths of their negative cycle, indicating conflict of the magnitude of past world wars.

The indexes were discovered by French astrologers Henri-Joseph Gouchon and Claude Ganeau based on the zodiacal proximity of the five outer planets, Jupiter through Pluto.

As astrologer Charles Harvey explains, Gouchon “found that by calculating the total angular separation between each of the pairs of the outer planets” (Jupiter-Saturn, Jupiter-Uranus, etc.) on an annual basis “and then plotting the results on a graph, the resulting curve showed a striking correspondence with the main periods of international crisis and, most impressively, major and sustained ‘lows’ for the period 1914-18 and 1944-45.”<sup>6</sup>

Astrologer Andre Barbault called this the “Cyclical Index.” The Korean War, the Suez Crisis and the Vietnam War also correspond with a negative slope on the graph. Ganeau developed two variations of the Cyclical Index, the “Index of Cyclic Equilibrium” and the “Index of Cyclical Variation.”

In February 1988, as part of the larger Capricorn configuration, Saturn and Uranus formed a conjunction at 0 degrees Capricorn. Historically, Saturn-Uranus conjunctions, squares and oppositions have heralded war, even without the presence of other complicating factors.

Since we are discussing war on planet earth in the twentieth century, we must consider the astrological charts of the two largest players on the world stage - the United States of America and the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics.<sup>7</sup>

Many astrologers believe the United States was born on July 4, 1776. This would give the nation a Cancer Sun. The Ascended Master El Morya explained to me that the United States was conceived at 5:13 p.m. local mean time (LMT) on July 4, 1776, the moment of the signing of the Declaration of Independence, and that she was born at 1:30 p.m. LMT on April 30, 1789, when George Washington was inaugurated and the federal government first assumed its formal powers. Thus the Sun in the U.S. conceptional chart (fig. 10) is at 13 degrees 19 minutes Cancer, and the Sun in the U.S. birth chart (fig. 11) is at 10 degrees 46 minutes Taurus.

El Morya also revealed that the Soviet Union was born at 3 p.m. Eastern European time (EET), November 7, 1917, when Lenin proclaimed to the Petersburg Soviet, “Now begins a new era in the history of Russia, and this third Russian revolution must finally lead to the victory of Socialism.”<sup>8</sup> The Soviet Sun is at 14 degrees 33’ Scorpio (fig. 12).

The U.S. natal Sun at 10 degrees 46 minutes Taurus and the Soviet natal Sun at 14 degrees 33’ Scorpio are in polarity. In astrological terms they form an opposition, which can show either union and cooperation or separation and conflict. Since this polarity involves the nations’ Suns (which represent the national identity and leadership), it shows that at times the United States and the Soviet Union are cooperative and at other times not. In general, however, the superpowers are likely to be cooperating and competing, at once friends and enemies.<sup>9</sup>

Pressure on the superpowers has increased since Pluto began its transit between 12 degrees and 18 degrees Scorpio in January 1988. Between then and October 1991, Pluto makes three exact conjunctions with the Soviet Sun opposed the U.S. Sun (fig. 13). Since Pluto takes 248 years to orbit the Sun, this is the first time in the history of the Soviet Union that this configuration has

---

<sup>6</sup>Michael Baigent, Nicholas Campion, and Charles Harvey, *Mundane Astrology: An Introduction to the Study of Nations and Groups* (Wellingborough, Northamptonshire, England: Aquarian Press, 1984), p. 169.

<sup>7</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, “The Astrology of the United States and the Soviet Union,” 1989 PoW, pp. 725-44.

<sup>8</sup>N. N. Sukhanov, *The Russian Revolution 1917*, ed., abridged and trans., Joel Carmichael (Princeton, N. J.: Princeton University Press, 1984), p. 629.

<sup>9</sup>See “The Friend/Enemy Superpower Relationship,” *Saint Germain On Prophecy*, Book Two, pp. 36-47.

taken place. Pluto transits of this sort are associated with the outbreak of wars and with mortal challenges other than war.

This period between January 1988 and October 1991 is the time when war is most likely to break out between the superpowers. But even if the United States and the Soviet Union do not go to war, they will face severe challenges that could include economic problems, power struggles, civil unrest and terrorism.

On November 26, 1989, Mars conjoined the Moon, Pluto and the Soviet Sun (fig. 14). This configuration could trigger war between the superpowers, but not necessarily immediately after the conjunction. Since Pluto is a slow-moving planet, the effect of a Pluto conjunction can take anywhere from a few months to several years to appear.

On October 2, 1987, speaking in New York City, El Morya said, "Ere 24 months pass, beloved, there shall be a reckoning and a confrontation unless something is done."<sup>10</sup> The something he referred to was the development on the part of the United States of the capability to prevent incoming nuclear warheads from reaching their targets. November 26, 1989, was nearly 26 months from October 2, 1987. At the time I took that dictation I was not familiar with this astrology. The research was done later - in fact the dictation, in part, prompted it.

The Capricorn megaconjunction on January 11, 1994, which I will discuss in a moment, is also capable of igniting war. On July 17, 1999, November 14, 1999, and May 13, 2000, Saturn in Taurus and Uranus in Aquarius will form exact squares.<sup>11</sup> Again: conjunctions, squares and oppositions between Saturn and Uranus coincide with major wars.

#### Capricorn Conjunctions Through the Nineties

There are other Capricorn conjunctions in the 1990s that will have a major effect on the world. The most powerful will occur on January 11, 1994, when seven planets<sup>12</sup> - Mars, Venus, Neptune, the Moon, the Sun, Uranus and Mercury - will form a tight "megaconjunction" in Capricorn (fig. 15). What adds to the intensity of this conjunction is the square of Saturn (the planet that rules Capricorn) in Aquarius to Pluto in Scorpio.

Under the influence of this conjunction we could experience economic and military challenges. We could see a dramatic loss of political liberty throughout the world, the establishment of dictatorships, widespread plague and famine, and danger from radioactivity, possibly from nuclear war.

In the 1990s, a number of astrological configurations will severely challenge the ability of the power elite to control the economy. The power elite are represented in the U.S. conceptual chart by Pluto at 27 degrees Capricorn in the second house of money and finance. During the next seven years a series of eclipses will fall in close aspect to the U.S. conceptual Pluto:

A solar eclipse at 29 degrees Cancer on July 21, 1990, that will oppose the U.S. conceptual Pluto; a solar eclipse at 25 degrees Capricorn on January 15, 1991, that will conjoin it; a lunar eclipse at 25 degrees Libra on April 15, 1995, that will square it; and a solar eclipse at 28 degrees Aries on April 17, 1996, that will also square it. These could have the effect of "eclipsing" the power elite's power.

On February 5, August 14 and November 25, 1995, transiting Uranus (the planet of freedom and violent and unpredictable change) will make exact conjunctions to the U.S. conceptual Pluto (the planet of power and control) at 27 degrees Capricorn in the second house of the nation's money and may signal a break in the power elite's grip on the U.S. economy (fig. 16).

Then on January 20, August 31 and November 14, 1997, transiting Neptune (the planet of dissolu-

---

<sup>10</sup>El Morya, October 21, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 474, 480.

<sup>11</sup>An exact square occurs when planets are 90 degrees apart from each other in the zodiac. The orb, or space in which a square is effective, is 10 degrees. Squares generate tension, which may be creative or destructive.

<sup>12</sup>Astrologers acknowledge that the Sun and Moon are not planets, but they sometimes refer to them as such for convenience.



tion) will make exact conjunctions with the U.S. conceptional Pluto and nearly exact oppositions to the Federal Reserve System's Neptune at 27 degrees Cancer. This transit of Neptune could dissolve the power of the financial elite. It could also lead to the dissolution of the nation's financial system, if it has not already been destroyed or restructured along more enlightened lines.

#### Archangel Michael Announces the New Age

We are at the start of a new age. Astrologers have had a hard time trying to decide when the age of Aquarius began or will begin. Although most estimates are fairly close to the year 2000, they range from 1762 through 3550.

On January 1, 1989, at 5:57 p.m. mountain standard time (MST), Archangel Michael gave us the key to the new beginnings of the age of Aquarius. He said: "We move into the New Age today. Today, I say, is the first and most important step. Today is the step of the resolution for the next 2,000 years. Blessed hearts, this is the springboard to eternity and you will require every step to be the right step and the direct step."<sup>13</sup>

This is the conceptional chart for the age of Aquarius: its Sun is at 11 degrees 37 minutes Capricorn, its Ascendant is at 25 degrees 47 minutes Cancer and its Moon is at 14 degrees 3 minutes Scorpio. Although it doesn't have any planets in Aquarius (fig. 17), it has a total of five planets in Capricorn: Uranus at 1 degree Capricorn, Saturn at 5 degrees Capricorn and Neptune at 9 degrees Capricorn are conjoined the Sun at 11 degrees Capricorn. And Mercury is at 28 degrees Capricorn.

This chart's natal Sun at 11 degrees 37 minutes Capricorn is close to an axis formed by two important fixed stars, Sirius at 13 degrees Cancer and Vega at 15 degrees Capricorn. What does this tell us? Capricorn represents the Father, or the yang; and Cancer represents the Mother, or the yin. Sirius represents the Father and Vega represents the Mother. This axis shows that before the Aquarian age can lock into the physical octave, the axis of planet earth must be righted. The hierarchy of Aquarius requires all to come into alignment with this line of the Father-Mother principle, or the divine Tao.

Since the Aquarian age takes its first and most important "pre-dawn" step, which is resolution, with five planets in Capricorn, it takes its thrust from Capricorn. The intense cluster of Capricorn planets anchors the Aquarian influences and the unbalanced karma from the age of Pisces and other previous cycles. In other words, we do not approach the age of Aquarius with a clean white page. We bring with us the residue of unbalanced karma.

The Capricorn planets in this chart also resonate with and amplify the essential characteristics of the Capricorn conjunction of February 1988. As the conceptional chart of an age, this January 1, 1989 chart can be compared to the conceptional chart of a person who has a great mission and a great opportunity but who during gestation must first settle his accounts and come into alignment with the God Star. The God Star is another name for Sirius, which, as I said, holds a key position in this chart.

Aquarius is destined to be an age of economic, political, social and spiritual freedom as well as an age of technological innovation. This is due to the unique characteristics of the sign of Aquarius and its ruling planet, Uranus, which convey the impulse for freedom, individuality and innovation while at the same time ruling group and community affairs.

But it is not at all certain that the golden age will ever become physical. What we say and do here on earth in our lifetime may determine whether the golden age of Aquarius will become a reality.

I ask you to share with me today the sense of accountability and responsibility that I have, and that I believe all citizens of the world must have, for which way the planetary evolution will go and whether or not there will ever be an Aquarian age of freedom, peace and enlightenment. I would like you to know that that question hangs in the balance today before the Four and Twenty Elders.

---

<sup>13</sup>Archangel Michael, January 1, 1989, 1989 PoW, p. 33.

At this moment the Darkness upon earth has become so great that it is not known if the next 2,000 years can be a golden age or if anything thereafter can be a golden age.

Nevertheless, it is the divine plan for the age of Aquarius to be a golden age. And it is the freewill option of those of us in embodiment to outpicture that divine plan while we yet have life and breath and hope and opportunity. If it were not the divine plan, we wouldn't even have a hope of a chance, or a breath of a prayer, to bring it about. But the divine plan does exist as an etheric matrix, a pattern hanging just above our heads, waiting to be lowered.

But where are the vessels? Where are the instruments? Where are those millions of souls who were supposed to have embodied in the last 20 years to usher in the golden age? I'll tell you where they are. They were aborted and their life mission along with them. And today 22,000,000 of them are waiting in the wings on the etheric plane for another opportunity to play their parts on stage seven of planet earth.

Abortion is another plot that the fallen ones have put upon us. And therefore the very lifestreams that were being sent to earth to help bring in the New Age of Aquarius are not in embodiment today. They have been denied life in the name of "freedom of choice." This is the mass deception that has been put upon men and women today - that life in the womb is not Life.

Abortion is the desecration of desecrations of all centuries. It is the abomination of desolation standing in the holy place where it ought not,<sup>14</sup> which is one of the signs that precedes the Second Coming of Christ.

This is the holocaust of our time that has made us America the vulnerable.

#### A Cycle of Opportunity

All of the negative astrological portents we have been discussing are concurrent with a cycle of opportunity. During the dangerous period between 1988 and 1992, Pluto will be orbiting the Sun inside the orbit of Neptune, something that happens only once every 248 years. This cycle has coincided with epochal events, including the birth of Jesus, the baptism of the French king Clovis into the Christian church in a.d. 498, and the discovery of the United States of America in 1492.

In addition, Uranus and Neptune will make three conjunctions in 1993, two at 18 degrees Capricorn (August 19 and October 24) and one at 19 degrees Capricorn (February 2). Uranus-Neptune conjunctions, which happen but once every 172 years, are associated with new phases of history that have a scientific and mystical character and can lead to greater freedom, innovation and enlightenment.

Astrological portents of great good are not automatic. They are not predestined any more than negative karma is predestined. The key is that we have to work the works of God and make those portents a reality where we are.

The fallen ones also read astrology. And when they see a blessing from God coming they move in and they try to nip it in the bud, to dash the cup from our lips before we are able to drink that elixir.

So we need to call for the protection of these portents of great good, of the Christ manifesting en masse in the people of a planet under the aegis of the Woman clothed with the Sun and her Divine Manchild.

We must look at both sides of astrology and recognize that free will and our presence in embodiment are the factors that determine whether the Good or the Evil will triumph.

"Prophecy for the 1990s III" is based on a lecture given by Elizabeth Clare Prophet May 21, 1989, Sheraton Centre Hotel, New York, updated for publication in the 1990 Pearls of Wisdom. Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

<sup>14</sup>Matt. 24:15.

Conjunction of Mars, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune  
in Capricorn  
February 22–23, 1988

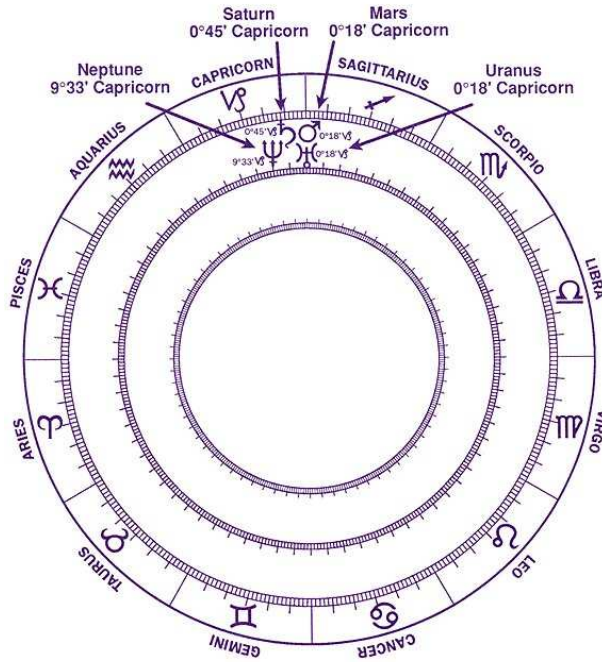


FIGURE 7 On February 22–23, 1988, Mars, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune formed a conjunction that marked the formal beginning of a period of upheaval and change on the planet. This conjunction occurred in two steps. On February 22 at 6:49 p.m. PST, Mars made an exact conjunction to Uranus at 0°18' Capricorn. Then, at 11:01 a.m. PST on the 23rd, Mars made an exact conjunction to Saturn at 0°45' Capricorn. Neptune was at 9°33' Capricorn. A conjunction occurs when two or more planets occupy the same degree of the zodiac, although aspects need not be exact to be within the "orb of influence." A rare Saturn-Uranus-Neptune conjunction

February 22–23, 1988

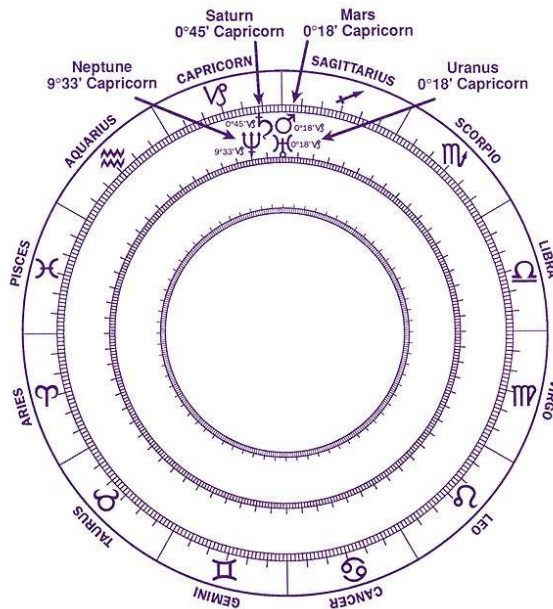


FIGURE 7 On February 22–23, 1988, Mars, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune formed a conjunction that marked the formal beginning of a period of upheaval and change on the planet. This conjunction occurred in two steps. On February 22 at 6:49 p.m. PST, Mars made an exact conjunction to Uranus at 0°18' Capricorn. Then, at 11:01 a.m. PST on the 23rd, Mars made an exact conjunction to Saturn at 0°45' Capricorn. Neptune was at 9°33' Capricorn. A conjunction occurs when two or more planets occupy the same degree of the zodiac, although aspects need not be exact to be within the "orb of influence." A rare Saturn-Uranus-Neptune conjunction is the core of this configuration. The last one occurred in 1307 and was the primary astrological impulse for the Black Death.

**Transiting Saturn, Neptune and Jupiter  
Form a T-Square in the U.S. Conceptional Chart**  
November 13, 1989

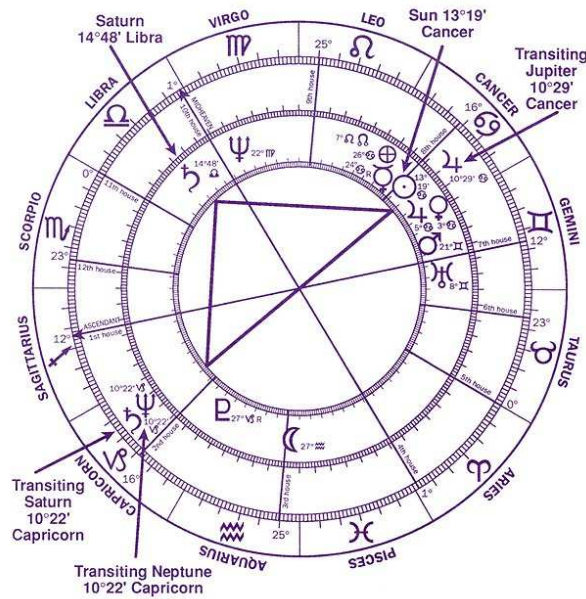


FIGURE 8 On November 13, 1989, transiting Saturn and Neptune formed a conjunction at 10°22' Capricorn and an opposition to transiting Jupiter at 10°29' Cancer conjoined the United States conceptional Sun at 13°19' Cancer. These planets squared the U.S. conceptional Saturn at 14°48' Libra, thereby forming a T-square (a right triangle) in the U.S. conceptional chart. This T-square is likely to activate major debt liquidation in the United States. Since Saturn and Neptune are slow-moving planets, their conjunctions occur about every 36 years and have a three-to six-month period in which their direct effects may be felt. While most astroeconomists expected more dramatic events on or around November

November 13, 1989

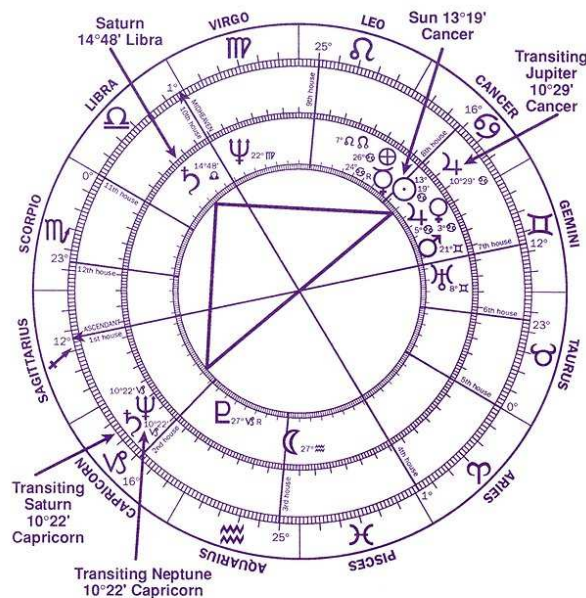


FIGURE 8 On November 13, 1989, transiting Saturn and Neptune formed a conjunction at 10°22' Capricorn and an opposition to transiting Jupiter at 10°29' Cancer conjoined the United States conceptional Sun at 13°19' Cancer. These planets squared the U.S. conceptional Saturn at 14°48' Libra, thereby forming a T-square (a right triangle) in the U.S. conceptional chart. This T-square is likely to activate major debt liquidation in the United States. Since Saturn and Neptune are slow-moving planets, their conjunctions occur about every 36 years and have a three-to six-month period in which their direct effects may be felt. While most astroeconomists expected more dramatic events on or around November 13, there have been signs of economic weakness and debt liquidation, including the Savings and Loan bailout and the big drop in the stock market on October 13, 1989. The pace of debt liquidation is likely to increase as the economy moves into a recession.



The Astrological Chart of  
The Dark Cycle  
April 23, 1969, 12:00 a.m.

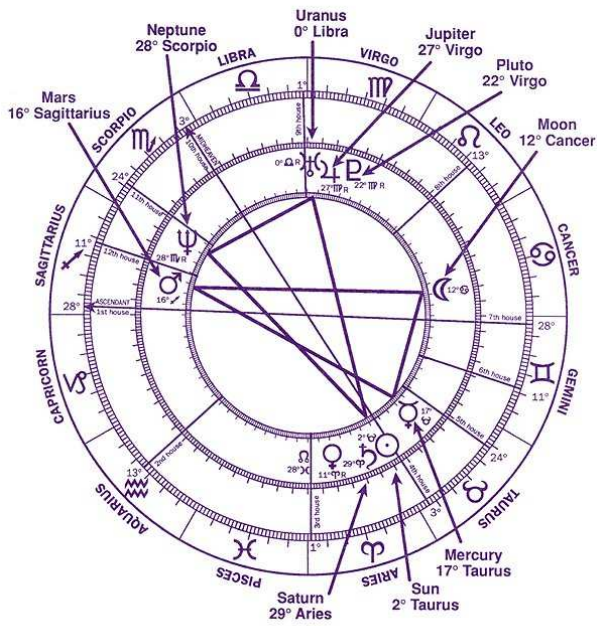


FIGURE 9 The Dark Cycle began at midnight Greenwich mean time on April 23, 1969. The astrological chart for the beginning of the Dark Cycle is dominated by a Finger of God containing six planets: the Sun, Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, Neptune and Pluto. A Finger of God occurs when three or more planets form an acute, fingerlike isosceles triangle. This configuration points to the karmic necessity for self-sacrificing, innovative spiritual solutions and activity in a practical mode in the spheres of government, the economy, social institutions and agriculture. A second Finger of God is formed by Mercury, the Moon and Mars.

The United States of America  
Conceptional Chart  
July 4, 1776, 5:13 p.m.

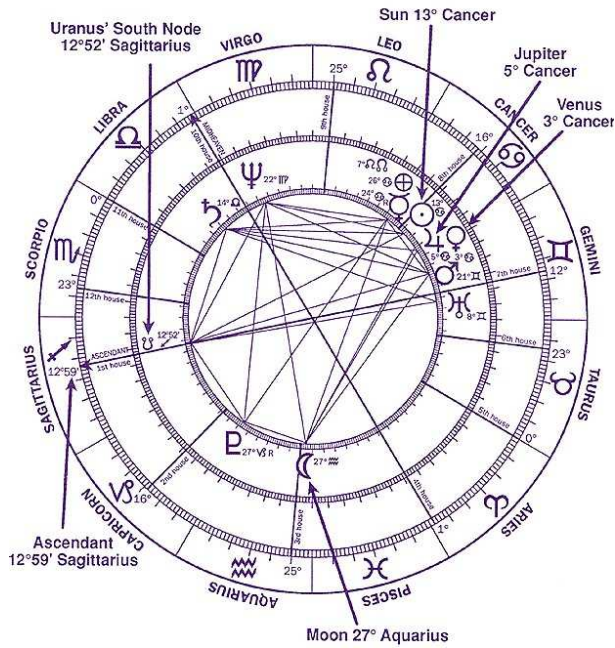


FIGURE 10 The United States was conceived at 5:13 p.m. local mean time (LMT), July 4, 1776, in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, at the signing of the Declaration of Independence. The United States conceptional Sun is at 13°19' Cancer, the Moon is at 27°12' Aquarius, and the Ascendant is at 12°59' Sagittarius. The Sun forms a conjunction with Jupiter at 5° Cancer and Venus at 3° Cancer, which finds expression in the United States' expansive maternal nature and the impulse to nurture and protect. This conjunction also gives rise to the American people's deeply felt patriotism and strong sense of family. The Moon in Aquarius shows that the Ameri-

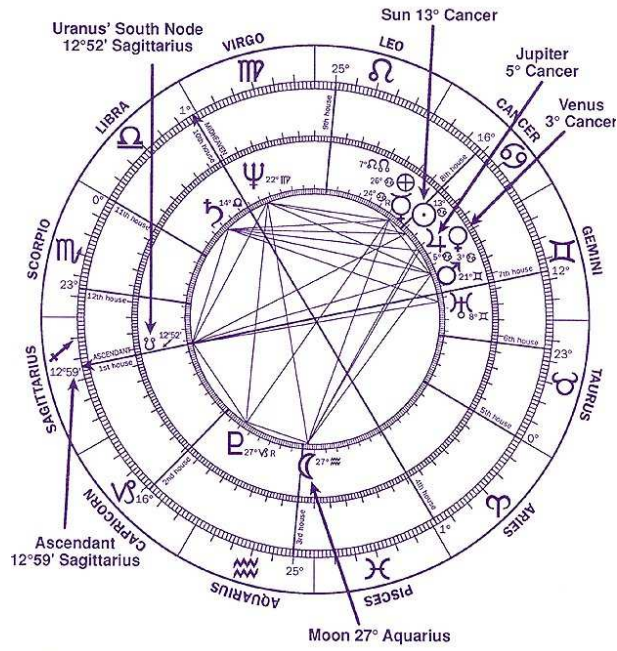


FIGURE 10 The United States was conceived at 5:13 p.m. local mean time (LMT), July 4, 1776, in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, at the signing of the Declaration of Independence. The United States conceptional Sun is at 13°19' Cancer, the Moon is at 27°12' Aquarius, and the Ascendant is at 12°59' Sagittarius. The Sun forms a conjunction with Jupiter at 5° Cancer and Venus at 3° Cancer, which finds expression in the United States' expansive maternal nature and the impulse to nurture and protect. This conjunction also gives rise to the American people's deeply felt patriotism and strong sense of family. The Moon in Aquarius shows that the American family was destined to evolve to a higher level—but that the family is subject to fragmentation if the process of evolution takes place without commensurate spiritual growth. The Sagittarius Ascendant endows the nation with a philosophical, adventurous, freedom-loving temperament.

The United States of America  
Birth Chart  
April 30, 1789, 1:30 p.m.

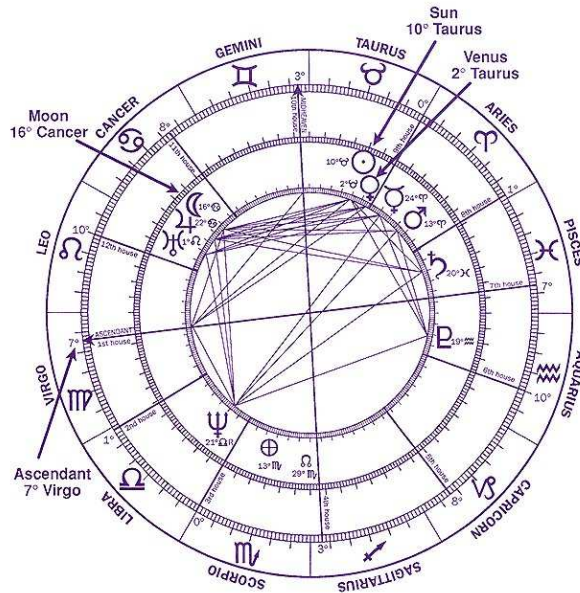


FIGURE 11 The United States of America was born at 1:30 p.m. LMT on April 30, 1789, when George Washington took the oath of office as her first president at Federal Hall in New York City. The Sun in the birth chart is at 10°46' Taurus, the Moon is at 16°35' Cancer and the Ascendant is at 7°37' Virgo. The Sun is conjoined Venus at 2° Taurus, sextile the Moon and trine the Ascendant. This configuration is the basis for a stable, practical government. The Sun-Venus conjunction shows the nation's capacity to



April 30, 1789, 1:30 p.m.

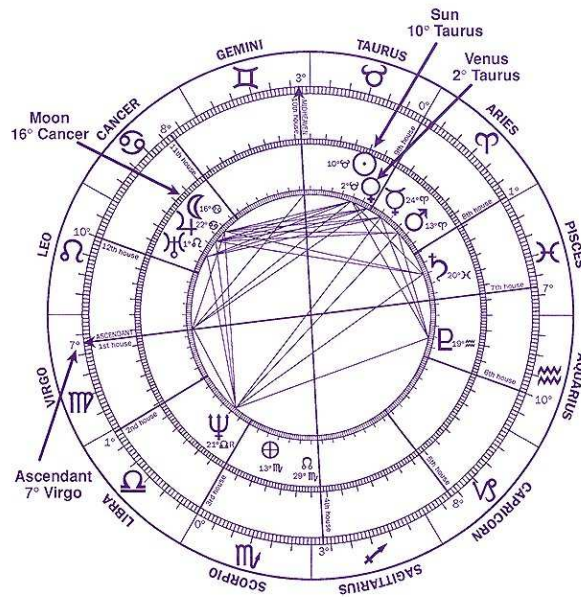


FIGURE 11 The United States of America was born at 1:30 p.m. LMT on April 30, 1789, when George Washington took the oath of office as her first president at Federal Hall in New York City. The Sun in the birth chart is at 10°46' Taurus, the Moon is at 16°35' Cancer and the Ascendant is at 7°37' Virgo. The Sun is conjoined Venus at 2° Taurus, sextile the Moon and trine the Ascendant. This configuration is the basis for a stable, practical government. The Sun-Venus conjunction shows the nation's capacity to mobilize its agricultural, financial and commercial resources to generate great wealth. But it is also associated with conspicuous consumption, the concentration of wealth in a few hands, recessions or depressions, deficit spending and debt accumulation.

Union of Soviet Socialist Republics  
Birth Chart

November 7, 1917, 3:00 p.m.

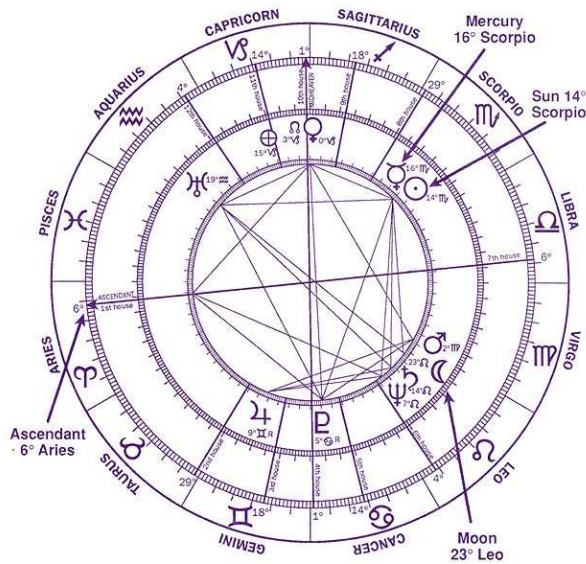


FIGURE 12 The Union of Soviet Socialist Republics was born following a nearly bloodless coup at 3:00 p.m. Eastern European Time (EET) in Saint Petersburg, Russia, on November 7, 1917. The Soviet Union's Sun is at 14° 33' Scorpio, its Moon is at 23° 37' Leo, and its Ascendant is at 6° 48' Aries. Scorpio rules death and regeneration, science, engineering, military combat and joint economic relations. Because of the inherently secretive nature of the unevolved Scorpio, the Soviet Union is a closed society whose leaders restrict the information that reaches their people and the outside world. They have a need both to dominate and to protect themselves from domination, which drives them to view all other nations

November 7, 1917, 3:00 p.m.

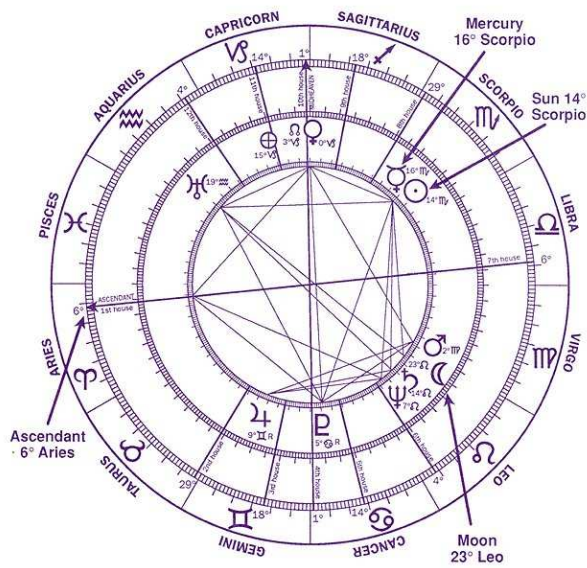


FIGURE 12 The Union of Soviet Socialist Republics was born following a nearly bloodless coup at 3:00 p.m. Eastern European Time (EET) in Saint Petersburg, Russia, on November 7, 1917. The Soviet Union's Sun is at 14° 33' Scorpio, its Moon is at 23° 37' Leo, and its Ascendant is at 6° 48' Aries. Scorpio rules death and regeneration, science, engineering, military combat and joint economic relations. Because of the inherently secretive nature of the unevolved Scorpio, the Soviet Union is a closed society whose leaders restrict the information that reaches their people and the outside world. They have a need both to dominate and to protect themselves from domination, which drives them to view all other nations as enemies to be conquered. Scorpio secrecy leads to deception, which the Soviets have fashioned into a state policy and raised to a fine art.

Copyright © 1990 Church Universal and Triumphant, Inc.



Transiting Pluto Conjoined the Soviet Union's Sun and  
Opposed the United States Sun  
January 1988–October 1991

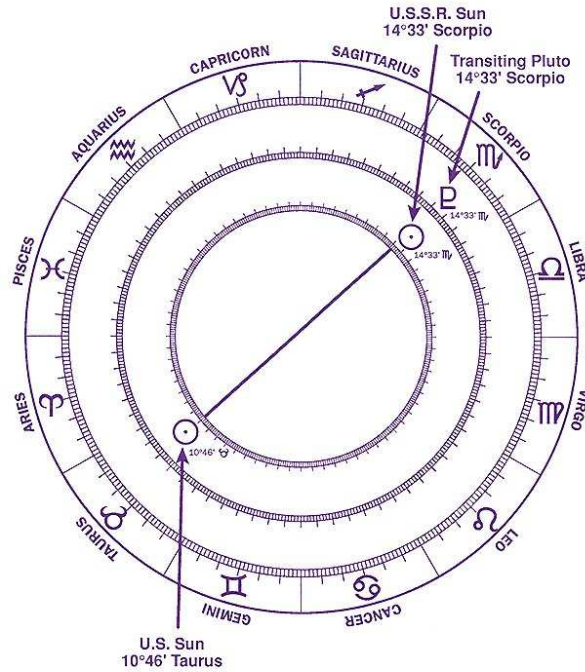


FIGURE 13 As Pluto transits between 12° and 18° Scorpio from January 1988 to October 1991, it will make three exact conjunctions with the Soviet Union's Sun at 14° Scorpio opposed to the United States natal Sun at 10° Taurus. This is the first time in the history of the Soviet Union that this

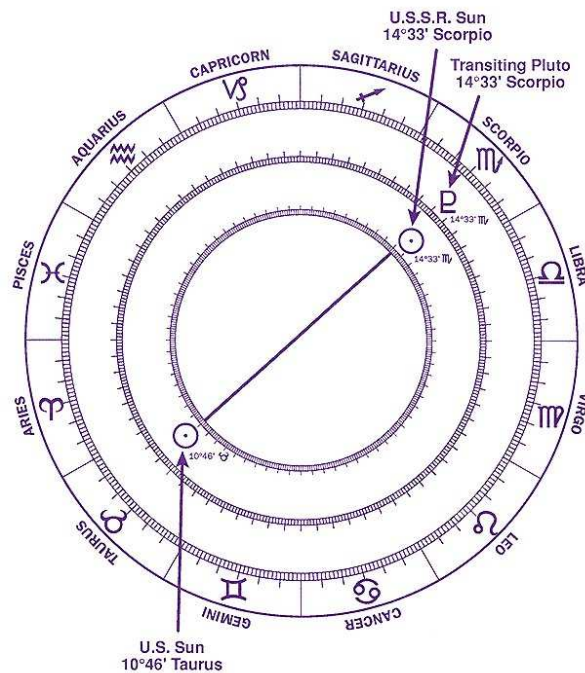


FIGURE 13 As Pluto transits between 12° and 18° Scorpio from January 1988 to October 1991, it will make three exact conjunctions with the Soviet Union's Sun at 14° Scorpio opposed to the United States natal Sun at 10° Taurus. This is the first time in the history of the Soviet Union that this configuration has taken place since Pluto takes 248 years to orbit the Sun. Pluto transits of this sort are associated with the outbreak of wars and with mortal challenges other than war. Even if the United States and the Soviet Union do not go to war, they will face severe challenges that could include economic problems, power struggles, civil unrest and terrorism.

**Transiting Pluto, Mars and Moon  
Conjoined the Soviet Union's Sun and  
Opposed the United States Sun**  
November 26, 1989

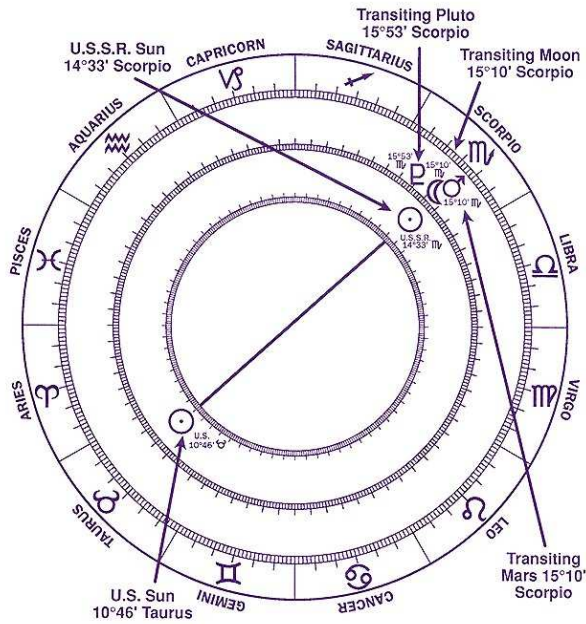


FIGURE 14 On November 26, 1989, the Moon made exact conjunctions to transiting Mars at 15°10' Scorpio (1:48 p.m. PST) and transiting Pluto at 15°53' Scorpio (3:16 p.m. PST), forming a Moon-Mars-Pluto conjunction

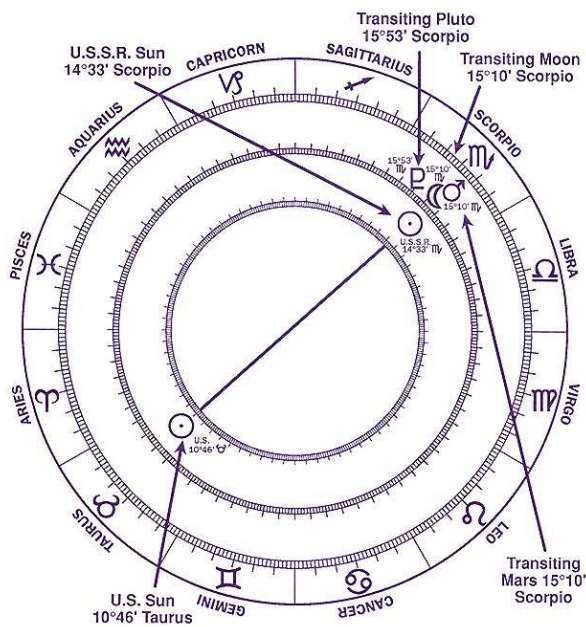


FIGURE 14 On November 26, 1989, the Moon made exact conjunctions to transiting Mars at 15°10' Scorpio (1:48 p.m. PST) and transiting Pluto at 15°53' Scorpio (3:16 p.m. PST), forming a Moon-Mars-Pluto conjunction at 15° Scorpio within one and a half degrees of the Soviet Sun at 14°33' Scorpio. The conjunction of Pluto, Mars and the Moon with the Soviet natal Sun opposed the United States natal Sun at 10°46' Taurus. This is one of several configurations that has the potential to ignite a war between the superpowers at any time between January 1988 and October 1991.

Copyright © 1990 Church Universal and Triumphant, Inc.

Megaconjunction of Seven Planets in Capricorn  
January 11, 1994

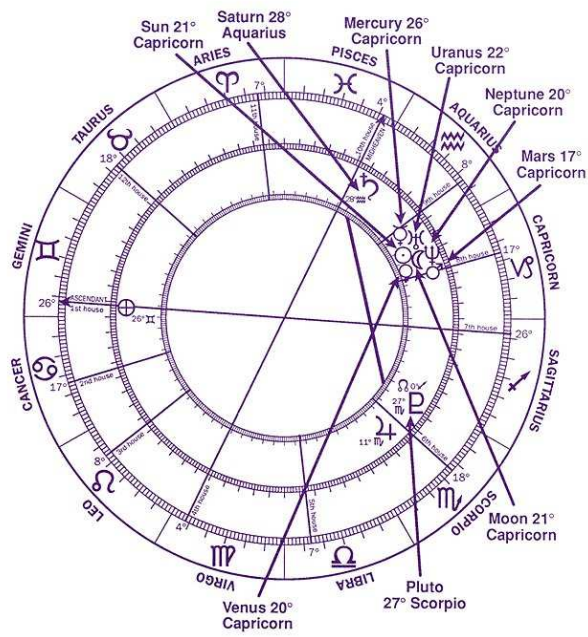


FIGURE 15 On January 11, 1994, seven planets—Mars, Venus, Neptune, the Moon, the Sun, Uranus and Mercury—will form a very tight “megaconjunction” in Capricorn. All seven planets will fall between 17° and 26° Capricorn. A nearly exact square of Saturn, the ruler of Capricorn, at 28° Aquarius to Pluto at 27° Scorpio is likely to intensify the conjunction’s negative potential. This conjunction could trigger economic and military

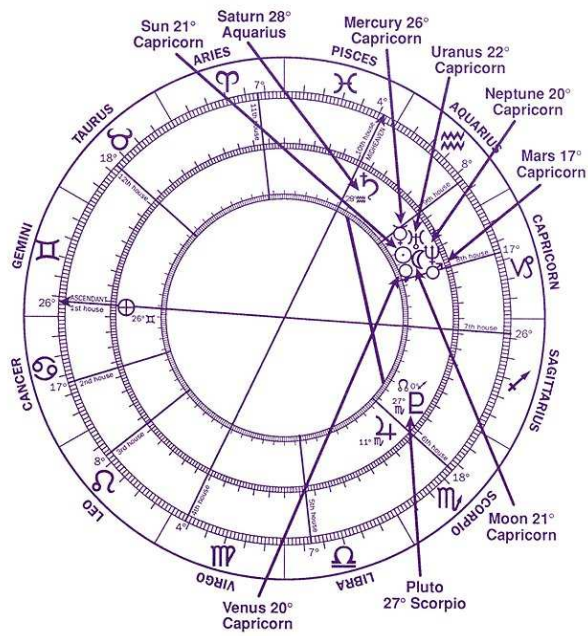


FIGURE 15 On January 11, 1994, seven planets—Mars, Venus, Neptune, the Moon, the Sun, Uranus and Mercury—will form a very tight “megaconjunction” in Capricorn. All seven planets will fall between 17° and 26° Capricorn. A nearly exact square of Saturn, the ruler of Capricorn, at 28° Aquarius to Pluto at 27° Scorpio is likely to intensify the conjunction’s negative potential. This conjunction could trigger economic and military challenges in the extreme, the dramatic loss of political liberty throughout the world, the establishment of dictatorships, widespread plague and famine and danger from radioactivity, possibly from nuclear war.

Copyright © 1990 Church Universal and Triumphant, Inc.



Transiting Uranus and Neptune Conjoined the United States Conceptional Pluto 1995 and 1997

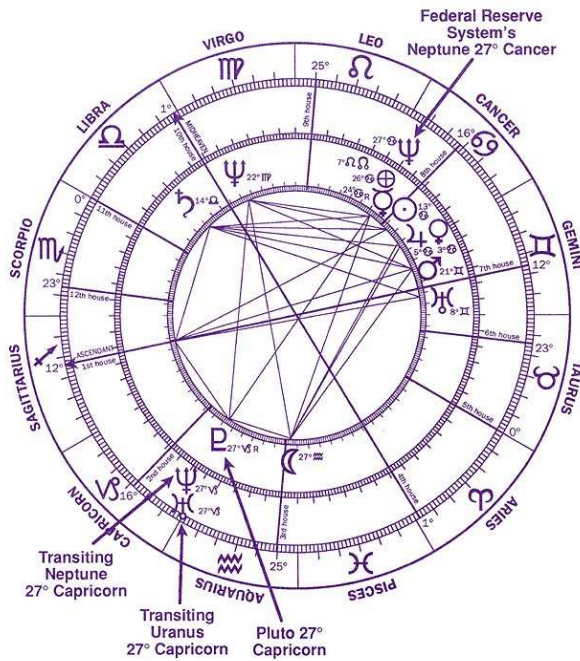


FIGURE 16 On February 5, August 14 and November 25, 1995, transiting Uranus (the planet of freedom and unpredictable change) will make exact conjunctions to the United States conceptional Pluto (the planet of power and control) at 27° Capricorn in the second house of the nation's money and economy. Then, on January 20, August 31 and November 14, 1997, transiting Neptune (the planet of dissolution) will make exact conjunctions with

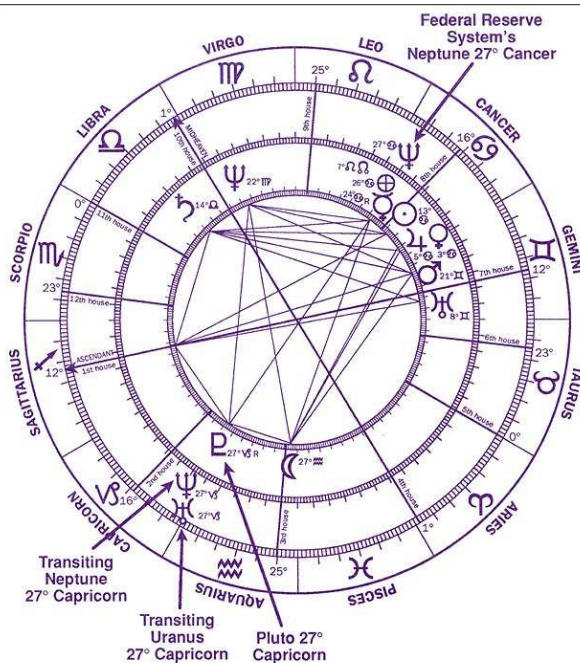


FIGURE 16 On February 5, August 14 and November 25, 1995, transiting Uranus (the planet of freedom and unpredictable change) will make exact conjunctions to the United States conceptional Pluto (the planet of power and control) at 27° Capricorn in the second house of the nation's money and economy. Then, on January 20, August 31 and November 14, 1997, transiting Neptune (the planet of dissolution) will make exact conjunctions with the U.S. conceptional Pluto and nearly exact oppositions to the Federal Reserve System's Neptune at 27° Cancer. This transit of Neptune could dissolve the power of the financial elite. It could also lead to the dissolution of the nation's financial system, if it has not already been destroyed or restructured along more enlightened lines.

Age of Aquarius  
 Conceptional Chart  
 January 1, 1989, 5:57 p.m.

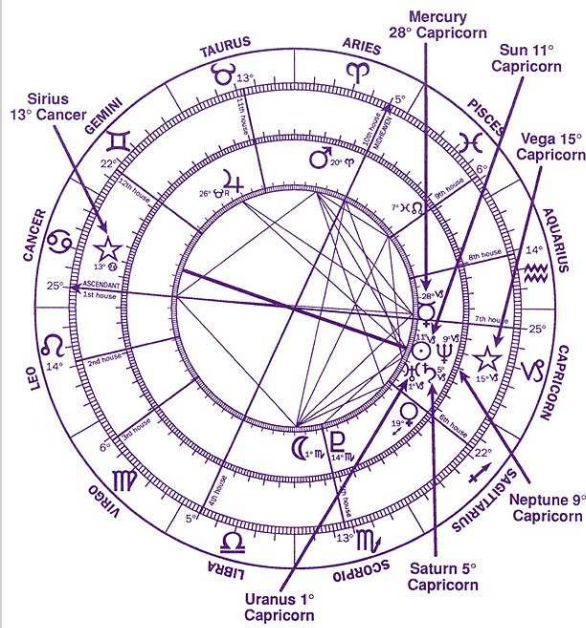


FIGURE 17 On January 1, 1989, at 5:57 p.m. mountain standard time, Archangel Michael gave us the key to the conception of the age of Aquarius. In a dictation delivered by the Messenger Elizabeth Clare Prophet at the Royal Teton Ranch in Park County, Montana, he said: "We move into the New Age today." This is the conceptional chart for the Age of Aquarius. It doesn't have any planets in Aquarius but it has five planets in Capricorn—the Sun, Mercury, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune—which anchor the Aquarian influences as well as the unbalanced karma from the

January 1, 1989, 5:57 p.m.

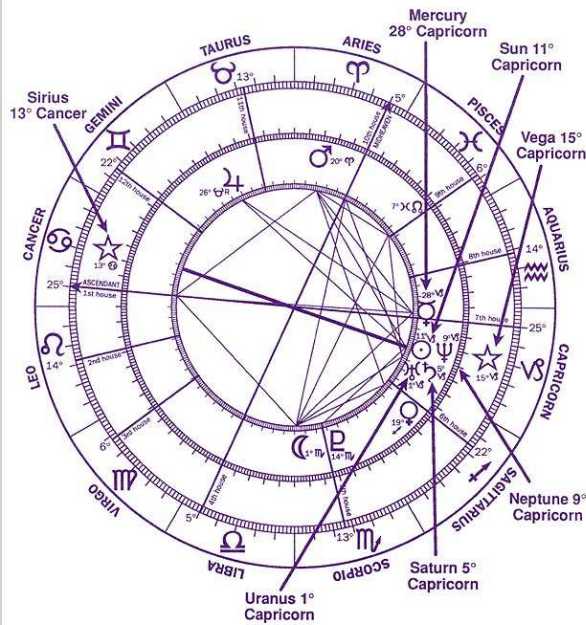


FIGURE 17 On January 1, 1989, at 5:57 p.m. mountain standard time, Archangel Michael gave us the key to the conception of the age of Aquarius. In a dictation delivered by the Messenger Elizabeth Clare Prophet at the Royal Teton Ranch in Park County, Montana, he said: "We move into the New Age today." This is the conceptional chart for the Age of Aquarius. It doesn't have any planets in Aquarius but it has five planets in Capricorn—the Sun, Mercury, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune—which anchor the Aquarian influences as well as the unbalanced karma from the age of Pisces and other previous cycles. An axis formed by the Sun at 11°37' Capricorn and the fixed stars Vega at 15° Capricorn and Sirius at 13° Cancer shows that Aquarius requires the righting of the axis of the earth.



# Chapter 9

## The Messenger - March 4, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 9 - The Messenger - March 4, 1990

Prophecy for the 1990s

III by

Elizabeth Clare Prophet

6

Decoding the Message from the Sun: Sunspots and Solar Flares

Sunspots, as signs in the heavens, are surely signs of the times that we must read. They come with a warning. And their burst and their flare and their fire do deliver a message of warning: “Cease and desist from your anti-Light and anti-Christ consciousness, else the Sacred Fire shall consume not alone your works and your words but yourselves.”

Sunspots, then, precede the descent of the judgment. They give warning to all who will read and run that change is in order. Beloved Helios, dictating through our beloved Messenger Mark Prophet, said in his January 11, 1970 Pearl of Wisdom:

The current cycle of sunspots and solar flares affects the weather of the planet, the moods of its people, even business cycles and, of course, the release of spiritual light-energy to the earth. One should note, therefore, not only the negative interference to the radio networks of the earth but also the vast positive extensions of cosmic possibilities and revelations that shatter darkness with the brilliance of new and fervent hope for the overcoming of age-old problems.

Sickness, sin and death - all forms of discord, bigotry, tyranny, struggle and degradation - must yield before the great cosmic burst of light, else those who continue to be advocates of darkness and shame will find the spiral of karmic recompense becoming a lash of such chastening as to almost annihilate that portion of their consciousness which persists in identifying with unreality.<sup>1</sup>

Our Place in the Universe

In order for you to understand solar phenomena, I will give you some background on our solar system and galaxy.

Astronomers estimate that there are at least 100 billion galaxies in the known universe. Our galaxy is called the Milky Way because, from our vantage point at the edge, it appears to be a luminous band of light arching across the night sky.

The Milky Way is one of 27 galaxies known as the “Local Group” that revolve around a common center of gravity. The Milky Way is a large spiral galaxy. It is 100,000 light-years in diameter

---

<sup>1</sup>Helios, January 11, 1970, 1970 PoW, Book I, p. 7.

and 30,000 light-years thick at the nucleus. A light year is the distance light travels in a year - approximately 6 trillion miles. In other words, light takes about 100,000 earth years to cross the Milky Way.

Our star, the sun, is one of some 100 billion stars in our galaxy. It is about 30,000 light-years from the center of our galaxy, or two-thirds of the way from the center, and is situated in a spiral arm of the Milky Way.

Scientists say that the sun was born between 4-1/2 to 5 billion years ago. It orbits the galactic center at a speed of about 150 miles per second and completes one orbit every 200 to 250 million years. Since birth, the sun has made between twenty and twenty-two complete revolutions around the galactic center. Therefore, the sun is 20 to 22 "solar years" old.

Astronomers do not know how a star is formed. In the case of our sun and many other stars, they believe that some force acted on a cloud of dust and vapor so that the particles within it increased their gravitational attraction and began to collapse. As the matter collapsed, the particles began to collide, producing heat. The small degree of rotation present in the cloud increased and caused the cloud to take on a spherical shape. Expanding pressure from the heat in the cloud's core counterbalanced the pull of gravity and a proto-sun came into existence.

Over a 10-million-year gestation period the proto-sun continued to contract and get hotter. Suddenly the interior of the proto-sun became so hot that it ignited a nuclear chain reaction: A star was born. The sun stopped contracting and has remained in a state of equilibrium, the nuclear reaction at the core producing just enough heat and pressure to counterbalance the pull of gravity.

When the sun was young it was far more violent and active than it is today. It had a much faster rate of rotation, its magnetic fields were stronger and less stable, and it produced even more powerful flares than those it produces today. But it was only 70 percent as bright as it is now.

The sun became a mature star when it was about five to ten solar years old - or one to two billion earth years. Scientists believe that the sun will shine as it does today for billions of years. But in about seven billion years it will expand to 100 times its current size and become what is known as a "red giant." Its color will be deep red and its luminosity will be about 500 times greater than at present. After about 250 million years in the red giant phase, scientists expect that the sun will go through a "helium flash" - it will explode and eject about one-third of its mass into space.

Thereafter, our sun's evolution is uncertain. It will probably go through a period of degeneration. When it is about 15 billion years old, or 75 solar years, it will probably become a "white dwarf" star with a diameter similar to the earth's. It could finally become a "black dwarf," which is essentially a small, cold, burnt out shell. But we have a long way to go before the sun becomes a red giant or a white or black dwarf. The sun is in a long, quiet, relatively stable phase.

The surface of the sun is called the photosphere, or light sphere. It is about 10,000 degrees Fahrenheit and appears to be bright, smooth and shiny. But close-up, the photosphere looks like a boiling cauldron.

Currents of heat in the sun's core generate bubbles, or granules, that rise to the surface at a rate of 1000 miles per hour. After a granule transfers its heat to the surface, it expands, cools and sinks back into the sun.

There are about four million granules visible at any given moment. When seen through a telescope, these granules look like boiling grains of rice or kernels of wheat. And although they appear to be tiny, each granule is about 900 miles across - greater than the length and width of the state of Texas.

Herbert Friedman, in his book *Sun and Earth*, notes that despite this turbulence, "visible light and heat waves, which represent more than 99 percent of the sun's radiation, vary by less than 1



percent.”<sup>2</sup>

This stable release of energy is known as the solar constant. As you know, the sun is 93 million miles from the earth, and light traveling from the sun at the rate of 18,000 miles per second reaches us in eight and a third minutes. Life could not exist on earth if there were not a constant, reliable source of light and heat from the sun.

I would like to point out to you that when you enter the Path to be a Lightbearer, to be an extension of the heart of Helios and Vesta, you have an obligation to stick to that course and that commitment. Because once you begin radiating the light of the sun of your I AM Presence to lifewaves on the earth, they come to depend upon it. The evolutions of the planet are like a baby in an incubator.

If you think you can suddenly walk away from your calling, your mantle and your office to bear the Mother Flame, you will soon discover that you can make more karma in leaving than you could have made had you never entered the Path before. And so the path of the bodhisattvas moving toward Buddhahood, of the disciples moving toward Christhood must be the awareness that the radiating sun of Light within us creates new opportunities, a new descent of Light to the earth. (This applies whether you are affiliated with Church Universal and Triumphant or you are a member of another activity or you are walking the Path of Light without being associated with any group.)

If we were suddenly to withdraw our radiating sun of Light individually or as a Community, it would be as catastrophic as the withdrawal of the physical sun from our solar system. Thus we remember the teachings of Gautama Buddha - of the Sangha, the Community, the sun center of the heart. We remember that, like our sun, Gautama Buddha, Lord of the World, never leaves off sustaining our threefold flame by the thread of contact from his heart.

At the moment that he should withdraw this thread of contact, perhaps we would still be in a state of oneness and attunement with our I AM Presence. But perhaps in another moment we would be going through the Dark Night of the Spirit or the dark night of the soul or severe temptation or the descent into Death and Hell.

Just as we depend upon our God Presence until the hour of our ascension - until we become, as Kuan Yin, the self-existent one - so do many other lifestreams on earth depend upon us.

Just as every living thing on earth depends upon the physical sun, those evolutions of earth who have become accustomed to our footsteps, our voices and our presences on the planet cannot do without the light-emanation of our hearts, for they too have come to depend upon us as sun centers and sun sources.

Returning to the discussion of the sun's characteristics: A steady stream of ionized helium and hydrogen particles radiate outward from the sun under great pressure, carrying about one million tons of gas per second. This is called the solar wind. The solar wind forms a spiral as it leaves the sun. It travels at a speed of about 450 miles per second and reaches the earth in about four and one-half days.

What are Sunspots and Solar Flares?

Much of the sun's behavior is still unexplained. One of the best known, yet most mysterious, solar phenomena is the periodic appearance of sunspots, which affect life on earth in numerous ways. Sunspots are the most easily observed solar feature and have been seen for centuries. The earliest known record of sunspots appears in the Chinese Book of Changes, written prior to 800 b.c.

Sunspots are magnetic disturbances, or storms, on the sun's surface that are thought to be caused by magnetic effects in the sun's interior. They form dark, cool depressions on the surface of the photosphere. They appear to be dark because they are several thousand degrees cooler than the

---

<sup>2</sup>Herbert Friedman, Sun and Earth (New York: Scientific American Library, 1986), p. 87.

photosphere. Nevertheless, they are still quite hot and bright. A typical sunspot would shine with ten times the brilliance of the full moon if it were to be placed in the night sky.

Scientists are not sure why sunspots are cooler than the sun, but they believe that this refrigeration effect, as well as many of the sunspot's other characteristics, is related to a strong magnetic field within the sunspot itself.

Sunspots may last from a few hours to a few months. They appear in a well-documented cycle. The number of sunspots rises from a solar minimum, when there are few or no spots visible, to a solar maximum, when as many as 300 spots may be observed at one time. The length of the cycle varies between 7 and 17 years, but on the average the cycle lasts 11.1 years.

It takes an average of four and a half years for the cycle to rise to the maximum and an average of six and a half years for it to fall to the minimum. No one knows how or why this works. Geological evidence shows that the sunspot cycle has continued regularly for nearly 700 million years.

As the sun rotates, sunspots appear to move across the face of the sun from left to right. At the start of a new sunspot cycle following a solar minimum, sunspots appear in both hemispheres about 30 degrees from the solar equator. As the cycle matures, sunspots move progressively closer to the solar equator. As the cycle nears a maximum, sunspots appear at 15 degrees latitude, and as the cycle draws to a close, they appear between 5 and 10 degrees on either side of the equator. When plotted on a graph, this forms what is called a "butterfly diagram" (fig. 18).

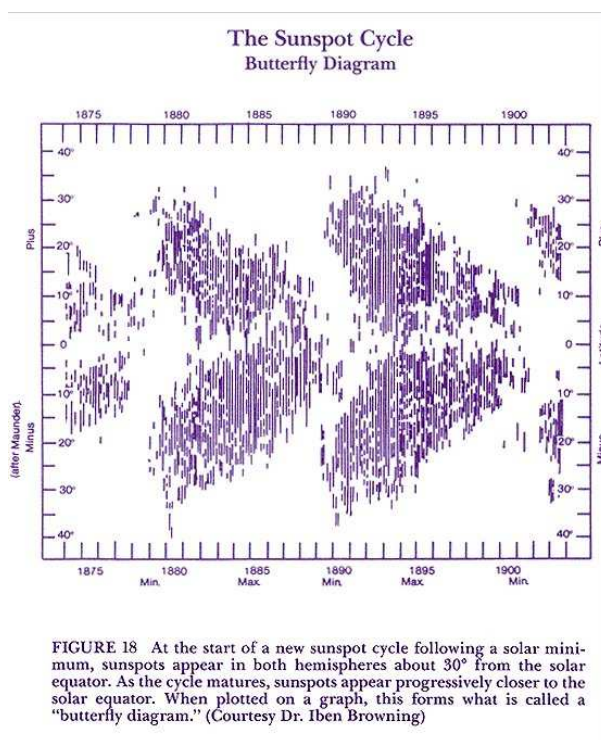


FIGURE 18 At the start of a new sunspot cycle following a solar minimum, sunspots appear in both hemispheres about 30° from the solar equator. As the cycle matures, sunspots appear progressively closer to the solar equator. When plotted on a graph, this forms what is called a "butterfly diagram." (Courtesy Dr. Iben Browning)

Sunspots normally travel in pairs, or groups of opposite polarity. In the northern hemisphere the leading spots of the group usually have a positive polarity and the trailing spots have a negative polarity. In the southern hemisphere the polarities are just the opposite. In the next 11-year cycle, the polarities are reversed - the lead spots in the northern hemisphere have a negative polarity, while the lead spots in the southern hemisphere have a positive polarity. No one is sure what causes this effect. But the regular reversal of polarity suggests to many astronomers that the 11.1-year sunspot cycle is really one-half of a 22.2-year cycle.

The rise of the sunspot cycle to a solar maximum is accompanied by an increase in solar flares, the most powerful form of solar activity. Solar flares are huge gaseous outbursts from the sun. An average-sized flare may be more than 6,000 miles long. A flare can release the energy equivalent of 100 billion one-megaton bombs. At the solar maximum, there may be as many as three to four small

flares per hour and one enormous flare each month. But during the minimum, weeks or months may pass without a flare of any significance.

Solar flares increase the intensity of the solar wind. The solar wind, which reaches the earth in about four and one-half days, impacts the magnetosphere, a magnetic field surrounding the earth, causing such phenomena as the aurora borealis and geo-magnetic storms. It can generate extremely low frequency (ELF) waves on earth. ELF waves are radio waves with a very long wavelength and can influence human biology and behavior.

#### How Solar Activity Influences Life on Earth

The radiation generated by sunspots and solar flares has a number of effects. The most easily detected is the disruption of radio communications. But some scientists also claim that everything from climatic changes to wars, earthquakes and flu epidemics are associated with increased solar activity.

Other scientists dispute these claims. And sunspots and solar flares are certainly not the only cause of such disturbances. But there is a correlation between solar activity and certain kinds of social, behavioral and geophysical effects.

Let us examine the kinds of events that correlate with sunspots and solar flares, starting with those that occur within days or weeks of intense solar activity. Riots, battles, arson attacks, earthquakes and volcanic eruptions have been charted within days or weeks of intense solar activity.

For example, in 1980, solar flares in May coincided with riots in Miami and South Korea and the eruption of Mount St. Helens in May and June. Solar flares also preceded the April 1982 conflict between Great Britain and Argentina over the Falkland Islands and the U.S. attack on Tripoli, Libya, on April 14, 1986.

By tracking solar flares, biologist Marsha Adams was able to assist the San Francisco fire department by predicting arson attacks 72 hours in advance. She believes that flares affect people within the first few days after they happen. She has also found that earthquakes tend to occur about four days after flares. Adams and other investigators reported a correlation between increased solar activity and freak weather conditions, crime waves and political instability.

Mental instability appears to be connected with solar activity as well. Psychiatrists have noticed that voluntary admissions to mental hospitals increase for two to three days after a solar-induced magnetic disturbance. Joe H. Allen, Chief of the Solar-Terrestrial Physics Division of the National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration, said scientists at the Kettering Magnetic Laboratory have found that geomagnetic disturbances may produce a temporary deficiency of calcium or lithium ions inside brain cells, which is a characteristic of progressed manic-depressives.<sup>3</sup>

Adams found that wars tend to break out two to three years after the sunspot maximum - although they occasionally break out before it. She believes that large earthquakes, around 7.0 on the Richter scale, tend to occur near the peak of the sunspot cycle. Very large earthquakes, however - 8 and above - tend to occur two to three years after the sunspot peak.

Peaks in the sunspot-cycle have coincided with major flu epidemics going all the way back to 1761. The sunspot cycle is peaking right now, and once again there is a flu epidemic in the United States, Britain, Europe and the Soviet Union.

Economists have even found links between solar activity and the economy. For example, in "Solar and Economic Relationships," which appeared in the Quarterly Journal of Economics in 1934, Carlos Garcia-Mata argued that there is a correlation between the appearance of sunspots near the solar equator (which happens just after the sunspot peak) and times of economic depression.

The last sunspot cycle was at its maximum between 1979 and 1981. The following events occurred:

---

<sup>3</sup>Joe H. Allen, telephone interview, December 27, 1988.

The Soviet Union invaded Afghanistan. Nicaraguan president Anastasio Somoza was forced out of power and the Sandinistas took over. The Shah was forced out of Iran and Ayatollah Khomeini came to power. Iran took 53 Americans hostage. Iraq invaded Iran, beginning an eight-year war. Israel bombed Iraq's nuclear reactor. China invaded Vietnam.

We are now in the midst of a rising sunspot cycle that is expected to peak sometime before late 1990. In fact, it may already have peaked.

But whenever it does, the crest of the cycle, or solar maximum, will span late 1988 through 1990. This cycle is expected to be the most powerful, or the second most powerful, on record. Between March 6 and March 19, 1989, one of the most powerful solar displays ever observed caused a series of intense geomagnetic storms. Fifty-nine major solar flares erupted during that two week period along with hundreds of minor flares.<sup>4</sup>

There are two ways to measure and classify solar flares: for brightness, and for their emission of X rays. When measured for brightness, the smallest flares are called S-class. Progressively brighter and larger flares are called 1-2-or 3-class flares. When measured for X rays, the smallest flares are called A-class. Progressively larger flares are called B-C-and M-class, and the largest are called X-class.

On March 6, an X-class flare erupted that was then the biggest ever recorded. It catapulted billions of tons of matter into space and released so much radiation that space-based sensors could not measure it. We did not feel the full fury of that eruption because the flare was not aimed at earth.

But on March 10, a slightly less powerful flare erupted while aimed almost directly at the earth. "Eight minutes later, traveling at the speed of light, a blast of X ray and ultraviolet radiation seared the earth's upper atmosphere," Time magazine reported. "Within an hour, high-energy protons began to arrive, followed in three days by a massive bombardment of lower-energy protons and electrons."<sup>5</sup>

That flare generated widespread displays of the aurora borealis - the northern lights - which were seen as far south as the Caribbean. On the night of March 12-13, the sky in Montana and elsewhere was illumined by rose or ruby colored northern lights, which are generated only by the most powerful solar events.

But the flare produced more than a light show. As Time explained:

Heated by the incoming blast of radiation, the upper fringe of the atmosphere expanded farther into space. Low-orbiting satellites, encountering that fringe and running into increased drag, slowed and dropped into still lower orbits. A secret Defense Department satellite began a premature and fatal tumble, and the tracking system that keeps exact tabs on some 19,000 objects in earth orbit briefly lost track of 11,000 of them. Solar Max [a NASA satellite designed to study flares and other solar activity] descended by as much as half a mile in a single day, almost certainly hastening its demise.

On the earth, the flare's effects were equally disruptive. Shortwave transmissions were interrupted, some for as long as 24 hours, and satellite communication and a Coast Guard loran navigation system were temporarily overwhelmed. Powerful transient magnetic fields, generated in the upper atmosphere by the flare, induced electrical currents in transmission lines and wiring, and mystified homeowners reported automatic garage doors opening and closing on their own.<sup>6</sup>

Power surges in transmission lines and transformers in Quebec knocked out power throughout the entire province.

But there was more to this than physical effects. The March 1989 series of flares may have had a

---

<sup>4</sup>Between March 6 and 19, 1989 there were 11 X-class flares and 48 M-class flares.

<sup>5</sup>Leon Jaroff, "Fury on the Sun," Time, 3 July 1989, p. 48.

<sup>6</sup>Ibid.

hand in triggering the following dramatic events:

The Eastern Airline strike and petition for bankruptcy; two train wrecks in the British Isles; rioting in Lhasa, the capital of Tibet, which resulted in the Chinese imposition of martial law; civil unrest in Yugoslavia, Czechoslovakia and Estonia; political upheaval in Greece as Prime Minister Andreas Papandreou was caught up in personal and financial scandals; a break in diplomatic relations between Britain and Iran over Britain's refusal to suppress *The Satanic Verses*, a novel by Salman Rushdie; a serious outbreak of fighting in the ongoing Lebanese civil war; and the Chilean fruit scare, which began when the Food and Drug Administration impounded all Chilean fruit in the United States after inspectors discovered that two grapes imported from Chile had been injected with cyanide. Canada, Japan and West Germany took similar measures.

These flares were the opening salvo of the current solar maximum. And there have been many large flares since. It is too early to assess the full impact of the current sunspot cycle. But a review of sunspot and solar activity from March 1989 to February 1990 shows two things: (1) sunspot numbers have been unusually high, correlating with an unprecedented period of upheaval, particularly in the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe; (2) solar flares often precede or coincide with key events. For example, an X-class flare erupted on March 23, 1989. The following day, the Exxon Valdez ran aground on Bligh Reef off Alaska's southern coast and spilled 11 million gallons of oil into Prince William Sound. It was the worst oil spill in U.S. history.

Between May 29 and June 4, 1989, 26 M-class and 2 X-class flares erupted. On June 4, upheaval in China reached a crescendo with the Tiananmen Square massacre.

On August 16, 1989, the most powerful X-class flare ever recorded erupted.<sup>7</sup> On August 18, the "unthinkable" happened: Polish president General Wojciech Jaruzelski asked Solidarity activist Tadeusz Mazowiecki to be Poland's prime minister - the first non-Communist prime minister of a Soviet Bloc nation since 1948.

On September 29, 1989, another X-class flare erupted. Two days later the first "freedom trains" rolled out of Prague and Warsaw, bringing more than 6,000 East Germans to West Germany.

On October 19, 1989, one of the three most powerful X-class flares of this cycle erupted. On October 23, 1989, a series of explosions ripped through a Phillips Petroleum plastics plant in Pasadena, Texas, igniting a fireball that could be seen for 15 miles. The force of the blasts killed 24, injured 124, threw pieces of metal and concrete six miles, and utterly devastated the plant, which had been capable of producing 4.5 million pounds of polyethylene plastic per day.<sup>8</sup>

Between November 6 and November 11, 1989, 33 M-class flares erupted. On November 9, East Germany opened the Berlin Wall. On November 11, Salvadoran rebels began a major offensive in San Salvador, in the worst fighting since the civil war began in 1979, during the last solar maximum.

The eruption of 11 M-class flares between December 18 and December 25, 1989, coincided with the U.S. invasion of Panama on December 20, the surrender of Panamanian dictator Manuel Noriega to U.S. authorities on December 24, and the execution of Romanian dictator Nicolae Ceausescu on December 25.

The Ascended Masters have given us a further understanding of solar activity. On December 11, 1988, Lord Maitreya told us that "solar rings and sunspots play their role in inaugurating change."<sup>9</sup>

---

<sup>7</sup>X-class flares are given a number to indicate their relative power, X1 being the smallest. State-of-the-art sensors cannot measure a flare larger than X9. When a flare larger than an X9 erupts, scientists measure the time it took to saturate the sensors and the time the sensors remained saturated, and try to estimate its size. Using this method, they concluded that the great flare of March 6, 1989, was an X15 and the great flare of August 16, 1989, was an X20.

<sup>8</sup>"Heat from Plastics Plant Fire Slows Search for the Missing," Billings Gazette, 24 October 1989, p. A1; "Plant Officials Examine Damage," Billings Gazette, 25 October 1989, p. 3A; "Three More Bodies Found; Blast Cause Unknown," Billings Gazette, 26 October 1989, p. 2A.

<sup>9</sup>Lord Maitreya, December 11, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book II, p. 667.

In his dictation of October 7, 1989, beloved God Harmony said:

Even the solar flares and activities of the sun in the remainder of this year will be a means whereby the spiritual Sun behind the sun of this solar system may be translated to the earth in positive ways, even though there be some negative side effects from these manifestations.<sup>10</sup>

#### Solar Activity and Weather Patterns

In addition to political, social and geophysical changes, solar activity may alter the weather. Climatologist Cliff Harris (who advises Purina, Coca Cola and Cargill grain company, among others) says that increased solar activity associated with the current sunspot cycle will produce erratic weather from the late 1980s through the early 1990s. That, in combination with a rare change in atmospheric circulation patterns, will trigger the most extreme weather in 510 years between 1990 and 1996.

Every 510 years or so, over the last 10,000 years, the global pattern of atmospheric circulation has shifted from the normal, calm flow from west to east to a north-to-south flow.

We are now in the early stages of this cyclic occurrence, which should last for five or six years.

Harris says that when the air flow shifts from north to south, it causes cold air to move from the poles towards the equator and rearranges the configuration of high and low pressure zones.

In the northern hemisphere, that causes the jet stream to move south. This pushes cold air further south than normal and warm air further north than normal, causing clashes between masses of cold-dry air and warm-wet air. And that generates extreme weather.

Harris says that over the next decade this cycle will cause record high and low temperatures, drastic shifts in patterns of precipitation, violent storms, and an increasing number of floods and droughts. In fact, he says, "The Midwest will be having record drought in the 1990s, like the 1930s."<sup>11</sup> Due to climatic and other conditions, Harris is also predicting frequent seismic activity - 7.5 or higher - on every continent, as well as increased volcanic activity.

#### The Retrogradation of the Sun Around the Center of Mass

Not only is the current sunspot cycle nearly the highest on record, but it also coincides with a rare solar phenomenon, the retrogradation of the sun around the barycenter, or the center of mass of the solar system.

Strictly speaking, the planets of the solar system do not orbit the sun, they orbit the barycenter. The sun contains 99.9 percent of the mass of the solar system. But the center of the sun orbits the center of mass just like a planet does. And at times, the barycenter is actually outside the physical sun.

Solar physicist James Shirley explains:

The Sun, for most practical purposes, represents the center of the solar system. It is about 743 times more massive than the planets taken together, and it is easy to think of the Sun as a body at rest, with the minute, distant satellites such as Earth having no great influence. However, the solar system is a system of massive bodies in motion bound by gravity, and as a necessary consequence, the Sun has a definite and predictable motion.

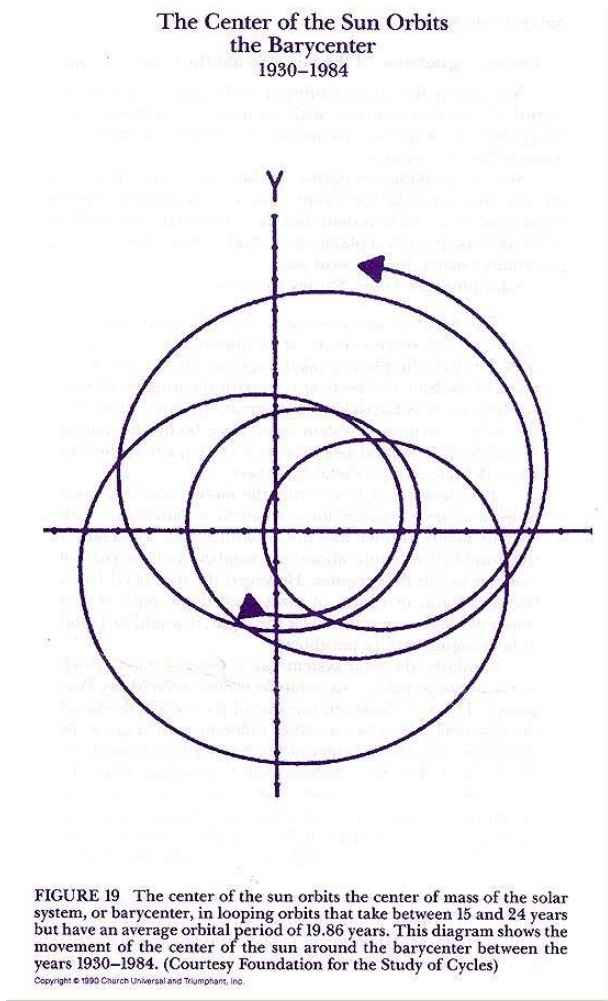
The easiest way to describe the motion and its causes is by analogy. Imagine for a moment a dumbbell, with weighted ends, thrown into the air with a spin. The ends of the dumbbell will spin about one another, and the path of one end would be irregular. However, the dumbbell has a balance point, or center of mass; and if the path of this center of mass were traced over the flight, it would be found to be a regular arc (a parabola).

---

<sup>10</sup>God Harmony, October 7, 1989, 1989 PoW, p. 687.

<sup>11</sup>Dennis Blank, "Sunspots Could Bring Worldwide Crop Devastation," MoneyWorld, September 1988, p. 10.

Similarly, the solar system has a center of mass, which traces a regular path as we orbit the center of the Milky Way galaxy. The Sun, however, like one of the weighted ends of the dumbbell, describes a rather different path. Figure [19] shows the path of the center of the Sun for the period from 1930 to 1984. The Sun moves to and fro, looping about the solar system center of mass (barycenter), with one loop taking on the order of 10-20 years. The Sun's center is at times more than a million miles from the barycenter; this distance is a little larger than the diameter of the Sun itself.<sup>12</sup>



The center of the sun moves counterclockwise around the barycenter in looping orbits that take between 15 and 24 years but have an average orbital period of 19.86 years (fig. 19). In its current orbit, the center of the sun will make its close approach to the barycenter in April 1990. Remember, the day the Dark Cycle enters the physical quadrant is April 23, 1990. But instead of looping around the barycenter, the center of the sun will fall short of it and actually go retrograde - that is, move backwards - relative to the center of mass (fig. 20).

The sun has gone retrograde only twice in the past millennium - in the 1630s and in the early 1800s. According to Shirley, “both periods were characterized by climatic extremes [severe cold] and by remarkable outbursts of explosive volcanic activity.”<sup>13</sup> The year 1816 was known as “the year without summer.” The cold weather during this period stopped Napoleon’s advance into Russia. It also triggered widespread famine in Switzerland and the Ukraine.

J. D. Post noted in the *Journal of Interdisciplinary History* that the period of unusual cold at the start of the nineteenth century inaugurated a period of social chaos: “The years 1812-1817

<sup>12</sup>James H. Shirley, “When the Sun Goes Backward: Solar Motion, Volcanic Activity, and Climate, 1990-2000,” *Cycles*, May/June 1988, p. 114.  
<sup>13</sup>Ibid, p. 113.

The Center of the Sun  
Falls Short of the Barycenter  
April 1990

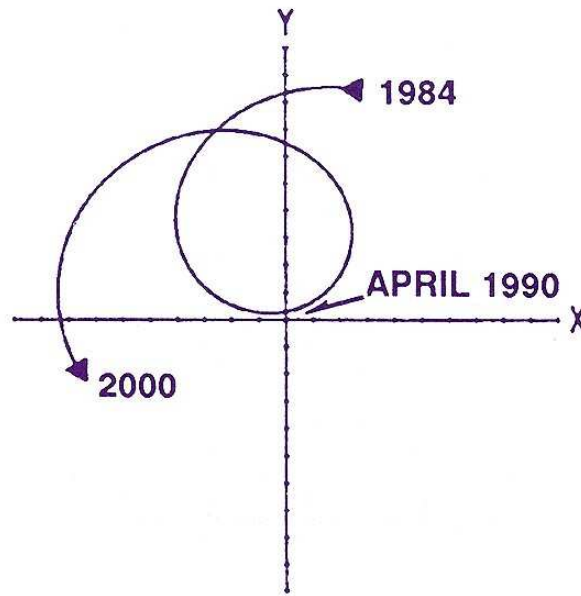


FIGURE 20 The center of the sun orbits the center of mass of the solar system, or barycenter, in a counterclockwise direction. This diagram shows the path of the center of the sun relative to the barycenter between 1984 and 2000. The center of the sun will make its close approach to the barycenter in April 1990. But instead of looping around the barycenter as it usually does, the center of the sun will fall short of it and go retrograde—that is, move backwards—relative to the barycenter. (Courtesy Foundation for the Study of Cycles)  
Copyright © 1990 Church Universal and Triumphant, Inc.

introduced three decades of economic pause punctuated by recurring crisis, distress, social upheaval, international migration, political rebellion and pandemic disease.”<sup>14</sup>

Because of the upcoming retrogradation of the sun around the barycenter, Shirley says we can expect to encounter “climatic extremes of drought, flood and other severe and unusual weather along with, possibly, major explosive volcanic eruptions.”<sup>15</sup> The most likely time for these, he says, is between 1993 and 1999.

#### Famine in the Land of Plenty

As I already mentioned in part 2, the United States is vulnerable to food shortages and famine. That may come as a surprise to many Americans, due to regular reports of agricultural surpluses. Nevertheless, a ruinous grain export policy combined with erratic weather is likely to produce food shortages or famine in the United States in the 1990s.

The United States is the world’s largest grain exporter. But it is also one of the largest food importers. We import almost as much food as we export - primarily beef, fruit, vegetables and dairy products. In fact, we import a greater percentage of our food than the Soviet Union does!

To summarize what I said in part 2, grain export policies set by Congress and the United States Department of Agriculture (USDA), largely at the behest of the big grain companies, encourage the export of the maximum amount of grain. Between the drive to export and the droughts of 1988 and 1989, we have depleted our grain surpluses to the point where we cannot meet one or two more bad harvests without a sudden crisis.

<sup>14</sup>Ibid., p. 117.

<sup>15</sup>Ibid., p. 118.



Crisis could come sooner than we think, because U.S. grain reserves are being depleted rapidly. In 1986, the United States had a wheat carryover stock (surplus) of two billion bushels (54.4 million tons). But by June 1990 it will have fallen to about 435 million bushels (11.8 million tons). And supplies of wheat and other grains are expected to continue to decline due to low levels of soil moisture.

In addition to the carryover stock, the government maintains a very small reserve of wheat for emergencies, some four million metric tons. But the government recently used three million metric tons of that reserve to meet its commitments to Third World nations under the Food for Peace Program.

In 1989 Mark Ritchie, agricultural trade policy analyst for the Minnesota Department of Agriculture, said that U.S. grain supplies are so low due to the drought of 1988 that if we have even "half a drought" anytime in the near future, we could have a big food problem in this country. "It's not safe," he said.<sup>16</sup>

Drought conditions persisted in the U.S. winter wheat and Western corn belts in 1989 and 1990. Don Wilhite, director of the International Drought Information Center, said that as of March 1, 1990, "if you take the areas with moderate, severe and extreme drought and add them together, they represent about 50 percent of the country."<sup>17</sup> In fact, Wilhite said that 26 percent of the country - a huge area that starts in Wisconsin, sweeps through the spring-and winter-wheat belts and the Western corn belt, and ends in Southern California - has severe or extreme drought conditions.

There is very little chance that the spring-wheat, winter-wheat or Western corn belts will come out of the drought soon, Wilhite said. "I've seen statistics coming out of the Midwestern Climate Center showing that the probability of coming out of the drought in north-central Iowa by mid-summer is 1 percent. In other major grain producing areas of the country, it's about 5 percent," he said.

"It's a rather desperate situation for many people. Everybody keeps hoping for rain, but nothing seems to be changing."<sup>18</sup> Even if we get adequate rain in those areas in 1990, which now seems doubtful, crop yields will be low because it takes at least a year to rebuild the subsoil moisture that was depleted by past droughts.

Replenishing subsoil moisture isn't the only problem, however. Wilhite said that the water table itself is being depleted in a number of key agricultural areas in the United States. And drought conditions in the United States could soon intensify, since there are indications that another El Nino is starting.

El Nino is a weather condition characterized by warmer-than-normal waters in the Pacific Ocean along the equator, which alter global weather patterns and produce storms, droughts and flooding. Scientists are not yet sure how quickly it will develop. But Paul Krumpke of the Office of U.S. Foreign Disaster Assistance in the Agency for International Development (AID) says that if an El Nino forms in the spring of 1990, it could trigger a drought in the corn or wheat belts of the United States in the summer of 1990 or 1991, as well as exacerbate already poor crop conditions in the horn of Africa.

Louis Thompson, associate dean emeritus of the College of Agriculture at Iowa State University, says that "corn belt droughts have been part of an El Nino cycle. But, in nearly every case, they have occurred in the year following an El Nino." Like Krumpke, he is uncertain whether there will be an El Nino in 1990. But he says, "If there is no occurrence in 1990, there will be a greater probability of an El Nino in 1991. If there is an El Nino in 1991, we can expect 1992 to be an unfavorable year for corn in the U.S. corn belt. . . . If a drought does occur in 1992, it may prove to be as severe as any drought of this century."<sup>19</sup>

---

<sup>16</sup>Mark Ritchie, telephone interview, March 22, 1989.

<sup>17</sup>Don Wilhite, telephone interview, March 1, 1990.

<sup>18</sup>Ibid.

<sup>19</sup>Louis M. Thompson, "Relationship of the El Nino Cycle to Droughts in the U.S. Corn Belt," *Cycles*, February

Continued drought in the corn and wheat belts are sure to reduce grain stocks in the United States even further. Climatologists Cliff Harris and Dr. Iben Browning<sup>20</sup> say that bad weather is likely to cause crop losses throughout the next decade that could reach famine proportions. Both of them use a number of cycles to make their predictions - including the sunspot cycle; the tidal cycle of the sun, moon and earth; and the 510-year cycle of change in atmospheric circulation.

There seems to be no end to the cycles converging in the early 1990s that coincide with bad weather, and hence with poor agricultural production.

Add to that volcanic eruptions that coincide with the retrogradation of the sun, and we could get a global cooling, which would further decrease crop production. When a volcano erupts with enough force to inject debris into the stratosphere, such as occurred with the eruptions of Redoubt Volcano in Alaska in late 1989 and early 1990, volcanic ash circulates in the jet stream for an extended period of time, blocking out some sunlight and cooling the earth. If a number of volcanoes go off more or less at the same time, the cooling could shorten the growing season and therefore significantly reduce crop yields.

Krumpe says that the U.S. Foreign Disaster Assistance Office is monitoring at least 15 high-risk volcanoes that could “blow at any time,” all of which are capable of injecting large quantities of volcanic ash into the stratosphere.

If, as the evidence suggests, this period of unstable weather lingers through the decade, U.S. food supplies will not be adequate - particularly since the United States imports about \$20 billion worth of food annually, and the countries that export food to us, beset by their own problems, probably will not be able to satisfy our needs.

There is a supreme irony in all of this. The United States government spends a great deal of money on agriculture subsidies in order to export food (see part 2). In 1986, for example, the government paid out about \$12 billion in subsidies in order to enable grain merchants to export about \$4 billion worth of corn.

The beneficiaries of our export agricultural policy are not the farmers but the large grain exporting companies, such as Cargill and Continental. They influence the government to adopt agricultural export policies that increase the volume of grain exported at low prices.

This hurts the farmer, who gets a low price for his grain, as well as the taxpayer, who pays the farmer a subsidy to keep him in business. But it helps the grain merchant, who makes money by selling a greater volume of grain. It also helps our biggest customer for subsidized grain - the Soviet Union.

Ritchie says we spend a lot of money selling grain overseas, but since we do not keep a good reserve on hand for domestic use, we could wake up one day and find out that we are short of food.

#### Vicious Circles

I have mentioned a number of world changes associated with solar activity, including seismic and volcanic activity, climatic changes, flu epidemics, economic depressions, and wars and battles. What can make these conditions worse is that they may interact with and amplify one another to set in motion what might be called a series of “vicious circles.”

For example, the weather is expected to be unstable during the next decade, largely due to solar activity. A number of climatologists say that erratic weather in some of the major food-growing areas throughout the world will decrease global food production.

Major crop losses in the United States will reduce or eliminate U.S. grain exports, creating pro-

---

1990, pp. 15, 16.

<sup>20</sup>Iben Browning is a research scientist, inventor and climatologist. He was a research scientist with Sandia National Laboratory and has been a climatologist with Mitchell Hutchins/PaineWebber for the last 15 years.

found changes in other nations - especially those that have come to depend on our exports for a substantial part of their food supply, such as the Soviet Union, China, Egypt, Morocco and Tunisia. Grain shortages in the United States will also cause higher prices on the world market. Higher prices in turn are likely to cause food shortages or famine throughout the world, triggering political instability.

Instability due to food shortages could well lead to changes of government and even to war. In fact, Dr. Browning has shown that changes in climate coincide with food shortages, depressions, mass migrations, wars and revolutions.

It is commonly known that the Soviet Union has major food production and distribution problems and that it is facing a great deal of internal resistance to solving those problems. But few people realize just how bad things really are in the Soviet Union.

John Miller of the London Daily Telegraph wrote, "Staple foods are now rationed in eight of the 15 Soviet republics."<sup>21</sup> In March 1989, Reuters news service reported:

Shortages of consumer goods in the Soviet Union have become dire, and Moscow must look to the West for new credits if it is to check a rapid slide in living standards, two leading economists say.

The warning by the economists, writing in two different publications, reflects concern that chronic shortages of food and basic goods threaten confidence in Soviet leader Mikhail Gorbachev's perestroika reform program.

"The worsening of the situation on the consumer market was such last year that we cannot hold out for much longer," Otto Latsis wrote in the Soviet weekly *Ekonomicheskaya Gazeta*.

"Another year like that and the market could collapse. We could find ourselves in a situation like that of Poland in 1981-1982 - with empty shelves and trade that has virtually ceased to exist."<sup>22</sup>

These reports were published in March of 1989. Since then, conditions have grown worse. In fact, according to Krumpke, it has been reported that as of February 1990 "there's virtually no meat in the Soviet Union or in Eastern Europe due to a shortage of feed grain."<sup>23</sup>

In the Daily Telegraph, Miller described a bitter power struggle in the Politburo over how to solve the Soviet Union's number one domestic problem. Gorbachev wants to "reform" the system by leasing land to the farmers - a socialist version of letting private enterprise solve the problem. An opposing faction wants to improve the current system of collective farming by throwing more money at it. But Soviet agriculture is so inefficient that neither solution is likely to work in the short run, even with the best weather. The weather, however, is not expected to be good and Soviet crop production is likely to fall significantly.

In addition, the cyclic southerly displacement of the jet stream, which will take place in the early 1990s, will probably disrupt food production in the central Asian areas of the Soviet Union and drive the Asiatic populations into the European Russian areas of the Soviet Union.

Concurrent with global food shortages and higher food prices, less money will be available to purchase what food there is. A global recession (or depression) is waiting to happen in the international economy. And even if the world economy stays afloat, the Soviet economy is rapidly disintegrating.

This time the United States won't be able to bail the Soviets out. Adverse weather conditions are likely to reduce food production in the United States to the point where we couldn't export sizable quantities of grain to the Soviets even if we wanted to.

Taken together, food shortages, population pressure and recession or depression could place intolerable political pressure on the Soviet leadership. Faced with an economic squeeze and tight

---

<sup>21</sup>John Miller, "Kremlin Rumbles Over a Gut Issue," *Washington Times*, 14 March 1989, p. A10.

<sup>22</sup>"Shortages at Crisis Level, Two Soviet Economists Warn," *Washington Times*, 6 March 1989, p. A9.

<sup>23</sup>Paul Krumpke, telephone interview, February 26, 1990.

agricultural supplies, the world's preeminent military power, the Soviet Union, may find it expedient to use its military to obtain needed economic and agricultural resources.

The nearest agricultural and economic resources are in Western Europe. If the Soviets go to war to seize scarce resources, it would start another vicious circle that would damage economies, food production, health and so on.

There is yet another vicious circle related to food shortages. According to climatologist and historian Evelyn Garriss, famines are accompanied by disease because malnourished people suffer from immune suppression. As a result, people get diseases that they would not normally be susceptible to and contract new diseases, which enter the population.

The immune system can be compromised by other factors. Dr. Robert Becker, an authority on the effects of electromagnetic radiation on human health, integrated data from numerous sources that strongly suggests that ELF waves, which are generated by solar flares, lead to a decline in a person's ability to fight off disease. A decline in the immune system is associated in turn with a number of new diseases, including AIDS, Legionnaire's disease and Herpes genitalis. Thus, the human immune system may be depleted by two different activities that increase when solar phenomenon increases - malnutrition and ELF waves.

This contributes to another vicious circle. A worldwide increase in disease is costly. Two health economists, Anne Scitovsky and Dorothy Rice, estimate that by 1991 health-care costs for AIDS patients in the United States will be about \$65 billion a year, and lost productivity will be another \$55 billion.<sup>24</sup> So solar activity indirectly affects the economy in two ways: it makes food shortages and increased health-care costs more likely.

#### The Impact of Comets

Solar flares are not the only cosmic events believed to cause disease. Comets may also play a part. Although Halley's comet came and went in 1986 with no perceivable effects, since ancient times comets have been thought to be harbingers of events - usually the death of kings, wars, famines, plagues and other disasters.

In modern times, Fred Hoyle, an astrophysicist, and Chandra Wickramasinghe, an astronomer, have argued that all infectious diseases - from plagues to the common cold - were originally brought from deep space by comets and transferred to earth by micrometeorites.

They believe that a comet was responsible for the influenza epidemic of 1918 to 1919, which killed 30 million people. Although the scientific community almost uniformly disagrees with this assertion, science writer Robert Kunzig points out that "there is probably more support now than ever before for the idea that the organic precursors of life - not life itself but its building blocks, or maybe the building blocks of the building blocks - could have been brought to Earth by comets early in the planet's history."<sup>25</sup>

Scientists have discovered amino acids, the building blocks of proteins, both in interstellar space and in meteorites. Kunzig points out that scientists now agree that "comets contain supertanker-loads of organic material and that at least some of that material was probably produced in interstellar space."<sup>26</sup>

Astronomers are continually discovering new comets. And according to Science News, "Swarms of tiny comets are hurtling through the solar system and bombarding earth at the incredible rate of 10 million comets per year."<sup>27</sup>

If comets are indeed carriers of bacteria and viruses to the earth and have been responsible for

---

<sup>24</sup> "The Staggering Price of AIDS," U.S. News & World Report, 15 June 1987, p. 16.

<sup>25</sup> Robert Kunzig, "Stardust Memories: Kiss of Life," Discover, March 1988, p. 68.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 74.

<sup>27</sup> "Comet Controversy Caught on Fire," Science News, 28 May 1988, p. 340.

outbreaks of disease, then the degradation of the human immune system in the coming years may be more serious than anyone imagines.

Not all comets may be harbingers of evil, however. On June 30, 1973, the Elohim Purity, speaking of the comet Kohoutek, said:

And so I am come, and so I have made to you the announcement of this century for the Elohim of the Fourth Ray - the release of purity this day. It is an awesome and . . . auspicious event in the halls of the Great Central Sun, and mighty Messengers of Light go forth bearing purity. And the mighty comet that shall appear in the heavens ere six months shall pass is a manifestation of the Messengers of cosmic purity that come forth periodically from the Heart of Alpha and Omega as emissaries of Light to greet those twin flames who hold the focus of Light on behalf of evolutions.<sup>28</sup>

On October 14, 1973, the Ascended Master Lord Maitreya also referred to Kohoutek:

Opportunity is given for you to elect to present yourselves a living sacrifice unto the Lord God Almighty. And to you I make known this hour that the comet of the century comes to foretell the birth of many Christed ones, many souls who are to descend within the coming twelvemonth.

And thus, because preparations must be made, we shall not tarry in our announcement of this dispensation. For those who would apply and receive the seal of our approval and our blessing must do so speedily, that time and space might provide the cradle and the crucible for incoming souls.

Let your life, your very being, your very consciousness provide the nexus for the descent of Light-bearers. The nexus is the place in the hourglass where the sand falls, grain by grain. The Christ is the nexus of man's being. As the Mediator, the Christed One stands between God and man. Your own Christed being, therefore, is the Mediator whereby you may receive into your being and consciousness souls of Light hallowed, waiting to come forth.<sup>29</sup>

"Prophecy for the 1990s III" Part 6 is based on a lecture given by Elizabeth Clare Prophet May 22, 1989, Chicago Teaching Center, Chicago, Illinois, updated for publication in the 1990 Pearls of Wisdom. Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

<sup>28</sup>Purity, June 30, 1973, 1973 PoW, Book I, p. 190.

<sup>29</sup>Lord Maitreya, October 14, 1973, 1984 PoW, Book II, p. 372.



# Chapter 10

## The Messenger - March 11, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 10 - The Messenger - March 11, 1990

Prophecy for the 1990s

III by

Elizabeth Clare Prophet

7

The Four Planets in Capricorn and the Four Horsemen:

The Anatomy of Karma

Mars, Saturn, Uranus and Neptune are the four planets in Capricorn that began the current cycle of returning karma to the earth with their conjunction of February 22 to 23, 1988. The effects of this conjunction will be felt for decades, if not for the entire century to come.

The LORD God revealed to me that these four planets correspond to the Four Horsemen. If we position them in the four quadrants of the Cosmic Clock as we positioned the Four Horsemen themselves in part 4, we can learn something more about the karma they portend.

### The White Horse

Uranus represents the white horse in the etheric plane. Therefore we place it in the first quadrant, where we experience the warfare of the spirit, the warfare against the Father (fig. 21). The first quadrant corresponds to the etheric plane and the etheric body.

In astrology, Uranus is the planet of sudden or unexpected change. It conveys the impulse to individual and social freedom, stimulates progress, especially in the areas of science, religion and government, and is associated with originality, altruism and group affairs, as well as anarchy, rebellion and revolution.

Uranus rules the sign of Aquarius, which is represented by the “water bearer,” who dispenses the waters of knowledge. Uranus shows how a person can establish an intuitive link with the Universal Mind. It is related to the transmission of ideas from the etheric to the other three planes, the mental, the astral and the physical.

In its negative expression, Uranus can block or pervert the intuitive links required to bring etheric ideas into manifestation. Thus Uranus can distort the religious, scientific, social and political ideas that are intended to liberate the individual and society. The result can be bondage rather than freedom.

The planet Uranus, just like the other planets in our solar system, has a Causal Body of light and perfection, which contains all of the good qualities, the good words and works, of the evolutions who

The Four Quadrants,  
the Four Planets and  
the Four Horsemen

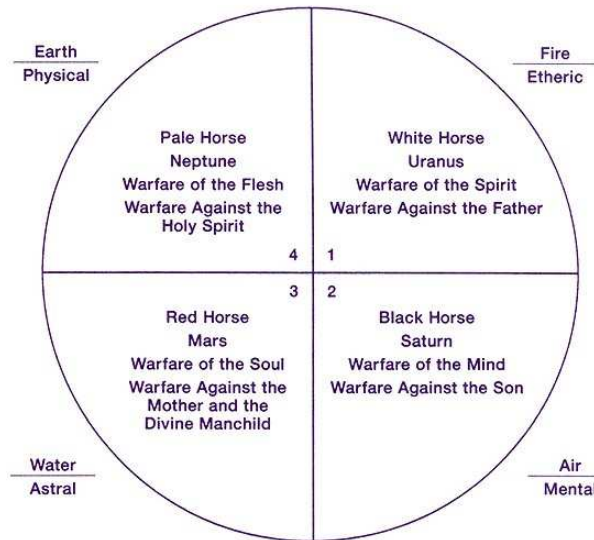


FIGURE 21 Uranus, the planet of sudden or unexpected change, represents the white horse in the etheric plane. In its positive mode it promotes intuition and conveys the impulse to freedom; in its negative mode it blocks intuition and promotes rebellion. Saturn, the tester and the teacher, represents the black horse in the mental plane. It brings karma, either positive or negative, to the individual or nation. Mars, the planet of action based on desire, represents the red horse in the astral plane. On the positive side, it is associated with activity, courage and self-reliance; on the negative side, with warfare. Neptune, the planet of illumination and refinement, represents the pale horse in the physical plane. It brings mysticism, spirituality and illumination as well as chaos, delusion, treachery and scandal.

have lived there. It also has a subconscious, or an electronic belt, which contains the accumulation of the negative qualifications of her lifewaves.

Whatever we magnetize to ourselves from Uranus, whether from her Causal Body or her electronic belt, we can be certain that like elements within ourselves will be the determining factor. So, if we have externalized the positive qualities associated with Uranus, we will attract to ourselves these momentums from her Causal Body. Likewise, if we are vulnerable at the subconscious level through our untransmuted karma, we will attract the negative vibrations of her electronic belt.

If the latter be the case, we will be vulnerable to the first horseman of the four, the white horse. The same will be true for the remaining three planets and the horsemen they represent. And where we have both good and bad karma there is a delicate balance. A lot depends on our free will and sense of self-determination.

When you know that Uranus corresponds to the white horse, you can take a closer look at the karmic retribution the white horse delivers. You can deal with the negative astrological portents of Uranus, delivered by the white horseman as personal and planetary karma, through prayer, preparation, dynamic decrees and service to life. And you can decide that you are not going to take on the negatives of personal and planetary karma but you are going to transmute them. You are going to take on Uranus's Causal Body of Light, pioneer a path for the New Age in your chosen field, and call for the positive good of Almighty God to be worked through you.

### The Black Horse

Saturn represents the black horse in the mental plane. Therefore we place it in the second quadrant, where we experience the ongoing warfare of the mind, the warfare against the Son. The second quadrant corresponds to the mental plane and the mental body.



Astrologers refer to Saturn as the “greater malefic,” the bearer of evil tidings, having a malignant influence. But whatever Saturn brings, it is always the karma, positive or negative, of the individual or the nation. Thus, as I have said, all of the planets are initiators initiating us as gurus according to the cycles of cause and effect that we ourselves have set in motion.

Saturn is associated with the initiations of Lord Maitreya as well as with the works of Satan. It is called the “greater malefic” because if you don’t transmute its negative aspect, it can cause the Satanic, or negative, elements of your subconscious to manifest.

Saturn rules the sign of Capricorn. It is associated with karma, restrictions and long-term problems. It is a disciplinarian. Saturn will never allow you to keep what you have not lawfully earned. It will strip from you all ill-gotten gains, the fruits of unlawful shortcuts and the misuses of the will of God.

Saturn is the tester as well as the teacher. It rules time, responsibility, status and the status quo, political and social power, law and order, and corporations and dictatorships. It regulates abundance and poverty. Under Saturn the law will exact its recompense: To them that have shall more be added. To them that have not shall be taken away that which they have.<sup>1</sup>

Saturnian problems in the economy surface as chronic shortages or restrictions due to past mismanagement of resources. Saturn’s role as teacher associates it with all activities of the mind, including education. Saturnian problems show blocks to education, such as the power elite’s planned restriction of proper learning methods to insure their own continued power and control over the people.

In order to get to the root of the rotten education being given to our children in the public schools we have to transmute the cause and core of karma we have made under Saturn, which is, remember, the karma we have made in the mental quadrant, whose avenger is the black horse.

We have to realize that pouring more money into our schools won’t work, and hasn’t, since we spend \$5,000 per student per year on elementary and secondary education and have 27 million functional illiterates, 60 percent of whom have had between six and eight years of school, according to the U.S. Bureau of the Census. South Korea’s government spends only \$500 per student per year. Yet in a recent international math test, South Korean 13-year-olds came in first out of six nations and U.S. 13-year-olds came in last. U.S. students excelled at one yes/no question, however. Sixty-eight percent answered yes to the statement “I am good at mathematics.” Only 23 percent of Korean students answered yes.<sup>2</sup>

This is an example of Neptunian illusion. The first thing we have to do to get out of this Saturnian/Neptunian trap is to see to it that the Christ is raised up in each pupil and that our children’s teachers are representatives of the World Teachers, Jesus and Kuthumi.

In 1970 with Mark Prophet I founded Montessori International school in Colorado Springs because I was determined that my own children would not become fodder for the mills of public education. I wanted to be sure that they would learn to read and write and master basic math skills before they even reached school age. I wanted them to be independent and to be able to go on at their own pace to acquire the knowledge they needed to balance their karma and fulfill their missions in life. That school has continued to the present and it now goes through the twelfth grade.

We teach our children to read not only by the Montessori method but also by the techniques of Glenn Doman and of Romalda Spalding.<sup>3</sup> We use Doman’s Bits of Intelligence to expand the

---

<sup>1</sup>Matt. 13:12; 25:29; Luke 19:26.

<sup>2</sup>Carol Innerst, “U.S. Thirteen-year-Olds Lag in Math, Excel in TV,” Washington Times, 1 February 1989, p.A1; Charles Krauthammer, “Education: Doing Bad and Feeling Good,” Time, 5 February 1990, p. 78.

<sup>3</sup>For more information on these methods of teaching reading, see Glenn Doman, *How to Teach Your Baby to Read* (Philadelphia: Better Baby Press, 1983); Glenn Doman, et. al., *How to Give Your Baby Encyclopedic Knowledge* (Philadelphia: Better Baby Press, 1984) and Romalda B. Spalding and Walter T. Spalding, *The Writing Road to Reading: The Spalding Method of Phonics for Teaching Speech, Writing and Reading* (New York: William Morrow

children's brain capacity and Spalding's 70 phonograms of the English language to teach them to read. From the time they are born they begin learning the sounds of the alphabet. They are shown flash cards and given the pronunciations of the phonograms. And they respond with tremendous interest and delight.

I had learned some of these methods of teaching children to read before I had my first child, who is now 25 years old. And so I taught all of my children to read by phonics in order to beat the game of the look-and-say method used in most public schools, which requires children to memorize words by their shape and appearance without understanding the individual letters and phonograms that make up those words.

Maria Montessori discovered that children go through sensitive periods in which they have the greatest aptitude for learning certain skills, whether reading, writing, math or languages. A sensitive period is the ideal time for children to learn a specific subject because they have a heightened interest in it and the greatest facility in literally absorbing its entire contents.

If children pass through these sensitive periods without being properly taught the subjects they are capable of learning, they may be afflicted for the rest of their lives. It's much more difficult to learn to read and write as a teenager or an adult, because you have to go back and pick up dropped stitches.

But the problems in education aren't just the methods that are being used. We don't solve problems simply by having good ideas or putting programs into action. We must inject the sacred fire, the violet flame and the calls for Divine Intercession into our work.

In combatting the controls of the power elite, we are dealing with, as Paul said, principalities and powers and spiritual wickedness in high places.<sup>4</sup> We are dealing with unseen forces, subconscious forces and the evil of the fallen angels who have manipulated the minds and intelligence of our people, even genetically, all the way back to Atlantis and prior civilizations.

#### The Red Horse

Mars, which has a red cast in the heavens, represents the red horse in the astral plane. Therefore we place it in the third quadrant, where we experience the warfare of the soul and the warfare against the Mother and the Divine Manchild. The third quadrant corresponds to the astral plane and the emotional, or desire, body.

Mars is the planet of action based on desire. It is associated with activity, courage, self-reliance, executive authority, passion, combativeness, anger, aggression, sexuality and ambition. It rules wars, battles, crime, military and police forces, surgeons, engineers, terrorists, explosions, fires and bloodshed.

Mars rules the sign of Aries, which expresses both the pioneering spirit and rash, self-centered action. Mars also traditionally rules Scorpio, which governs, among other things, secrecy and warfare.

Mars is known as the "lesser malefic." In its negative manifestation Mars expresses itself in all forms of warfare. When Mars is afflicting your chart, you can get into explosive and heated arguments if you are not in God-control of yourself and the situation. When you get into these arguments you often realize afterwards that they are "not like you." If you examine your astrology, you will most likely see that you were dealing with Martian energies at that time and didn't know it. And if you did know it, you probably didn't pay attention to it or make the calls to Archangel Michael for your protection.

So keep an eye on your astrology. Watch out. And don't get into arguments with anybody when Mars is passing through critical places in your chart. When you are awake and alive and aware

---

and Co., 1986). Write or call Summit University Press for information about "AlphaBits for our children," do-it-yourself flashcard kits produced by Montessori International.

<sup>4</sup>Eph. 6:12.

and know about transits and afflictions, you can gain the mastery of your life even in the midst of negative astrology and planetary chaos.

### The Pale Horse

Neptune represents the pale horse in the physical plane. Therefore we place it in the fourth quadrant, where we experience the warfare of the flesh, the warfare against the Holy Spirit. The fourth quadrant corresponds to the physical plane and the physical body.

Neptune is the planet of mysticism, spirituality and illumination. It is also the planet of chaos, confusion, delusion, deception, treachery and scandal. Neptune is associated with drug and alcohol abuse and is one indicator of sexual perversion. It rules the ocean, liquids, swamps, drugs, medicines, gases and poisons. In the social sphere it rules democratic and popular movements, the common people, epidemics, social unrest and socialism. Neptune also governs the national taste for music and the arts.

We have seen that historically, when combined with Saturn, Neptune is related to the aggressive expansion of World Communism. (We may expect to see an expansion of World Communism in the years after the February 1988 Saturn-Neptune conjunctions.)

Neptune rules Pisces, the sign that on the positive side indicates liberation through ultimate self-sacrifice, and on the negative side indicates physical or psychological imprisonment due to self-delusion. Neptune rules matters that are often shrouded from public sight but that have physical consequences, such as drug abuse and the transmission of venereal diseases.

You can see that with every planet you have a choice. You can outpicture either the high road of the higher octaves and virtues of Light or the low road of the astral plane. Some people are creatures of their negative astrology. They outpicture it to the letter. Others stand independent and apart from their negative astrology because they are determined not to be moved by its influences; they are ruled by the divine astrology of their Causal Body of Light, with its points of reference to their past victories and their momentums of initiations successfully passed.

N.B.: "Prophecy for the 1990s III" is based on a lecture given by Elizabeth Clare Prophet May 21, 1989, at the Sheraton Centre Hotel, New York, updated for publication in the 1990 Pearls of Wisdom.



# Chapter 11

## The Messenger - March 18, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 11 - The Messenger - March 18, 1990

PROPHECY FOR THE 1990s

III by

Elizabeth Clare Prophet

8

Glasnost and a Soviet First Strike: A Study in Contradictions

Saint Germain has told us:

You have every reason to believe, to be concerned, and to be prepared for a first strike by the Soviet Union upon these United States. . . . Therefore, secure the underground shelters, preserve the food, and prepare to survive. And if it be an exercise proven unneeded, then bless God that it did not go unheeded. For, beloved, my word and your response, your very preparedness, is the one condition that can prevent the almost inevitable scenario of nuclear war.<sup>1</sup>

I have the inner awareness of the Soviet Union's plans and preparations for war. I have also studied the military balance East and West and found that the facts, when looked at objectively, coincide with my inner awareness. In addition, astrology and the signs of the times tell us that the Soviets are ready for war, that our nation is vulnerable to a Soviet first strike, and that it could happen at any time.

America spends \$300 billion a year on defense. But as we sit here today, this nation has no system in place to stop one incoming nuclear warhead, whether launched by intent or by accident, by a terrorist nation or by the Soviet Union. How did we get into a position of zero defense against nuclear weapons? It's not for a lack of money or technology. We have no defense against nuclear weapons today because of the nuclear policy of Mutual Assured Destruction (MAD).

Nuclear Strategy

The nuclear strategy of the United States is deterrence - "Let's avoid nuclear war by making the consequences of an attack by either nation too great." But MAD can maintain stability only if both sides adopt the same strategy and play by the same rules. Soviet and American nuclear strategies have diverged fundamentally in the last 20 years. Most of the U.S. missile force is capable of attacking only Soviet cities. But most of the Soviet missile force is capable of destroying American nuclear weapons.

In his best-selling novel, *The Cardinal of the Kremlin*, Tom Clancy explains the strategic balance. Although fictional, it is a textbook explanation of modern nuclear strategy in simple terms.

---

<sup>1</sup>Saint Germain, November 27, 1986, 1986 PoW, Book II, p. 648; Saint Germain On Prophecy, Book Four, p. 208.

The Western nuclear arsenal was the greatest threat to Marxism-Leninism; countering that arsenal was the prime task of the Soviet military. But unlike the West, the Soviets did not see the prevention of its use as simply the prevention of war. Since the Soviets viewed the West as politically unpredictable, they felt that they could not depend on deterring it. They needed to be able to eliminate, or at least degrade, the Western nuclear arsenal if a crisis threatened to go beyond the point of mere words.

[The Soviet] nuclear arsenal was designed with precisely this task in mind. Killing cities and their millions of inhabitants would always be a simple exercise. Killing the missiles that their countries owned was not. To kill the American missiles had meant developing several generations of highly accurate - and hugely expensive - rockets like the SS-18, whose sole mission was to reduce America's Minuteman missile squadrons to glowing dust, along with the submarine and bomber bases. All but the last were to be found well distant from population centers; consequently, a strike aimed at disarming the West might be carried off without necessarily resulting in world holocaust. At the same time, the Americans did not have enough really accurate warheads to make the same threat against the Soviet missile force. The Russians, then, had an advantage in a potential "counterforce" attack - the sort aimed at weapons rather than people. . . .

Nuclear Deterrence: preventing war by the threat of mutual holocaust. Both sides told the other in substance, If you kill our helpless civilians, we will kill yours. Defense was no longer protection of one's own society, but the threat of senseless violence against another. . . . In achieving the ability to eliminate much of the American arsenal, [the Soviets] had the advantage of dictating how a nuclear war would be fought; in classical terms that was the first step toward victory, and in the Soviet view, Western denial that "victory" was a possibility in a nuclear war was the first step toward Western defeat.<sup>2</sup>

MAD depends on neither side having the ability to stop nuclear weapons. If one side can and the other side can't, the one that can has the advantage and MAD is rendered invalid.

In the mid-1960s, the United States decided that neither side could win a nuclear war and therefore our only hope was in MAD. Consequently we froze our ICBM force at 1,054 (it's at 1,050 today because we scrapped 54 Titans as we deployed 50 MXs) and canceled our civil defense (fallout shelters) and air defense (surface-to-air missiles) against bombers. And in 1975 we dismantled Safeguard, a limited strategic defense system against ICBMs. Strategic defense means defense against long-range weapons.

As Clancy reports, the Soviets decided that their security lay not in depending on mutual deterrence and trusting us not to bomb their cities but in developing ICBMs that were powerful and accurate enough to destroy our nuclear weapons before they ever got off the ground. In addition, they have never wavered in their commitment to strategic defense. Clancy explains why:

An American strategic-defense system could negate all of Soviet nuclear posture. If the Americans could prevent the SS-18s from taking out their land-based missiles, then the disarming first strike that the Soviets depended upon to limit damage to the Rodina [Soviet Motherland] was no longer possible. And that meant that all of the billions that had been sunk into ballistic-missile production were now as surely wasted as though the money had been dumped into the sea. . . .

A workable strategic defense scheme would have the effect of adding a new element of uncertainty to the equation. It was unlikely that any country could eliminate all incoming warheads, and the death of as "few" as twenty million citizens was too ghastly a thing to contemplate, even for the Soviet leadership. But even a rudimentary SDI system might kill enough warheads to invalidate the whole idea of counterforce.

If the Soviets had such a system first, the meager American counterforce arsenal could be countered more easily than the Soviet one, and the strategic situation for which the Soviets had worked thirty

---

<sup>2</sup>Tom Clancy, *The Cardinal of the Kremlin*, (New York: Berkley Books, 1988), pp. 130, 131.

years would remain in place. The Soviet government would have the best of both worlds, a far larger force of accurate missiles with which to eliminate American warheads, and a shield to kill most of the retaliatory strike against their reserve missile fields.<sup>3</sup>

Contrary to popular opinion, high-tech laser and particle beam weapons are not the only way to shoot down a nuclear warhead. There are ground-based systems called antiballistic missiles (ABMs) that are capable of destroying a nuclear warhead before it reaches its target. These systems, while highly sophisticated, use existing technology. I will therefore refer to them as “low-tech” to distinguish them from futuristic weapons. Both the United States and the Soviet Union have developed “low-tech” ABMs. However, only the Soviet Union has deployed them.

While Clancy’s book focuses on high-tech systems like lasers that the Soviets are persistently researching and that are also part of the U.S. SDI, or “Star Wars,” program, he does not mention that the Soviets have already deployed many of the components of a ground-based defense system that could protect the Soviet Union from a U.S. submarine-based nuclear attack, which could occur after a Soviet first strike had destroyed most of the U.S. land-based weapons.

Although Clancy, like most people today, does not think that the Soviets would execute a deliberate first strike but would only attack in response to an escalating world crisis, some sources even more informed than Clancy say that the Soviets do plan a surprise first strike.

Jan Sejna, a former general in the Czechoslovakian army, is the highest-ranking member of the Communist military ever to defect. He was privy to the Soviets’ strategy for global conquest and says that they plan a first strike following a period of economic turmoil. If you want to hear him speak, I recommend you get the video- or audiotapes of the Summit University Forum I held with General Sejna at the Hilton Hotel in Washington, D.C., and listen to what he says.<sup>4</sup> You decide whether he is credible or not.

Many Americans doubt that the Soviets would launch a surprise first strike attack on the United States, or that they could launch one without being destroyed in return. And few understand how a coordinated Soviet attack on U.S. nuclear weapons could render us incapable of an effective response.

In *The Cardinal of the Kremlin*, Clancy describes a simplified but realistic scenario of a Soviet attack on the United States from the viewpoint of a Soviet colonel, Mikhail Filitov (Misha). The scenario assumes that a Soviet strategic defense is in place that can shoot down the U.S. submarine-based nuclear missiles and any remaining land-based missiles fired in retaliation. These defenses are supposed to be high-tech lasers. In reality, the low-tech systems that the Soviets have already deployed could perform this function. In addition, the Soviets have already deployed a ground-based laser capable of damaging or destroying U.S. satellites.

The scenario, which purportedly follows a period of escalating tension between the superpowers, is as follows:

When the tone of Western rhetoric reached its culmination, the launch orders would be issued to the missile force, and 300 SS-18s would launch, allocating three warheads to each of the American Minuteman silos. Smaller weapons would go after the submarine and bomber bases to limit collateral casualties as much as possible - the Soviets had no wish to exacerbate the situation more than necessary. Simultaneously, the lasers would disable as many American reconnaissance and navigation satellites as possible but leave the communications satellites intact - a gamble calculated to show “good” intent. The Americans would not be able to respond to the attack before the Soviet warheads struck. (Misha worried about this, but information from KGB and GRU said that there were

---

<sup>3</sup>Ibid., pp. 132-133.

<sup>4</sup>See “General Jan Sejna and Dr. Joseph Douglass, Jr.: Inside Soviet Military Strategy,” Summit University Forum, November 28, 1987. Available from Summit University Press, Box A, Livingston, MT 59047-1390. Full-length interview, 4-3/4 hrs., available on three videocassettes, GP88001, or three audiocassettes, A88016; also available on five 1-hr. cable TV shows, parts 1-5, HL89001-HL89005.

serious flaws in the American command-and-control system, plus the psychological factors involved.) Probably the Americans would keep their submarine weapons in reserve and launch their surviving Minutemen at Soviet missile silos, but it was expected that no more than two to three hundred warheads would survive the first strike; many of those would be aimed at empty holes anyway, and the defense system would kill most of the incoming weapons.

At the end of the first hour, the Americans would realize that the usefulness of their submarine missiles was greatly degraded. Constant, carefully prepared messages would be sent via the Moscow-Washington Hot Line: WE CANNOT LET THIS GO ANY FURTHER. That was the important part - to make people stop and think. A man might attack cities on impulse or in a state of rage, but not after sober reflection.<sup>5</sup>

What Clancy does not take into account in this scenario are the Soviet defenses that have been deployed and the Soviet bomb shelters for their leadership and 60 percent of their urban population.<sup>6</sup>

After a Soviet attack on our weapons, not our cities, we would have about 2,400 warheads on submarines left. They are too small and inaccurate to destroy military targets in the Soviet Union. Following a first strike, the U.S. president would have the choice of either destroying innocent Soviet civilians and submitting to Soviet retaliation on U.S. cities, or surrender.

#### Strategic Defense in the United States and the Soviet Union

And Soviet defenses may soon be able to stop our incoming warheads. In 1987, the Pentagon estimated that the Soviets could have deployed a countrywide strategic defense system protecting key targets by the early 1990s. This would consist of antiballistic missiles (ABMs), surface-to-air missiles (SAMs) modified to function as ABMs, and a radar network.<sup>7</sup> These are not the vaunted Star Wars laser and particle-beam weapons but high-speed ground-based missiles.

The Soviets do have their own top-priority Star Wars program, however, which is larger than ours. They have outspent us on strategic defense fifteen to one since 1976. They have the components for a space-based kinetic-kill vehicle (KKV) global missile defense. This includes a heavy launch vehicle, a space station and a space plane. If they deploy their system, they will control space.

In fact, the Soviets may already have the ability to control space. A Soviet scientist who defected in 1989 says that the Soviet Union deployed a space-based laser weapon system, code named "Project Astrophysica," in 1983! The system is capable of attacking U.S. satellites and may be able to attack ballistic missiles as well. Newswatch, a newsletter published by High Frontier, an organization that advocates strategic defense, headed by Gen. Daniel O. Graham, reported, "In separate reports, both the CIA and the Defense Intelligence Agency acknowledged the existence of the space-based laser system."<sup>8</sup>

These Soviet strategic defense programs are not cheap. Loans from Western banks have supported the Soviet weapons buildup. Billions of dollars are loaned to the Soviet Union annually by the West.

Since the Soviets are defending their country and people with ABMs and we are not, we are vulnerable to a first strike.

On October 2, 1987, El Morya delivered the following prophecy through me in New York City:

Ere 24 months have passed, be it known to you that this nation must have the capacity to turn back any and all missiles, warheads incoming whether by intent or by accident. Where there is no defense you invite the bear into your own haven. . . . Ere 24 months pass, beloved, there shall be a

---

<sup>5</sup>Clancy, *The Cardinal of the Kremlin*, pp. 133-34.

<sup>6</sup>Leon Goure, *Shelters in Soviet War Survival Strategy* (Coral Gables, Fla.: University of Miami, Advanced International Studies Institute, 1978), p. vii; *Soviet Military Power 1988*, pp. 59-62.

<sup>7</sup>For more on Soviet strategic defense see Elizabeth Clare Prophet, "Freedom 1988 Fourth of July Address," Part 3, 1989 PoW, pp. 351-55.

<sup>8</sup>Newswatch, February 1990, p. 3.



reckoning and a confrontation unless something is done.<sup>9</sup>

October 2, 1989, has passed us, and El Morya has never countered that statement. That means that all is in flux on this planet and we do not know what we can expect because the United States has no defenses against incoming ICBMs.

Dictating through me in Lisbon, Portugal, on February 26, 1988, Archangel Gabriel said:

I tell you, in this very hour, in this very hour, and I repeat it, the plans move forward with speed on the part of the Soviets for the installation of radar units and ABMs in multiple numbers, a vast assembly line prepared and moving forward; and this is also revealed by the intelligence of the United States Air Force, and yet there is still compromise!

I tell you, beloved, the truth that I speak can save your life and if you heed me not, you will one day hear my words again. Therefore, listen unto me in this hour.

The movement is accelerated on the part of the Soviets to move against Europe and to take the United States as well by a first-strike attack. This is what is on the drawing board and this is the only reason negotiations are continuing. I tell you the step-up is enormous! And in these days that are passing, in these very hours your lives are being betrayed by fallen angels in power [in embodiment] . . . .

Blessed ones, the acceleration is at hand and El Morya has declared it and it has not changed: Unless the United States change her course and defend the peace of the world, you will see an encounter as early as twenty-four months from October last. Blessed hearts, these are the facts and these are the realities. Wherefore we say, get thee into the high mountain of God,<sup>10</sup> for this is the fulfillment of the prophecy of Fatima!<sup>11</sup>

I have told you before<sup>12</sup> what we can do to deter a Soviet first strike. It wouldn't take six to eight years to put in a defense system because we don't need a fancy high-tech system to fulfill our objective, which is to reduce the Soviets' confidence in their ability to attack. It would only take 24 months to put in systems that would defend our weapons, since these are what the Soviets target.

These simple systems would deter them from launching a first strike because too many of our missiles would survive to threaten them. I have talked about low-tech systems such as swarmjets; high-speed GAU-8 Gatling-type 30-millimeter machine guns; nonnuclear interceptor missiles such as ERIS and HEDI; and a space-based kinetic kill vehicle (KKV) system, a network of satellites that can shoot out projectiles that disable ICBMs by kinetic energy.

This isn't some high-tech, trillion-dollar system. The technology has already been developed. In some cases the components of a defense already exist. With a crash program we could have already begun deploying the first layer of the system several years ago. It's ready and it's a nonnuclear defense. All it takes is a decision to deploy.

And now, even more promising systems have emerged, such as Brilliant Pebbles, which would consist of thousands of small, non-nuclear missiles less than a meter in length and weighing about 100 pounds each. They would orbit the earth and spring into action upon detection of an ICBM launch. They would home in on the ICBM and knock a hole in it solely by kinetic energy. The missile would disintegrate as it reentered the atmosphere, harming no one. Brilliant Pebbles are purely defensive since they could not be used to attack any targets on the ground.

The cost of this system? About \$100,000 per "pebble" - and that includes launch into orbit. A system of 100,000 pebbles in orbit would cost about \$10 billion, according to former SDI Chief

---

<sup>9</sup>El Morya, October 2, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 474, 480.

<sup>10</sup>Isa. 40:9.

<sup>11</sup>Archangel Gabriel, February 26, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 241, 242.

<sup>12</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, "Freedom 1988 Fourth of July Address," Part 3, pp. 358-67; "The Race for Space," 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 85-87.

James Abrahamson.<sup>13</sup> In addition to Brilliant Pebbles, the United States would also need to deploy satellites to verify that an attack was underway and additional command and control facilities, at a cost of \$15 billion. The total system - consisting of GAU-8 machine guns, ERIS, HEDI and Brilliant Pebbles - would cost about \$85 billion.<sup>14</sup>

Although Brilliant Pebbles technology is being developed, no one is talking about deployment in the decade of the 1990s. In fact, the Bush administration asked for \$1 billion less for strategic defense in its 1990 budget than what Reagan had planned to request.<sup>15</sup> But because of glasnost President Bush isn't going to deploy anything, even though a defense could only enhance arms control as well as deterrence.

Billions of dollars spent in defense outrages many of our citizens. Of course, it outrages me too. But I would ask you: What price in dollars would you place upon your own life. If you could live to fulfill your destiny of realizing and becoming a Christed one upon earth, what worth would you place on the gift of your Christ Self on the altar of humanity?

Think of the influence of one son of God or one daughter of God fully integrated in Christ. If you can live out your life to the full threescore and ten and more on this planet, God willing, and you can become that Christ, not cut off by nuclear war, what can you do for this earth? What can happen to this planet? If we can survive a nuclear war, we can survive to bring in a golden age and to bring forth souls of Light who need to be here fulfilling their destiny.

And that is why the fallen angels on both sides are planning a nuclear war in our time, with the capitalists in the West supplying the Communists in the East with all they need. It is because they want to take away our physical bodies so that we cannot bring forth the Christ consciousness even as we give birth to souls of Light who are potentially Christed ones.

We have all the tools we need to achieve our victory in this age. We have the lost teachings of Jesus restored and we have the macrobiotic diet to restore our bodies to wholeness. We have the violet flame that we can call forth to transmute those negative elements of our astrology and our psychology. God has given us the opportunity to make ourselves fit to be parents who will bring forth these Lightbearers.

But we have to build a platform of evolution that is safe and secure for them to fulfill their destinies. That's why we need defense against nuclear weapons. How much is one Christed one worth? Was it worth \$1 billion, \$2 billion, \$10 billion to have Jesus Christ or Gautama Buddha or the ancient prophets on earth? To me it was worth that much money. Their lives are priceless. They have changed the course of history. To me you are worth \$85 billion, you the individual.

Because when God gave you the gift of life, he placed a divine spark in your heart. This divine spark is your potential to realize God where you are. It is the essence of your spiritual being. It is your potential to work the works of him that sent you - even our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. This Light, when expanded to the full capacity God intended, is the means whereby you can change the world for the better.

Americans spend \$100 billion a year on "recreational" drugs and \$79 billion a year on alcohol. Organized crime rakes in billions each year. And the capitalist bankers have loaned many times that amount of money to nations all over the world, including the Soviet Union.

#### Glasnost Is a Sting Operation

I would like to give you information that corroborates my inner awareness of what is going on

---

<sup>13</sup>Warren Strobel, "Ex-head of SDI Touts 'Brilliant Pebbles' Plan," Washington Times, 14 March 1989, p. A4.

<sup>14</sup>Ibid.; John Gardner et. al., eds., Missile Defense in the 1990s (Washington, D.C.: George C. Marshall Institute, 1987) pp. 9-10.

<sup>15</sup>SDI Budget Cutbacks to Delay Near-Term Weapons Deployment," Aviation Week & Space Technology, 22 May 1989, p. 22.

inside the Kremlin walls.

I have mentioned the prophecies of Mother Mary and Nostradamus, which point to war in our time. The sunspot cycle, astrological cycles and potential climatic variations also point to a high likelihood of war. Economic and political conditions point to war. Yet in the United States and the Soviet Union it's now chic to declare that the Cold War is over.

In fact, in the United States some people are claiming victory. On May 17, 1989, Pulitzer Prize-winning historian Arthur Schlesinger, Jr., published an editorial in the Wall Street Journal entitled "Somebody Tell Bush We've Won the Cold War."

Schlesinger argued that the new Soviet Union is not the old Soviet Union. "Glasnost, to put it simply, means the end of Soviet totalitarianism," he wrote. Glasnost, said Schlesinger (and he ought to know better, he's a historian), will make the world safe for democracy. He went so far as to say that "anyone who thinks that an invasion of Western Europe is high on the list of Mr. Gorbachev's priorities should have his head examined."<sup>16</sup>

Schlesinger wrote, "We stand at a great turning point in history,"<sup>17</sup> which indeed we do but it's not the kind of turning point that he imagines. The Cold War may well be over, but the lamb had better not lie down with the bear. It looks like a hot war is about to begin.

Schlesinger and those of like mind in the governments, the media and the intellectual communities of the West apparently believe that glasnost is a new development in the Soviet Union. Contrary to popular belief, glasnost is not new. Nor does it signal an era of irreversible change that will suddenly democratize the most powerful and aggressive totalitarian state that the world has ever known.

Glasnost is a time-tested strategy used by Lenin, Stalin, Khrushchev and Brezhnev to purge their opponents and gain lifesaving economic transfusions from the West. Glasnost is a sting operation. But it's not just designed to gain our money; it is also a fatal trap. It is a bear trap.

Gorbachev is using glasnost in precisely the same manner as Lenin did, according to Edward Jay Epstein, a highly respected authority on U.S. and Soviet intelligence matters. He writes:

Glasnost - a Russian concept that originally meant publicity or notoriety - has been an effective instrument of Soviet policy since the early days of the Bolshevik Revolution. It was first used by Lenin, who realized that power proceeded from denying others a veil of privacy for their decision making. Hence, glasnost, or "public airing," became a weapon for the Communist Party. By forcing local officials to engage in a process of "criticism and self-criticism" in which they had to confess to their own mistakes or point to those of others, Lenin made all government officials and lower-ranking Party members increasingly vulnerable to Party discipline and purges. In so doing, he strengthened the hold of the Party hierarchy while at the same time increasing the appearance of free speech. As he noted, "Glasnost is a sword which itself heals the wound it inflicts."

This miraculous sword could also be used as a powerful instrument of deception. To the extent that these controlled bouts of self-criticism were seen by foreign eyes as unrestricted freedom of criticism, it created the illusion of a budding democracy. As in all deceptions, a single indicator of a phenomenon - in this case, criticism - is represented as the phenomenon itself, an open society. The logic went: Democracies allow public criticism of officials; the Soviet Union allows public criticism of officials; therefore the Soviet Union is a democracy.<sup>18</sup>

Lenin began the first glasnost in the spring of 1921, when it was clear to him that Communism as an economic system was not working and the Soviet state was literally bankrupt. He decreed the

---

<sup>16</sup>Arthur J. Schlesinger, Jr., "Somebody Tell Bush We've Won the Cold War," Wall Street Journal, 17 May 1989, p. A16.

<sup>17</sup>Ibid.

<sup>18</sup>Edward Jay Epstein, *Deception: The Invisible War Between the KGB and the CIA* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1989), p. 244.

end of “war Communism,” in which Soviet citizens had neither rights nor money, and declared the start of the New Economic Policy (NEP), which would be driven by market forces.

Along with this economic “restructuring,” the first perestroika, Lenin said that there would be political liberalization.

Epstein writes: “Taken together, these measures suggested that the Soviet Union, despite its rhetoric about revolution, was slowly but irreversibly moving toward an accommodation with capitalism. . . . The message implicit in NEP was: The desired reversal of communism would be accelerated by trade with the West.”<sup>19</sup>

Lenin gave Feliks Dzierzhinski, head of the OGPU (the security arm of the Communist Party and forerunner of the KGB), the responsibility of making sure the West got the message. He made Dzierzhinski head of the NEP’s Supreme Economic Council so that he could control both the overt and covert channels of information to the West.

Dzierzhinski used his covert channels to show the West that the revolution was failing, and he used his overt channels to suggest that democracy was taking hold in Russia. By controlling both channels, he could control the West’s perception of glasnost.

He started what appeared to be opposition newspapers that proclaimed an era of change. He directed the OGPU agents to allow Soviet defectors to return and tour the “underground.” They were allowed to attend dissident meetings and talk with recently released political prisoners so that they could report back to the West how censorship had come to an end under the NEP. As Lenin saw it, the new atmosphere of glasnost opened a path to the American business community and created the proper climate to acquire U.S. goods, technology, and most of all, bank loans and credits. As Epstein points out, glasnost “also gave American lobbyists, public relations firms, and politically influential contacts a powerful incentive to support Soviet objectives.”<sup>20</sup> Sound familiar?

Ever since Lenin told his comrades that the capitalists would sell them the rope that the Communists would one day use to hang the capitalists, Western bankers and businessmen have eagerly complied. Lenin established trade concessions, that is, joint ventures, with Western businesses that were anxious to invest capital in Russia because she had a huge market and Lenin was offering what amounted to a guaranteed monopoly.

But Lenin did not see this as peaceful trade or as something that would actually liberalize the Soviet state. “Concessions,” he told the Russian Communist Party in 1920, “do not mean peace with capitalism, but war on a new plane.”<sup>21</sup> Lenin never mentioned this to the capitalists, of course. And the capitalists, themselves the betrayers of the American dream and the free enterprise system, were overpowered by their greed to milk the light from a new market of people. They fell in line with (and in love with) Lenin’s plan.

Lenin’s strategy was to tell the capitalists what they wanted to hear, namely that the Soviet Union was a potential source of great profits and that trade made the Soviets more moderate. Armand Hammer, the first and foremost American advocate of U.S.-Soviet trade, told his fellow American businessmen that Lenin had admitted to him that “Communism does not work,” much like Gorbachev now admits Soviet economic failures to the world. The Soviet diplomatic corps was also used to convey the perception that glasnost was transforming the Soviet Union into a modern state whose goal was now peaceful coexistence rather than world revolution.

The OGPU under Dzierzhinski’s direction used double agents, false defectors and “opposition” newspapers to reinforce the message. Using codes they knew had been broken by the British, the Soviet Foreign Ministry directed its foreign agents to stop subversive activities in the West.

---

<sup>19</sup>Ibid., p. 247.

<sup>20</sup>Ibid., p. 248.

<sup>21</sup>Antony C. Sutton, *Western Technology and Soviet Economic Development: 1930 to 1945* (Stanford, Calif.: Hoover Institution Press, 1971), p. 30.

The deception worked. By 1925 more than 38 companies, including Ford Motor Company, had invested in Soviet enterprises. Before long another 300 companies established concessions. Soon a river of manufactured goods, trucks, ships, planes and even completely built factories was flowing into the Soviet Union, financed by Western credit.

According to Epstein, the deception worked “because it coincided with what Western governments wanted to believe. It was convenient to assume that the Soviet Revolution was a failure if only because it ended the pressures to take military action against Moscow. And it was in the interest of Western governments to believe that trade with the Soviet Union would weaken, rather than strengthen, the revolutionary elements in the government.”<sup>22</sup>

In essence, the Soviets manipulated the West by playing upon their inherent desire for peace at any price. And peace never comes when you want it more than anything else - even more than God. Thus Western governments and business leaders formulated policies that advanced Soviet interests at the expense of Western democracies. Moscow used this first glasnost to stave off financial collapse, thwart Western plans to contain the Soviet Union and attract a dozen new Communist parties to the Communist International, the organization for international revolution.

In 1929, when the first glasnost had accomplished its purposes, the NEP suddenly came to an end. All private investment was nationalized and all concessions were canceled.

Epstein described how Stalin, Khrushchev and Brezhnev carried out glasnosts of their own, each time to acquire goods, credits and technology and to gain strategic military and political advantages through arms control as well as greater acceptance in the world community.

The second glasnost began in 1936 with Stalin’s new Soviet Constitution guaranteeing freedom of speech, press and assembly, as well as elections by secret ballot. Based on these reforms, as well as on Stalin’s promise not to support any group that advocated the overthrow of the U.S. government, including the American Communist Party, President Roosevelt extended credits to Moscow. “This glasnost ended with Stalin’s bloody purge of the Communist Party in 1937-38,” Epstein writes.

The third glasnost, which Epstein calls the Uncle Joe Partnership, began after Hitler invaded Russia in 1941. Stalin “restored the rights of the Russian Orthodox Church, proposed the liberalization of censorship and other controls, and permitted Russians to own private plots to grow food,”<sup>23</sup> Epstein writes. Stalin received massive aid in the form of the Lend-Lease program as well as tremendous concessions from Roosevelt and Churchill at Yalta. After Yalta, Harry Hopkins, President Roosevelt’s adviser, wrote, “There wasn’t any doubt in the mind of the President, or any of us that we could live and get along with them peacefully for as far into the future as any of us could imagine.”<sup>24</sup> The third glasnost ended in 1945 with the Soviet takeover of Czechoslovakia and the descent of the iron curtain.

The fourth glasnost, de-Stalinization, began in 1956 with Khrushchev’s denunciation of Stalin. Khrushchev’s reforms included a return to competition in agriculture and industry and relaxation of censorship (Solzhenitsyn’s *One Day in the Life of Ivan Denisovich* was published). Armand Hammer was invited to the Soviet Union to spearhead a new wave of capitalist investment. Khrushchev told him, “If we cannot give our people the same standard of living that you give your people under the Capitalist system, we know that Communism cannot succeed.”<sup>25</sup> This glasnost ended with the shooting down of an American U-2 spy plane over the Soviet Union (1960), the erection of the Berlin Wall (1961), and the Cuban Missile Crisis (1962).

The fifth glasnost, better known as “detente,” began in 1970 under Leonid Brezhnev. As Epstein writes, “The central theme [of this glasnost] was that the Soviet government was now run not by

---

<sup>22</sup>Epstein, *Deception*, p. 252.

<sup>23</sup>*Ibid.*, p. 256.

<sup>24</sup>*Ibid.*, p. 257.

<sup>25</sup>*Ibid.*, p. 259.

ideologues but by technocrats who had no interest in adhering to the Leninist doctrine of class warfare. Instead, like technocrats in the West, they wanted to expand and rationalize their industrial base. They wanted, in short, to substitute butter for guns.”<sup>26</sup>

Under Brezhnev, a new constitution was passed, also guaranteeing freedom of speech, press and assembly. During this time, the arms control process began and the superpowers signed SALT I. Brezhnev announced a unilateral troop cut in Soviet forces in Europe, apparently withdrawing 10,000 troops from East Germany. In 1981, it was discovered that this tank division had merely been reorganized and moved across the border into Poland. This glasnost gradually wound down and ended with the Soviet invasion of Afghanistan in 1979.

In 1985, Mikhail Gorbachev embarked on the sixth wave of glasnost. Some, no doubt, will argue that this glasnost is not the same as before. Things are different. And indeed they are! Now the Soviets have the largest nuclear arsenal and the most powerful conventional military forces in the world. This has changed the rules of glasnost.

When talking glasnost, the Soviets also say the Cold War is over, but they approach the subject from a different angle than their counterparts in the West. The Soviets tell us that Gorbachev desires to change the emphasis of the Soviet economy so that it produces fewer “guns” and more “butter,” i.e., fewer weapons and more consumer goods.

But, the Soviets say, glasnost is a precarious undertaking that may or may not succeed. Yes, the Cold War is over, at least for now. But, they argue, there are many reactionary forces in the Soviet Union who resist change, and the Soviet economy is a disaster. They say that if glasnost and perestroika are to change the Soviet economy from an inefficient, centrally controlled mess that emphasizes military production to an economy that is open, market-oriented and designed to satisfy consumer wants, Gorbachev is going to need help.

In other words, Gorbachev can succeed only if (and here’s the catch) the West comes up with enough loans, credits and trade to help the Soviet economy make the transition. Gorbachev’s failure to achieve his goals under glasnost might mean the emergence of a more aggressive, militaristic Soviet Union under a hard-line leadership. In other words, Gorbachev is our only hope for the Soviet Union to turn to a more free-enterprise economy and join the West.

Given the fact that the Soviets have great military power and nothing else going for them, this is a very effective threat. No matter how diplomatically it is couched, the message to the West is clear: Pay up! In the neighborhoods of New York City it’s called “paying protection.” In other quarters it’s called blackmail.

The West has paid up. Between 1985, when Gorbachev came to power, and 1987 the Soviet bloc borrowed \$15 billion from Western banks.<sup>27</sup> We forked over our money, which represents the energy, the light and the lifeblood of our labor. In about the same period of time Western governments, at their taxpayers’ expense, loaned the Soviets another \$12 billion.<sup>28</sup> That’s a total of \$27 billion handed over to them in two years. In the last year the pace of borrowing has dramatically increased. In October 1988 alone the Soviets borrowed about \$9 billion from Western banks.<sup>29</sup>

But paying up is not going to buy protection. The borrowed money is not going into the Soviet consumer economy. If the Soviets were using all that loan money to buy “butter,” why is butter rationed in 32 regions of the Russian Federation? And why are staple foods now rationed in 8 of the 15 Soviet republics?<sup>30</sup> Night after night on television you see the endless lines of Soviet citizens

---

<sup>26</sup>Ibid., p. 261.

<sup>27</sup>Judy Shelton, *The Coming Soviet Crash: Gorbachev’s Desperate Pursuit of Credit in Western Financial Markets* (New York: Macmillon, Free Press, 1989), p. 201.

<sup>28</sup>Ibid.

<sup>29</sup>The Opposition: A Danger or a Deception,” *Nightwatch*, November 1988, p. 5.

<sup>30</sup>John-Thor Dahlburg, “‘The Food Question:’ Soviet Policies Run into Reality at Supermarkets,” *Livingston En-*

waiting to buy anything.

Even though billions of dollars have been poured into the Soviet economy you do not see an influx of foodstuffs and manufactured goods (toasters, irons, television sets) in Soviet stores. The situation in the Soviet Union is growing steadily worse. The Soviets are even importing potatoes, a Russian staple, from China.<sup>31</sup> Personal savings in the Soviet Union are growing at an alarming rate, not due to prosperity but because there is simply nothing to buy in the stores.<sup>32</sup>

So where did those billions of Western dollars go? They went to produce tanks, nuclear missiles, and other supplies for the Soviet military machine!

In 1988 the Soviets increased the number of nuclear warheads in their arsenal by 16 percent. The increase came mostly from 130 rail-mobile SS-24 ICBMs with 10 warheads apiece.<sup>33</sup> In the same period of time the United States produced virtually none.

Gorbachev promised to cut tank production, but he has added 13,300 tanks to the Soviet arsenal. Average annual tank production is now higher than it was at the height of the Cold War. It was 3,000 in 1979; it was 3,500 in 1988.<sup>34</sup> In January of 1990, *Intelligence Digest*, a prestigious British newsletter, reported that the Soviets have continued production of their top-of-the-line T-80 tank at a rate of 3,500 per year. The heralded cutback in Soviet tank production has been in the T-74, which is used for export and second-line divisions.<sup>35</sup>

If Gorbachev were serious about developing greater political and economic freedom, he would have spent Soviet money on “butter.” But instead he purchased “guns.”

My analysis of the situation is that the Soviets intend to solve their economic problems by seizing the wealthy Western European nations with their military forces. We see further evidence of this in Soviet military preparations.

If the Soviets aren't planning to invade Europe, why do they still have 27,000 meters of bridging equipment stockpiled on the border between Eastern and Western Europe? If their strategy is defensive, why are 3 million metric tons of ammunition still stored in the Warsaw Pact's Western theatre?<sup>36</sup> If they have a defensive strategy, that isn't a very good place to store ammunition. If Gorbachev wants peace, why has he increased Soviet conventional forces 25 percent since coming to power?<sup>37</sup> That's an amount equal to the combined German and French armies!

Many people see the INF treaty as the first step to lasting peace in Europe. However, growing evidence indicates the Soviets have violated it in so many ways as to render it useless and even highly dangerous to Western Europe.

Recent reports indicate the Soviets did not destroy all of the INF missiles required under the treaty. The *Washington Times* reported on March 6, 1990:

U.S. military intelligence agents have photographed Soviet-made SS-23 missiles that were deployed in East Germany in apparent violation of the 1987 Intermediate-range Nuclear Forces Treaty, Bush administration officials said yesterday.

The short-range nuclear missiles, bearing East German military markings, were spotted last week

---

terprise, 11 November 1988.

<sup>31</sup>ABC Evening News,” 14 May 1989.

<sup>32</sup>Martin Sleff, “Gorbachev Forced into Retreating on Reforms,” *Washington Times*, 3 January 1990, p. A8.

<sup>33</sup>Soviets Deploying New Missiles Faster Than the Old Are Retired,” FPI International Report, 10 February 1989, p. 7.

<sup>34</sup>Soviet Military Power 1981 (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1981), p. 12; Soviet Military Power 1989 (Washington, D.C.: Government Printing Office, 1989), p. 111.

<sup>35</sup>*Intelligence Digest*, 26 January 1990, quoted in FYEO, February 1990, p. 8.

<sup>36</sup>Jim Courter, “The Gathering Storm: Are the Soviets Preparing for World War III?” *Policy Review*, Fall 1987, p. 6.

<sup>37</sup>Evan Galbraith, “Seductive Soviet Domination of Europe,” *Washington Times*, 28 February 1989.

by members of the U.S. Military Liaison Mission, an army observer team, said officials who spoke on condition of anonymity.<sup>38</sup>

The agents photographed 6 SS-23 launchers and 12 missiles. The missiles were banned under the INF treaty.

The Washington Times continued: “The Soviets are expected to argue that the missiles are not part of the INF treaty because they belong to East German forces, officials said. But officials reject that notion because the Soviets forced West Germany to agree to dismantle the 70 Pershing I-A missiles under its control.”<sup>39</sup>

It looks like the Soviet quick-change artists used this trick more than once. The New York City Tribune reported on March 23 that “the new Czechoslovak government of former dissident Vaclav Havel has acknowledged that its army has about 70 SS-23 INF missiles of Soviet manufacture.”<sup>40</sup> The question that remains to be answered is: were these missiles transferred to East Germany and Czechoslovakia before or after the INF treaty was negotiated? If before, the Soviets should have informed us. If after, they were violating the treaty.

Many people are under the impression that the Soviet defense budget is decreasing. However, defense spending has actually increased 3 percent a year over the last five years.<sup>41</sup> A statement by the International Security Council published on the opinion page of the New York Times on November 3, 1989, warns:

The Soviet Union continues to assign the highest priority to the modernization and expansion of its strategic nuclear capabilities, both offensive and defensive. Massive investments, which have actually increased during the Gorbachev regime, have made these forces far more formidable than a decade ago. Yet, the Soviet threat to the U.S. deterrent force is increasingly being defined in terms of assumed Soviet intentions rather than actual Soviet capabilities and programs.

“Neither the public nor most of Congress seems to realize that Soviet military spending under Gorbachev has continued to increase annually while comparable U.S. defense budgets have been reduced for five consecutive years. This combination is producing a widening gap similar to that of the 1970s when the military balance shifted heavily in favor of the Soviets and U.S. deterrent forces became seriously vulnerable to new Soviet capabilities.”<sup>42</sup>

Based on the evidence, I conclude that a Soviet invasion of Europe combined with a surprise nuclear attack on the United States is a very real possibility. In Book 2 of my book *Saint Germain On Prophecy* you will find Nostradamus’s prediction of the invasion of Europe by an “Oriental” or “Easterner.”<sup>43</sup> The Soviet Union, as Gorbachev reminded the world, is “also an Asian and Pacific country.”<sup>44</sup>

The Chinese experiment in economic reform without accompanying political reform illustrates what the Soviets have known for 70 years: Communism is an economic system whose power is based on state control of the economy. You can’t have economic freedom without political freedom. Any true liberalization of the Soviet economy would mean that the nomenklatura, the Soviet elite, would lose their political power and probably their lives. No Soviet leader is going to undertake such a program. That’s why glasnost is and always has been an optical illusion.

From the Soviet point of view it makes more sense to drive their tanks to Western Europe and

---

<sup>38</sup>Bill Gertz, “Soviet Missiles in East Germany May Violate Treaty,” *Washington Times*, 6 March 1990, p. A3.

<sup>39</sup>Ibid.

<sup>40</sup>Peter Samuel, “INF Missiles Turning Up in E. Europe Cast Doubt on Verifiability of Treaty,” *New York Tribune*, 23 May 1990, p. 1.

<sup>41</sup>Joseph K. Woodward, “Perestroika and Grand Strategy,” *Global Affairs*, Winter 1990, p. 34.

<sup>42</sup>p. 211-212, *Global Affairs*, Winter 1990.

<sup>43</sup>*Saint Germain On Prophecy*, Book Two, pp. 48-56.

<sup>44</sup>SGOP, Bk II, p. 50.



take what they want than to truly reform their economy.

And besides, one day our Western loans will run out. Remember, there is a catastrophic economic crisis ready to strike the Western industrial economies. When it is no longer possible for the Soviets to borrow what they need, they will take what they want by force.

Some will argue that the Soviets will never invade Western Europe because that would start World War III. But that's not the way the Soviets see things. World War III is exactly what they have prepared for. They have invested in offensive and defensive nuclear and conventional forces and they must get a return on their money in order to survive. The Bolsheviks never abandoned the idea of crushing capitalism; they just postponed it until the day when they would be strong enough to pull it off.

Do not be taken in by the so-called signs of peace you see coming out of the Soviet Union. They are carefully choreographed to deceive you. Consider the notion that the Soviet Union is becoming more liberal, more democratic, and hence more like us - that is, more peaceful.

Gorbachev talks about reforming the system to provide greater freedom and dissent. On April 8, 1989, the Presidium of the Supreme Soviet of the USSR, under his direction, got rid of the oppressive penal statutes from the Brezhnev era that were used to give dissidents long jail sentences for exercising free speech or freedom of the press. But it replaced them with new rules that are worse. In the words of Soviet emigré Cathy Young, author of *Growing Up in Moscow*, "The Soviet legal mechanism of political repression has been updated and fine-tuned to deal more effectively with new forms of opposition."<sup>45</sup>

The Soviets talk about getting rid of chemical weapons, but they used them on their own citizens demonstrating in Soviet Georgia.<sup>46</sup> If they use them on their own people, what do you think they will do with us?

Gorbachev comes up with peace overtures like Baskin Robbins comes up with the flavor of the month. But, according to Dr. Albert L. Weeks, a Sovietologist and professor of politics and history at New York University, if you look at the Soviet military's internal papers during Gorbachev's rule, you find that the business end of the Soviet government is becoming increasingly hostile and aggressive towards the United States. In fact, in August 1989, Mary Fitzgerald, an expert in Soviet military doctrine and a scholar at the Hudson Institute, said that even though Gorbachev is talking peace, his officers still emphasize "the value of surprise at all levels" of conflict.<sup>47</sup>

The Soviets are preparing for war, and as it now stands, your government has chosen not to defend you.

I wish to remind you of what Saint Germain said about glasnost on February 27, 1988:

Therefore, beloved, know that that intent is on the drawing boards in Moscow and in the Kremlin and has ever been. It is not new. And therefore, I tell you, glasnost is a propaganda sham! I tell you, the prince out of the Soviet Union is a sham and a liar and a betrayer of the people!

And I say this directly to the heart of Mikhail Gorbachev:

You may fool the people but you have not fooled the ascended hosts of Light and you have not fooled the hearts of the Lightbearers in the earth! And you, Ronald Reagan, are a sham and betrayer of my sponsorship and you also shall know your karma for this betrayal of Europe and the European states!

And everyone who has gone after these liars, in the United States Senate and in the nation-states of Europe, know that I, Saint Germain, do stand and my angels with me and you shall not pass and

---

<sup>45</sup>Cathy Young, "Let's Not Praise Glasnost, Just Now," *New York Times*, 25 April 1989, p. 6.

<sup>46</sup>Gas Killed Georgian Protestors Republic's Party Chief Confirms," *New York Times*, 25 April 1989, p. 6.

<sup>47</sup>Newswatch, February 1990, p. 2.

you shall know the judgment of your karma and you shall know it all too late, too late therefore! And you shall have caused, therefore, the downfall of nations, and in so doing you shall have incurred a karma so vast as to be practically impossible to balance in aeons of the future.

Therefore I sound the warning and I sound it with Archangel Gabriel! And I announce to you fallen ones, though you may think you are the instruments of the karma of the people, let it be known that if you so become those instruments, the sword of Damocles shall be upon your own heads and your victory shall be short-lived and your triumphs and your celebrations shall be exposed as the very conflagration of hell surrounds you!<sup>48</sup>

We have not heard words like these coming from any representative in the U. S. government. And so you can see why our hearts burn within us, why we yearn to acquaint the American people with this Ascended Master who is so very close to them, who is so very much a part of the American dream.

Saint Germain said on February 13, 1988:

One does not rest one's case on a hope that enough souls of Light on a planet will deliver the mandate of the violet flame that can be received by the Karmic Board to turn the tide of world history. There is more than violet flame involved, beloved. There is free will.

And there are many in positions of power this day who have amassed power and wealth and armaments and technology whose free will is committed to world destruction. I should not trust my fate to their hands, nor should you. Therefore, the wise will remove themselves to that point in time and space which they discover by meditation and [the] unerring guidance of my angels is the correct place for them to be.

Do not consider, then, that you who have not attained to the levels of an Ascended Master may turn the world around merely by the raising of the right hand. If it were so, beloved, we should long ago have done this through you. What you ultimately can do and must do, in all of the promises you have heard, is to invoke that violet flame and to continue to invoke it and use Archangel Michael's Rosary for Armageddon.

For much will change, much will be set aside. Entire kingdoms may come to their judgment. Yet you must be found out of the way. For this very process to occur, world chemicalization is in order!  
...

Blessed hearts, I trust that I make myself clear. The preparedness at a personal and national level has never been more paramount. Your preparedness in your life can be complete in a matter of months. When you are fully prepared and determined to survive physically in the earth, come what may in all of these predictions and those you have heard elsewhere, you are then a free agent of Saint Germain and you may give your life and heart to this very cause of stopping those conditions in their tracks before they are outpictured, therefore rendering your preparations only a safety valve, a security net, a lifeboat, if you will.<sup>49</sup>

Saint Germain states that the very preparedness of the Lightbearers will deter nuclear war because the fallen ones are out to destroy the shepherds of the people, the Lightbearers of the New Age of Aquarius.

Saint Germain said on November 29, 1987, in Washington, D.C.:

When all the world has gone mad or asleep around you, beloved, you do not despair, you come into the awareness, truly the direct apprehension of your Godhood. You kindle a sun in a dying world! That is your mission! You kindle a sun and you adore Helios and Vesta, Alpha and Omega, the one true God manifest in all the beauty and glory of His Light emanations! You become a sun!

---

<sup>48</sup>Saint Germain, February 27, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book I, p. 285.

<sup>49</sup>Saint Germain, February 13, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 162, 163-64.

You are the sun, and you will let no Darkness defeat it, put it out, or cast a shadow.<sup>50</sup>

Before I left my altar at the Royal Teton Ranch, I made the call to beloved El Morya to ask him if he had a message for me to deliver on this occasion to you, to the people of New York, to the Keepers of the Flame. El Morya dictated this message from the Darjeeling Council and so I will read it to you.

“Whereas the Soviet Union has not halted its ongoing plan for a nuclear first strike, the Light-bearers of the world would do well to heed our earlier warnings and prepare. For the hour is fast approaching when nothing will be able to turn back that first strike.” Signed: El Morya Khan and the members of the Darjeeling Council of the Great White Brotherhood.

N.B.: “Prophecy for the 1990s III” is based on a lecture given by Elizabeth Clare Prophet May 21, 1989, at the Sheraton Centre Hotel, New York, updated for publication in the 1990 Pearls of Wisdom.

Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

<sup>50</sup>Saint Germain, November 29, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, p. 617.



# Chapter 12

## The Messenger - March 25, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 12 - The Messenger - March 25, 1990

Prophecy for the 1990s

III by

Elizabeth Clare Prophet

9

Why We Are Vulnerable to Returning Karma: The Abuse of Mother Earth and the Loss of the Aquarian Age Mandala

We are vulnerable to the returning karma that the Four Horsemen bring. Why? I have discussed some of the reasons in my lecture "The Abdication of America's Destiny," published in the 1988 Pearls of Wisdom. I will discuss further reasons today, although I am sure you can think of others.

First, there is our pollution of the environment and the great abuses that we have heaped on planet earth.

I know that you could join me in weeping over the desecration of Mother Nature and of elemental life. The elementals are Nature spirits who are the servants of God and man in the planes of Matter. They work for the establishment and maintenance of the physical plane as the platform for the soul's evolution. Elementals who serve the fire element (that fire includes the nucleus of the atom) are called salamanders; those who serve the air element, sylphs; those who serve the water element, undines; and those who serve the earth element, gnomes.

Great hierarchs of light guide and lead the elementals. They are: Oromasis and Diana over the salamanders, Aries and Thor over the sylphs, Neptune and Luara over the undines, Virgo and Pelleur over the gnomes. The elementals serve under their hierarchs to purify our planet as well as our physical, mental, emotional and etheric bodies.

There is profound pain in the body of the Earth Mother today. It is caused by the abuse of the environment through the pleasure seeking of humanity as well as the profit seeking of the powers that be, who value their short-term profits and power over the continuing evolution of life on this earth. We feel the earth groaning in travail to give birth to a golden age while she herself and all of the beings of Nature are crucified. This is why we give violet flame decrees for the cutting free of the elementals who are so bowed down by mankind's karma, by the astral, mental and physical pollution of the elements and by the wholesale and senseless killing and torture of animal life.

Pollution of the Environment

First on my list is acid rain, caused by emissions of sulfur dioxide and nitrogen oxides. Acid rain pollutes lakes and streams, destroying aquatic life, and erodes buildings and monuments. Fourteen

thousand Canadian lakes have been acidified; more than half of the acid deposited in eastern Canada comes from the United States. What a weak, halfhearted attempt did Ronald Reagan make to stop this acid rain! It is simply pitiful.

Then there's deforestation. Rain forests cover 6 percent of the earth's surface. They influence regional climate directly and global weather patterns indirectly. And according to U.S. News & World Report, "each minute 100 acres fall to axes and bulldozers."<sup>1</sup> That's 144,000 acres a day, 77,000 square miles a year. In the Amazon rain forest, for example, 12,350 square miles were burned to the ground last year by farmers clearing land for crops and livestock, according to Time magazine.<sup>2</sup>

Then there's the destruction of the ozone layer. Ozone absorbs the sun's harmful ultraviolet radiation in the atmosphere. Chlorofluorocarbons (CFCs), contained in aerosol cans, car air conditioners, refrigerators and Styrofoam, rise to the stratosphere, where ultraviolet light causes them to release chlorine, which then breaks down ozone into oxygen.

Discover reported in September 1989 that "the ozone shield has thinned out worldwide by 3 percent within the last two decades, with the largest losses (up to 50 percent) occurring in the so-called holes that appear periodically over Earth's axes."<sup>3</sup>

While the United States has taken steps to reduce CFCs, it must do more. Furthermore, only a worldwide effort will halt this process.

And what about oil spills, the most outrageous one occurring at Valdez, Alaska, on Good Friday, March 24, 1989. The Exxon Valdez dumped 260,000 barrels of oil into the pristine waters of the Gulf of Alaska; the slick covered 900 square miles. Some people estimated it would stain an area the size of California's coastline. The wildlife death toll included over 33,000 birds, including 138 eagles, and 980 sea otters as well as a number of seals and sea lions.

Here we have a multinational corporation, Exxon, run by the godless and the power elite, for whom money is more important than anything else. In the right hands that spill could have been licked in the first 12 to 24 hours. But the president and the federal government are slow to move and what happened was simply an ineffective cleanup, an attempt to make right a wrong that has gone too far wrong.

One of the people interviewed during this oil spill said she couldn't get angry at anyone because there was no one to get angry at. And all she could do was feel a deep pain somewhere in the pit of her stomach. To me this is a suppression of anger, a suppression of outrage, because the people of Light on the planet do not recognize this as the work of the fallen angels.

The exploitation of planet earth is part of their long-term project of population control. The population is getting out of hand on this planet. They can't control us any more. The fallen angels regularly have to wipe out segments of the population through wars and through calculated and planned famines that coincide with certain astrological cycles as well as with cycles of weather and sunspots. They take advantage of these cycles and use them for their own ends. They know that if the people get too smart, they will find out who their overlords are and they will overthrow them.

So they have to destroy their minds with drugs, impure foods, medications that kill. They have to limit people in every way and make them passive by increasing the percentage of debilitating sugar and sugar products in their diets. The people do not have the strength, the fire, the will or the desire to challenge such oppression, and what we see today is a world oppression upon the human spirit. And this Alaska oil spill is one of the crimes of this 2,000-year age.

Abortion

Abortion is another.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Ravages in the Rain Forests," U.S. News & World Report, 31 March 1986, p. 61.

<sup>2</sup> "Playing with Fire," Time, 18 September 1989.

<sup>3</sup> L. Vikhanski, "Ozone Park," Discover, September 1989, p. 32.

Abortion is not a means of birth control. The use of the sacred fire is a sacred responsibility. Family planning and the use of contraceptives are necessary and important. But we must understand that we are co-creators with God and we cannot see sex merely as a means of pleasure. It is the means of the creation of body temples that are to house souls destined to evolve in this time.

Most of us have a karma to bring forth life because we have afflicted life in the past. We bring forth children because it is our responsibility and because by having children we learn to love and to care for life. Many people who abort children in their teens and twenties are not able to have children again. And I counsel many such people who in sorrow and burden do not and cannot have children, for life has passed them by. Thus they have skipped an essential element of karma in their lives when, instead of choosing abortion, they could have borne that child and given it up for adoption or else cared for it even at personal sacrifice. No matter what, they would have had the karmic fulfillment of giving life to that life.

I believe that the solution to unwanted pregnancies is to care for expectant mothers, to provide homes for them where they can safely bring forth these children. The problem with America and the West today is that we do not consider that life necessitates sacrifice, but it does. And the bearing of children is a sacrifice as well as a surrender unto God and unto our divine calling. We should remember that one of the reasons Israel and Judah were led into captivity was their very practice of killing their firstborn children.<sup>4</sup>

Since 1973 there have been 22 million abortions in the United States of America. I submit to you that this is why we are vulnerable to the ride of the Four Horsemen in the next 12 years, not only for the karma of taking life with the sword (those who take life with a surgical knife are bound to lose their life by the sword in some form), but also for the loss of 22 million Americans who are not in embodiment today. They are not able to fulfill their destiny, to join us side by side, to learn from us, to hold our hands, to share joy and happiness with us, to support us.

Many of these souls are Lightbearers, the forerunners of the age of Aquarius. Imagine the loss of such creativity! It is incalculable and ultimate. It has destroyed the mandala that was to come forth according to the blueprint of the planetary divine plan.

Recently I was at the altar at the Royal Teton Ranch making invocations, and I saw the multitude of souls who had been aborted and deprived of physical bodies and yet had the tremendous desire to be among us. They cried out to me to call for divine justice, for they had been denied their right to live upon earth in this time. They had a combination of anger, frustration and a will to live. And they knew that through the prayers of those of us on earth they could be given that opportunity if we would make calls on their behalf for divine intercession so that they might have the opportunity to be born.

If they are to have that opportunity, as I see it today, it will have to come after this 12-year cycle because we cannot be certain that during that time we will be able to give birth to and bring up children in health and peace. However, there are souls destined to take embodiment in this period, come what may.

I see the year 2002 coming and it's an opportunity to start a new life and a new age. We have to make sure that we physically survive the turmoil that is decreed by our karma. If and when we do survive, we can bring forth these souls whose time has come to help us bring in the golden age. And so, I continue to make calls for divine justice and divine intercession on behalf of these souls who have been aborted.

Just think of it. They are fully conscious when they are being aborted. They experience the pain just as you would if someone mugged you in Central Park and knifed you. That is the experience when a dilatation and curettage (D&C) or dilatation and evacuation (D&E) is used.

---

<sup>4</sup>II Kings 17:17, 18; 21:2-16; Jer. 7:30-34; 19; 32:30-36.

The D&C is used any time from conception to 12 weeks. The D&E is used from 12 weeks to six months. In both instances, the cervix is dilated, or stretched, by the abortionist. A sharp instrument called a curette is inserted into the womb. The abortionist uses it to cut the unborn child into pieces and then scrapes the lining of the uterus to make sure all pieces are removed. In the D&E method, the child is large enough so that the abortionist must crush the child's head to make it small enough to remove.

Over half (52 percent) of the annual abortions in America are performed before the eighth week. The heart begins to beat around the twenty-fifth day, before the mother is even certain she is pregnant. By the sixth week, brain and heart waves can be recorded.

Geraldine Lux Flanagan in *The First Nine Months of Life* describes the baby in its seventh week: "It bears the familiar features and all the internal organs of the future adult, even though it is less than an inch long and weighs one-thirtieth of an ounce. It has a human face with eyes, ears, nose, lips, tongue, and even milk-teeth buds in the gums."<sup>5</sup>

By the eighth week, the baby has tiny hands with five fingers, a permanent palm, and his own unique fingerprints. What is most important, he can feel pain. And 832,000 of the 1.6 million abortions performed annually are on babies under eight weeks.

Ninety-one percent of all abortions are performed before the end of the twelfth week. By the end of the twelfth week in the womb, the baby has muscles and nerves and virtually every part of his body responds to touch. He can squint and frown, kick and cry (although he makes no sound), swallow and digest amniotic fluid. His facial muscles are aligned in accordance with his genetic pattern and, as Flanagan writes, "the facial expressions of the baby in his third month are already similar to the facial expressions of his parents."<sup>6</sup>

The suction method is also used on babies of ten weeks or younger. The fetus is sucked from its mother's womb by suction 29 times more powerful than a household vacuum cleaner.

The saline solution method is used on a baby of 13 to 16 weeks or older. A baby of 16 weeks can somersault, grasp with his hand and suck his thumb.

The abortionist injects 100 cc of a concentrated saline solution into the baby's amniotic sac. The baby is literally poisoned by the salt. His skin is burned away, exposing the raw, red subcutaneous layer. He may go into convulsions, and dies in about an hour. The mother goes into labor and expels the dead baby. Sometimes a baby aborted in this manner is born alive; a few have survived and been adopted.

The final method of abortion I will discuss is the hysterotomy. It may be performed anytime during the last three months of pregnancy. According to a pamphlet by Gary Bergel written with former Surgeon General C. Everett Koop, in a hysterotomy, "the womb is entered by surgery through the wall of the abdomen. The tiny baby is removed and allowed to die by neglect or sometimes killed by a direct act."<sup>7</sup> Most babies aborted by hysterotomy are born alive. They are left to die or in some instances are strangled or smothered by the abortionist.

Pro-abortion groups argue that hysterotomies are done in very few cases. In fact, according to figures from the Alan Guttmacher Institute, 640 hysterotomies are performed legally in the United States per year.<sup>8</sup>

Today the medical profession considers an unborn child to be viable after six months. That is, they can survive outside the womb with the proper care. Premature babies born as early as four and a half months after conception have been known to survive. And yet one percent, or 15,000, of the

---

<sup>5</sup>Geraldine Lux Flanagan, *The First Nine Months of Life* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1965), pp. 61-62.

<sup>6</sup>*Ibid.*, p. 83.

<sup>7</sup>Gary Bergel and C. Everett Koop, *Abortion in America* (Elyria, Ohio: Intercessors for America, 1980), p. II-4.

<sup>8</sup>Source: Alan Guttmacher Institute.



annual abortions are performed on babies from five to nine months old.

Make no mistake about it! These babies are not part of the mother's body. They are not lumps of tissue. They are life and this is how we have become insensitive to life, preferring rather to worship the god of lust than to bring forth these beautiful souls.

Archangel Uriel said on April 8, 1982:

That nation and that people who will tolerate the murder of the Almighty in his own - that nation shall suffer cataclysm. And who will say where it shall manifest, whether in a spring blizzard or in the economy or in the households. . . .

You must understand the judgment is of the soul. And you must realize that there is the mist and there is the crystal; and so long as there is the holding back of the judgment of God in the level of the mist, then there is time and yet time. But when there is the crystallization of the judgment, lo, beware of the prophecy and let not your flight be in winter.<sup>9</sup>

Archangel Gabriel said:

Therefore let the justices of the Supreme Court of the United States of America heed the Word of God spoken in the full power of the Holy Ghost, whose blood has been shed from the foundation of the world:

You who have rendered your decisions<sup>10</sup> against these little ones, thereby promoting abortion and giving license unto the seed of the Wicked One to murder the seed of Christ - of you and your generation shall the blood of the Anointed Ones be required. You who have denied the reality of myself, saith the Lord Christ, in these little ones tenderly abiding in the womb of Mother, you will I deny before my Father!

You who have denied Life, unto you will Life be denied in the final judgment and the second death at the Court of the Sacred Fire. You who have led a generation in your death cult and in your suicide pact with Satan: Know then that I, the LORD God, have spoken, and that judgment is meted out this day in the Person of my Son.

And it cannot be turned back! It will not be turned back! And upon all who are in accord with this hatred of the Woman and her seed - this persecution of the ones who bear the cup of Light to the earth as the threefold flame in their hearts - is that Light turned this day. It is an all-consuming Light. It is the sacred fire of Alpha and Omega, consuming all unlike itself and canceling out the antichrists who have invaded the temples of church and state worldwide.

Yours is the abomination of desolation standing in the holy place where it ought not. But the Lord is in his temple and he will stand, and he will come as a refiner's fire and fullers' soap.

And ye who have sinned against the Holy Ghost shall not abide in the day of his coming nor stand in the presence of his appearance. And he shall sit in the land as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness.<sup>11</sup>

On June 8, 1986, Saint Germain prophesied:

Beloved ones, there is one prophecy that is guaranteed for this planet. Heed it well: Change must come, for the Law will not hold mankind guiltless who commit the crimes upon the holy innocents and the newborn with the cultural contaminations of Western civilization.

Blessed hearts, the day will come when the Great Law, which none of us in the ascended state

---

<sup>9</sup>Archangel Uriel, April 8, 1982, 1982 PoW, Book I, pp. 241-42.

<sup>10</sup>In the 1973 *Roe v. Wade* and *Doe v. Bolton* decisions, the Supreme Court legalized abortion nationwide based on an implied constitutional right of privacy and declared that the unborn child is not included in the definition of a "person" as protected under the Constitution.

<sup>11</sup>Archangel Gabriel, *Mysteries of the Holy Grail* (Livingston, Mont.: Summit University Press, 1984), pp. 186-88.

will be able to turn back, will say by the right hand of God to all those forces in the earth who have perpetrated and perpetuated the Lie: "Thus far and no farther! The full accountability of your destroying of the souls of these little ones must be upon you."

Beloved, you know that this destructivity comes through all of the vehicles of mass communication, through drugs and the purveying of wickedness in the prostitution of children, their abuse, in the programming of their minds away from God, and the tolerance of violence - even the violence of the rock music that does tear their chakras from earliest days in the womb. These assaults upon that Life who is God in this new generation must come to the end! And this end, beloved, must be decreed by you.<sup>12</sup>

On June 10, 1984, Elohim Peace and Aloha delivered a plea to the women of the world:

The day will come, women of the world, when if you do not stop the enemies of the child and the practice of abortion, that you will have no say. And the babies you want will be torn from your arms and seized [from you]! And you will grieve all of your days for the one taken [from you] by force.

Yes, indeed, life has responsibilities, men of the world! Let us see the fervor of the honor flame in your heart to support your women and children, to care for them: uphold them, guard the sanctity of the door to life, and see to it that the children you bring forth and you bear are those which you may comfort and love. . . .

And I cry out to you, O people of earth! Hear the Word of the LORD and live! And if you do not obey the mandate to stop the practice of abortion, you will find that Almighty God will abort your opportunity for life and victory and to balance thy karma and attain thy immortal freedom. As you sow, you will reap. And whole nations will come tumbling down. For they have denied me, saith the LORD, as I come in the person and the body and soul and the laughter and the joy of the tiny babe!<sup>13</sup>

Saint Germain said on January 6, 1982, speaking through me when I was interviewed for cable TV:

Abortion is first-degree murder of God. Human government since Noah has existed to protect human life. The nation or the government that creates legislation allowing murder is doomed to go down. It will go down by cataclysm; it will go down by economic collapse. But it will go down because it is not consistent with the laws of universal Life.

Now that is a fiat of Almighty God. I didn't originate it but it has the power of the Holy Spirit. It will come to pass. And if America does not refute legalized, tax-supported murder, the judgment will come as surely as it came upon Israel and Judah and every other nation who has murdered its firstborn.<sup>14</sup>

Saint Germain said of that statement:

Out of the mouth of the Messenger I spoke this day, before a television camera, the pronouncement of God's judgment upon any nation that enacts a law authorizing murder through abortion. The nation that allows these laws to rest upon the books, and therefore to govern life itself, is judged. And unless it be overturned, cataclysm [will be, as it] has always been, the judgment upon those who have defended death, through their own selfishness and self-intent, rather than life in the sacrificial sense.<sup>15</sup>

## Genetic Engineering

---

<sup>12</sup>Saint Germain, June 8, 1986, 1986 PoW, Book II, p. 528.

<sup>13</sup>Peace and Aloha, June 10, 1984, 1989 PoW, pp. 150, 151.

<sup>14</sup>Biblical references to child sacrifice: Lev. 18:21; 20:2-5; Deut. 12:31; 18:10; II Kings 16:3; 17:17; 21:6; 23:10; II Chron. 28:3; 33:6; Ps. 106:37, 38; Jer. 7:31, 32; 19:1-6; 32:35; Ezek. 16:20, 21, 36; 20:26, 31; 23:37-39; Isa. 57:5; Amos 5:25, 26; Mic. 6:7.

<sup>15</sup>Saint Germain, January 6, 1982, 1982 PoW, Book I, p. 179.

Then there is the problem of genetic engineering. What will be the response of Elohim in this day and age when and if scientists in their laboratories should again combine the genes of humans and apes to produce a slave race, as was done, according to Zecharia Sitchin's research, 300,000 years ago?

According to Sitchin's book *The 12th Planet*, ancient Sumerian texts tell the story of the creation by Nephilim of the first *Homo sapiens* as a race of primitive workers. According to Sitchin's interpretation of the texts, the Nephilim were alien beings who came to earth in spacecraft. He says they fertilized the egg of a female *Homo erectus* (or ape man) with the sperm of the Nephilim, and reimplanted them in the wombs of female Nephilim.

Mark Prophet described this process before Zechariah Sitchin ever wrote his books. The story of the creation of "mechanization man" is in our paperback book, *The Soulless One*, and was also published in the 1965 bound volume of *Pearls of Wisdom, The Mechanization Concept*. Those who have eyes to see can see that genetic engineering has gone on for hundreds of thousands of years on this earth and other planets.

Well, on May 14, 1987, it came to light that scientists in the United States and other countries have been secretly experimenting with the very same techniques of artificial fertilization. A professor at Florence University in Italy said that scientists are capable of cross-breeding a female chimpanzee, fertilized with human male sperm, to create a new breed of "slaves" to perform menial tasks.

We haven't heard any update on this story since then but clearly there are scientists who are determined to pursue these experiments. The when and the if are here. How do you suppose Almighty God and his servants, the Lords of Karma, will respond to this new beginning of a new slave race?

Jesus and Magda said in December of 1984:

In the realm of genetic engineering, what is proposed - to engage now the human genes and to give them to animal genes and to combine the species - is abhorrent to the Lord God. For the imprisoning of human genes in animal form is the imprisoning of a portion of the race itself, a portion of those genes which are actually endowed with a certain formula by the I AM Presence.

Thus, this is the taking of heaven by the violent who take it by force. And they take it by force through genetic engineering. And thus you see the prophecy of Daniel coming to pass in many areas - the abomination of desolation standing in the holy place where it ought not. This statement from the Old Testament has numerous interpretations connected with the violation of the temple in those eras. But I speak to you to-day of the violation of the temple of man and the abomination in the violation of the genes and the DNA chain.

Beloved ones, these things are not merely on the drawing board. These experiments are being conducted and they are a living fact of today. Realize, then, that one of the causes for the Flood and the sinking of Atlantis was the combining of these genes in such a horrendous manner. . . .

The giving of the seed of Christ in experimentation is truly the end of evolution. And thus, cataclysm can be held back for the Lightbearers, it can be held back for the coming of the golden age, but it cannot be held back when these practices are allowed to continue.<sup>16</sup>

"Prophecy for the 1990s III" is based on a lecture given by Elizabeth Clare Prophet May 21, 1989, at the Sheraton Centre Hotel, New York, updated for publication in the 1990 *Pearls of Wisdom*. This lecture was followed by a dictation from Saint Germain which was published in the 1989 *Pearls of Wisdom*, pp. 461-72. Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for *Pearls of Wisdom*.

Set the Elementals Free

In the name and by the power of the beloved Mighty Victorious Presence of God I AM in me, my

---

<sup>16</sup>Jesus and Magda, December 7, 1984, 1984 PoW, Book II, pp. 569, 570.

very own beloved Holy Christ Self, Holy Christ Selves of all mankind, beloved Lanello, the entire Spirit of the Great White Brotherhood and the World Mother, elemental life - fire, air, water, and earth!

I call to the heart of beloved Helios and Vesta, the beloved Maha Chohan, and the flame of cosmic comfort from the Great Central Sun; to beloved Virgo and Pelleur, beloved Aries and Thor, beloved Oromasis and Diana, beloved Neptune and Luara, the seven mighty Elohim, the seven beloved Archangels, and the seven beloved Chohans of the Rays; to beloved Archangel Zadkiel, beloved Saint Germain, beloved Mighty Arcturus, and their legions of violet-flame angels to answer this our call infinitely, presently, and forever for the precious elemental beings of earth, air, fire, and water:

Seal, seal, seal in an ovoid bright  
Of the Violet Fire's clear light  
Every elemental, set and keep them free  
From all human discord instantly!

- 1- Beloved I AM! (3x)
- 2- By Christ-command (3x)
- 3- By God's blue ray (3x)
- 4- By God's violet ray (3x)
- 5- By God's love ray (3x)
- 6- By Hercules' might (3x)
- 7- By Jesus' Light (3x)
- 8- By Michael's sword (3x)
- 9- It's done today, it's done to stay,  
it's done God's way

And in full Faith I consciously accept this manifest, manifest, manifest! (3x) right here and now with full Power, eternally sustained, all-powerfully active, ever expanding, and world enfolding until all are wholly ascended in the Light and free!

Beloved I AM! Beloved I AM! Beloved I AM!

# Chapter 13

## Beloved El Morya - April 8, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 13 - Beloved El Morya - April 8, 1990

Bonded to the Lord of the First Ray

The Initiation of the Bonding of Guru and Chela

Hail, O chelas of the will of God! I am here and for a right good cause! [16-second standing ovation with joyous shouts by the chelas followed by:]

Hail, El Morya! Hail, El Morya! Hail, El Morya!

Hail, El Morya! Hail, El Morya! Hail, El Morya!

For tonight I come to bless you and to bond you to my heart if you would indeed be bonded to the Lord of the First Ray.

[“Yes!” (25-second standing ovation)]

Let there then be no more separation between us, beloved, even though it be paper-thin or thinner. Where there is a cleavage in the rock so the fallen ones drive through, thereby to convince the weak and the unbonded that we are not one; and therefore all manner of calamity may come upon you. And you look and you look and you say, “Where is Morya? Where is Morya?”

Well, beloved, the hour has come when I would raise you up if you would pull me down. For we must be in the heart of the Lord Christ and the Blessed Mother. We must be that diamond together. The capstone is placed on the pyramid.<sup>1</sup> Let us seal our lives and let us listen well as to what must cast out the spell of darkness, death and gloom that would separate us at all.

Blessed hearts, the bonding process is a sealing much the way there is a vulcanization in the processing of rubber. Blessed hearts, that sealing is that bonding. Therefore to achieve it you must understand the Path and its consequences. Thus, I come to speak to you in this hour when one and all we celebrate the birthday of our Mother here and our Mother Kuan Yin. This is the hour, beloved. Therefore, as Above, so below, let the Mother be one.

Be seated now, for I would speak to you of our love.

You have passed through many a fiery trial, but not all. This is the beginning but not the ending. And therefore look not for reprieve but for re-creation in your God. Look not with weariness upon what you think the morrow may bring, but rise and shine with your ritual to the sun.<sup>2</sup> Admit no defeat. Admit no entrance to your house of despair, worry, despondency.

---

<sup>1</sup>The Elohim Cyclopea announced at the conclusion of the November 26, 1989 service that he was placing the capstone on the pyramid of the United States of America at the level of the etheric octave. See 1989 PoW, pp. 789-94. For the astrological chart of this event see 1988 PoW, Book II, Introduction, pp. 58-61.

<sup>2</sup>Great Central Sun Ritual: O Cosmic Christ, Thou Light of the World! in El Morya, Ashram Notes, pp. 16-18.

Blessed ones, look only at that which comes to be conquered. Look above you and you will see Vajrasattva,<sup>3</sup> the Diamond One, even the unison of the Five Dhyani Buddhas.

Know this, beloved, that you must greet adversity and the adversary, welcoming the initiation and intensifying into it a release from your heart of sacred fire whereby you say:

Where I stand, there is Morya!

And in his name I say:

Thus far and no farther!

You shall not pass!

You shall not tread on holy ground!

You shall not enter this hallowed place!

You shall not come between me and my God!

My God is happiness this day.

My God is holiness.

My God is the divine wholeness of the Living One.

I and my Father Morya are one!

Blessed hearts, know, then, that for the bonding to take place you must desire to become all of the Chela, all of the Christ whom you embrace and all of me, as I am one in that One. The bonding of Guru and Chela bears great responsibility, for there is no longer twain but one. Thus you see, what affects one will affect the other.

You can come unglued from this bonding by your free will, even as you may allow your mind to become unglued and the forces of insanity to enter there and to tell you that the will of God is not good. But you can by the recitation of the mantra and even of the ritual to God's holy will<sup>4</sup> affirm and confirm and define where you are the essence, even the elixir of God's holy will.

Not my will but thine be done. Not my will but thine be done.<sup>5</sup> Lo, it is my mantra all the day, as I am bonded to the heart of Alpha. And by that strength and that Father I, too, am Father; for I come bearing the Alpha flame.

My beloved, you have seen that you could withdraw from the world. You have seen how nothing in the world is of any consequence and how unencumbered you are without being surrounded by so many possessions. For you have packed them all away for another day!

[9-second applause]

We have determined, Kuthumi and I, to make yogis out of you, and yoginis. Now you see how little you have to take care of when all things are put away. What a simple life! What opportunity for mantrams, mantrams, mantrams, and the wheels to spin and the cells to receive the fire of God.

Looking at empty rooms and four walls, you may perceive, beloved, that there is God, God, God, without the mind being caught on a hook of this or that knickknack or bric-a-brac that never was a necessity at all; for the God within you is all there is. And thus, beloved, hallow emptiness and fill it with the Holy Spirit.

Let us be divested of so many encumbrances and [let us] value life itself as a living flame. For if life be not a living flame, can it endure? I say nay! Place your attention upon increasing the flame, for the winds of darkness will one day blow and they will seek to snuff out that flame. It must burn

---

<sup>3</sup>See 1989 PoW, pp. 537 n. 4, 764 n. 20.

<sup>4</sup>Sacred Ritual for Attunement with God's Holy Will, in El Morya, Ashram Notes, pp. 19-23.

<sup>5</sup>Matt. 26:39; Mark 14:36; Luke 22:42.

again in other octaves and climes. And you too must climb.

Take another step and another, and accustom yourself to the rarefied air. For, beloved, holy atmosphere and sacred fire breath will restore every cell of life within you.

Beloved ones, you can maintain the bonding of our oneness in this octave if you absolutely refuse to entertain despair. Despair is hopelessness. It is self-doubt and fear of God.

Therefore let Love endure. Let Love endure as a fire that burns in the heart. And if you do not feel that fire burning, say:

O Jesus, Jesus, Jesus, come into my heart!  
Rekindle my love.  
Let it overflow the chalice of my heart  
That I might extend the cup of mercy  
To every part of Life,  
Every part of Life,  
Every part of Life!

Let Love go forth without dissimulation.<sup>6</sup> Be not caught on that point where someone has done something [to you] that even for a moment you cannot forgive. Let God take care of it. Do not lose your oneness or your bonding. Do not enter into spirals of despair, thinking that any foul or unclean spirit may take from you the cup - the cup, beloved.

Remember, one hand holds the cup, and they would dash the cup before you have drunk of this elixir of eternal Life. Therefore hold the cup steady. Hold the emotions steady, steady in the flame of the Elohim of Peace.

I AM the Peace-Commanding Presence. Do not allow yourself to fall below the level of that love of Christ. Take the altar with you. Be the altar of God! Do not backslide. Do not allow yourself to tolerate vibrations and energies that fall to such a low vibration as to not even compare to the Path or the altar.

If you have sat here for hours and hours of the days and years of your life, if you have sung, if you have preached, if you have chanted, if you have given forth praise to God, then I say, will you let it all count for naught by allowing yourself to descend so low that you [must] start all over again?

Hold the ground that you have gained, I say! Hold the physical earth beneath your feet. Do not surrender one inch of territory, for you have claimed this place as the place of the coming kingdom. The kingdom that is coming must already be come. It is law. It is already here.

Therefore when you begin to worry, to doubt, to have despair, despondency and not trust that we will enter in, you see, you waste our energy. And we cannot be bonded to such [a vibration] as this!

Blessed hearts, the bonding is, in fact, a secret rite and an initiation of the inner temple. I offer you, then, a preliminary bonding whereby you can come to know little by little what this oneness can mean. And I tell you it is preparatory to your entering in to the etheric retreat where the soul is truly bonded; and that soul, beloved, must be well anointed with Light. For if we are to trust, we must have one that we can trust.

One by one I would see the permanent bonding, but you must know there is a place where you can no longer go. You may no longer wander in the astral plane, in illusion, in fiction fantasies where emotions are titillated and thrilled, where baser desires are ignited and the soul will lose her path again in the lesser ways of the world.

Some of you have twin flames who are yet in lower octaves. You must strive harder to maintain

---

<sup>6</sup>Rom. 12:9.

yourself at the etheric level and in the Christ Presence. You are responsible to pull up that one.<sup>7</sup> But you allow yourself to be pulled down, thinking that if you go down, down, down, you will be able to rescue.

Well, beloved hearts, if you go up, up, up, from that point of Light you can summon seven Archangels who will obey the command of the Christ in you. They will send their legions. They will rescue your beloved. But unless you provide the fulcrum, unless you provide in Light the absolute balance for what the other half has lost in descending, there will not be the leverage, there will not be the fulfillment of the Law and you will not be granted your prayer.

Suppose, beloved, you do not know where your twin flame is. Suppose you do know that your twin flame is ascended or a great master or teacher. Nonetheless, there is always another's twin flame and another and another. There are twin flames of Ascended Masters yet lost in the astral plane and losing themselves more day by day. Thus, if you cannot or need not do it for your own twin flame, then I say, rise to the heights of the mountain of God on behalf of those twin flames who must be rescued to complete the mandala of the Great White Brotherhood.

There are more Ascended Masters in heaven than you would dream of whose twin flames are lingering at such low levels of consciousness as to make it almost impossible for them to be reached or turned around by the ascended one. Thus, I tell you, beloved, there are many reasons why you must rise up and not be pulled down to the ties not only of twin flame but of others, of souls with whom you have a service to render.

There are the Lightbearers who have been aborted who must be brought into embodiment. Prepare yourselves, raise up the Light and know that they cannot come through just anyone. I request that you appeal to me to be sponsored when you desire to bring forth a soul, a child of God, that you might be protected from the entering in of that which is not destined for you and not your karma.<sup>8</sup>

Blessed ones, by our sponsorship there may be set aside karma and you may even bring forth lifestreams that you would not ordinarily be called [upon] to bring forth because of the condition of your karma. I ask for this, beloved, because I know whereof I speak. And I know that there are lower souls and false-hierarchy impostors who would give anything to be able to pass into this community through the portals of birth, through those who do not keep the vigil and keep their consciousness as holy parents desiring to sponsor those who may therefore secure the earth for the golden age of Saint Germain.

The bonding process to my heart has begun for all [of you] who desire it if you will take the Ashram Notes,<sup>9</sup> if you will faithfully do the rituals, not necessarily [all of them] hour upon hour but those you select to give at a certain time. Be regular and rhythmic. For each time you give even a ritual that requires but three minutes, you will tremble the antahkarana of all souls who are a part of this Ashram. You will strengthen the weak. You will be strengthened by the strong. You will see how a cosmos can quiver. For everywhere you are is Morya intensifying the Light.

You do not have to walk the earth in the sense of being a karma-being, a person burdened and limited. Shout the fiats! Internalize the Light! And let this celebration of another birthday be a celebration of many candles lit around the world who have said, "This is the end of it! I will have no more to do with my human creation! I will stomp on it! I will drive it out! I will not be off guard. I will not catch myself in those valleys of derision whereby my own God is derided as I dally in the nonsense of self-pity and indulgence."

---

<sup>7</sup>See Lady Master Venus, November 17, 1985, 1986 PoW, Book I, pp. 48-49.

<sup>8</sup>See El Morya, August 8, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book II, pp. 593-94.

<sup>9</sup>The Ashram Notes, dictated between 1952 and 1958 by the Ascended Master El Morya to his amanuensis, Mark L. Prophet, contain 39 letters originally sent to a small circle of chelas who composed the "Ashram." These letters have been edited and compiled by the Messenger Elizabeth Clare Prophet under the direction of El Morya and are available for the first time in print. They include six rituals to be given simultaneously around the world in group meditations. The Ashram Notes are bound in golden-brown Kivar leatherette with gold foil stamping.



Blessed ones, you must reassess your leap! You can leap much farther than you think. But you truly allow yourself to remain in such limited states that, I must say, my patience does run out. And I become impatient! And then I simply quit the place where you are, for I cannot wait another moment. For life calls me everywhere upon this planet and I must be there.

And I am where the piercing of the Gemini Mind may reach the very heart of the mind of the chela, where quick as a flash of Light you catch my thought and then you do not dally in implementing it but you know it is my thought, for you know my vibration. You do it. You act upon it. And you know what is the process of receiving divine direction from your Guru heart to heart and mind to mind.

You must have the opening. The ears must be opened! The pores must be opened! The chakras must be opened! And you must have a listening heart! You must have a listening mind! You must have space where I can speak to you and you can recognize my ray as distinct from the babble of all of the other astral voices that promise you this and that and easier paths and easy rewards.

I have come determined that you will understand that you can be God-free beings today. I have come so that you will understand that even the cackling of the neighbors and the folly of the people will make you realize that if you are to conquer this wave, this level of onslaught, you must be higher. You must be higher than they. You must be more determined, more God-free, more centered and, above all, bonded to my heart. I simply cannot work through you when you have anger, when you have resentment, when you feel downhearted.

You must absolutely know that I have put my life on the line for this activity. Why, beloved, I have given so much to this activity and to all of you that I could not even pull out if I wanted to.

Now, this is a joke, beloved. And I wish you to understand that it is a joke. It is absolutely true! And the joke is on me. For you see, this does not mean that you have the Guru by the tail or that you are indispensable chelas. But it does mean that I have pledged my troth to you, and I am determined to stay until this entire matter is through. And I tell you that one way or another it shall be through! [21-second applause] And since I am not through with you and you are not through with me, then we know who is going to be through.

[11-second applause]

Therefore, let us establish our oneness before the altar of God through and through. I mean every word that I say. And all of the love of my heart is upon each one of you.

Yes, I know your shortcomings, your mistakes, your goings out of the way. But it is because some devil, and a little devil at that, has convinced you that you are a mere crumb, that you are not a son of God, that you do not have the full power of the Godhead ready to descend upon you in answer to your call and by your affirmation. You allow yourself to be convinced by all manner of psychological meanderings that you are not worthy to be the embodiment of the Light, and then you allow those puny devils to recite for you once more every sin you have ever committed in this life. Beloved ones, will you shut them up once and for all? ["Yes!" (14-second applause)]

On this birthday of Kuan Yin and the Messenger, I say to you in the name of cosmic mercy, thy sins be forgiven thee! I, El Morya, am your Guru and I say it in the name of the living Christ and by the leave of Jesus and the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit:

Thy sins be forgiven thee! [31-second standing ovation]

Now I, Morya, say to you, don't let me catch you picking up one of those ghosts of a former sin ever, ever, ever again! [13-second applause] I charge you, then, to walk out of this place this night as sons and daughters of God, sinless, stainless, purified and made white. And therefore go and sin no more, and forgive all others of their sins as I have forgiven you.

Be the extension of Kuan Yin through my heart and through Mother Mary. Lift your head up

high and now remember that on this day of April 8, 1990, I have said it: Be free! Walk as God-free beings in dignity and do not stoop to those lesser levels.

Now, beloved, understand that there is a path to be walked and worked. There is studying to do. There is a mindfulness to gain if you are truly to be the embodiment of God's holy will in Christ's name.

You will have to self-correct. You will have to study harder. You will have to decree and believe in your decrees. And you will have to give those flats into the day and into the night to keep that dweller in submission so that the Christ can blossom forth and preach to the world the message of liberty.

O beloved, strive harder to embody this God free will that I AM. For I tell you, all of the problems that beset you, all of the negatives you can list that are set against you, those things are as nothing before your God Self.

Remember all the Ascended Masters who have spoken to you! Remember the dispensations! Walk the earth as ourselves! And then see how we will indeed defeat this adversary.

You are concerned about the dates and I am the date man. [7-second applause] But I give no dates this night, for I have chelas who have not mastered their tongues. Thus, I will not see dates repeated outside of the circle of my dictations, and this has been done. And therefore we will inspire you to control the tongue, to control the mind and let it control the tongue and to let the heart be the instigator of the spoken word or the silence.

I have said, and it is so, March and April are dangerous months. Therefore, see April through to the finish. See it through and through as the Messenger continues to lead you in the Ruby Ray rituals for the victory of our God in the earth. See the month through, beloved, and then we shall see.

You must remember that karma must be balanced, debts must be paid. And while you have karma that extends into the earth and debts owing to any part of life, you are tied to those of lesser vibration and to a lesser civilization. I say, cut the ties, be satisfied with less and value your independence by having an independent karma. No ties, beloved. Therefore, at the appropriate cycle it is necessary to work and work the works of Light and work the labor of the hands and to see to it that you balance your accounts.

Therefore understand that as you write to me through the Messenger and to the Messenger, your communications will be considered at the altar or they will not be considered. And you will be informed whether there is an answer, whether you must meditate in your heart and come up with your own answers, whether there be direction or not. The Law does not always allow me to give answers. If answers be not forthcoming, know that this is your initiation and it is one that you can truly pass.

Perhaps you need a stilling of the mind. Perhaps you need a voice fast. Perhaps you need a rest from allowing the mind to continually be absorbing information, reading or watching television or listening to others talk so that from the time you awake to the time you sleep you are either hearing yourself talk or others talk or absorbing the communications of the world.

If you would speak to God in his holy mountain, you must come apart and be a separate people.<sup>10</sup> This was the command to Joshua: Be separated out from the Nephilim and their civilization, even go forth to slay all in the land of Canaan.<sup>11</sup>

I say, slay all the dwellers-on-the-threshold, [the not-self lodged in the unconscious, the antithesis of the Real Self, who is Christ the Lord,] in the land. That is the meaning of the ridding of the earth of the seed of the Wicked One. They have nothing else, beloved, but a giant that has grown.

---

<sup>10</sup>II Cor. 6:14-18.

<sup>11</sup>Josh. 6; 8:1-29; 9:24; 10:12; 24:14-24.

This giant must be slain, and it can be done and it is lawful because it is on the astral plane. And therefore not a hair of the head of the individual in embodiment will be touched, but that dweller must be kept bound.

There are many “dragons” and “trolls” and “wicked giants” that are running loose in the earth. Blessed ones, why is this so? You are two thousand and more strong here this night. Have you not the power within you or the gut or the belief or the faith that by your unified call all these [denizens of the astral plane] can be bound and reduced [by Archangel Michael and his hosts]?

Blessed ones, the reducing of the crystal cord is in the scripture of Jesus Christ: From them that have not shall be taken that which they have. Those who have squandered the Light shall have taken from them the Light that they have misused. And those who have [the Light], to them more shall be added. Those who have [qualified] the Light [with godly virtue and good works] shall increase in the Light. This is the Law and the justice thereof, but it is also the mercy of God to prevent the evildoer from making a greater karma.<sup>12</sup>

And so, beloved, you have been empowered from on high by the Masters of the First Ray for many a year. Some of you have used this power in spurts, and in between you have fallen into the crumb consciousness.

No more crumbs, beloved. Get out your vacuum cleaners and sweep them up! Let them be no more. You will understand that you are a mighty people, the ensign of the Lord.<sup>13</sup> You walk in your God and with your I AM Presence.

Do not descend into deception. Do not descend into compromise. Obey the Law and know the Law. Pull yourself into your Christhood. And mind the proper diets and don't stray needlessly from them.

Blessed ones, things are heating up on the international scene. You will see how this will unfold. Simply watch the evening news. And be still and tune in to the akashic record and the vibration and [listen to] what I speak to you when you see the sham of the leaders of East and West and their poor, paltry, mealy-mouthed excuses for not challenging the Soviet Union, which has taken up residence in Lithuania.

Blessed hearts, the armies of the fallen ones are on the move, and they are encamped. But the armies of the Lord are encamped on the hillsides of the world.<sup>14</sup>

You must learn to live in this world but to be not of it. You will have to master now in the five secret rays the walking of the razor's edge. You will have to function in the world and go ahead and pay your tributes to Caesar,<sup>15</sup> even while you have withdrawn to [deal with the challenges of] the next world and the conditions that may come upon you if the cycles turn and when they turn.

This is the Call, beloved, and this is the price to be paid. No one ever said that survival would come cheap. It comes with the bounty and the abundance of the Spirit. And it also comes, beloved, with the paying of the price.

You have paid in advance for your survival. You have secured it. You have obeyed Saint Germain, who told you that preparedness is the key.<sup>16</sup> Your very preparedness itself has forestalled certain events.

Just understand this, beloved, that the human mind is unpredictable and that Soviet psychics and those who work with them at inner levels are well aware of the preparedness of the saints. Therefore

---

<sup>12</sup>“For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.” Matt. 13:12. (See also Matt. 25:29; Mark 4:25; Luke 8:18; 19:26.)

<sup>13</sup>Isa. 5:26; 11:10-12; 18:3; 30:17; Zech. 9:16.

<sup>14</sup>II Kings 6:13-17; Ps. 34:7.

<sup>15</sup>Pay your taxes and fulfill your karma to your government. Matt. 22:16-21; Mark 12:14-17; Luke 20:21-25.

<sup>16</sup>Saint Germain, November 27, 1986, 1986 PoW, Book II, p. 648; May 21, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 465-66.

they play a chess game. Yet be mindful that they are masters of deceit and of surprise. Be not caught off guard and yet maintain the integrity, the ongoingness of this community.

From the Darjeeling Council and the Lords of Karma there is granted a dispensation for a four-day vigil over [the] Easter [weekend]. We invite all to come each evening, Holy Thursday, Good Friday, Holy Saturday and Sunday. And we shall see by your input what dictations may be forthcoming.

I am here this night to praise effort but to warn you that until the preparations are thoroughly through, they are not through. It is not a time to become lax or to become self-indulgent or to feel sorry for yourself. It is not a time to have problems in the home. It is time to love and to love and to love, and to give and to give and to give, and to forgive and to forgive and to forgive. It is time to understand and to extend understanding. It is time to know that many are burdened, and loved ones must hold up the burdened ones.

Why, then, do any number of you contemplate divorce and other manners of the breaking down of your strongholds and your strength? Do you not know that the cause for these conditions lies in yourself and that sometime, somewhere you will have to conquer what you are finding to be insupportable in your household?

I do not like chelas who want an easy way out and see something better in another's pasture and field. Remember not to covet what is thy neighbor's, neither his possessions nor his shelter nor his wife nor any thing that is thy neighbor's.<sup>17</sup>

Blessed hearts, you are wed to Christ. You are wed to me. And wherever you serve side by side with any individual, there you must conquer in Love. And when you have conquered in Love and you feel that the bonds between you and another are through, for the karma is fulfilled, take care that in your decision you do not injure little ones or any part of life. But if you think you must be divorced, apply equally to the altar [to be unmarried] as you would apply [to the altar] to be married.

Blessed hearts, this is a walk with God whereby God delivers you when he is ready to deliver you. And you will not set God's timetable. Do you understand? I am ashamed when you make demands of God and become angry when he does not fulfill them or the Messenger doesn't do what you think she should do when she should do it.

Blessed ones, conquer within the self and understand that this path is not for the simpleminded. This path is not for the weak or the lazy! This path is not for the self-indulgent, who another time and another time until ninety times nine are still falling prey to the discords of their human creation.

We say, seek the path of the bonding. I announce this initiation to you so that you will understand that some [of you], if you do not seek a greater bonding and a greater love and a greater love of the will of God, may find yourselves cast off from the Path and becoming castaways.<sup>18</sup>

Yes, there are lukewarm chelas in this audience! And I tell you, you are not kindling wood with which I can ignite my fire that is a conflagration that shall burn out of these holes the rattlesnakes that lurk. You must give me better timber which I may present to the higher Lords to whom I am responsible. Blessed hearts, idling in mediocrity is a sickness. It is a sickness of the West to which the East has now fallen prey.

I pray you will understand that I may not tell you all things, but the cycles turn. If you are to meet the greater Darkness, you must have greater Light and you must get it with the fiery vengeance of the Great Mother Kali.

Yes, beloved, you must trample upon that human creation. You must be the charioteer.<sup>19</sup> It is time to be the Christ. And the one who will suffer if you do not will be yourself and one by one [your loved ones and then] the activity and ultimately the entire purposes for the Great White

---

<sup>17</sup>Exod. 20:17; Deut. 5:21.

<sup>18</sup>I Cor. 9:27.

<sup>19</sup>See Serapis Bey, January 1, 1990, 1990 PoW, pp. 35-36.

Brotherhood in the earth.

Blessed ones, staying power is a great virtue. I call it constancy. Whatever else you may think of this Messenger, I have been able to count on her with [her] staying power from the moment she entered this activity in 1961. I would like to be able to say the same of each and every one of you - staying power!

Do not take as an excuse [to abandon Maitreya's ship] the behavior of this or that chela or member of the staff or the organization. Perfect people are not found in this world. Do not in your pride take their imperfections as your excuse to fail in your own right.

It is your right to be victorious, beloved. It is your right to understand that the cycles are turning, that the time is short, that the judgment will descend, that you will have that confrontation [with Darkness] sooner or later. And every twenty-four hours is a period to increase the momentum [of Light].

Blessed ones, if you do not walk about with the sensation of fire in your heart, you ought to be concerned! And you ought to stop a moment and pray to the Sacred Heart of Jesus and take sixty seconds to close your eyes and intensify your love of Jesus Christ and to call to Jesus to come into your heart until you are filled with the fire once again.

The fire of your heart is your only passport to heaven. It is true, beloved, I tell you. Become masters. Do credit to me, your Guru, and show the world that this path can be walked and that people of any sort or nature or background or sin or shortcoming can conquer and can win.

Do not accept yesterday's memory of you by anyone. You are not your yesterday, but everyone else will believe it. Do not believe it. And slay those demons.

You big, strong, young men, you would be ashamed to see what puny demons can take you out of the way with their stupid arguments. Why, their logic is not even clever. But because you have not studied my teachings, you are not one with the Logos, with the Word, and therefore you do not see the temptation, you do not see the folly of their logic.

Blessed ones, all of you have gotten smarter this year. But some of you have learned the hard way.

I come to introduce a decade of great severity, a decade of great challenge. You can roll through it the hard way and receive every knock and blow and [negative] astrological portent that comes your way or you can come to this altar and pray your heart out and then live your life as a noble son and daughter of God. You can do it, beloved! And I have come to tell you you can do it.

I have also come to tell you that the only way to get through the decade of the nineties is as a living conqueror in the Spirit. Be not hopeless with or without the body. By this sign you conquer. It is the sign of the Sacred Heart. It is the sign of the will of God. It is the sign, beloved. And there shall no other sign be given save the sign of the prophet Jonas.<sup>20</sup> Enter, then, into the belly of the mother whale for three days and three nights and emerge unscathed and clothed in your Christhood.

Yes. Yes. Celebrate the passion of Easter and walk with Jesus every step of the way. Pull out your Bibles and read! Read the story from Palm Sunday to the finish and say, "Yea, Lord, I am with you there! And I shall be resurrected [with you] on Easter morn." Each and every one shall pass through pain and trial and tribulation until he is purged through and through by the Refiner's fire<sup>21</sup> and does awake in the likeness of his God.

I AM here. Remember that I AM here. I do not leave you. Do not leave me in vibration. Let us see, then, how we will defeat the latest plot. Many pass through to the judgment.

I tell you, beloved, my communications to the Messenger are day by day. I will not prognosticate

---

<sup>20</sup>Matt. 12:38-40; 16:4; Luke 11:29, 30; Book of Jonah.

<sup>21</sup>Zech. 13:9; Mal. 3:1-3; Matt. 3:11, 12; Luke 3:16, 17; I Cor 3:13-15; I Pet. 1:7; 4:12.

the future this night but only to say, be alert, expect the unexpected and you will win.

To the heart of my beloved Messenger and to all of you I say, a happy birthday. [28-second standing ovation]

This dictation by El Morya was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Palm Sunday, April 8, 1990, 9:46-10:36 p.m. MDT, at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under El Morya's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

# Chapter 14

## Beloved Lanello - April 15, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 14 - Beloved Lanello - April 15, 1990

Be Transformed by the Renewing of Your Mind

That Ye May Prove What Is That Good and Acceptable and Perfect Will of God

We Need the Listening Ear

Ascension Day Address

Seventeenth Anniversary February 26, 1990

The heavens are opened unto you, beloved. May you see through my eyes the throne of God [and] the Lord Christ seated upon his right hand. May you see the Court of the Sacred Fire and hierarchies of Light and angels and saints even yet in the etheric octave.

Heaven is opened. Those who have eyes to see may see the spiral and rungs of Light and thirty-three tiers and that which is above and that which is beneath. Thus, I have descended the stairs [of the octaves], scaling the stars.

I come to you in this hour, beloved, as never before. And yet I tell you that one day we shall have this Mystery School where those who are in it and of it may form a circle of sacredness and oneness that I might speak to you, and others of the ascended host [might speak to you], without concern that there be some among you who by weakness of character or spirit may choose to [go out and] repeat our words to the profane and even to the press.

Blessed hearts, thus you understand that it is a sign of the times and of the age that I may not speak freely to my own. But this too shall pass. For we enter a new day and I have ways of communicating with my own and of sealing the Light and the message.

In this hour, then, of the celebration of my ascent to God, I am grateful to be in your midst. I place my hand, therefore, upon the fractured ones that they might be made whole and no longer feel the need to compromise this Community, to get even, to settle old scores, attacking the Messenger instead of their own dweller-on-the-threshold.

I am with you, beloved, each and every one. And while there is opportunity, I assist those [among you] from the least unto the greatest. For the door has not yet closed and opportunity is to repent, to seek forgiveness, to enter the Holy of holies of thy God and to serve the Light in wholeness and in holiness.

On this anniversary of my victory I have come to stay in an extraordinary way. I place my Electronic Presence with every Keeper of the Flame and defender of the Light and every devotee of the Mother of the World in this state. I make it my purpose, therefore, to seek for your protection, for your sustaining grace, for your cutting through and arriving at El Morya's time line. . . .

And now it is a day of opportunity to bring forth Light, to bring forth sons of God who shall be given the opportunity to restore earth to her natural magnificence. You are in the moment of transition wherein God has placed a single drop of golden holy oil and angels of initiation, precise, have dropped upon the crown chakra that single drop of holy oil. And the dried-up chakra begins to have Life and Light from the Sun, begins to unfold. And thus you have, as it were, an antenna that is able to receive Light from the Great Central Sun and wisdom and once again [you] walk the earth as enlightened beings.

Now you must pass through the eye of the needle, beloved, and that is the supreme test for all. You cannot expect another to pass through the eye of the needle for you! You must create the needle and the eye and pass through it yourself. Pity upon those [of you] who expect others to do it for you, for you already come to an hour of reckoning. Yet I shall invoke for you the Divine Helper. Pity upon those who have not heard or listened. We know them well. . . .

I come in this hour for a mighty sealing. I come to seal your chakras with a Holy Communion. I come, beloved, and I represent a high order of saints in heaven, as I am robed in a robe of delicate off-white wool. And I wear a metallic gold rope belt, with sandals. And I do carry my notebook of things I have to tell you this evening. . . .

I hold a book bound at inner levels of the Ashram Notes.<sup>1</sup> And now, in gratitude to all concerned, I say it may be physical and it may be entrusted to your hearts.

I promise you, beloved, that I will impart to you the wine of the Spirit and the bread of Life if you will read these Ashram Notes slowly and offer the rituals in between, seeking not to devour them all at once and [therefore] not digesting them, but understanding that the terse statements and the cups of Light and the words [of Wisdom] are for your Christhood, for a deep foundation in the consciousness of God.

You will assimilate [the Word] as you give devotion through these rituals, as you give your visualizations and as you see yourself truly an outpost of the Divine - as the Light, Light, Light all-glorious flows through you, flows through your chakras, and you direct that Light consciously with the intensity of your inner vision, your mind, your will, the love of your heart and all of your desiring to save souls of Light in any and all octaves.

Never has there been an hour when it has been more necessary for you to keep the Flame for the Lightbearers of earth, as beloved Alpha has told you.<sup>2</sup> . . .

Some of you remember the story of Igor, whom Mother Mary tutored, who kept the Flame for Mother Russia during the Bolshevik Revolution.<sup>3</sup> Through his heart she did release Light whereby many were spared; and the holocaust of that event was greatly reduced by that single saint who willed to keep the Flame. He was in embodiment, beloved, and did earn his ascension by that service.

You are many and you are called to keep the Flame for planet earth. But specifically are you called to hold the Light for the Lightbearers. This is your mission in the heart of the stupa. . . .

May you not forget, beloved, that harmony is the key not only to your victory but to the victory of many on the planet. You cannot direct Light for their salvation if you allow yourself to become [overly] conscious of your own and others' personalities and to become embroiled in argumentation and discord.

Thus, beloved ones, if you do so, you will compromise your own protection, [that is,] our protection which we would send into your midst. At no time in your entire existence has harmony had a greater

---

<sup>1</sup>See 1990 PoW, p. 216 n. 9.

<sup>2</sup>See Alpha, July 5, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 380-81, 383, 387-88; July 3, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book II, pp. 523, 527, 528.

<sup>3</sup>See the Unknown Master (Igor), March 25, 1967, 1972 PoW, Book I, pp. 217-18; Igor, April 2, 1983, 1983 PoW, pp. 319, 321, 323; Cyclopea, July 5, 1986, 1986 PoW, Book II, p. 586; Omri-Tas, February 26, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 253, 254 n. 3.



import to the future of your soul, your physical life and posterity and the planet as a whole.

Thus, I tell you, everything you have read and learned and heard from the Ascended Masters ought to come before your gaze and pass through your mind. And I say, may you pass your tests with an unmitigated love and fearlessness flame and the determination to be in the flame of God Harmony. This is an initiation in [the God-quality and its perversions on] the six o'clock line in the heart of the earth. It is an initiation of the Divine Mother.

I trust that you will not show the Karmic Board that all of your years in our conferences and services have been wasted for your loss of the lesson to be strong, to be harmonious, to be fruitful and to know that every spare moment must be in prayer, in oneness with God on behalf of all [Lightbearers] upon this planetary home.

For the day shall come when all shall be initiated, beloved; and each individual must find his true levels [of achievement or non, of attainment or non], stripped of all but the garment of the soul. Whether they are in physical embodiment or not, all are stripped. And each one must make his way, [going] on that attainment which he has gained. This is the final exam of the Piscean age.

I took my exams early, beloved, that I might graduate early and bring you to this point of a most possible victory. It was and is necessary for me to be at this level. And I AM in the Presence. I AM in the Holy One of God.

I come in the flame of holiness this night, beloved, the holiness of an inner order of saints, an order of saints who have been at the throne of God and [with] the Lamb [in the midst thereof], who have sung their songs and their praises<sup>4</sup> and who have returned in this hour to be with those saints in embodiment.

If you have never known what holiness is, beloved, may you begin to know it now. May it be the shine upon your face and the Light in your eye. May it be the dedication of your heart and the inclining of the ear to those in need. May holiness be honor and compassion. May it be forgiveness. May it also be the sternness that rebukes the dalliance of those who do nothing and expect others to do for them. But may it also be a softening that their babes might be borne by angels in embodiment.

This is the moment when the true meaning of "Community of the Holy Spirit worldwide" must be experienced and cherished beyond all else. This Community is the ark itself and the strength of the Lord. Your tying in to the strength of this Community must come from an inner strength.

O take your bowl of rice, chew it well and give your "Count-to-Nine Decree"<sup>5</sup> before you allow the telltale sign of discord to erupt. There are enough volcanoes to erupt on planet earth, beloved, without our having to contend with [the eruption of the astral bodies of] our chelas. Take care, therefore, that you exercise restraint and take dominion [over the forces] in this body.

If you are not prepared to this moment, then I say you have no other choice but to take a giant leap across the rapids of the unconscious self. And I will be on the other side with outstretched arms. And I will catch you though the river seem wide and dangerous. I will catch you and then you must conform to my Electronic Presence and Christhood and [yourselves] be "transformed by the renewing of your mind."<sup>6</sup>

I have come on this day for the renewing of your minds, beloved, that you might be renewed to step into the shoes of your Christhood. . . .

Thus I come to give you that maximum opportunity to be who you are and to make it. I profoundly pray that you will abandon those lesser ways and those out-of-alignment states and with love pursue

---

<sup>4</sup>Rev. 7:9, 10; 14:1-5; 15:2-4; 19:1-7.

<sup>5</sup>"Count-to-Nine Decree" by Cuzco, decree 0.10, in Prayers, Meditations, and Dynamic Decrees for the Coming Revolution in Higher Consciousness, Section I. See Saint Germain, July 6, 1984, 1984 PoW, Book II, pp. 416-17, or Lords of the Seven Rays: Mirror of Consciousness, Book Two, pp. 254-55.

<sup>6</sup>Rom. 12:2.

the holiness of God with your attention upon the Lord, your Mighty I AM Presence.

O beloved, our hearts, our witness, we two together are here to give all of our Love for your victory. It is an hour when you can quaff that drink of victory, when you can make it. And it is an hour when by nondecision, indecision or recalcitrance you may make a halfhearted attempt to take that [cup] but [then allow yourself to] dash it in pieces to fulfill your own doubts and fears.

People fail so that they may fulfill their doubts and fears and say, "You see, I told you I couldn't do it. I told you I wouldn't be able to do it. [Why did you make me try?]" Thus, as false prophets they accurately predict their demise. Let this not be, beloved. Sense the will of our loving. Sense the determination of our loving you. Sense the reality of our caring, and respond. O respond, beloved, and know the holiness of the Lord in your temples, in your minds!

What a wondrous temple God has created for your soul! Let, then, your heart merge with ours. For we are here for one purpose, to see you through to the finish and to the opening of the door to the New Day.

Steel the mind. Steel the mind, beloved!  
There is no room for any other thought than this:  
I will live.  
I will finish my course.  
I will fulfill my destiny.  
I will be in God on earth.  
I will not surrender my life for neglect,

*nor*

the life of my brothers, my sisters,

*northelifeof*

my children who do the will of God.<sup>7</sup>  
I AM firmly entrenched in this battle [of Light and Darkness].  
And I AM, [the I AM THAT I AM of me is,] the victor preordained.  
I AM the victor and I prophesy it!  
And I will fulfill my prophecy by the grace of God.  
I will live to see the Lord's blessing.  
I will not sign away my life or my dates.  
I will let the Lord set the dates of my life and I will remain.<sup>8</sup>  
I will remain with Lord Krishna on earth and in heaven.  
I will remain to heal the sick, to feed the hungry.  
I will remain to be a star of God  
in the depths of the astral sea  
and in the heart of Mother Earth.  
With Christ I will remain.  
I will remain, as Above, so below,  
in nirvana and in perpetual motion,  
securing the hearts of these children of God.  
I will open my life and see  
what wonders God will work through me!  
I will open my arms.

---

<sup>7</sup>Matt. 12:46-50; Mark 3:31-35; Luke 8:19-21.

<sup>8</sup>See "Sacred Ritual for Oneness," in El Morya, Ashram Notes, p. 63.

I will not be concerned with what anyone says of me.  
 But I will speak the Truth and strive for the Truth  
 and let the Truth cast out the error  
 of all condemnation born of doubt and fear.  
 I will remain.  
 I will remain on earth as long as my Lord does decree it.  
 I will remain to assist all others in the earth.  
 God needs my lips to speak the Teaching.  
 God needs my heart to overflow with his own lifeblood  
 given as transfusion to his own.  
 God needs my mind and the storehouse of information  
 of Ascended Master Teaching  
 that I might speak to the weary one,  
 to the one who is in despair, who has given up  
 or [who] in his pride has denied even the message  
 of the Messenger.  
 I will remain, for my life is worth something.  
 I will remain until I see the holiness of my God in my flesh.<sup>9</sup>  
 I will remain until the scales are removed from my eyes  
 and I, too, may see at etheric levels the heavens opening  
 and the multitude of the saints of God  
 who look down with pity and compassion.  
 I will be their helpers.  
 I will be the helper of the Divine Helper.  
 I will be! I will be! I will be!  
 That is my key in life.  
 I will to be God where I AM.  
 And I know that I need not go anywhere to be my God.  
 Lo, I will remain!  
 I AM in the heartbeat of God.  
 I AM pulsation's oneness: my heart, thy heart - thy heart, my heart.  
 And now, O Lord, I seal my saying  
 and I go forth with staff in hand.  
 And through that rod I bear,  
 my God does transmit a lightning to the earth.  
 I AM riveted in the earth and I shall know my victory.  
 Because the Lord has need of me - I shall remain.

I shall remain with Krishna in the earth, in the heaven.  
 O Cosmic Christ, Lord Jesus, there is only one -  
 There is only one God.

This, then, is the promise I have made to you, some in one lifetime, some in another. To some it is an ancient promise, for our paths have not crossed [in recent centuries]; our karmic paths have taken us each one in opposite directions. To some the promise was given more recently. But I have promised to be with you and to help you. I am come as the Divine Helper. Now I say, do it and I will do it through you. If you do not do it, I can do nothing through you. This is the physical test of the physical octave in the physical sign of Pisces. And you have been preparing to it for long centuries.

---

<sup>9</sup>Job 19:26.

I am proud of many of you; for you have found the momentum of perpetual service, perpetual prayer,<sup>10</sup> perpetual meditation. You have found it under the exigencies of the hour. You have found the fire, beloved. Some of you had lost the fire and you found it again. Eureka!

Yes, beloved, these are the tests that chelas are made of. These are the tests that Gurus give when they say, "We have some who are ready. If we turn the screws, the lily of the heart will unfold and the threefold flame, whoosh! and the Holy Spirit and the breath and the kindling fire and once again the Flame is restored." Some lost the Flame thousands of years ago and now are finding it truly in the fire - truly in the fire of the Word and the Work, which are no longer two but one.

Now, my beloved, go forth in fearlessness flame. Fear, doubt, unbelief and death are unreal and I banish them in the name of the Vajrasattva<sup>11</sup> this night!

Come and receive now Holy Communion. Let our servers bring it forward.

If you hear my Beloved speaking to you, listen well; for it will be I, it will be Morya speaking through her. Listen to the words, follow the directions and heed them. For remember I told you that our direct communication to you has been compromised.

Use the rituals [published in the Ashram Notes]. Listen with the heart. We will not fail you, but you must be in your right place. We need the listening ear. We need the listening ear.

I bring to you fire from the altars of God. And I break this bread as I give to you in Christ's name my Body and my Blood. For truly this is my Body, which is broken for you, and this is my Blood of the Everlasting Gospel.<sup>12</sup>

I give my Life for my sheep gladly.<sup>13</sup> Drink, then, of this my Life essence. Partake of my Body. I come to strengthen and to balance. In the heart of the Lord Christ Jesus I say, I AM Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending.<sup>14</sup>

On this occasion, as in each year prior to the moment and the hour of the reconsecration of my ascension, I journey to the Sun and return again that I might give to you fire for fire. I can give you only that portion [which is the equivalent of] that [which] you already have. Thus, I bring the balance of Spirit that you [who abide] in Matter as the Omega polarity in the Guru-Chela relationship can receive - fire for fire, beloved.

I come, then, with this Holy Communion to complete and make whole that which you yourself have already gained from the altar of heaven. If you desire more of me, beloved, then I say, require of your soul to gather more of thee, more of thee and thy Life and thy Presence, more of the God from the Sun.

The rituals Morya envisioned many years ago will assist you in this process if you take the time to give them with deep prayer and deep meditation. Thus, beloved, come forward to receive now fire for fire from my heart. Then keep mine as your own for the next round when I may give you again myself as our Communion.

Take now and drink. Drink ye all of it.<sup>15</sup> And receive me to your heart that I may assist you to God's heart. [Holy Communion is served.]

This Pearl of Wisdom is excerpted from the dictation by Lanello delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet at the conclusion of the February 25, 1990 Sunday evening service held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana, in celebration of the seventeenth anniversary of the ascension of the Messenger Mark L. Prophet on February 26,

---

<sup>10</sup>See Jesus and Kuthumi, *Prayer and Meditation*, pp. 4-6, 10, 14-15, 18-19, 44.

<sup>11</sup>See 1989 PoW, pp. 537 n. 4, 764 n. 20.

<sup>12</sup>Matt. 26:26-28; Mark 14:22-24; Luke 22:19, 20; I Cor. 11:23-26; Rev. 14:6.

<sup>13</sup>John 10:7-19.

<sup>14</sup>Rev. 1:8, 11; 21:6; 22:13.

<sup>15</sup>Matt. 26:27.

1973. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Lanello's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.



# Chapter 15

## Beloved Saint Germain - April 22, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 15 - Beloved Saint Germain - April 22, 1990

I AM Here!

And Nevermore Have I Been More Here

Keepers of the Flame, I AM here and nevermore have I been more here! [42-second standing ovation] (As this Grieg Concerto [in A Minor, played as the meditation before the dictation,] is for the precipitation of heaven in the earth, so may you also find in it the [keys to the soul's] ascent to heaven's world.)

I come, therefore, that your bodies seven<sup>1</sup> might be made one and converge at the point of the heart and the third eye. Let the fire be raised up and see what mastery shall come upon you! And see how Truth shall be the note of your journey to the Sun. Truth as shafts of emerald ray descends and forms the Light upon this altar and the forcefield in which the Messenger stands and where I stand.

Keepers of the Flame, are you ready for the fight?

["Yes!" (20-second applause)]

Keepers of the Flame, are you ready for the war? ["Yes!"]

Then I tell you, beloved, prepare!

For Monday, April 23, is indeed the date. (Now then, be seated.)

This is the date when all things will change. Prepare, then, as you have been preparing, to meet the physical karma that descends on that day - 25,800 years encapsulated into the spiral that moves on to [its conclusion on April 22 in] the year 2002.<sup>2</sup>

Blessed hearts, this is the warfare of the Spirit.<sup>3</sup> It is the spiritual fight that you have already engaged. And therefore you have the running momentum of clearing from your forcefields, even from your lifestreams, those momentums that could precipitate out physically on that day.

I charge the Messenger to return again and again to this altar until that date that you might

---

<sup>1</sup>The seven bodies of man are the etheric (or memory), mental, emotional (or astral) and physical bodies (called the four lower bodies) and the I AM Presence, Causal Body and Christ Self (called the three higher bodies). See Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *Climb the Highest Mountain*, 2d ed., pp. 148-57, 164-73, 180-82, 274-84, 292-94, 322-33; *The Lost Teachings of Jesus I*, pp. 203-59, 264-67; *Saint Germain On Alchemy*, glossary and pp. 276-77.

<sup>2</sup>On April 23, 1990, the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse began a twelve-year cycle of delivering mankind's physical karma from the last 25,800 years that was created in the physical plane. See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, "Prophecy for the 1990s III," 1990 PoW, pp. 71, 73-86, 120.

<sup>3</sup>II Cor. 10:3-6; Eph. 6:10-18.

find yourselves having slain many an [astral] beast and transmuted by violet flame marathon much karma that otherwise could already [have manifested] and be physical on that day. Thus the fight is the spiritual fight. And the war of which I speak is Armageddon itself, which is always a spiritual warfare.

What, then, of physical karma? Does it portend the expected events? Blessed ones, these must unfold from that day forward. Therefore no man knoweth save the Father and the Son.<sup>4</sup> And by the Holy Spirit may you also be in the center of the One.

Blessed hearts, as there is a precipitation of karma on that date and continuing, I come to release in advance of the precipitation the spiral of your spirituality that you have earned and [that is to be locked in to] the configuration of the seven bodies of man where you are. I call for the coalescing in the physical octave, as you are able to bear it, even of the presence of your Holy Christ Self [with your soul and your four lower bodies].

Therefore do not misconstrue my words to mean that on that date a physical war may begin or a physical fight may begin. But simply understand that the Lord God and the Four Cosmic Forces, called the Four Beasts, who give the command to the Four Horsemen,<sup>5</sup> will not hold back, will not mitigate but will release that karma.

[This karma] shall be mitigated [only] for those who one by one have kept the Flame, who shall keep the Flame, who will be in the center of the roaring violet flame within the tube of light, who will be in the center of their Godhood, who will be in the center of the cylinder of blue flame. Thus, beloved, that which you transmute [on time and] ahead of time is not there to descend in your individual world on that date. For in this hour you have far greater control over personal karma than you do over planetary karma.

Thus planetary karma descends. And as you have chosen this “Place Prepared” and set aside, so, as Morya has counseled, withdraw your ties to the world by paying your debts to the world.<sup>6</sup> For Jesus also paid tribute to Caesar.<sup>7</sup>

Know, then, that this is the true liberation: nondesire and nondesiring of the things of this world<sup>8</sup> and proof of it manifest in the willingness to shed all those things that encumber one in these days when acquiring has become a way of life. Withdraw, then, your energies from the world and there will be no entrance into your world [of the mass consciousness].<sup>9</sup> This is the key to this victory.

You have been told that [during the last 2,000 years] the Lord Jesus Christ has carried the weight of this karma<sup>10</sup> and that others following after, the Messengers and yourselves as the Lightbearers,

---

<sup>4</sup>Matt. 24:36; Mark 13:32. In the Olivet discourse, in which Jesus discusses the great tribulation and the signs of the coming of the Son of man, he says, as recorded in Mark 13:32, “Of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.” Matthew’s version of this discourse in the King James Version of the Bible reads: “Of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only” (Matt. 24:36). When Jesus was in embodiment, he was saying that the Son did not know when these prophesied events would take place, but Saint Germain states in his dictation that today Jesus, the Ascended Master, does know when these coming events will take place.

<sup>5</sup>Rev. 6:1-8.

<sup>6</sup>El Morya, April 8, 1990, 1990 PoW, pp. 210, 211-12.

<sup>7</sup>Matt. 17:24-27; 22:16-21; Mark 12:14-17; Luke 20:21-25. See The Life of Saint Issa 12:1-7, in Elizabeth Clare Prophet, The Lost Years of Jesus, pp. 214-15.

<sup>8</sup>“Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world” (I John 2:15-17). The Dhammapada (a collection of basic teachings of Gautama Buddha) instructs: “In solitude that few enjoy, let him [t he wise man] find his joy supreme: free from possessions, free from desires, and free from whatever may darken his mind. For he whose mind is well trained in the ways that lead to light, who surrenders the bondage of attachments and finds joy in his freedom from bondage, who free from the darkness of passions shines pure in a radiance of light, even in this mortal life he enjoys the immortal Nirvana” (Juan Mascarao, trans., The Dhammapada: The Path of Perfection [New York: Penguin Books, 1973], p. 47).

<sup>9</sup>John 14:30.

<sup>10</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, “Prophecy for the 1990s III,” 1990 PoW, pp. 64, 77-78, 81-84.



have [also] borne this world karma. Nevertheless, it has descended in the etheric, the mental and the astral quadrants.<sup>11</sup>

This day [April 23, 1990] is a day [that marks the beginning of a twelve-year cycle] of completion and fulfillment. And through this hour and this decade and beyond, the Almighty One and the Great White Brotherhood provide you with the opportunity to pass through the fiery trial of physical karma and to emerge ready, clothed upon with your seamless garment, to truly [take] the opportunity [earned and given] for a physical acceleration and the balancing of 100 percent of your karma in preparation for the ascension.

My beloved Portia did descend a long spiral staircase, coming forth from nirvana as she did, on April 9, 1939.<sup>12</sup> Blessed hearts, this was the beginning of an era for the drawing together of all who had ties to these Messengers and to the Mother of the Flame. This was the hour when many Cosmic Beings and Buddhas and Bodhisattvas intensified their dedication to bring the seed of Sanat Kumara to the feet of their Mighty I AM Presence.

Thus, my beloved Portia has sponsored the intensifying flame of Divine Justice in the earth,<sup>13</sup> Divine Justice that requires above all that the Lightbearers settle their accounts with all, with everyone at all levels and in all octaves. The closer you come, therefore, to the age of Aquarius, of Cosmic Freedom and Justice in the earth,<sup>14</sup> the closer you come to the antithesis of both. And therefore all injustice is karma, and karma is always injustice. And the forces of anti-Freedom are at an all-time high in the earth.

Let us see the devouring of the force of anti-Justice and anti-Freedom [by the Cosmic Christ of Aquarius]. Let us see the liberation of souls. And let us see [what we shall accomplish together], beloved, as cosmic forces have gathered to give you the opportunity to call upon their Causal Bodies.

And the multiplication of your decrees in these days leading to April 23 shall be stupendous; [it shall be] as no other opportunity that has been given to you in this life through any of the sponsored activities of the Ascended Masters.<sup>15</sup> And this [opportunity] does come purely through the Causal Body of my beloved Portia and through a grant from the Central Sun that those who tarry and travail in the Lord, those who toil yet in their karma might know that God is indeed gracious, God is indeed merciful, God is indeed just unto the gracious, unto the merciful and unto the just.

Understand, therefore, beloved, that God has given to you who have given so much this opportunity to balance your accounts that by this period of perpetual decree work in this court you might see, literally, layers of the former self pass into the flame.

We have instructed you through all of the instruction that the Messenger has given in these two weeks. We have given you to understand exactly where the Achilles' heel of the individual and of the activity lies. And therefore to clear the three o'clock line and the four, the nine and the ten,<sup>16</sup> this, beloved, must surely be an achievement that has not come to many prior to [the decree work that

---

<sup>11</sup>See charts and explanation of "The Four Horsemen: A 2,000-Year Ride" in Elizabeth Clare Prophet, "Prophecy for the 1990s III," 1990 PoW, pp. 71, 73-77.

<sup>12</sup>The Ascended Lady Master Portia stepped forth from nirvana on April 9, 1939. See dictations by Saint Germain and Portia, published by the I AM Activity in *The Voice of the I AM* (May 1939). See also 1989 PoW, p. 724 n. 5.

<sup>13</sup>See Saint Germain, July 4, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 548-49.

<sup>14</sup>See Alpha, July 5, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 380-81, 383-84, 385-86, 388.

<sup>15</sup>This same stupendous opportunity that was granted for a maximum outpouring of the violet flame in an eight-day marathon through April 22 may be yours if you petition Saint Germain and ask that this dispensation be applied to an eight-day marathon that you and your study groups will hold.

<sup>16</sup>The God-qualities and perversions of the three/nine and four/ten axes of the Cosmic Clock are: Aries, three o'clock line, God-quality: God-Control. Perversions: conceit, deceit, arrogance, ego, intellectual and spiritual pride. Libra, nine o'clock line, God-quality: God-Reality. Perversions: dishonesty, intrigue, treachery, physical self-preservation and idolatry. Taurus, four o'clock line, God-quality: God-Obedience. Perversions: disobedience, stubbornness, defiance of the law and mental rebellion. Scorpio, ten o'clock line, God-quality: God-Vision. Perversions: selfishness, self-love, physical self-infatuation and idolatry.

has been taken up in] this activity. For we have not seen in the outer world in thousands of years such a dedicated, one-pointed assault by chelas of the sacred fire, in full, waking awareness, on that dweller-on-the-threshold [as it appears on those lines of the Cosmic Clock].

The perception that you have gained and the Christ-discrimination come by the fervor of the love of the heart of your Messenger and all of us who count on her to be the link to your victory and the link to the planetary victory itself. You are our hope, beloved, even as the Messenger is our hope.

We have, therefore, seen these problems creep in in the Heart of the Inner Retreat. These challenges, beloved, are strictly in the physical octave. They are physical karma and only you can solve them. But I tell you, the universal solvent is still the violet flame!<sup>17</sup> And I am the alchemist of old who was determined to discover that universal solvent, [to] apply it and apply it again. For these 14,000 angels of mercy [stationed in the Heart] are bearing very large urns of concentrated violet flame and liquid violet flame for transmutation. Miracles are prepared to happen, are about to happen, as you call them forth.

Thus, be tested in all things. And remember that God has said to you who occupy the physical octave, even as he said to us when we occupied it, "Take dominion over the earth."<sup>18</sup> The mastery of science and engineering, the mastery of the chakras, the mastery of the oneness of the Mind of God and [the mastery] over the not-self is required of the builders in the earth.

Blessed hearts, do you not remember how many times Milarepa built and how many times Marpa made him tear down? I should say that you as initiates have not had so many trials as did Milarepa. And yet for his trials [and because he had profound] remorse [for his past] practices of the black arts,<sup>19</sup> this one became the flying yogi and had great attainment.

We have not so much spoken of your practice of the black arts. But you must be reminded that in the strictest sense of the word engaging in any human creation on any line of the Clock is engaging in black magic. Any resentment or mild dislike, any conceit or disobedience [to the laws of God], any self-pity - [any or] all of it you can roll up in one ball of black magic.

And therefore, begin to understand that on a world scale the producing of cataclysm and volcanic eruption and tidal wave and torrent, tornado, et cetera, all of this is the result of the practice of black magic. Yet when those who invoke so much Light engage thoughtlessly and needlessly in criticism, condemnation and judgment [of other parts of Life], well, beloved, their karma is greater, their responsibility is greater, and they become more dense as the result thereof.

You must be tested and you must be reminded that we cannot interfere with the physical chemistry of your lives. You are the doers. And by doing what is just, you are also the victors. And the victors shall be those who have the victory themselves. It shall be your victory and not ours. If we were to solve every problem that you did not see or understand, you would become lax.

Thus man has learned by trial and error how to conquer the physical universe. And surely, I tell you, surely he shall learn by severe trial and error how to deal with the physical karma returning for that which has become a gross, gross neglect.

As you have so dedicated yourselves to hours of invocations and calls, so remember [that] a little bit of attention to God-mastery will make you alchemists also. Know, then, that the mastery of the mind and the thought, of the desire body and the feeling [world] is most essential.<sup>20</sup> Do not allow a

---

<sup>17</sup>Violet flame as the universal solvent. Saint Germain, June 1, 1980, 1980 PoW, Book I, p. 202 (also excerpted in Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Science of the Spoken Word*, p. 175); Listening Angel, October 14, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, p. 531; Elizabeth Clare Prophet, "Prophecy for the 1990s I," 1988 PoW, Book I, p. 9; Heros and Amora, May 20, 1984, 1989 PoW, p. 95.

<sup>18</sup>Gen. 1:26, 28.

<sup>19</sup>See 1990 PoW, p. 16 n. 17.

<sup>20</sup>See Archangel Jophiel and Archeia Hope, July 2, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 510-12.

portion of yourself to be the laggard that pulls you back to Maldek.<sup>21</sup> Blessed hearts, the so great a Light that is around you and upon you must be appropriated [by you] for your mastery.

It has been said before. I say it again. And it will be said again and again and again until you determine to banish anxiety and fear and doubt from your life. You must know yourself. You must be alert. And you cannot fall back into the ways of indulgence of the West and assume that someone else, an angel, gnome or Master will pick up the slack where your density has not allowed the piercing Light of the Christ to penetrate, to quicken, to awaken.

We cannot speak through the inner ear to you, we cannot contact your mind if you cannot for God's sake take even five minutes of absolute concentration and quiet before you fall asleep at night to attune with your Mighty I AM Presence and with us and to ask and implore us: "Saint Germain, Morya, speak to me of those things I must know, those things hidden that must be revealed, those details that require my attention and none other's, for they are my responsibility."<sup>22</sup>

Perhaps you can spare seven minutes or eight or ten. But, beloved, if you do not have a moment in your day, especially when the soul is ready to take her leave of the lesser vehicles, to listen to God and to us, then do not blame us when calamity comes upon you, striking suddenly<sup>23</sup> because you did not anticipate this eventuality. The listening ear is necessary [and] the setting of the forcefield. Thus, Morya did foresee all of this, [most especially his chelas' need for a listening ear and a deeper spirituality,] and [the Master] did give the sacred rituals as a part of his Ashram, [sent forth to his chelas with the Ashram Notes].

This is not to say that many of you are not good listeners and that for this you have not followed the voice of your Holy Christ Self. After all, beloved, you are here. You have had many victories.

But alas, do we not all weep before the single failure that is so costly or the single neglect? Yes, we all weep, Masters and chelas alike. But we will not be defeated. We will move on. And we can do the maximum for you when you have the maximum God-awareness that all things are indeed possible through your God Presence<sup>24</sup> and miracles may abound if you expand the chalice and the faith and the hope and the charity and the purity of the immaculate vision of the goal.

Time is not.<sup>25</sup> Space is not. Be delivered of these confines. And when you have accomplished this cleanup in our Heart and this restoration of things to the way they ought to have been in the first place, you will see that much more was accomplished in what is called time and space in less of these commodities.

Be not bound by any limitation. Become all fire! Become all Light! Lighten your burden. Lighten your diet. Lighten your consciousness that I might speak to you to give you the God-solution to every challenge that besets you, including the need for supply and the setting right of all things.

This is a week and more of days that are open whereby you may have this maximum opportunity for a maximum outpouring [of the violet flame]. Let us inaugurate this spiral, then, with the celebration of resurrection's fires, with the celebration in advance of your resurrection, anticipated, defined, marked as that goal. Keep your eye on it and you shall attain it. You are in the driver's seat. All things are possible to you in God at this hour. You can indeed be ready for the fight and you can be prepared for the battle. You can be ready, beloved. Understand that now you must do it and finish it.

There is a Divine Hand and it is the hand invisible of the Great White Brotherhood. Reach up

---

<sup>21</sup>See 1988 PoW, Book I, p. 47 n. 2; *Mysteries of the Holy Grail*, p. 356 n. 1; Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *Climb the Highest Mountain*, 2d ed., pp. 86, 93-103, 131-32, 474, 525-26.

<sup>22</sup>See Saint Germain, November 27, 1986, 1986 PoW, Book II, p. 655, also published in *Saint Germain On Prophecy*, Book Four, pp. 218-19.

<sup>23</sup>I Thess. 5:3.

<sup>24</sup>Matt. 19:26; Mark 9:23; 10:27; Luke 18:27.

<sup>25</sup>See Gautama Buddha, "Time Is Not," May 4, 1985, 1985 PoW, Book II, pp. 325-34.

your right hand now and clasp the hand of God above you. Keep your right hand in the right hand of your Father and know that this walk shall be the walk of victory unto eternal Life. May you see it and seize the torch of liberty in your left hand to light the way.

I AM Saint Germain. I have come with an intense spiral of purple fire. It descends upon you now as a corkscrew, touching the crown chakra. Receive it. Breathe and drink it in and let it press through you. For there is much density to be consumed and I have come for that purpose.

You are noble. You are my own. You are our best hope. And you have done many fine acts over the centuries. Be not dismayed. Be not disturbed. All things shall come to completion if you apply the ray of the seventh day of rest for the alchemy of self-transcendence.

We would not allow this condition to persist. That which is not done right must be undone and redone. Know, then, the lesson that haste makes waste. And do not so trust others with so precious and important a mission that you do not thoroughly check the work of outside contractors and builders, manufacturers and engineers. Only by the [focusing of the] Christ Mind [by our chelas] can so great a salvation be won.

There is one God, one Christ, one Great White Brotherhood, and a multiplicity of anti-identities. Billions assail the victory of the One. It cannot touch you, for you are that One.<sup>26</sup>

We have only praise for the good, the steadfastness, for the Light, the purity, the devotion, the staying power, truly. These are your treasures in heaven.<sup>27</sup> They are there in your Causal Bodies in caskets of gold. Reach up into your Causal Body and draw forth the momentums of your nobility and ability to master the physical octave.

You are the pyramid builders. You have built the cathedrals of the Middle Ages. You have built the stupas of the Buddhas. You are the builders, beloved, and you build again. This time the prize is all. And the failure, if ever there be a failure, would be total. Failure is not a choice. Victory is a present reality and possibility.

Let yourselves become concentrated now in the heart fire. And feel, as I, Saint Germain, place my purple fiery heart over your own physical heart and spiritual/etheric chakra, feel the violet flame burn and intensify. Invoke the violet flame until you feel it burn. Let this heart become the alchemist's cauldron where all things may come to resolution in this window of opportunity.

And now, in the name of the Lord's day I affirm: I AM the Resurrection and the Life of the Seventh Age and Dispensation of Aquarius! And through the devotees of the violet flame we shall see what the Lord Gautama Buddha and Kuan Yin and all adepts of the Seventh Ray shall be able to precipitate in the earth.

The violet flame is a physical ray.<sup>28</sup> One day you will come to understand just what that truly means, for I have said it many times. The violet flame is a physical ray! Apply it to all physical problems.

Omri-Tas, we bow before thee now, thou who with 144,000 priests of the sacred fire of the violet planet have taken up residence in the Heart of the Inner Retreat unto the victory over this mishap. Let this mishap become the divine happening that catapults all to a path of perfectionment in self and service that never again shall allow any foul or unclean thing to creep in to the Work of the Lord. For it is the mighty work of the ages. And you are the mighty ones called, chosen, gathered, who can truly accomplish it if you set your minds and hearts a thousand percent to it.

---

<sup>26</sup>Ps. 91:7, 9, 10.

<sup>27</sup>Matt. 6:20.

<sup>28</sup>Violet flame as a physical flame. See Saint Germain, December 2, 1984, 1984 PoW, Book II, p. 553; Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Lost Teachings of Jesus II*, pp. 402-3, 479-80; Chananda, July 5, 1985, 1985 PoW, Book II, p. 416; Saint Germain, February 7, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, p. 92; Omri-Tas, January 1, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book I, p. 23; Archangel Zadkiel, March 24, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 184-85.

Will you do it? [“Yes!”] I decree it! I demand it! And I shall fulfill it through you as you fulfill it in me. And therefore, holding the cup of the wine of alchemy’s forgiveness, I say to you each one, drink me while I am drinking thee.

I make the sign of the Maltese cross and I seal this Community against all negative astrology, psychology and karma. May you move swiftly to take Opportunity’s hand and portion. For thus, you see, Portia may multiply by your effort a great glory of the violet ray in the earth.

I say to you, beloved, from tomorrow on, prepare for Pentecost.<sup>29</sup> For in forty days and forty nights [unto the ascension, thence unto] the path of the days and the hours that are counted unto the descent of the Paraclete on Pentecost, you must prepare to receive the Holy Ghost of the Seventh Ray. May it be so, beloved. Nothing is given to you except it be needed, except it be needed greatly, except the need be dire.

We are the physician. You are the patient, as you are the patient ones. Therefore know that every good and perfect gift that cometh from above, even from the Father of Lights, Sanat Kumara, in whom there is no variableness neither shadow of turning,<sup>30</sup> is for your acceleration, your upliftment. It is medicine, the medicine of the Buddha of the Seventh Ray, who is indeed Gautama, medicine that you require even to survive.<sup>31</sup> This is the dose and the dosage, beloved. Now shall we say “do-si-do”?

Let the twinkle of mirth of Morya in you banish all dire calamities, projections and the doom and gloom of the half-dead and the half-baked and those who though they are half-dead and half-baked do not come alive, do not rise [and] cannot be presented as bread for the Lord’s table. Nay, beloved, your Light is in a far purer chalice. [Therefore claim it, and do not engage in unnecessary comparisons of yourselves with those who do not serve the Light and have no reward.]

In the joy of the anticipated resurrection of your soul, I, Saint Germain, AM here. I AM here, Keepers of the Flame! And nevermore have I been more here. [44-second standing ovation]

This dictation by Saint Germain was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet at the conclusion of the April 14, 1990 Saturday evening service during the four-day Easter prayer vigil held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Saint Germain’s direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

<sup>29</sup>Pentecost [from Greek pentekoste, literally “fiftieth day”]: religious feast on the seventh Sunday, or fiftieth day, after Easter celebrating the descent of the Holy Spirit upon the apostles (see Acts 2). Also called Whitsunday. Whitsuntide is the week beginning with Whitsunday, especially the first three days of the week. This year Pentecost is celebrated on June 3, 1990.

<sup>30</sup>James 1:17.

<sup>31</sup>A well-known adage in Buddhism is “The Buddha is the great physician; the Dharma [the Teaching] is the remedy; the Sangha [the Community] is the nurse who administers the remedy.”



# Chapter 16

## Beloved Jesus Christ - April 29, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 16 - Beloved Jesus Christ - April 29, 1990  
To the Called of God with Me in the Temple of Initiation  
The Path of the Rose Cross  
Easter Address 1990

I speak to the called of God who are with me in the temple of initiation. And I speak to those who would be the called of God and who would be in the temple of initiation.

Let us contemplate the mysteries of self-transcendence in the holy oil, in the holy flame and in the Holy One of God.

Some have heard the Call. Some have truly come to the moment of the piercing of the heart and the piercing by the crown of thorns. Some have understood the mysteries of the secret rays and of what is required to be the chalice for the Sacred Heart.

I AM that chalice. I would that you might be that chalice.

Suffering and to suffer is the nature of the flesh. And in the process of the translation at the point where the Christed one stands between a Spirit cosmos and a Matter cosmos, there is that moment, beloved, when the pain of the giving up of the Light itself [from the four lower bodies that can no longer contain it] unto a higher vessel is experienced unto the being of the bliss of God all one.

Some linger, for my sake, at that point of the cross for centuries. They count not the time, for I have called them. They have heard. And therefore daily and hourly they must deal with the world momentum of the force of Antichrist that will not stop, that will not let go the blessed one becoming the all of me until they [the legions of Antichrist] may no longer touch that one, for that one is not only resurrected but ascended in the Light and wholly free.

Thus, it is the tarrying [with me upon the cross of Life] in which the saints have engaged. And they have allowed themselves to be the targets of the fallen ones, who think that by assailing the saints they do despite to the Godhead. But on the contrary, it is this affliction that brings about a distillation whereby the soul of the individual and the spirit become one as an Alpha-and-Omega in this octave.

I speak of the spirit here below and not of the [Spirit of the Lord, who is the] I AM Presence. Therefore listen well. It [the ritual] is for androgynous being, whereby thy spirit fiery [the masculine, or yang, aspect of self] and thy soul [the feminine, or yin, aspect of self], as the essence and heart of the evolving one, do merge. And thus there is a wholeness, there is a beingness and there is the profound desire to extend into this octave even portion by portion of the Infinite One. For in this process, beloved, many are healed, much is consumed by sacred fire.

Thus, know and understand that this is the inner temple initiation, yet it is walked in the outer world in these days.

Let it be known, therefore, that when you are called for this blessedness, when you are called to be the blessed who receive fire for fire for the devouring of the onslaughts that seem perpetual, so it is well to answer and to say:

O Lord my God, I am not able but Thou art able in me.  
Because Thou hast called, I will answer,  
Trusting that Thou knowest surely what is the capacity  
Of my soul and my spirit to take my turn, to play my part  
And thus to increase the opportunity for the little ones of God  
To be drawn up by the very draft of the Holy Spirit  
That will surround me as I come into consonance  
With this point of initiation of the rose of the heart.

The symbol of the rose is the sign of this path, beloved - the symbol of the rose. Thus, the rose of the heart must increase her petals and Rose of Light has offered you her assistance.<sup>1</sup> And so you have been given, too, the initiations of the heart, the meditations of the heart by my blessed father, Saint Germain.<sup>2</sup>

Coming in, then, to the understanding of this calling, you may begin to examine and to discern all events of your lifetime leading to it, understanding that all other initiations and the balancing of karma and the increase of the cosmic honor flame [have been that you may] come to that place where surely the momentum of the bliss of the rose of the heart itself does displace the transmutation that may be experienced, [albeit momentarily,] as pain or sorrow or burden. And yet in the moment, in the twinkling of the eye of God, once again, once again you have passed through another round for world transmutation, for world conflagration, for sacred fire.

Bless God. Bless the enemy. Bless the adversity and the adversary, as you have heard the Beloved One speak and say.<sup>3</sup> But feel the blessedness of the Love of the Holy Spirit that passes through you, even an all-consuming fire whereby the burning of the heart does, according to the sine wave, carry you up into the ecstasy of the Holy Spirit.

O blessed ones, truly it is blessed to have the opportunity and the certain freedom that comes with this path to exult in the glory of the Lord and to know that on the etheric plane one carries the stigmata.<sup>4</sup> And thus, the flowing Light, as the flowing Blood of Christ, and the superimposing of my Body upon your [body] enables you to be in the earth, in heaven at once but most especially at the point of the nexus where [the] one becomes the other.

Thus, you remain visible in the world, but all who see you will begin to see through you into the portals of heaven and gain an understanding of what is the life universal and the life triumphant and that earth provides stepping stones. And those who may be the exalted and those who may fulfill a certain way of the Path of the Rose Cross may appear in the earth as Saint Therese of Lisieux, being in the earth a powerful presence, ascended and unascended all at once.

---

<sup>1</sup>Rose of Light, October 6, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 673-82.

<sup>2</sup>Saint Germain's Heart Meditation I and II. See 1989 PoW, p. 682 n. 7.

<sup>3</sup>El Morya, April 8, 1990, 1990 PoW, p. 204.

<sup>4</sup>stigmata: the scientifically inexplicable reproduction of the wounds of the Passion of Christ on the body. The stigmata may be invisible, wherein pain is experienced without any physical signs, or visible, wherein open wounds or scars are seen on the hands, feet, near the heart, on the head, shoulders or back. These wounds may bleed either continuously or periodically, usually on Fridays or during Lent. Saint Francis of Assisi is the first known to have received the stigmata.



There are goals that you can aspire to, goals that you can set. Their attainment does correspond to the yearning of the heart, to the willingness to groan in travail that the Holy Spirit might take up his abode within your temple. And to the Love - O the Love and the desiring to fill and fill again the empty, the incomplete, to provide the I AM Presence to those who know not who they are or who I AM, truly to be the instrument for the engrafting of the Word!<sup>5</sup>

Therefore, there are sacred labors of the heart which the saints have won. And if there were but one among you who were ready for this initiation, I would speak to that one this day, for I have spoken to [the] many on prior occasions. Yet I tell you that there is more than one. And those who receive the increasing of the fire by the increasing of the desiring for God, as it has been said, "My soul panteth after the living God,"<sup>6</sup> so they shall receive my answer when they shall call in answer to my Call.

Many are called but few are chosen.<sup>7</sup> Therefore I call all of you, but I choose those who bring the prerequisites. And I take you [to my heart] as [I did take the disciples and the holy women] in the inner circle of old where I did give much.

Blessed hearts, understand that there are among you [those] who, thanks to Saint Germain and two thousand years of your increase of Light [in your temple] and [the] dispensations of God [upon you], have gone beyond the attainment even of the twelve, who, beloved, in the hour of my departure from that part of the world yet did indulge in their unbelief, their human questioning and their doubt. And thus, to some of them my final and parting words were he upbraiding of them for their hardness of heart.<sup>8</sup> You can understand, beloved, that those who have now had for decades the violet flame and the Call should be past this place of being in my presence and yet doubting that I am the representative of the Cosmic Christ.

Fear and doubt are as [a] desert of desolation. They render the soul desolate, for the soul cannot grip reality when in the grips of fear and self-doubt. Thus, I do come as the Piscean Master and Initiator always, counseling you that that God-mastery will come only to those who abandon their doubts, abandon their fears and cast them into the fire.

O the mastery of the flame of Love!  
O the presence of the flame of Love!  
O the power of the flame of Love!  
O the wisdom of the flame of Love!

I, Jesus, speak to you of the heart and essence of Love as being the fulfillment of the whole law.<sup>9</sup> And I speak to you of all these things of the world as paltry before the treasures of the Spirit and the gifts of the Spirit that we would bestow.

It is time for self-emptying and for the infilling. It is time to reduce oneself, to be the spirit of the living God juxtaposed against the backdrop of the Cosmic Spirit of the living God. It is time to despise all else. It is time to know the true meaning of the heart of Saint Francis.

Blessed ones, those of the orders of Francis and Clare saw outer poverty as the vacuum whereby the inner riches of the Spirit could be attained. They left "all these things"<sup>10</sup> and thus nothing, nothing stood between them and my presence.

I call you to a life of the Holy Ghost. Some of you have been here since the days of Mark, yet you have not yet received the Holy Spirit! And you walk among us as hollowed-out ones. And why?

---

<sup>5</sup>James 1:21.

<sup>6</sup>Ps. 42:1.

<sup>7</sup>Matt. 20:16; 22:14.

<sup>8</sup>Mark 16:14.

<sup>9</sup>Rom. 13:8-10; Gal. 5:14.

<sup>10</sup>Matt. 6:24-34; Luke 12:22-31.

Because you have preferred your independent/ dependent ego stature. You have stood apart. You have not let me embrace you. You have not allowed me to draw you to myself, to breathe upon you the breath of the Holy Spirit, but instead [you] stand as the accuser of the brethren<sup>11</sup> and in judgment of one or another or another.

Who gave you the right to stand in judgment of the followers of God?<sup>12</sup> And why have you embodied an anti-Community spirit? And why do you not know that you have done so?

It is because in that state of outer darkness you have not even seen that you do not possess the very thing that you think you possess - the gift of the discernment of spirits.<sup>13</sup> You have not discerned the spirits howling in your own vacancies, but you believe that you can perceive the spirits of others.

Blessed hearts, is it difficult to believe that those who sup at my table day after day could be found in such a state? No, it is not difficult. For the initiation of the heart comes with the Bridegroom in the midnight hour in the secret chamber, where none else may enter.<sup>14</sup> [And even] you who have that precious anointing may not be aware of it because you are caught up in the buoyant love of God.

Let none attempt to measure his place but rather to know that life is a perpetuality of seeking and finding, self-emptying and increasing of the Holy Ghost. Do not attempt to fix your position on the Path, but do ask for guidance of me through my Messenger or through your Holy Christ Self. Do not seek definitive answers or promises or commitments from God, but seek them in your own heart, of your own soul.

Fear not to stand in your Christ Self to command your soul to come out of the doldrums of negativity and to rise to new planes of being. Fear not in the spirit to be fierce with the lesser manifestation of self and to compel the [soul's] ascent to God, just as you would speak firmly to the child or one entrusted to your care.

Many saints have walked the earth, and among many saints only a single saint has been called apart to become the rose of the heart. What is the difference, beloved? What makes one devotee be received into the courts of the kingdom of heaven and another working side by side with that one to return into embodiment?<sup>15</sup>

It is the quality of the heart. It is the quality of grace. It is the quality of forgiveness and forbearance. It is the quality of Love discovered in all of the millions of facets of its potential expression. It is care and carefulness and the rough places of the human will planed<sup>16</sup> by the diamond of the Inner Christ.

Commend your spirit unto the Father, saying, "O my Father, into thine arms I commend my spirit!"<sup>17</sup> But the key is, except you become [as] a little child, you will not enter in to the Holy of holies of the temple initiations with me;<sup>18</sup> [you will not enter in except you have the] childlike quality of trust and innocence and purity, knowing only the love of God and trusting that love.

---

<sup>11</sup>Rev. 12:10.

<sup>12</sup>Matt. 7:1-5; Luke 6:37, 38; John 7:24.

<sup>13</sup>I Cor. 12:10. See Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *Lords of the Seven Rays: Mirror of Consciousness*, Book One, pp. 11, 123, 133-34, 142-43.

<sup>14</sup>Matt. 25:1-13. For Gnostic teaching on the bridal chamber, see the Gospel of Philip in James M. Robinson, ed., *The Nag Hammadi Library in English* (San Francisco: Harper and Row, 1978), pp. 140, 141-43, 144, 145, 149, 150, 151. Secret chamber of the heart. See Djwal Kul, *Intermediate Studies of the Human Aura*, pp. 38-47 (also published in Kuthumi and Djwal Kul, *The Human Aura*, pp. 108-18). Serapis Bey, July 2, 1988; *Cyclopea*, October 5, 1988; Gautama Buddha, November 27, 1988; and Jesus Christ, December 26, 1988, in 1988 PoW, Book II, pp. 494, 609, 657-58, 691. Passages from the Upanishads (Hindu mystical scriptures) also describe a space within the heart where "the Lord of All" abides, where heaven and earth meet and where one rediscovers the Real Self.

<sup>15</sup>Matt. 24:36-41; Luke 17:34-36.

<sup>16</sup>Isa. 40:4; Luke 3:5.

<sup>17</sup>Luke 23:46.

<sup>18</sup>Matt. 18:2, 3; Mark 10:15; Luke 18:17.

Now come my legions of angels, for I would not leave you to wonder or despair this day. Therefore they come with swords to cut you free from worldliness, intellectual pride, the entrapments of the carnal mind and all those things that have taken you from the sweet innocence of your childhood and the simple faith you knew.

I, Jesus, have walked up and down the earth, placing my Electronic Presence [before the people] that all might see the Christ. And you, the saints, have revealed your path at inner levels to millions.<sup>19</sup> All know it is the time of the coming of the Son of man. Yet they will not know how or where or when unless some of you enter into the bliss of God, knowing that the portal to bliss is pain. But it is a peculiar pain, beloved, and it is one that surely, I tell you, can be endured.

In the great mystery of Love I call you, for you have loved and cherished the lives of the saints. You have loved each of my footprints in which you have placed your own feet. You have supped on the words. You have been drenched in the glory of my Light released, as again and again you have received my testimony.<sup>20</sup>

The testimony is not in the mere worded dictation. It is in the Light that flows and flows again and flows, beloved, that touches you and leaves a radiance in your temple that cannot be scrubbed away. It is there as the shining aura of one who has touched my garment and, yea, more, one who has touched my heart.

I send ruby fire this day for healing, for disassociation of atoms that are not in harmony, for the regrouping of atoms forming the foundations of the whole man that is to be made whole in this life.

O Great Central Sun Magnet of the Ruby Ray, draw the fragments of self scattered to the four corners of the universes back, back to the magnet of the heart!

Blessed one, if you would be all of yourself, you must develop the heart as a magnet so that all that has your imprint upon it, and even fragments of the soul lost here and there, will come back to you as though spiraling to the center of a great sun. Without the quality of the Ruby Ray magnet of the heart that is the very expression of the rose, you cannot become here below that “fire infolding itself”<sup>21</sup> which draws to you all of the components of selfhood that Divine Wholeness might appear here below, as Above.

One glimpse of the face of a saint, a Christed one, a Lightbearer by those who are open and listening and yearning and calling for their God, and they know. They know it is possible.

Some of you have had this effect on those who have watched and seen you as you walked through a crowd thinking you were unnoticed. You yourselves may remember how once or twice in this lifetime you may have seen someone whose eyes told you that God dwelt in his temple. And you have been spurred on, understanding that purity of heart has enabled that one to be a shining one in the earth. And you have said, “There by the grace of God I will go, for I see it is possible by his Spirit.”

“Holiness unto the Lord!”<sup>22</sup> is a most powerful fiat for establishing and reestablishing the fire and the magnet of the heart, for it is [your] declaring that here below all holiness is the Lord’s. And this holiness becomes the dazzling sun [within your heart] to increase and increase and increase.

I speak to you of the coming kingdom while the forces of Death and Hell would assail this Church. They shall not prevail as long as you raise up the sword of Archangel Michael and challenge them hour by hour. It is a relentless calling to be at this point between earth and heaven.

“Do not weary in well doing”<sup>23</sup> becomes a meaningful command. For that well doing over and over and over again, proving the strength of every degree of the 360, that, beloved, does count for

---

<sup>19</sup>Jesus Christ, November 23, 1989, and Kuthumi, November 25, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 765, 777-78.

<sup>20</sup>Rev. 12:17; 19:10.

<sup>21</sup>Ezek. 1:4.

<sup>22</sup>Exod. 28:36; 39:30; Jer. 2:3; Zech. 14:20.

<sup>23</sup>Gal. 6:9; II Thess. 3:13.

how you will ascend and in what glory and in what octave and with how many rings of solar light around you. And may you ascend, beloved, in the great glory of God that you are capable of earning here below, for life below has sparse proof that it is possible.

And of all gatherings to which I should go today, I tell you, this gathering has in it those who have the potential to overcome all things [in Christ]<sup>24</sup> because you have the tools in hand. Nowhere else will you find so finely attuned souls understanding the wielding of my sword.

And your fearlessness to receive that sword as a dividing of the way of the Real and the Unreal [within you] shows a courage that can be sustained only by illumination. Because you are illumined through the teachings of the Mother, you fear not to make those calls that many have feared to make prior to their departure from this octave.

Some have had to meet the challenges of these lessons after the ascension, having by devotion and service balanced 51 percent of their karma and then being required to gain the mastery on the Path that you have begun even before having balanced that much of your karma.

There are many ways to ascend to God. But if I had to do it again, I would still prefer the way of overcoming in the earth [wherein and whereby] every public statement, example and act might be recorded in akasha that others might know, "If I take the same steps [and] make the same stand, I, too, will arrive at the fount of Truth in the etheric temple of Pallas Athena. I will arrive at the point of the Logos and the Solar Logoi."

All that is accomplished here below, beloved, does increase your [self-] mastery [that enables you] to help others, and it does accelerate the entire world momentum of entering in. All things that are truly permanent happen at inner levels and you do not see the signs of them until the victory is almost complete in the physical.

Much inner preparation is going on amongst the saints in the earth who have become saints only by the crumbs from the Master's table.<sup>25</sup> But because of the fire of their hearts and their love, they have seen that one crumb is the whole loaf. And though they have been given the whole loaf by me, they could not receive it in their outer consciousness, for the whole loaf of the divine doctrine is unacceptable to their programming in this life, their belief systems.

Yet, on the inner, beloved, they know the Truth and therefore progress does continue. And finally, when it comes time to enter the temple of the Christ where I initiate my own, it does not take too much to deliver them by the magnet of my heart's Love from the mental set, the mind patterns of an outworn theology.

Remember this, beloved, how one crumb has given to so many the love to live as I would have them live. And therefore by merit, by determination and by faith they have arrived at the place where finally they could balance the threefold flame by [the fullness of Christ] illumination.

Thus, there is much wisdom teaching given in my temple. And I call you to my temple of initiation. May you ask to be taken there at night, for when you see what is the wisdom teaching and put it all together, you, too, will find the balance of the threefold flame.

Some have a karma for not entering in, for they have not seriously studied the teachings already given in the physical through this mouthpiece. Let it be understood that these teachings and dictations are preparatory to your inner temple work. To whom much is given, much is indeed expected.<sup>26</sup>

May you become world teachers, as I have said before.<sup>27</sup> But above and beyond all to which I have called you, I say, may you become all Love, all Love and all Love.

---

<sup>24</sup>Phil. 4:13.

<sup>25</sup>Matt. 15:25-28; Mark 7:27-29.

<sup>26</sup>Luke 12:42-48.

<sup>27</sup>Jesus Christ, April 19 and May 28, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 186, 272. [4]

I, Jesus, would share with you now my Body and my Blood, for by this wise I truly give you my Life and my Heart as the engrafted Word. Receive, therefore, Holy Communion, which I serve to you personally by my angels' hands.

I seal you on the path of initiation according to your will, which I trust will be God's will this day and forever.

I seal you, beloved, into that which you desire, for I can give you only that which you desire of God. I say, cast out lesser desires that all of your energies might flow into the one, great all-consuming desire for God, God, God.

This dictation by Jesus Christ was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Easter Sunday, April 15, 1990, 4:57-5:36 p.m. MDT, during the four-day Easter prayer vigil held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Jesus' direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.



# Chapter 17

## Beloved Gautama Buddha - May 6, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 17 - Beloved Gautama Buddha - May 6, 1990

The Planetary Initiation of the Ruby Ray

The Sin Against the Holy Ghost

Wesak Address 1990

A Mighty Soul Liberation:

The Perfect Desiring to Give Light unto the Lightbearers

I speak to those who know me and to those who know me not. I am in the heart of the flame of the Ruby Ray. I am in the heart of the devouring flame of the Ruby Ray. And I deliver to all of the earth this night, for microseconds on and off, the saturation of the Ruby Ray. For only thus can a planet and a people be purged of the sin against the Holy Ghost, which cannot be forgiven.<sup>1</sup>

Therefore, beloved, the Lord will have his way. And the Lord will blot out on certain frames of experience some of the markings, some of the dot patterns of the unforgivable sin, thereby leaving the vacuum that the choice, the final choice, might be made to fill the vacuum with the praise and the glory of the Holy Spirit. For the cause of this sin many have been denied the indwelling presence of the Holy Spirit and the gifts of the Holy Spirit.<sup>2</sup>

Therefore, beloved, when this initiation is given to an entire planetary body and its evolutions and to every grain of Matter, thereby lessening the akashic record of the infamies of man against God, then you must know that the hour is come and you are in the final phases of an age that must give up the ghost of the former self and of Christmas past; and [you must] truly know that one must pass through the Holy Spirit as Being, as God, ere one can find consolation and resolution and soul liberation from the ties to the fallen ones.

By the Power, Wisdom and Love of this Wesak I am liberating souls who truly desire it, who truly desire it, who truly desire it, beloved, from ties to the fallen ones. You must desire, beloved, to sever the tie. You must desire above all to cease desiring to save that which God himself may no longer save.

Where God no longer saves a soul that has gone after the Darkness, see to it that you cut the tie, beloved, in the very depth of the subconscious and the unconscious,<sup>3</sup> else you will find yourself guilty of giving the Light of the altar of God to one who has blasphemed that altar and who has determined in his heart, in her heart to move against the Lord forever and forever.

---

<sup>1</sup>Matt. 12:31, 32; Mark 3:28, 29; Luke 12:10; Gospel of Thomas, logion 44.

<sup>2</sup>I Cor. 12:8-10. Lords of the Seven Rays, Book One.

<sup>3</sup>See p. 112 n. 10.

Thus, it is time, beloved, to cut the umbilical cord whereby you have fed the other side of life even the precious milk of the Divine Mother. It is time to understand that Alpha has spoken, Omega has decreed: Withdraw the Light from the seed of the wicked.<sup>4</sup> This means going to the very depths of one's being and surrendering this desire that was once valid but is no longer valid. For there is a time for the saving of those who have fallen from grace and then comes the time of the hardening of their hearts against the Lord.<sup>5</sup>

As they did in the beginning, so they do in the ending. In the beginning that hardening of the heart is against the Mother and the Cosmic Christ, against the Woman and her Divine Manchild. But in the ending, the hardening of the heart is against the Father, and the Father contains the Holy Spirit. And the Holy Spirit contains the Son. And the Son contains the Father.

Therefore, beloved, the denial is complete. The cycle is finished. And no more may the sons and daughters of Light in the earth press the hand of the Almighty for the salvation of those who have denied the salvation of God unto themselves and unto others.

Therefore do not prevent the Lord's judgment in the hour when the judgment is due by feeding [them] Light, even unbeknownst to your outer minds but, as I have said, from subconscious and unconscious levels. Feeding them the Light, beloved, does cause their judgment to be postponed. And thus there does arise calamity and confusion and burden and woe because you give the fallen ones another day and another heyday to wreak havoc against you, against the Community, against the builders, against our designs for the victory.

Therefore let all come to that point of humility and understand that we have convoked this prayer vigil<sup>6</sup> that you might kneel before your God and, in profound prayer and groaning of soul, let go. Let go and let the Almighty One take care of the just and the unjust. You be an instrument of Light and only Light. And [know that] Light may be given only to the Lightbearer.

Thus, beloved, guard well the sanctity of the altar. For the altar must be in the earth, even as the Flame of the ark of the covenant must be in the earth, as that point [of contact] whereby the I AM THAT I AM might speak, might pronounce, might quiver the ethers.

Understand, beloved, that if you would bear more Light and greater responsibility and increase in the power of Love and the wisdom of Love and the love of Love, you must no longer give the pearls of the Cosmic Christ to the swine who have gone after other gods.

Now then, let it be very clear that one can say the decree from the level of the conscious mind to be done with all connections and ties. But there are desirings and there are desirings at many levels of being, seemingly justifiable, namely that which I have mentioned: the desire to save that which God himself cannot [or will not] save, the desire to go after and save that which is lost, for fear of one's own failure to save one's own - a loved one, a parent, a child, a relative, a friend - feeling that one is a failure before God if one cannot bring that soul into submission to the Light.

Blessed ones, it is the point of humility that will liberate one and all from this now sinful desiring, the point of humility wherein one must realize that there is but one Saviour, that Saviour who is God, who is Christ the Lord, and only that One can save. Remember that you are the instrument - "I the potter, thou the clay."<sup>7</sup> Be content, then, to be a pliable instrument, bending to the will of God, resilient, able to be the instrument but not desiring to direct even the Great One, who would use you. Humility to know that only God can save, even as only God can make a tree, a mountain, a planet, a star.

---

<sup>4</sup>See Alpha, April 17, 1981, 1981 PoW, pp. 222-23; Helios, July 4, 1984, 1984 PoW, Book II, pp. 105-11 following p. 412; "A Proclamation" by Alpha in Gautama Buddha, May 13, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 242-46; Lady Master Venus, October 9, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 759-60.

<sup>5</sup>Exod. 4:21; 7:3; 10:1, 20, 27; 11:10; 14:4, 8, 17; Deut. 2:30; Josh. 11:19, 20; Isa. 6:9, 10; Matt. 13:13-15; Mark 4:11, 12; Luke 8:10; John 12:37-40.

<sup>6</sup>from Wesak, May 9, through Mother's Day, May 13, 1990.

<sup>7</sup>Isa. 64:8.



So you see, beloved, [you must] surrender this notion and with it the attendant spiritual pride that is ever so subtle that says, "I can save this one," even though that one has sworn enmity [against Christ] here below and Above. Thus, I [must emphasize that it is important] for you to call for the binding of the sense of failure [that you have failed to "save" someone], the sense of obligation [that you are obligated to save someone], the sense that you must do something that God cannot do or that God will not do because it is not his will, simply because it is not the will of the individual lifestream. [And so, you see,] there are some whom you would try to save who do not desire to be saved, and that [non]desire coats their entire being, fills the pores, saturates the vessels.

Now understand, beloved, that God is ready to save a world of his children and of his Lightbearers through you. This cannot be done so long as you leak the Light of the altar to those who have not bent the knee before that Flame of the ark of the covenant that is truly the Flame of the Holy One of God.

This Wesak celebration, then, is a mighty soul liberation. It is a liberation for the Mother, it is a liberation for you. For it truly does liberate you to rejoice, O to rejoice in the flood tides of Light and victory and energy and consciousness and buoyant freedom whereby you can live to pour the Light of God into the vessels of the water bearers of Aquarius.

Water bearers are ye all. This water is liquid violet flame, liquid mercy and forgiveness. Each one of you now bears a pitcher large, several feet high, filled with these waters of Aquarius, that you may carry in your etheric body. See how you may pour [these waters] into the little cups of the little children who truly are destined for the Central Sun and the altar of the Most High. It is indeed a liberation that you may not well comprehend.

I may tell you this, beloved, as it has been taught, that it is desire and inordinate desiring that brings the soul back to incarnation at certain levels of earth,<sup>8</sup> some denser than others. Sometimes it is a legitimate desire to do good, and that desire propels [the soul] to return to earth to keep promises and to fulfill all things on the spiritual path and toward the victory of the ascension.

On the other hand, some of you have returned to earth for no other reason than that you bore the inordinate desire to save those whose names are not written in the Book of Life,<sup>9</sup> whom God would not save. Therefore, our Father-Mother God have sent me to speak to you in this hour, that you might know that this [desire] is a form of bondage when the rest of your being has earned greater heights of Light and paths of initiation.

Trust, then, is the word, the trust that God knows exactly what he is doing in every octave with every soul. And God will always use you [to save a soul] whenever it is possible. And when it is not [possible to save that which is lost], you must simply accept it, even if you are dealing with lifestreams very close to yourselves.

This message must stand apart and alone in your consciousness. It is a message of the Ruby Ray and of the path of initiation under the Maha Chohan.

Thus, I too come to prepare you for Pentecost.<sup>10</sup> For I must tell you that though you may deserve the infilling of your temple with the Holy Spirit, if you have not settled this very question, you will not receive even so much as a drop of that Holy Spirit on that occasion. For once this Pentecost has come, beloved, those who pass beyond that day and still insist on giving the Light to the fallen ones will know pain and travail for that karma, as they must account before God for every erg of energy that they have placed in the pitchers of the fallen ones.

---

<sup>8</sup>See 1989 PoW, pp. 447-48; 1985 PoW, Book II, pp. 326-27. In the Sutta-Nipata (a collection of Buddhist discourses) Gautama instructs, "When a person has assessed the world from top to bottom, when there is nothing in the world that raises a flicker of agitation, then he has become a person free from the smoke-fumes, the tremblings and the hunger of desire. He has become calm. He has gone beyond getting old; he has gone beyond being born" (H. Saddhatissa, trans., *The Sutta-Nipata* [London: Curzon Press, 1985], p. 120).

<sup>9</sup>Rev. 3:5; 13:8; 17:8; 20:12, 15; 21:27; 22:19; Phil. 4:3.

<sup>10</sup>June 3, 1990. See pp. 232, 234 n. 29.

Now then, beloved, this sign of the full moon, this Wesak 1990, is truly the sign of the coming apart [of the Lightbearers] and therefore of the tremendous freedom of all who hear and understand this message.

I counsel you that [the thoughts you think] in the outer mind and the words you speak do not necessarily reflect the momentums of your desires in the subconscious or the momentum of the spiritual pride or even some rebellion that does set you on a course on which God has not set you. Therefore, beloved, it is not the words you speak [that are telling], but it is the resolution to the very core of [your] being that must now take place [that is telling].

Some give the Light to the fallen ones [in order] to punish God in revenge for how they [think they] have been dealt with [by him or his laws]. You have heard of the excuses that many have for selling secrets of technology and codes of the military to the enemy, such as “sooner or later they would get them anyway” or “there is not going to be a war or a final conflagration of the superpowers, so it doesn’t really matter.” Some even say that they desire to give power to the enemy [so] that the United States should indeed be destroyed for its wickedness. Thus, you see, there are many levels of [the] reasonings of the carnal mind and the [motivations of the] dweller.

Therefore, you must pray with great fervor that what you desire to be your desire will truly be your desire. Pray for God’s desiring for you to be implanted [within you] as a bulb of a beautiful flower in springtime, that the bulb be planted at all levels of the subconscious and the unconscious that God’s desiring might occupy the totality of your being and that the flower might spring forth and show itself as an angelic flower, an amaryllis, blossoming in full glory at the conscious level.

I will tell you, beloved, that joy and perpetual joy in the Holy Spirit is the sign of the resolution of your desiring unto God’s desiring at these deeper levels of self, whereas agitation and anger and depression and despondency at conscious levels is the sign of inordinate desiring at the subconscious and unconscious levels, [which can never truly be fulfilled simply because it is inordinate].

Truly it is the joy of the spirit and of the Holy Spirit and the perpetual love of that Holy Spirit in the heart that is the sign of those who have that inner resolution. All of their being ripples with the joy of desiring to do God’s will. And that desiring multiplies itself and increases until the will of God, as a shaft of ray from the Central Sun, does entirely engulf such a one until that one is perpetually buoyant in the joy of her Lord.

See therefore, beloved, the surface markings of the mines beneath the surface. Some are dangerous mines, explosive to the point of being able to destroy the soul. Such is the compressing and the compacting of wrong desire in the unconscious. Thus, it is sealed that the soul might be sealed from harm for a season while she does sow good works, reap good fruits, affirm God’s will and learn the lessons of how that will of God is always good, always better, always the best choice, always the key unlocking doors of initiation and bringing the soul to her resolution and thus her liberation.

You who have taken the five secret rays, you who have known the Dhyani Buddhas,<sup>11</sup> know my heart. For you have begun to be sensitive to the subtleties of the splinters of Darkness sown in the garment, caught in its threads, that have kept you from the full glory of the Lord, the full joy of your service, the full ability to neutralize negativity.

O my beloved, I am your Lord, Gautama Buddha, and therefore the servant of your Inner Buddha and your Inner Christ. I come because you have so progressed as to receive these intimations of my heart and also because your Messenger has come to the altar to be initiated in these levels of God-awareness. Therefore, because we may raise up the Messenger to new levels of service to you, we may also raise you up to new levels of service with the Messenger unto all Life.

Praise God that this one is never satisfied but to open the door and the next door and the next no matter what the labor or the initiation, [is never satisfied] but to press on and press on that these

---

<sup>11</sup>See 1989 PoW, pp. 530 n. 12, 552 n. 12.

doors, now having been opened by the one, may be opened for the many that there will be a way out, a way out for all following after.

O when you are on the very verge of victory, the very brink of that joy of self-mastery, remember that unless you finish it, unless you fulfill it, the record will not be complete! And one following after will not know [in what direction] to face, will not know where to place his foot, for the footprint will be blurred, it will be indistinct. [And in that day you will see that] he can go no farther. The combination [lock] has not been opened before him. He must wait, wait again and again for the coming of the avatar or the Guru or the Mother.

See this, beloved. Understand yourself as the pathfinder and the wayshower. If there be glorying, then, glory in your God. If there be glorying, glory in your Christ. If there be love, let that love be for those who do the will of God. Was it not Christ's teaching?

Let the Light [of the Sun] flow through you upon the just and the unjust, but let the fire of the altar and the love of God be only for those whose cups are first raised unto him. Rejoice, beloved, for many require nurturing who are deserving, unto whom it is lawful to give and to give again.

[Since] it is not quite possible while you are in this particular vale and wavelength for you to be 100 percent accurate in knowing who may be a fallen one gone astray for whom no new opportunity may be forthcoming, when [you] invoke the Light on behalf of anyone or a nation or a group of people, make the fiat that "no Light be given unlawfully, unauthorized to any part of Life<sup>12</sup> where there is not the commitment unto the soul's salvation unto the worship of her God." By making that qualifying statement, you will never again stray across the line [of the Law of Light] and therefore jeopardize your own path.

Remember this, beloved, for there comes a time on the path of initiation when Maitreya would take you beyond, and you may not pass through until this matter is settled. The desire to do what God does not do or desire to do is fundamentally the desire to be God inordinately, to be a god rather than to merge with the living God.

Remember this, that the dweller desires to be a god and so does the carnal mind. Do not allow it, beloved. Be aware when that beast comes thrashing through, even in its death throes.

So you see, in addition to giving Light to lifestreams who do not warrant it, you may somehow, unknowingly, be leaking Light to your own dweller-on-the-threshold because a portion of the self sides in with that dweller and desires to keep it alive, perhaps caged but yet alive and well and able to do despite to life from behind bars.

Learn, then, the mysteries of the disassociation of self from Evil, the Evil One and the Evildoer. Walk humbly with thy God, make the qualifying call and know that in you is the perfect desiring to give Light unto the Lightbearer. Purify desire and take the remainder of this opportunity while the sun is in Taurus to fulfill all mandates of your heavenly Father and your earthly Mother.

I, Gautama Buddha, seal you. And I seal my son Sean on this his birthday that he might multiply the true desiring of the Buddha with you to be that anchor point in this Community. All require the self-purging. He is no exception. Therefore, in this octave let all be as one and chelas of the Buddha.

For the victory of many candles on your cake, I say to all, a blessed Wesak for the victory in the earth of those who are becoming the Bodhisattva one by one. I bless you all as

Bodhisattvas even though you have not fully risen and put on that garment and taken that matrix.

I, Gautama, am sealing you in the Electronic Presence of your Bodhisattvahood-to-be. That Electronic Presence is sealed in your Holy Christ Self. With my strong eye, I visualize that state of attainment dropping upon you, enfolding you, and your becoming that one.

It will take the mastery of fire, beloved, to fulfill it to the fullness. But you have Five Dhyani

---

<sup>12</sup>who, by freewill choices made, is in reality no longer a part of that Life which is God

Buddhas sponsoring you in the Ruby Ray. May you, then, receive the Holy Ghost after you shall have accepted the Refiner and his fire.<sup>13</sup>

O let the Refiner's fire saturate all desire in me!

O let the Refiner's fire saturate all desire in me!

O let the Refiner's fire saturate all desire in me!

Purify me. Make me white.

Let my soul be purified and whitened and made whole.

The definition of wholeness and Divine Wholeness is purity of desire, absolute God-purity of desire. When you achieve this, you shall know the full cup of the abundant Life in every way on every ray. God will withhold nothing from you when you shall have that pure desire for pure desire and in wisdom you achieve it. Therefore Solomon asked for wisdom and an understanding heart and received all other gifts of the abundant Life.

Congruency with the grid of the will of God - O what joy unspeakable! Therefore, I shall discontinue my speaking and exult in our God in the Great Silence unto which I draw you this night.

This dictation was delivered by the Messenger Elizabeth Clare Prophet at the conclusion of the Wednesday evening, May 9, 1990 Wesak service at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Gautama Buddha's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

<sup>13</sup>Zech. 13:8, 9; Mal. 3:1-3; Matt. 3:11, 12; Luke 3:16, 17.

# Chapter 18

## Beloved Jesus Christ - May 13, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 18 - Beloved Jesus Christ - May 13, 1990

Ascend to the Level of Your I AM Presence with Jesus

Coming into Consonance with the Living Word of Your Own Being

Ascension Day Address 1990

Lo, I AM THAT I AM. I come, therefore, in the body of the Buddha that I AM, the Dharmakaya.<sup>1</sup> I do not lower my vibration any lower than this level, for I desire to establish my Electronic Presence in the I AM THAT I AM to magnetize your souls to the level of your own I AM Presence.

Often the dictations of the Ascended Masters are given at the level of your Holy Christ Self. Thus, you have come to understand and become accustomed to the practice of heaven meeting you halfway. In this hour I, Jesus, compel you to rise to new levels of comfortability in your God Presence.

Some of you are not even comfortable in the presence of your Holy Christ Self and practice avoidance techniques to avoid coming into consonance with the living Word of your own Being. Now I say, resolve this inconsistency [in your world, which is inconsistent] with the path of Maitreya's Mystery School. Resolve it by Love - by love for your Holy Christ Self, by trust in your Holy Christ Self. And fear not to receive the communications of your Holy Christ Self and to obey the will of God.

Obedience is always a test of trust and faith. Without trust and faith the chela cannot proceed on the Path.

In this hour the challenges at hand, presented to you this evening [by the Messenger], require your comfortability in the very Presence of God, the I AM THAT I AM. Therefore make peace with your God. And recognize that as your goal is the ascension at the conclusion of this life, it is time that you establish acquaintance with thy God. Acquaint now thyself with him and be at peace.<sup>2</sup>

To be at home in the Dharmakaya within the rings of the Causal Body, you must understand that you must contain the desire to be assimilated by God - "Drink me while I am drinking thee."<sup>3</sup> Except ye eat the flesh and drink the blood of the Son of man, ye have no Life in you<sup>4</sup> that you may

---

<sup>1</sup>In Buddhism the Dharmakaya is one of three "bodies" of the Buddha. It is defined as the Body ("kaya") of Law ("Dharma"), the Body of First Cause or the Body of Essence, which is one with Absolute Reality. The Dharmakaya corresponds to the upper figure in the Chart of Your Divine Self, the Causal Body, including the I AM Presence. See notes 23 and 24 below.

<sup>2</sup>Job 22:21.

<sup>3</sup>See Sanat Kumara, November 25, 1979, 1979 PoW, pp. 323-32, 336, 343, 345, 346; decree 60.06, "Beams of Essential Light," in Prayers, Meditations and Dynamic Decrees for the Coming Revolution in Higher Consciousness, Section I.

<sup>4</sup>John 6:53.

take to the I AM Presence. Therefore make haste to merge with your Holy Christ Self in a point of unconditional Love and unconditional surrender.

Mortals speak about unconditional love among humans. They know not whereof they speak. Should the Love of God, which is the gift to your heart, continue to be given to anyone, no matter how close the tie, if that one suddenly betrays the Love of God, the worship of God, the defense of God and the Community?

However painful the process, beloved, even among families, it must be understood that I came “not to send peace but a sword”<sup>5</sup> to divide the Real from the Unreal. Therefore the loyalty must be to Love and to Divine Love and to those who embody it as an expression of their obedience to God’s will.

I have said before and I say it again, “Who are my mother and brothers and sisters? Who is my father?” Those who do the will of God.<sup>6</sup> Not human ties but the bonds of the Infinite One establish the Diamond Heart of Community. Thus, beloved, beware of idolatrous love and of human attachments that take you away from the straight and narrow path<sup>7</sup> [wherein the soul is bonded to her Lord].

The Lord giveth and the Lord taketh away<sup>8</sup> Love. You cannot create a Love flame. It is the gift of God in your heart. It is on loan. Therefore multiply it exceedingly.

Give Love and remember that all that has been taught you by Gautama Buddha concerning the giving of Light to those not of the Light<sup>9</sup> applies to every attribute of God. Give not Love unto those who do not give or receive the Love of God. Purge yourselves of mutual idolatries, human attachments, et cetera. Therefore, let all of your commitments at every level of Life be based, first and foremost, upon supreme allegiance to your Mighty I AM Presence.

There is no need to hide from this Lord, your God, lest this Lord discover and expose the secrets of your hearts. You cannot hide from your God, beloved. And therefore, pray that the Lord will not hide his face from you.<sup>10</sup>

The aspiration to walk in your God Presence is not farfetched. It is not unreal. It is not impossible. Therefore, consider the Calls that I have sent to you<sup>11</sup> and consider that whether or not you have answered the Call and integrated with dispensations offered and given, the spirals move on. They intensify. They wind round the coil of being. And [even] if you have not fulfilled the prior ones, nevertheless the initiations move on.

Thus, you see, beloved, you would consider it difficult to have to suddenly accomplish three or four grades of schooling in one year because you had slept through them. Know, then, that those who truly desire to meet their God according to the schedules of this planet must take the initiations as they come and not consider that free will is an opportunity to postpone and delay, to postpone and delay the entering in to, and the locking of one’s being into, the Godhead.

Happy are ye who have espoused this Path and understand the series of initiations that are afforded you and that are clearly anchored in the dictations from the beginning unto the ending. That is why

---

<sup>5</sup>“For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. And a man’s foes shall be they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it.” (Matt. 10:34-39.)

<sup>6</sup>Matt. 12:46-50; Mark 3:31-35; Luke 8:19-21.

<sup>7</sup>Matt. 7:13, 14; Luke 13:24.

<sup>8</sup>Job 1:21.

<sup>9</sup>See pp. 245-52.

<sup>10</sup>Deut. 31:17, 18; 32:20; Pss. 27:9; 30:7; 69:17; 102:2; Isa. 54:8; Ezek. 39:29.

<sup>11</sup>See p. 244.

the Only Mark tapes are so important.<sup>12</sup> [They are given] that you might lock into the strength of the Ascended Masters and establish the knitting together of your Presence with the Presence of your sponsor Lanello. Thus you may truly eat the flesh and drink the blood of the Son of man, the Son of manifestation being every Ascended Master who has dictated and anchored his Electronic Presence through the spoken Word.

The legions of Light of the Central Sun are encamped across this state, the valleys, the hills, the mountains, the waters. They literally cover the territory, beloved. They have gathered joyously in the defense of the Messenger, the chelas, the Woman, her seed.

All of you, beloved, are precious and loved. My words come to you that you might increase in strength and joy and therefore not experience pain and suffering by entertaining any of the levels of human creation on any of the lines of your Clock that are triggered by your own karmic/astrological patterns.

Beloved ones, the path of the conquerors is a joyous one. When joy flees from your heart and mind, it is truly time to go within, to give perpetual prayers, to [make a joyful] shout unto the Lord,<sup>13</sup> to be grateful, to use your voices upraised to reestablish the connection. Joy can come through the darkest night. It is the sign of inner resolution and balance, of four lower bodies at peace in [the] service of God.

When there is [an] absence of joy, beloved, solve the problem quickly; for the absence of joy eclipses the sun of your I AM Presence. And therefore in that moment [when you let go of joy] clouds are between you [and your God], clouds of world condemnation and clouds of your vulnerability to that condemnation. Then let there be the release of fire.

I come at the level of the I AM Presence, for this is the celebration of my ascension. Though the world has not apprehended the true date and the true hour of that ascent, yet it has been revealed to you by beloved El Morya.<sup>14</sup> And may you understand this great opportunity of walking in my footsteps, walking in the presence of my own Ascended Master Light Body, the Dharmakaya.

Those who choose to walk with God may have a closer communion with their Presence than they realize, while those who assume that communion are often those who have it least. Nevertheless, the hour of my ascension and of the release of that ascension coil from my Causal Body has come.

A week from today you will celebrate Pentecost. What you may receive from that descent of the Holy Spirit depends upon your willingness to assimilate and be part of your own I AM God Presence. To do so will require the setting aside of lesser desires, lesser goals and indulgences and byways. It is your choice, beloved, and you have free will. I simply set before you opportunity and give you to understand the requirements that must be met to benefit from the opportunity.

Thus, may this week be filled with the white Light. May it be filled with those calls of the violet flame and protection and exorcism whereby you truly surrender, and I mean truly surrender, those things that stand between you and your God.

Visualize yourself placing your feet in the footprints of Moses as he mounted Mount Sinai, as he went to that height to commune in the I AM THAT I AM to receive the Ten Commandments.<sup>15</sup> Understand, beloved, that one must rise in consciousness to the heights of the mountain of God to desire to be in the I AM Presence.

---

<sup>12</sup>The Only Mark audio-cassette series contains the dictations of the Ascended Masters delivered through the Messenger Mark L. Prophet, beginning with the final dictation given through him on February 18, 1973, and continuing back to 1958. Twenty-six albums have been published to date, each containing four 90-min. cassettes. See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, February 26, 1981, 1981 PoW, pp. 552-53; Jesus Christ, May 31, 1984, 1984 PoW, Book I, pp. 318-20; Lord Maitreya, December 31, 1985, 1986 PoW, Book I, p. 158; Omri-Tas, January 1, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book I, p. 26.

<sup>13</sup>Pss. 66:1; 81:1; 95:1, 2; 98:4, 6; 100:1.

<sup>14</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, 1984 PoW, Book I, Introduction I, p. 11.

<sup>15</sup>Exod. 24:12-18; 31:18; 34:1-4, 28-35.

Hiking into the mountains of the Inner Retreat is in order as a ritual demonstrating the soul's step-by-step ascent into the rarefied heights of the dazzling white Light of God. You may pray to meet your God on the mountain, beloved. You may expect such a happening. But do not engage in the folly of psychic nonsense and self-rewarding, and personality-cult attitudes toward our Brotherhood.

There is truly no favoritism on the Path. That which you seek you find. The door on which you knock with purity of heart and love is opened unto you.<sup>16</sup> If you have not conquered hardness of heart, then my Sacred Heart does not have room to be superimposed over your heart.

This is a geometry of life. The equations are simple. They may be more complex in advancing spirals, but [they are] always definable, always attainable if you are willing to meet the requirements and not consider that somehow you are special and [you] do not need to pass your tests and to pass them again and again.

The Law is never satisfied to test you only once. This is not because our God does not trust you. It is because the fallen ones come to tempt again and again, and they do not accept the victories of the Lightbearers. Therefore our God does prove to them and to all the world the faithfulness of his sons and daughters by showing all those who have gone astray and betrayed the Word that no matter how many times you are tested, you again meet that test with joy and you pass it with victory.<sup>17</sup>

There are no final tests, beloved, until the moment you are ascended in the Light and free. You may think you have put things behind you, but God will indeed allow the fallen ones to tempt you again and again, so sure, so trusting [is he] in the love and the love bond that you have with him, knowing that those who love him do not fear to demonstrate again and again that they will live for Christ and for the I AM THAT I AM, come what may, as long as [they have the] calling [from God], day by day, embodiment by embodiment if necessary, never waning, never wearying for their well doing,<sup>18</sup> never becoming impatient with God that they are not soon delivered and taken down from the cross.

O beloved, this perpetual love of your heart for your Mighty I AM Presence endures all things!<sup>19</sup> For, you see, some can last for moments or hours or days or weeks, but they will not last for centuries - not because they are not able but because they refuse, because now they wish to turn the tables and dictate unto God just how long they shall endure and no longer, before they become angry at the length of the testing.

Blessed hearts, you can see how in the very process of the testing the fire increases in the heart. And if you do not use that fire to slay the dweller, one day the dweller will erupt as Vesuvius in a giant anger to overturn all of the Path that you have won, because the soul has not taken seriously the necessity of conquering that [dweller] even while enduring unto the end to receive the crown of Life.<sup>20</sup>

Into Christian theology there has entered the doctrine of Satan, which decrees (and teaches) that the individual shall have but one life and if he will follow the will of God, he will go to heaven.<sup>21</sup> This is dictating terms to our Father. Likewise, it is the satanic doctrine that if you fail, you will lose your soul in hell. This is not the doctrine of Almighty God but it is the demand for terms and the desire to impose upon the children of the Light the fear of failure and the fear of the consequences thereof.

Those who have the fear of failure are the fallen ones and never the Lightbearers. Therefore do not accept any such fear, but do your best and be strong and balanced and make up your mind that

---

<sup>16</sup>Matt. 7:7-11; Luke 11:9-13.

<sup>17</sup>For the story of a chela who was tested again and again by God and Satan, read the Book of Job.

<sup>18</sup>Gal. 6:9; II Thess. 3:13.

<sup>19</sup>I Cor. 13:7.

<sup>20</sup>James 1:12; Rev. 2:10.

<sup>21</sup>See Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Lost Teachings of Jesus I*, pp. 36-41; *The Lost Teachings of Jesus II*, pp. 112-21, 267-74, 373-74, 542 n. 55.



in your Mighty I AM Presence you will not fail, and [then] you shall not. But if you make a mistake, if you err in judgment, God will not let his sledgehammer descend upon you. God is a God of infinite mercy to those who have as their foundation the surrender to the will of God and to his Love.

Be comforted, then, beloved, that you are not beyond being tested or receiving the fiery trial<sup>22</sup> or being proven and reprov'd again and again. It is not well only to be happy when things go your way and the Ascended Masters are patting you on the head or on the back. It is well to have joy and strength and determination midst adversity, midst the test that comes again and again just after you have said to yourself, "I cannot possibly go through this another time." [For in so saying,] you see, you are setting terms and conditions as to whether or not you will respond to God's salvation.

I come to offer you, then, the sphere of the ascension flame of my Causal Body. I come that you might touch the hem of the garment of the Dharmakaya. And I come that you might, by a process of transferal, release considerable quantities of pent-up energies, of schism in the unconscious and the subconscious realms. It is a moment when the fire of my ascension can consume much for you.

May the prayer on your lips when you retire this night be a prayer of release and surrender that you might not struggle so much as you enjoy the bliss of God while you are here in the earth. Do not separate yourself from bliss by postponing to the future this consummate love of your soul in the arms of your Mighty I AM Presence.

I AM Jesus, your brother, and I counsel you to let go now of the lesser self, the lesser momentums and the shortsighted goals that are indeed long, long detours. One never knows what might have been on the road of life not taken, nor does one ever understand what the detours can be when alternate routes are tried.

My Dharmakaya, [my] Causal Body, [including my Ascended Master Light Body,] and [my] momentum of ascension's flame seals now this Community and all negative portents of karma and the challengers of Maitreya who come with their false initiations [delivered] through the fallen ones in and out of embodiment. Thus, beloved, know that out of every false initiation and false initiator among the fallen ones, Maitreya will give you the true initiation of that situation whereby you may vanquish the substance untransmuted in the lesser self and in the process [you may] also vanquish the false initiator.

Beloved ones, these individuals who have determined to do what they would and [what they] will with this property and Community and organization, [who] represent many varied interests and groups, I tell you, every one of them is a false-hierarchy impostor of Maitreya and of the path of initiation. They come to preempt the true initiations of Maitreya, even as Satan and Mara tempted Jesus and Gautama just before the true initiations would come to them [with] the [opportunity for] absolute victory.<sup>23</sup>

Thus I speak of myself in the third person, for the Jesus that I was in the hour of initiation is not the Jesus that I am today. You must understand that you are not the person you were yesterday or twenty months ago or twenty embodiments ago, and therefore you cannot take upon yourself the burden of guilt or limitation that caused past inconsistencies or failures. You are not that person today. I was not the person when I ascended that I was when I was thirty-three.

Every day you are becoming your Sambhogakaya,<sup>24</sup> your Dharmakaya. And you are filling in the mighty strength of the Nirmanakaya<sup>25</sup> as a servant of the Lord.

---

<sup>22</sup>I Cor. 3:13-15; I Pet. 1:6, 7; 4:12, 13.

<sup>23</sup>The temptations of Jesus, Gautama and the chela. Matt. 4:1-11; Mark 1:12, 13; Luke 4:1-13; Elizabeth Clare Prophet, 1989 PoW, pp. 431-45.

<sup>24</sup>Sambhogakaya is the Buddhist term for the Body of Bliss, Body of Inspiration or Spiritual Enjoyment, or Glorious Body. It is the form that a Buddha characteristically uses to reveal himself in his glory to bodhisattvas, enlightening and inspiring them. The Sambhogakaya corresponds to the middle figure in the Chart of Your Divine Self, the Holy Christ Self.

<sup>25</sup>Nirmanakaya is the Buddhist term for the Body of Transformation or Created Body, i.e., the embodiment or

Therefore, you see that the false initiators came in the garden to tempt, to tempt again and again [the twin flames who were initiates in Maitreya's original Mystery School] ere the true initiations of Maitreya would be given. You must see, then, this situation for what it is. [It is the opportunity] to defeat the false initiators, that you might stand face to face with Maitreya when they are no more.

To understand that there is a map and a design, a plan and a means to an end in these types of attacks upon the Great White Brotherhood is to have the key to victory. To fear that God is not with you or that something has gone awry, something is not right, will put you off the course of meeting the challenges and having that victory.

Now I say, drink in the cup of the ascension elixir of my Causal Body. This is the new wine of the Spirit that you may drink with me this night in our Father's kingdom<sup>26</sup> if you have the vigor, the joy, the love, the deep desire and determination to be at that level of your God-free being and to be happy in the process. The doors of the Dharmakaya are opened to you this night through my Causal Body.

Now receive Communion. And as you pass through the ritual of Communion, sense the release as you give to me and place in my heart the cup of sorrows, the records, the memories, the attachments. And truly know that your divine individuality in God is sealed as you drink the blood and eat the flesh of the Son of manifestation that I AM THAT I AM.

May you absorb elements of my Electronic Presence as you sing hymns to me and partake of this substance, which I now bless.

[Holy Communion is served.]

This dictation by Jesus Christ was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet at the conclusion of the May 27, 1990 Sunday evening service held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana, in celebration of Jesus' Ascension Day (May 24). [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Jesus' direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

crystallization of the Dharmakaya into human form for the purpose of expounding the Teaching and saving other beings. The Nirmanakaya, corresponding to the lower figure in the Chart of Your Divine Self, is employed at the plane of the soul incarnating the I AM.

<sup>26</sup>Matt. 26:29; Mark 14:25.

# Chapter 19

## The Beloved Maha Chohan - May 20, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 19 - The Beloved Maha Chohan - May 20, 1990  
The Desiring of the Soul That Must Exceed All Other Desiring  
Getting the Holy Spirit and the Gifts Thereof  
Pentecost Address 1990

O sweet intimations of the flame of the Holy Spirit, I bow before thy Light even as I AM thy Light. I bow before thy Master even as I AM thy Master.

I AM the Maha Chohan, so named the Great Lord,<sup>1</sup> and I do preside over the Seven Chohans of the Rays. Each of these rays comes forth from the heart of the dove of the Holy Spirit. And that ray in manifestation to the planet is first and foremost the individualization of the God Flame by each of the Seven Lords.<sup>2</sup>

Thus, when you desire to receive the Holy Spirit of the First Ray, you apply to El Morya. And when you desire to receive the Holy Spirit and the gifts thereof of the Second Ray, you apply to Lord Lanto. And when you desire to receive the gifts of the Holy Spirit on the Third Ray and the flame thereof, you apply to the Lord Paul the Venetian. When you desire to receive the Holy Spirit of the Fourth Ray, you go to the heart of Serapis Bey for those fiery gifts.

When you desire to receive the Holy Spirit of the Fifth Ray, you make application to Lord Hilarion that you might also qualify to receive the gifts thereof. When you desire the Holy Spirit of the Sixth Ray, you appeal to the heart of Nada to receive the gifts thereof. When you desire the Holy Spirit of the Seventh Ray, you go to Lord Saint Germain and to his heart.

Thus, it is well to desire the Holy Spirit in each of the seven rays and to chart the Chohans and their rays on your Cosmic Clock, beginning at [the] twelve [o'clock line] and ending at [the] six.

Thus, in increments of sacred fire you do receive this Light. That which you receive you must keep and guard as treasure. If you lay up treasure in the earth, thieves will come and steal, moth and rust will corrupt.<sup>3</sup> But, beloved, while you are in the earth, you are expected to guard the things

---

<sup>1</sup>Maha Chohan means "Great Lord." Maha [Sanskrit]: great, mighty, strong, abundant. Chohan: a Lord or Master, high adept; a Rajput term denoting high spiritual rank. For a review of possible roots of the word chohan, see 1988 PoW, Book I, p. 229 n. 1.

<sup>2</sup>For study materials on the gifts of the Holy Spirit, see Acts 2; I Cor. 12-14; Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, Lords of the Seven Rays: Mirror of Consciousness, Book One; Book Two, pp. 277-97; The Lost Teachings of Jesus II, pp. 151-226.

<sup>3</sup>Matt. 6:19, 20; Luke 12:33.

of the earth and to be a just and wise steward<sup>4</sup> of all energy forms. So it is true of that which you may receive of the Holy Spirit. For the Holy Spirit, even in one-seventh of its measure, may not be misqualified, may not be violated.

Therefore, it is well to establish the discipline of calling forth that which one can keep and of keeping that which one calls forth. To keep the sacred gems, beloved, this is the mark of balance, of self-mastery, of objectivity. For when one becomes too subjective, one's views of life become warped and then one may lose the treasured gift while defending the trinkets of life.

When you desire to receive the power of the Three-Times-Three and the all-power in heaven and earth that was given unto Jesus Christ at the conclusion of his Galilean mission,<sup>5</sup> you appeal to my heart, beloved. In my heart is the synthesis of the seven rays and the nine that precipitate these gifts.

I would come to you, then, with a path of initiation that you might see as real, as doable, and that you might see your heart and your soul and your mind focused at the point of Light where the [three flames of the] threefold flame are one. I step forth from your threefold flame embodying all of Love. And all of Love is the recitation of the gifts and of the callings of the members of the Body, the Mystical Body of God.

Be content to master one of the offices, one of the levels of service - even one of the rays. For when you do, beloved, the rest will come. Be at a state of discontent when you have the self-knowledge that you have not the mastery of one of these. For it is then that you are vulnerable and it is then that I may not enter [and approach] as close as you would have me.

Yes, I may teach you, beloved. Yes, I may comfort you. Yes, I may hear your prayers and be with you. But the giving of fire, beloved, is always and only [according to] the deepest desiring of the soul, which exceeds and must exceed all other desiring. For you see, beloved, if your cup of desiring for the flame that I bear - O look at it now! - be not the cup that is fullest, then you may take this cup when there is not another to be taken. But as soon as the cup of your greatest desire is offered, you will let go the one that I bear and take the one that you desire most.

Thus, the beginning of the path of the Christ and the Buddha must be the soul's inner co-measurement [based on self-examination]: "What do I desire most?" And if [the answer] be the Holy Spirit and the nine gifts, then understand, beloved, that you will hold that desire against all other offerings of all other worlds and all other levels, even in the face of the karmas that come due. When all of thy desiring [and all of thy getting is to get the Holy Spirit], beloved, then I assure you, you will attain this goal.

Such was the desire in the heart of the child Mark Prophet. Having lost his earthly father,<sup>6</sup> he sought with all his heart his heavenly Father and his Lord and Saviour and, unbeknownst to him, myself. This little boy, beloved, knelt by the hour on the hard floor at his attic altar in the heat of summer and the cold of winter imploring God to come unto him, to give him those gifts of the Holy Spirit. This was his great and only desire. Surrounded by poverty and left [fatherless], he and his mother made their way [during the depression], and there was nothing to intrude itself between him and his greatest desire.

These gifts I gave to him, anointing him as a young man. These gifts he kept unto the hour of his ascension. They were essential to his mission as a Messenger and even more essential, if it could be said, to the conditions of karma that he would have to face in order to graduate from earth's schoolroom. Thus, that which he sought only to the purpose of glorifying God became to him a mighty support through trial and travail, even [the struggle] with the flesh, even with the body burdened and even with bearing the weight of world karma.

---

<sup>4</sup>Luke 12:42-48; 16:1-13; I Cor. 4:1, 2; I Pet. 4:10.

<sup>5</sup>Matt. 28:18; Elizabeth Clare Prophet, 1984 PoW, Book I, Introduction I, pp. 7-10.

<sup>6</sup>at the age of nine upon the death of his father

Thus, pure desire for pure desiring is the place to begin, as you have been told.<sup>7</sup> When the allness of God means more to you than anything and when you fully understand that all things of this world are thine when you desire the allness of God, all and only, you will realize that you give up nothing in the desiring of God but, on the contrary, you give up everything for that nondesiring.

I would ask you to understand that a pure heart<sup>8</sup> is indeed the foundation of this walk with me. But, beloved, the gifts of the Holy Spirit come not without work. It is a marvelous work! It is the sweat of the brow. It is the shedding of the blood. You may not see it, but sometimes the garment that is worn by the Messenger is fully stained in blood shed for the remission of sins of many. This is easily seen at inner levels and noted by the Messenger. Glory in the Lord, beloved. For without the shedding of blood, there is no remission of sin, even the sin against the Holy Ghost.<sup>9</sup>

This shedding of Light unto the emptying of the cup, unto the filling of the cup, is the Way. Walk ye in it. When you sacrifice the Body and the Blood, you are imparting Communion to a planet through your Holy Christ Self through your soul in your etheric envelope, thereby fulfilling even the requirements of the path of initiation of the Holy Spirit. When you give, [your portion] is multiplied unto you again tenfold and one-hundredfold.

But you must remember that here in this octave it is up to you to make the call to retain the contact with your I AM Presence, to keep the chakras filled and the lamps trimmed.<sup>10</sup> Thus, do not allow the energy from your God Presence to run out [by failing to maintain the contact], lest the candle extinguish itself and you are not of yourself able to reignite it.

Know, then, beloved, that as you self-empty each day, pouring out the oil of the Holy Spirit that you have thus gained in your tutelage under the Seven Chohans, so it is meted unto you again and again, as long as you remember that you are the instrument and through you flows a mighty river of Life, a limitless Light, Life and Consciousness that shall be limitless and powerful and fruitful all the days of thy life if you weary not and continue and continue and continue.

Thus, the giving of Light bears its own momentum and that momentum may become as a generator within your being, intensifying and intensifying and intensifying the flow until the momentum increases and this flow of the water of the river of Life is able, then, to cause the igniting and the infilling of all of thy house with the flame of the Holy Spirit.

This Holy Spirit, beloved, is the great Lawgiver of Light. Only by fulfilling the Law of this path will the true Holy Spirit be upon you. And let it be known again that there are lesser spirits and lesser manifestations<sup>11</sup> that may produce phenomena like unto that which I have described. Beware! They are not authentic. They are not of the true Trinity of Father, Son and Holy Spirit.

For the Holy Spirit, as the Person thereof, to come into your temple, [this initiation] must be preceded by the entering in to your temple of the Father and the Son, which the Father and the Son have promised [to do] when you keep their commandments of Love. Thus, pray that the Father and the Son will take up their abode in you.<sup>12</sup> Pray that you are able to walk with Father and Son. Pray for the evenness of temperament and the peacefulness at the eye of the storm. Pray for that quality of inner Light, Light, Light radiating in all dimensions, [fulfilling] every need of the hour for each and every one.

I AM the Maha Chohan. I place my Electronic Presence above each one of you and I begin to press in upon you the feeling of the flame of the Holy Spirit. Angels of the Maha Chohan attend you. They attend you personally each one. The pressure is increasing now so that you may have

---

<sup>7</sup>See pp. 248-50.

<sup>8</sup>Matt. 5:8.

<sup>9</sup>Matt. 26:28; Heb. 9:22; Matt. 12:31, 32; Mark 3:28, 29; Luke 12:10; Gospel of Thomas, logion 44. See p. 245.

<sup>10</sup>Matt. 25:1-13.

<sup>11</sup>I John 4:1.

<sup>12</sup>John 14:23.

some sense of both the comfortability of that for which you have asked and the uncomfotability.

That which you ask for [from the Holy Spirit] cannot be received for a moment and then withdrawn when you go into mundane activity. That which you call for and receive of the Holy Spirit will be a sacred trust. Thenceforth you must carry that flame, whether you descend into the depths of hell<sup>13</sup> or the astral plane in your service to Life or ascend to the heights of etheric octaves or maintain your existence at a median level.

You must ask yourself the question and ponder it, "If I become a bearer of a portion of this flame, am I willing to conform to this flame by the renewing of my mind and heart and soul? Am I willing not to conform to the things of this world that will call and pull, for they desire to devour that flame [that is] sealed in my heart, which is able to mightily multiply the power of the threefold flame?"

Blessed ones, I come with a portion of this flame on this day of Pentecost. My gift to you in this hour will be measured by the drop or by the percentage of a drop, that you may gently yet powerfully, consciously and in full awareness, have a sense on a lesser scale of what it should mean to receive fully the Holy Ghost.

The responsibility to bear this fire is great. Therefore I would not come to burden you, nor would I come to burden the Great Law or the Lawgiver, whose servant I AM. The Messenger has rightly told you that I may not incur karma on behalf of embodied chelas. For this reason the Chohans deal with you and may elect to enter in to a Guru-chela relationship with you, thereby being responsible in some measure, but not all, for your actions and your karma. Thus they stand between me and you, beloved. And you can understand this.

I am answerable to the Godhead. I AM that Godhead incarnate as the third plume of the threefold flame. I may come and go at will through the pink flame of the heart. If there be no pink flame or if it fall short of a certain measure required, I may not enter such a heart at all, and the Holy Spirit will therefore not appear, ever, through such a one.

Such individuals often compensate therefor by garrulousness, by developing their outer personalities, by entertaining others and joking and talking [excessively]. This becomes a substitute for the hollowness [they feel] in the absence of some portion of the Holy Spirit. Thus, you have understood the purpose of resting the voice now and then that you might be [outwardly] silent to [better] hear the inner voice, to incline the ear [unto the Lord in order] to know the difference, beloved, between the voice of the Father, the voice of the Son, the voice of the Holy Spirit - these Three, beloved.

When you have portion for portion a measure, even one-hundredth of a drop of each one, you have a divine spark that has the three plumes. You have contact with the Great Central Sun and every other threefold flame in Cosmos. Truly understand the Power, the Wisdom, the Love of God even in microscopic portion within you. Think, then, how great is the Lord God, how great is the fire breath to magnify and to magnify and to magnify God until you are utterly consumed in the ecstasy of this Light!

[There is] only one price to be paid, beloved: a thousand percent allegiance to the Trinity. Come what may across your path, this God must be first. It is the first commandment. Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, thy mind and thy spirit, and thy neighbor as thyself.<sup>14</sup> This great commandment of the Lord Christ embodies all of the ten. But ten were needed and many more laws by those who were in an age when they had to deal with the Taurus line of the Law and the Lawgiver.

Thus, "Thou shalt," was the fiat, "have no other gods before me. For I, the Lord thy God, am a jealous God."<sup>15</sup> God demands and desires all of your allegiance, all of your love, all of your worship,

---

<sup>13</sup>Ps. 139:7, 8.

<sup>14</sup>Deut. 6:5; Matt. 22:37-39; Mark 12:30, 31; Luke 10:27; Elizabeth Clare Prophet, April 15, 1984, 1984 PoW, Book I, pp. 167-81.

<sup>15</sup>Exod. 20:3, 5; Deut. 5:7, 9.

all of your attachment. And [when you give all of yourself freely to him,] you will look and see that thy God, who is one, the Mighty I AM Presence, dwells in all. And when you maintain the fine line of this allegiance, you can love God in all people [and] yet retain the witness of his absolute oneness.

There is only one Person in this room. It is God. And I will say, God, God, God! And in that moment I have said it a billion times. There is only one Person in this room. Your love is for this one Person. This one Person is the same in ye all - in the Dharmakaya,<sup>16</sup> in the Threefold Flame and in the Christ.

Therefore, love one another as I, the Maha Chohan, love you,<sup>17</sup> with such an outpouring of Love that I know not how you can receive it in your present state. Love one another because you see and know and perceive this God. Serve one another as you serve the God within one another. Be willing to wrestle, by the fire of the heart, with the not-self of anyone. For the not-self is the idolater that does break the first commandment and claim an independent identity apart from this one Person.

Think of it, beloved. This is why the apostle Paul said, Let God be true, and every other manifestation a liar!<sup>18</sup> Yes, the not-self and the carnal mind is a liar and a thief and a murderer,<sup>19</sup> constantly on the prey to take the soul from this ever-present realization - my God, thy God, one God. [There is] only One - one God in the entire Spirit of the Great White Brotherhood.

We worship one God. We do not worship the many gods of the many personalities of the human ego strutting about. We will not bow down to them. We will not serve them.<sup>20</sup> We will not serve their requirements for [determining] our acceptability by them. Nay. We will seek forever and forever acceptability by the one true God, and him only shall we serve.

Now understand the true walk on the path of the Great White Brotherhood. It is to affix this mighty truth in your being. It is to know when you have lost the thread of it [because you have] become disturbed by interpersonal relations, when you must retreat for thirty seconds into the secret chamber of the heart and renew your tryst with the Father, the Son, the Holy Spirit, these three One. These three manifest [individually] for the dimensions of being, yet [they are] always one. And the Mother is always one in these three.

Have no other, beloved. Then be a fount of these four points that establish the cosmos of Spirit and the cosmos of Matter. And see how this present awareness will electrify the soul and “electrocute” the not-self. Let the not-self, who is the idolater, be consumed in your presence. Thus liberate the soul from her prison house and bondage to be who she really is.

Now, then, beloved, the pressure increases that you might feel and sense what it is to walk about being God[- God in you and you in God]. This presence has become as a physical weight upon the Messenger, as tangible as though one could feel the air. Now know what the prophets spoke of when they cried, “O the burden of the Lord! the burden of the Lord! the burden of the Lord!”<sup>21</sup> They walked about as though they wore a coat of lead and they cried out, “The burden of the Lord!” The burden was his message. The burden was his rebuke! But the burden was first his Presence.

This burden cannot be borne by the human. Therefore none who live in the human may be given it. To those of the human consciousness it would become a weight so great that they would not survive in the body in its presence. One who lives in the Christ consciousness, in the consciousness of the I AM THAT I AM and does freely ascend [into and descend from] these bodies can wear this mantle. It is worn. It shall be worn!

---

<sup>16</sup>See p. 260 n. 1.

<sup>17</sup>John 13:34; 15:12.

<sup>18</sup>Rom. 3:4.

<sup>19</sup>John 8:44; I John 2:4, 22; 4:20; Rev. 21:8; 22:14, 15.

<sup>20</sup>“Him only shalt thou serve.” Exod. 20:3-5; 23:24, 25; 34:12-17; Deut. 5:7-9; 6:13-15; 13:1-10; Josh. 24:14-24; I Sam. 7:3, 4; Dan. 3:10-30; Matt. 4:8-10; Luke 4:6-8.

<sup>21</sup>The burden of the Lord is his Light, his power, his message, and his Causal Body. See Hab. 1:1; Zech. 9:1; 12:1; Mal. 1:1. False burdens of the false prophets: Jer. 23:32-40; Lam. 2:14.

And when there come out from among you Christs worthy of that calling who say, "This is my All, I submit to the rest [of 'my allness'] being taken from me," then we may approach, and the word is approach, the possibility of a golden-age civilization once again, such as the one in which the Lord Jesus Christ reigned a long time ago on Atlantis. Then vast numbers walked the physical earth as Christs. And they had their measure of the Holy Spirit.

Based on these akashic records and the possibility, the present possibility of the Lightbearers to achieve this, Saint Germain went before the Cosmic Council, the Lords of Karma, to appeal for all the dispensations that have whirled through in this century by the whirlwind of the Holy Ghost to accelerate technology to the glory of God. Had the Lightbearers been God-taught, had they taken the true inner teaching of the Christ and not been enamored [of money and power and ego-aggrandizement] and had they not thus fallen to worship the golden calf of the outer manifestation, this could have taken place on time.

I tell you, when this century began and to the present hour, there have been enough Christed ones [assigned to planet earth] to fulfill the possibility of a golden age. Their numbers [in embodiment] have been compromised, however, by the frightful laws concerning abortion. Thus, I cannot [actually] say that since 1973<sup>22</sup> there has been a sufficient number of Lightbearers in embodiment to accomplish this. Yet for the acceleration of those on the Path in the Ascended Master activities, there has indeed been a great Light that has held back the descent of a great Darkness.

Now we come to speak to you who through many rounds of service have experienced pain in the heart and sorrow and travail. Therefore we see the maturing of souls and the ability of some to detach themselves, from both the cares and the desires of the world. Pain is an ingredient [and a necessary ingredient on the path of the soul's reunion with God]. It provides the individual with a deep understanding of the Spirit as to the necessity of withdrawing the desire to be fulfilled through the things or the persons of this life.

Pain, not necessarily physical but many times so, has been an adjunct to the path of all saints. It is the pain of the heart of which I speak, the pain of the soul. Thus, by this pain is the shedding of Blood [i.e., the Light essence of the heart]. And by this sorrow does that Blood go forth for the remission of karma. Until karma be remitted and be transmuted, these things, beloved, of which I speak [remain] the deeper mysteries of God [that the soul will one day comprehend].

For many in this day teach that God would not allow his own to suffer or to suffer loss. But I tell you, that suffering is the purging process.<sup>23</sup> When you allow yourself to experience the suffering, the grief, the loss, the travail, then know that the hour of the coming of the Lord Maha Chohan is nigh. Therefore, the persecutors and persecution have paved the way for your direct initiations under the Chohans and the Holy Spirit.

Forget not, therefore, Gautama Buddha and the line of Taurus. It is the pivotal line for your entering in to the Love of the Holy Spirit. Let Father and Son take up their abode in your temple because you are obedient in Love. No other obedience fulfills the whole law. Yet even obedience in anger is better than disobedience in anger, for at least one has shown one can take that little whip and whip those four lower bodies into submission while the soul herself does travail again and again to reach that same point of submission by Love. This is why you do not spare the rod<sup>24</sup> on the child of yourself or your offspring.

---

<sup>22</sup>Since the 1973 Roe v. Wade U.S. Supreme Court decision legalizing abortion, at least 22 million abortions have been performed in the U.S., which is about 8.9 percent of the current U.S. population. An estimated 40 million to 60 million abortions each year have been performed worldwide since 1973, making a total of between 640 million and 960 million.

<sup>23</sup>For a greater understanding of how one may grow through the losses that are an inevitable and necessary part of life, see *Necessary Losses: The Loves, Illusions, Dependencies and Impossible Expectations That All of Us Have to Give Up in Order to Grow* by Judith Viorst. Available through Summit University Press, \$5.95 (add \$1.00 for postage).

<sup>24</sup>Prov. 13:24; 22:15; 23:13, 14; 29:15.



For entering in to the First Ray is a necessity that the soul might be perfected in faith [through her loving obedience to her God]. Entering in to the Second Ray is a necessity that the soul might be perfected in learning the truths of God. Thus, faith and the mighty hope of wisdom itself beget the heart's opening unto charity. Therefore, it is to charity that faith and hope will lead you. Arriving at charity, beloved, and entering that flame, you are ripening under the tutelage of [the Archangels] Chamuel and Charity for the receiving of the gift of Love. [And Love] is the cup that holds all nine gifts.

Indeed violet flame transmutation delivers you swiftly of much debris. It is always true but ever more so when you can identify the [cause of the] debris and not cause it to be created again and again. Violet flame transmutation is the Holy Spirit's antidote to all opposites of the nine gifts.

May you seek the gift of the discernment of spirits, spirits that enter the mind, the body, the flesh, the organs. May you seek the gift of faith, for by faith all things are wrought. Doubt and fear do not exist where one has the gift of faith. It is indeed a gift. Some of you who have it not envy those who have it. You can get it, beloved. Your faith can wax strong as you trust El Morya or the Immaculate Heart of Mary.

When I say "seek," I say seek and find. Be willing to put yourself through fiery coals and every sort of obstacle path that there might be removed from you even the opposition to the gift of speaking in tongues - having the ability to deliver the Teaching to any type of mind or heart [in order] to meet the need of the hour. And then [seek and find] the [gift of the] interpretation of the tongues in which you have spoken, that all might receive the breaking of the bread of Life through your heart and your words.

Ever seek gifts of healing. Desire that those who come into your aura might touch the hem even of my garment of Love and receive solace and surcease from suffering.

I, the Lord, the Maha Chohan, one in the one true God, urge you to seek, to find these gifts. May you find gifts of miracles through the violet flame, gifts of prophecy, gifts of wisdom, gifts of knowledge. May you find all these, beloved. But remember, one basket containeth them all - the basket of Divine Love. Let it be a large basket that you might be infilled with so great a Love as to be the instrument of the [gift of] healing to a world and its miraculous transformation by Light.

This Love, O God, this Love, O God, this Love, O God, I pray be instilled and infilled in these who do keep the flame of Life, which itself is the Holy Spirit! I pray, O God, that it infill them as never before! For in this Love, they shall truly find the pure desiring that is greater than all other desires - and indeed swallows them up, pales them into insignificance - the desiring of the Holy Spirit for the pure desire not to be empowered, [though empowered they may be,] but to give and to give and to give to others whose so many desirings are so complex in all of the many levels and strata of their being that they cannot even hope to attain to this one unique desiring without the rushing of the wind, without the descent of that Love [unto the keeper of the flame of Love] that dissolves all lesser desires and frees [even the bystander] from the [self-]idolatry of these desires.

One must love one's not-self a great deal to desire so many things for that self. What an impostor is the carnal mind! What an impostor is the not-self, taking all of the energy of thy chakras in seeking and satisfying a million desires! - [so much so that] there is no magnet [of sacred fire] left for [thy true self] to receive the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is [therefore] enmity with the idolater [and the idolatrous self].

Now understand why so many have not received it. Is it that they are all conscious idolaters? Not so very much. But who has stood in their midst and taught them that their desires are their idolatries and their self-loves? Who will be stoned? Who will be cast out? Who will become the scapegoat into which all the people of the world invest their hatreds?

That one, they say, must be stoned as a propitiation for the people. Thus, ancient societies would do this; and often it was the one of greatest Light who would be stoned and put to death for the

expiation, so-called, of the sins of the people or to provide [the people with] one who could be blamed for all the world's ills.

In this vein, beloved, some have said, "Why doesn't she move to another planet?" They said this not of the [person of the] Messenger, beloved, but of the mantle, truly of the mantle. The world does not desire God in the world. When you desire God more than this world, this world will do the same to you. As long as you are burdened by the process [of separating out from the desires of this world], you will remain in the twilight zone between Life and Death and heaven and hell.

Acquaint now thyself with the Holy Spirit. Find peace in the Father and the Son. Walk in the ways of righteousness. Thy God who seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.<sup>25</sup>

Now, beloved, as the pressure [of the presence of the Holy Spirit] has been upon you, in this moment the angels withdraw it. And there is placed in the secret pocket of the secret chamber of the heart some fraction of the drop of the Holy Spirit or perhaps a drop or more or, alas, perhaps nothing. Each one shall receive according to the quality of the heart.

Therefore, if you would decree, if you would pray, if you would give mantras unto the Lord, with all of thy giving let thy heart be pure and purified that these expressions might be truly channels deep of devotion and profound Love. When you enter this court, enter it with thanksgiving and praise unto the Lord, the YOD HE VAU HE. Yes, enter with Love, give in Love, and your decrees shall have a power a thousandfold of that which they have when you have not taken the moment to connect your love, your appreciation, your gratitude to God and to connect this momentum here below with the great momentum of your Causal Body. Then you will see how your own world and life will be transformed, and this Community and the planet as a whole.

As Love begets Love, so I tell you, that which you are able to multiply of the gift given or that which you desire now to seek as never before, which can produce that gift at the moment when you are ready, so that, beloved, will become even the seed as well as the fulcrum for your victory.

I breathe upon you the breath, which is the sacred fire breath. Breathe deeply now and receive it and retain it. It is a cleansing fire, beloved.

Descend, O Holy Spirit, upon this planet earth! Let this Holy Spirit go before the Mighty One as the fire of judgment that may make this earth a receptacle of a portion of that Spirit.

Angels of the Maha Chohan, continue the judgment begun in Beverly Hills.<sup>26</sup> I command you. Let it go forth now. For only thus shall the Lightbearers be delivered and come into the New Day of their First Love.

Seek and find your First Love, beloved. This is my counsel to you on Pentecost. Do not shun it. Do not fear it. Do not hide from it because you think to approach it will require that you pass through the pain of records. Blessed hearts, it will require pain. But he who knows the mystery of Love understands that there is a path of pain before the bliss fills all of his being. Thy First Love is worth the pain, beloved, and will bring divine bliss.

Come out from your cocoon, beloved. Come out, I say! Come out! Know the pain and know its vibration as the sign of deep transmutation. If you bar and seal yourself from the pain of the spiritual path, you will also bar the fires of the Holy Spirit from entering to perform the miracle of transmutation.

Indeed, seek the gift of miracles and know that the definition of "miracle" is transmutation by the transforming power of the Holy Spirit in all of the seven rays until you reach the culmination, through the violet flame, of the white fire. Seek the white cube and seek the new name.<sup>27</sup>

---

<sup>25</sup>Matt. 6:4, 6, 18.

<sup>26</sup>The Maha Chohan, February 21, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 225-30.

<sup>27</sup>Rev. 2:17; Sanat Kumara, December 2, 1979, 1979 PoW, Book I, pp. 333-34, 335; Lord Maitreya, March 28, 1964, 1984 PoW, Book I, pp. 88-92.

I seal you now, for you have received my All in a measure suited to your personality and [to] the dimensions in which you have established your comfortability.

Has it occurred to you, beloved, that the Lord God rocks the earth to rock individuals from their comfortability? Some, you see, have pain imposed upon them because in no way should they ever submit to it, so have they insulated themselves by their money and all other things.

The Lord will have this people one way or the other, beloved. Happy are ye who are led by Love and do not pull back as Love approaches the fields of pain. On the other side of the fields there are other fields, and beyond them others of flowers and immortelles, until the Lord Christ himself is found beyond these fields, truly as the lily of eternity.

I AM the Maha Chohan. I bow to the Light of the one God in you. I pray you will also bow to that one Light forevermore.

This I promise you - I shall return. I trust to find you at new levels, not that the levels [to which] you have attained are not acceptable, for many are acceptable, but that it is the law of Cosmos that the manifestation of God, the soul, must ever be transcending herself and her sense of self.

Purusha.<sup>28</sup>

This dictation by the Maha Chohan was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Pentecost, Sunday, June 3, 1990, 8:49-9:48 p.m. MDT, at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under the Maha Chohan's direction for clarity in the written word.]

---

<sup>28</sup>Purusha or Parousia. Purusha [p-roo-shuh or p-roosh]: Sanskrit, literally man; soul or spirit, the animating principle in man, the Spirit as passive as distinct from the Prakriti, or creative force. Parousia [pah-roo-zee-uh, puh-roo-see-uh, puh-roosh-ee-uh, puh-roosh-uh, or par-oo-see-uh]: Greek, literally presence, being near, coming; advent or return, Second Coming of Christ. It is possible that the Sanskrit and Greek words converge in the Divine Word to exemplify the Second Coming of Christ as the raising up of the Divine Principle in the heart of every individual.



# Chapter 20

## Beloved Listening Angel - May 27, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 20 - Beloved Listening Angel - May 27, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

I

Be of One Harmony

Listen to the Recordings of Yourself

I have come to pull down the Holy Spirit, for you tug not hard enough. And some have so soon forgot that enveloping presence and the cloven tongues of fire so felt in this court on Pentecost.<sup>1</sup>

I call you to be of one harmony.<sup>2</sup> Therefore, I have summoned God Harmony this night that through his Electronic Presence and his mighty Dharmakaya<sup>3</sup> you might find the ability to harmonize yourselves in the seven rainbow rays of God of your own Causal Body of Light.

For you have been admonished of recent date to learn to be comfortable in the presence of the I AM THAT I AM.<sup>4</sup> You have been admonished to be the comforter and in comforting all Life to find that Holy Spirit coming into your temple and the bliss of God capable of being sustained even midst the arrows and projectiles and every thought transference of minds not of this world who would deter you from the path of Love.

Even in two others of my many arms I do hold, one in one hand and one in the other, focuses of stone that you would call rose quartz; but this stone is not of this world. That which is similar to rose quartz I show you, for these are not mere rocks but they are also listening and transmitting devices.

Thus, I simply hold them. For I desire that you might listen this night not to me, your Listening Angel, but to yourselves - [to] recordings of your recent thoughts and feelings and musings and some unpleasanties and other manifestations. For it is well to come apart to hear a recording of one's mental affirmations of God and even one's mental criticisms of other parts of Life.

I desire you to experience objectively, therefore, those things that you have allowed to pass not only through the mind but [also] through the lips, that you might be in this moment in your Holy Christ Self as you will be at the conclusion of this life before the Lords of Karma. And your Holy Christ Self, who is both your Teacher and your Real Self, shall then pronounce the truth and the

---

<sup>1</sup>The enveloping presence of the Holy Spirit was felt by all who gathered on Pentecost for the dictation of the Maha Chohan, June 3, 1990. See pp. 261-72.

<sup>2</sup>Acts 2:1.

<sup>3</sup>See p. 260 n. 1.

<sup>4</sup>See pp. 253-54.

error of thy ways. And thou, a soul of Light in the Presence of God, shall surely assent to the just judgments of the living Christ. For the record you shall hear and see!

Thus, the Lords of Karma have sent me to speak to you concerning the final exams of the year, which have concluded at summer solstice, whereby you can judge yourselves and give yourselves grades and marks that will be totally accurate; for you now see through the Mind of Christ. The Lords of Karma have sent me that you might pause for a moment in a cosmic interval of Love to receive counsel, instruction and warning that if you do not apply the Law of the One and the Law of Love that you have been taught, one day the blessings accrued to your lifestreams for good works must be [applied to] paying the debts of the misuse of that Light and enlightenment given.

Thus, beloved, learn the responsibility of Love and to be Love and to utter Love. Let kind words be matched by kind thoughts, kind feelings. Learn, then, to let the Love of God ooze from every chakra, from every pore, as the oil of Love itself that comes from all of your being. Let there be the strengthening of these frames of thy house, these four lower bodies. Approach this project diligently and scientifically. Strengthen, O strengthen the shaft of the will of God.

Now, beloved, your soul shall hear from this moment and through this night, and some even for many weeks, a true rendering of your manifestations that you might look upon yourself as though you were another person standing next to you and you might “size up,” as you say, that individual and from the standpoint of your Holy Christ Self instruct that one and assist that one to change and then determine in your heart that you shall be your Holy Christ Self in action.

I AM Listening Angel, and I have spoken to you of the necessity of listening to God.<sup>5</sup> In this my dissertation to you tonight I would speak of the necessity of listening to yourself with the view to raising the vibration so that there is a merging of your soul with your Holy Christ Self by the power of the Holy Spirit’s Love. And in that merging, beloved, all things are boosted by Light to a proper frequency, and you do not go to the depths of the valleys of the sine waves but you find a greater oscillation without having to descend.

And yet the ascent does come. And by and by the descent will return, but it shall return when you are strengthened so that the oscillation of Light, and with it the descent of thy entire being into the depths of the astral plane and Death and Hell itself, shall be for Light’s consuming Darkness, dispelling it, annihilating it, transmuting it. And you as one with that Light shall not be moved.<sup>6</sup>

O the joy of self-mastery in this octave! O the joy of walking this earth in the full mastery of your Holy Christ Self! This, this is the path of the Bodhisattva, which Kuan Yin and Mother Mary can teach you if you ask them.

Balance, beloved, and the great love of perfection, the great love of the Law and the desire to be that incarnate, that others might see and know the way by merely glancing at you! None can hide the aura of Light nor the magnet of the heart that draws all people to the feet of their own I AM Presence. None can deny it, beloved.

Therefore, let thy Light shine! For the Light will shine. The Light will pierce the Darkness. It will pierce even those committed to the Night.<sup>7</sup>

Blessed ones, the day does arrive when thy Light is seen. In that day may you have the possession of all of your faculties and may you be in control of the thoughts of the mind, the musings of the heart, the desirings, the feelings so deep of the soul.

Blessed ones, in this moment opportunity is expansive for you individually to bequeath to a world a Path, an Example and a Teaching!

I will be listening as you speak to me of the conclusions you will have drawn from listening to

---

<sup>5</sup>See Listening Angel, October 5, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 661-63, 664-65.

<sup>6</sup>Pss. 16:8; 55:22; 62:5, 6.

<sup>7</sup>Matt. 5:14-16; John 1:4, 5, 9; 8:12; 9:5; 12:46.

yourself. You may report these to your Christ Self, to any or all of the Ascended Masters. You may give them to the Messenger if you will. But by all means, as “the new heaven and the new earth”<sup>8</sup> is in matrix all around you, may you know that to lock in to that cosmos you must come into that hour of supreme self-possession.

May you desire it! May you long for it! And may you know that the dispensation of the open door wherein thy eyes shall see thy cosmic teachers<sup>9</sup> is truly at hand.

The teachers have arrived. Where are the students who have put aside “all these things,”<sup>10</sup> who have willed to shut out the negative, who have willed to receive the positive against [projections of] minds of black magicians and fallen angels? Who has the sharpness of mind to let the sword go forth from the third eye to pierce those negatives and that aggression of the sinister force?

Beloved hearts, own your mind and see it as the temple of Buddha, not filled but emptied, as his palace of Light and as the greatest receiving and sending station of all of cosmos.

Canst thou let a thought fly to the Central Sun, and thyself and thy thought be there in an instant all one? I say, you may think you can do it but not all of you have the attainment of that built-in force that is released by a cosmic spring whereby Alpha raises his eyes to behold, even by the thought itself and the ray of the thought, thyself at once in the Central Sun.

Practice this as you speak less<sup>11</sup> and glory in your heart that God has already placed in you all those things necessary for the transfiguration and for the transfer of thy soul to any place in thy kingdom/his kingdom, thy mansion/his mansion.

O yes, beloved, I AM Listening Angel. And I receive the pulsations of a cosmos, for truly I have the inner ear of God.

Roses are falling upon you from angels who love you. May you smell their perfume and remember, when it is your turn, to cast roses<sup>12</sup> upon all whom you meet, as God’s Love does consume every lesser manifestation.

Though Jesus said it and it has been said again and again, there are those among you who must be reminded that there is little virtue in extending Love to those who love you.<sup>13</sup> But the test comes to extend that Love to those persecutors who revile [you] and say all manner of evil against you falsely for the sake of the living Christ<sup>14</sup> - to love the enemy until the enemy turns into Love, else disappears from thy sight.

Blessed ones, the blasts of Divine Love go forth always as cosmic opportunity. May you pass your tests of Love from this day on better than you have passed your year-end tests.

O beloved, let it be, let it be. God is with you. Where will you flee from his presence?<sup>15</sup> Where will you go in all the earth? God is where you are. Be still and know that the I AM in you is God,<sup>16</sup> and be willing to fight all of Death and Hell to defend that God within you and that vibration of your higher bodies<sup>17</sup> converging here below.

I will tell you what the Karmic Board has told me to tell you: You have in your hand, in your

---

<sup>8</sup>Rev. 21:1, 2; Isa. 65:17; 66:22; II Pet. 3:13.

<sup>9</sup>Isa. 30:20, 21.

<sup>10</sup>Matt. 6:24-34; Luke 12:22-31.

<sup>11</sup>Matt. 5:37.

<sup>12</sup>See Ashram Ritual 6, “Sacred Ritual for Oneness,” in El Morya, Ashram Notes, p. 66, and in Ashram Rituals booklet, p. 58 (\$4.95, add \$1.00 for postage).

<sup>13</sup>Matt. 5:44-47; Luke 6:27, 32-38.

<sup>14</sup>Matt. 5:11; Luke 6:22; I Pet. 4:14.

<sup>15</sup>Ps. 139:7, 8.

<sup>16</sup>Ps. 46:10.

<sup>17</sup>your Mighty I AM Presence and Causal Body, and your Holy Christ Self, i.e., the Dharmakaya and the Sambhogakaya

heart and in your mind all that you need to become masters in the earth, adepts, initiates.

Love is the key. It will fulfill all things.<sup>18</sup> And the powers will come to you, the siddhis,<sup>19</sup> as naturally as you breathe. Seek Love and all these things shall be added unto you.

Find, therefore, someone to love who needs your Love - the impoverished soul, the saddened one. Exercise your powers of Love and loving, beloved, and you shall know self-mastery and the balanced, expanded threefold flame and individual Christhood.

In the words of Jesus Christ, I, Listening Angel, say to you, "May you love one another as I have loved you."<sup>20</sup>

This dictation by Listening Angel was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Wednesday, June 27, 1990, 10:14-10:35 p.m. MDT, during the twelve-day conference FREEDOM 1990: "A New Heaven and a New Earth" held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Listening Angel's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

## 20.1 The Messenger - May 27, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 20 - The Messenger - May 27, 1990

Summer Solstice Final Exam

The Messenger Elizabeth Clare Prophet

June 24, 1990, the Royal Teton Ranch

I wanted to talk to you about the June 21 date. I think sometimes it escapes us and people forget that each year every Lightbearer, every Keeper of the Flame and perhaps everyone on the planet has his final exam for the year at summer solstice. I especially observe this with staff and in interacting with people who write to me about certain problems at this time of year. The summer solstice final exam may take place in the month or six weeks before solstice. Even up to the very day you can count on being tested.

Therefore I think it's important for you to take out a sheet of paper and to grade yourself on how you think you have done. And I would recommend you do it in the following way. Go through each line of the Cosmic Clock. Start on the 12 o'clock line with God-Power and ask yourself how you have used God's power in the past year in comparison to previous years and to what degree in percentages you have misused that power in criticism, condemnation and judgment. And then continue around the whole Clock, evaluating yourself on each line.

So it is a year-end exam. And commencement and graduation and rewards definitely come at the right time - in the month of June.

Tests passed mean we go on to a new level. We should be on a spiral, mounting that spiral to our I AM Presence. But if we fail too many tests or if we have dug in our heels and said, "I will not change on this point and I refuse to grow," well, then we find that we are no longer on a spiral. We are on a treadmill. And we're lucky if we are on the same level each year because, as we know, to

---

<sup>18</sup>Rom. 13:8-10; Gal. 5:14.

<sup>19</sup>siddhis [Sanskrit]: supernatural powers acquired through the practice of yoga, such as clairaudience, clairvoyance, levitation, supremacy over the body and mind, knowledge of a previous birth, dominion over the elements, vision of perfected beings, and the power of making oneself invisible. The supreme siddhi is enlightenment.

<sup>20</sup>John 13:34; 15:12.



be at the same place really is to go backwards. Pretty soon you can't hold the same place because you have no momentum and no acceleration, so you start decelerating.

The real law of growth in the universe is: Either accelerate or decelerate. You may choose to stay in the same place but that's wishful thinking. It doesn't happen. With El Morya, change is the order of the day. Change is acceleration. Change is alchemy. It is the violet flame.

And if perhaps you passed a lot of tests well and failed a few notable ones and maybe some minor ones, what you need to do is quickly ask for those tests to be given to you again. Now, a teacher who gives you a make-up test is not going to give you the same test that the rest of the class had or that you failed, because obviously that would make it easier for you. So when you ask for a test to be given again you must expect that it will come in the most unexpected ways. "Expect the unexpected" ought to be the byword of those who love El Morya and Lanello.

You should not be content to go forward now into this new year of testing that begins with summer solstice knowing you have failed a test and simply saying, "Oh, well . . ." You can make up that exam. You can pass it. But you may have some penalties in taking it again. You may have to earn 125 percent on the test in order to get a grade of 100, because that's the way it goes even in the universities of the world when you turn in a paper late.

So better late than never! - and better get on the spiral of this year to the next because the spirals are turning. They are increasing. And we do need to remember that the prophecies are the same. They have not changed. . . .

I would like to point out that unless an angel has told you you've balanced all of your karma, you should be looking for it and you should always be sending waves of joy and mercy and violet flame ahead of you. And so that violet flame will be greeting that karma before it ever comes to your doorstep and mitigating it as the Law allows.

It's very important, even more so in these times, to pay as we go. I know we're all very much interested in paying debts so I thought I would tell you about any you might have unwittingly incurred by not thinking about the fact that the testers have been around now probably for six weeks, given that we know that the cycle of conclusion on the Cosmic Clock is a six-week cycle.

It's good to think about where you were in consciousness six weeks before June 21 and make some amends or rejoice in your triumphs. It's wonderful to know you passed a test when you didn't even know you were being tested and to look back upon it and say, "Gee, I really came through that and didn't even realize that I was doing anything special!"

Mighty Victory

July 20, 1986, Camelot, California

. . . Take care that in this summer's celebration of the Goddess of Liberty<sup>1</sup> you keep the vigil in that fire sign. For I tell you, and I come to announce it, that the fire of Leo shall try every man's handiwork, of what sort it is. And this fire does come to each and every one of you, even as each and every one of you has received already the testing from the Lords of Karma.

Many have not known this but at each half-yearly cycle the Lords of Karma do meet. And all mankind are tested, but especially those who write their letters to the Karmic Board. These, then, must receive a test according to their knowledge and awareness and training, especially their self-knowledge of those things that ought to be cast into the sacred fire. These tests come specifically in those areas of long endurance by yourselves of a form of human creation of which you have been warned.

---

<sup>1</sup>The Goddess of Liberty is the hierarch and initiator with the Lords of Karma under the cosmic hierarchy of Leo, testing the souls of earth in the quality of God-Gratitude - soul sensitivity to and appreciation of every part of Life. Mighty Victory's dictation in its entirety is published in the 1986 Pearls of Wisdom, Book II, pp. 609-18.

Beloved, I am sad to say that among you who have received these tests in and around and before the July conference, some of you have failed these tests while others of you have passed them.

I recommend, if you have a sense of having indulged in the not-self and dallied when you should leap in response to your Christhood and that of the Messenger's, that you appeal to the Lords of Karma to give you another test in this hour that you might pass it and that the record of this year might show that you have indeed determined to pass this test for Saint Germain.

When the test is not passed, the dispensation at that half-yearly cycle is therefore not granted. We demand a token, and there are final exams on earth as in heaven.

When we go to the Central Sun to dip into the fires thereof to deliver to you personally a dispensation for your life, we have a right as cosmic teachers to expect that you in our absence, as we pleaded before the Court of the Sacred Fire for you, did indeed keep the Flame and attempt to give some portion of yourself that might be a worthy offering whereby we ourselves could be vindicated in pleading in your behalf. . . .

# Chapter 21

## Beloved Queen of Light - June 3, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 21 - Beloved Queen of Light - June 3, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

II

O the Joy of Light!

The Call to Come Up Higher in the Light

O the joy of Light! the joy of Light! the joy of Light!

God called me the Queen of Light, for I AM the servant of the Light and I have served the Light long aeons. And then the fiat of Light was spoken, “The Light shall serve thee and does claim thee as its queen!”<sup>1</sup>

Therefore know that by this presence of Light, I bear witness to you that you can, beloved, you can, beloved, you can, beloved, be and become the chalice for all Light, all Light, even the Father-Mother of Lights.

In Light there is no variableness, neither shadow of turning,<sup>2</sup> but only Light, Light, Light!

If you select this attribute of God, yea, this “Godness” that is Light, to be your goal, then I tell you I will come to you and I will tutor your heart in the increase of Light.

As you prepare yourselves for goal-fittedness, as you contemplate the vow and the commitment, the promise given and taken, so, beloved, remember me. For I would come to earth and find adherents of the path of Light - pure Light, undiluted Light, only Light. For Light contains all of the crystallization of the God Flame.

I AM a Divine Mother incarnate in the Word and Work of the Lord in all who are the Lightbearers. Where there is one who bears Light, I AM one with that Light in the heart; for I AM a part of all Light everywhere.

So now, blessed ones, contemplate the seeking and finding of your adeptship by commitment to Light - one-purposed Light, one all-consuming Light. O blessed hearts, it [your commitment to Light] is the entree into the heart of every Ascended Master, Archangel, Cosmic Being and tiny elemental.

I advocate that you espouse in some measure, if not entirely, this calling of Light. For Light is

---

<sup>1</sup>In a dictation given at the conclusion of the May 14, 1988 Saturday evening service, Justinius, Captain of Seraphic Hosts, said, “It is the law of a cosmos unto all who serve the Light that on a certain day and date the Light will turn and serve you.” See 1988 PoW, Book II, pp. 429-34.

<sup>2</sup>James 1:17.

needed in the earth, in the depths of the earth and under the seas and in the atmosphere - Light even as the cloud that you invoke, upon which you meditate for precipitation.

Create! and the cloud.<sup>3</sup> So let the cloud of Light come forth! Let it come forth over this property.

I tend you with the Goddess of Light and the Goddess of Purity, we three ever maintaining El Morya's three dots in the cosmic sense of Light! Light! Light! This we do, beloved. And in this moment I desire you to contemplate the absorptive attribute of Light whereby the Light can absorb all toxins, pollutants, radioactive fallout and all debris of the astral plane.<sup>4</sup> The capacity of Light to absorb is indeed increased by the concentration of the points of Light within the cloud upon which you meditate.

Let the cloud become, therefore, the victory of this conference. And by that cloud may you know and see and, above all, may you be, may you be, may you be, may you be the new heaven and the new earth!

This means that the old consciousness of a former heaven and a former earth must be passed away. For God would make all things new<sup>5</sup> in you by Light and by the instrumentation of the Light of the entire Spirit of the Great White Brotherhood.

And yet you would not, you would not, you would not!<sup>6</sup> You would flee from the Light, turn your back on the Light, rebel against the Light, ignore the Light, misuse the Light, abuse the Light - everything but internalize the Light!

Be willing therefore, I say, to have yourselves turned inside out, upside down, be emptied and filled with Light, Light, Light! Be willing to endure any cross, any crown, any burden and even the planetary dweller-on-the-threshold for this prize, beloved, of the new heaven and the new earth.

Even the resurrection draweth nigh. Even the resurrection flame may work for thee as never before.

Let the excuses and the excusers therefore be dismissed and go their way. For we must have our New Day.

Let the Light therefore increase. Let the Light therefore increase! I deliver it in the name of Alpha and Omega by their charge. It is a charge that is a commitment and a calling to my heart to increase the Light throughout this property and service and student body worldwide. It is my charge to do so, beloved, for we must raise a standard and we must increase that Light.

Therefore I beg you, I plead with you and I summon you to surrender unto the Light, to caress the Light, to adore the Light, to imbibe the Light and to resist it no longer. For in this hour of our presence this evening you have the opportunity for transmutation, for resolution, for realignment.

The Lord God has held all things in flux - all disturbances, all burdens, all recriminations, all uncontrolled energies of the astral bodies of those who are the students of the Ascended Masters.<sup>7</sup>

---

<sup>3</sup>The creation of the cloud. In *Intermediate Studies in Alchemy* Saint Germain teaches how to magnetize millions of "focal points of light" into a brilliant pulsating "cloud of infinite energy" that can be directed into personal and planetary problems for the healing of specific conditions, such as disease, pollution, crime and war. See Saint Germain *On Alchemy*, pp. 191-251, or *Intermediate Studies in Alchemy*, pp. 38-87; *The Creation of the Cloud* by Saint Germain and *Meditations on the Alchemy of Constructive Change and the Control of the Aura* by Elizabeth Clare Prophet, 2-audiocassette album, 3 hr., \$12.95 (add \$1.10 for postage), A8063.

<sup>4</sup>For teachings on the absorptive quality of the Light, see Serapis Bey, *Dossier on the Ascension*, pp. 129-31; Sanat Kumara, January 26, 1986, 1986 PoW, Book I, p. 219; note 3 above.

<sup>5</sup>Rev. 21:1-5.

<sup>6</sup>Matt. 23:37; Luke 13:34.

<sup>7</sup>The Queen of Light is informing us that the Lord God recently granted students of the Ascended Masters a special dispensation whereby the karma of the various types of discord described was held in abeyance. "The Lord God has held all things in flux" means that under this dispensation all things were fluid, like jello before it solidifies in a mold. (Flux means "continuous flow" or "change.") Our misqualified energy was not yet made a permanent part of our karmic record. The Queen of Light is notifying us that the Law and the Light now decrees that this dispensation has

Now the Law decrees and the Light decrees: Thus far and no farther! Cast ye, therefore, this night any out-of-alignment state into the sacred fire!

Tarry following these dictations to write your confessions, to place on paper all that troubles you. Put these into the basket and let them be burned that no man may read them, only the Keeper of the Scrolls and the Lords of Karma, that there might be a leaven of Light in this Community whereby those things that must change will change [and] those things that cannot be changed - for they are the Law - will not change.

But the fruit of this experience, beloved, shall be that if you desire to serve the Light with all your heart and mind and soul<sup>8</sup> without dilution, then your being will come into harmony with what is, with what must be and with what can be. Therefore know that limitations are upon ye all by individual karma and that karma, too, may be submitted to the Light, Light, Light!

I speak to you who long ago left the Mystery School to pursue other pursuits, yes, having failed the path of the Ruby Ray cross.<sup>9</sup> I speak to you: To go out again is fraught, surely fraught, with a burden that you may find too hard to bear. Seeing as you are not able to bear the pressure of the Light, I say, how will you bear the karma of your antagonism to the Light itself?

I know not. I trust that you know.

For, beloved, the cycles truly move on. When the answer is given and not taken, then you will come to know what is the meaning of outer darkness and weeping and gnashing of teeth.<sup>10</sup> After the anger is spent, then comes the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.

Know, beloved, that this is surely an hour of world chemicalization and none ought to take for granted our speaking to you. It is truly by the mercy of God, by the mercy of God, by the mercy of God that you receive such an outpouring in this age! For, beloved, so great a salvation through you can be to all of a planetary home even the promises fulfilled unto Saint Germain. Yet the cup not drunk is removed. The flame violated is withdrawn.

Let this pressing in of heaven in this hour be perceived by you as that opportunity of opportunities that comes once in 25,800 years at the conclusion of the cycle. It is the sign and the signal that that Light has come to claim you as its own, as its own child, its own son and daughter, its own father, mother.

O the Light has come to be cradled in your heart as a newborn babe! The Light is surely omnipotent, omnipresent and omniscient. But so it is, beloved, even the very means to the re-creation of self.

---

come to a conclusion.

Published Dictations by the Queen of Light

Delivered through the Messengers Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet

DATE PRINTED and AUDIO-AND VIDEOCASSETTE/ALBUM TITLE

10-18-70, 1970 PoW, Book I, pp. 180-83

12-13-73, MTF7405/Mission South America with Mother

12-25-73, MTG7407/Mission South America with Mother

3-30-75, B7518/Class of the Resurrection Flame

7-03-82, 1982 PoW, Book II, pp. 417-22, B8289; video 8208-02/FREEDOM 1982

6-29-90, 1990 PoW, pp. 281-88

The following dictations by the Queen of Light are not yet published: 7-3-64, 4-10-65, 12-31-68, 7-3-69, 12-31-69, 12-31-71, 1-1-73.

<sup>8</sup>Deut. 6:5; Matt. 22:37; Mark 12:30; Luke 10:27.

<sup>9</sup>The Ruby Ray cross is formed by the 1/7, 4/10 axes on the Cosmic Clock. The God-qualities and perversions of these axes are: Aquarius, 1 o'clock line, God-quality: God-Love. Perversions: hatred, mild dislike and all witchcraft. Leo, 7 o'clock line, God-quality: God-Gratitude. Perversions: ingratitude, thoughtlessness and spiritual blindness. Taurus, 4 o'clock line, God-quality: God-Obedience. Perversions: disobedience, stubbornness, defiance of the law and mental rebellion. Scorpio, 10 o'clock line, God-quality: God-Vision. Perversions: selfishness, self-love and idolatry. See Sanat Kumara on the Path of the Ruby Ray: The Opening of the Seventh Seal, 1979 PoW, Book I.

<sup>10</sup>Matt. 8:12; 13:42, 50; 22:13; 24:51; 25:30; Luke 13:28.

May all truly bow before the Lord God, who is Light. For I, the Queen of Light, in the presence of this Light can do only this: kneel before the altar of the Unfed Flame and pray that your souls might hear the voice of Light, Light, Light - and live.<sup>11</sup>

Even so, God gave unto the Lord Christ, which he may deliver through this Messenger at will, the power to make any and all sons of God, the power to reendow life with a Threefold Flame and a divine spark where that has gone out.<sup>12</sup>

For a moment close your eyes and imagine all light extinguished, no sun or stars or beam but ultimate outer darkness. This is the experience of souls who pass from the screen of life without a Threefold Flame.

Christians have appealed to humanity to receive Jesus Christ as their Lord and Saviour. For they know that that salvation that can be accorded to those who are called yet who must be chosen, who answer yet must receive the fiery trial,<sup>13</sup> is truly the endowment of the Christ Flame.

Understand why in the first instance you must claim the Light and be it and love it with all your heart. It is so that in the second instance through you - through the Christ descent into your temple, the Holy Spirit descent into your temple, which you have made all Light - others no longer endowed with a flame might receive it through the message and the teaching of the Ascended Masters and through the heart of the Messenger sent.

Know this, beloved, that the reprieve that has been won for you through that Diamond Heart of El Morya is this opportunity for you to ultimately claim the Light and be the Light and therefore to be able to bring the Holy Spirit for the conversion of many by the Piscean avatar Jesus Christ to the true Path and true Teaching of the age of Pisces.

Blessed hearts, you need this reprieve. You have needed it. For at times those surfeited with Light become drunken by the Light and with the Light<sup>14</sup> and then begin to take it for granted, do not assimilate it or internalize it and ultimately, as ingrates, remove themselves from it.

I appeal to the Logos and the Solar Logoi. And in ceremony now, as your hearts are filled with love and contriteness and humility before God's Light as his most precious gift to you, I ask you to kneel before the Light and in the Light - for ye are the Light even as ye are the sons of Light - as I also, as Queen of Light, do kneel. [Congregation kneels with the Messenger.]

O Lord, I speak through these hearts. As I AM the Light, I AM the instrument of Light and I AM the voice of Light, the voice of the Presence, the voice of Harmony within these hearts. I speak once more through the heart of each one, that Light may vibrate, may quiver, may set its alchemy, may bring into alignment these, these to whom much is given - [to whom] much Light has been given, and from whom much is expected in the service of the Light.<sup>15</sup>

I pray, our Father-Mother of Light in these hearts, with the fervor of all of the Light of my Causal Body that they might receive sensitivity in the Holy Ghost to understand what God has wrought for them and to dwell in the gratitude of God, to make haste to direct the Light into planetary Darkness that souls who may potentially be lost might be saved.

I call for the tutoring angels of the Ruby Ray Masters to console them in the joy of the Ruby

---

<sup>11</sup>John 5:25.

<sup>12</sup>John 1:12; Saint Germain, June 1, 1980, 1980 PoW, p. 200, also published in Saint Germain On Prophecy, Book Three, p. 64; Lanello, April 26, 1981, 1981 PoW, pp. 623-24; Jesus Christ, December 25, 1985, 1986 PoW, Book I, pp. 111-15.

<sup>13</sup>Fiery Trial. Dan. 3:1-28; I Cor. 3:9-15; I Pet. 1:6, 7; 4:12, 13; Oromasis and Diana, April 13, 1980, 1980 PoW, pp. 89-90, also published in Saint Germain On Prophecy, Book Three, pp. 28-30; Saint Germain, March 15, 1981, 1981 PoW, pp. 596-97; the Maha Chohan, March 27, 1983, 1983 PoW, pp. 421, 423-25; Justinius, April 6, 1985, 1985 PoW, Book I, pp. 289-90; Jesus Christ, November 27, 1986, 1986 PoW, Book II, pp. 640-41.

<sup>14</sup>Acts 2:12-21.

<sup>15</sup>Luke 12:48.

Ray path and the Ruby Ray cross [and to tell them] to keep on in the footsteps of the Lord Jesus Christ no matter what the pain or the price, to enter in and to prove that his life can be duplicated on earth again and again and again<sup>16</sup> until earth become heaven and heaven become earth, for there will be no disparity between them but only Light, all Light.

I pray to thee, our Father-Mother of Light, to thee, Sanat Kumara and Lady Master Venus, that these hearts might know the mystery of Light, the mightiness of Light and their responsibility, yea, their obligation to the Light, to serve it, to love it, to defend it, to become it and to let it shine!

O our Father-Mother of Light, help each one to know the inner sacred fire and the inner walk with thee, to truly know a spiritual life and path and to withdraw somewhat from the outer and its tugs and pulls and to enter into the sacred tryst with the Lord of the heart.

Our Father-Mother God, assist them in this transition that must take place from the former things to those that are now at hand.

O Lord God of Light, I have said all that can be spoken outwardly. May I continue to speak to their hearts inwardly that they might choose and choose well the higher way and be willing to withdraw from the world and the world consciousness of this hour.

May they see, O Father-Mother, the disintegration spiral that is in the world and enter not into it lest the Light itself that they have received be removed from them through that same world disintegration spiral.

Our God of Light, into thy hands I commend their keeping<sup>17</sup> and the keeping of their souls in Light that they [in turn] might be the keepers of all souls assigned to this planetary home.

I seal my prayer in all octaves unto all servants of the Light, children of the Light and all who would be and can be by the Cosmic Christ intercession of the Lord Jesus. So do I seal it in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit. Amen.

[The Messenger stands and faces the congregation.]

There is a tide of Light and this great cosmic tide bears the new heaven and the new earth. This new heaven and new earth is first delivered, one by one, to the Lightbearers who can receive it. It is like the Second Coming of Christ. It is the descent of the Cosmic Christ, one with the Inner Christ. So is this coming of the new heaven and the new earth an individual experience as it was in the heart of John the Beloved, who declared, "And I beheld the New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, a bride adorned for her husband."<sup>18</sup>

Thus, beloved, the City Foursquare and its realization comes to each initiate in his time. Some, then, will merge with the tide of Light and walk and live forevermore in the new heaven, the purified etheric body, and the new earth, even the four lower bodies saturated with Light. Others, denying the Light, will find themselves bereft and in outer darkness.

This is the Law, beloved. Do not rail against it. For it had better be told in this hour than not be told at all so that you will have the sign, even the sign of the coming of planetary alchemy and the call to your soul to "come up higher."

When the Lord God does send this call, I pray that you shall be clothed in Light and the joy of Light and the love of Light and the God of Light and even in the Electronic Presence of the Queen of Light, that you might be properly dressed and attired to enter the Holy of Holies. Without the garment of Light, even the Deathless Solar Body, beloved, you will not enter in. So it is the Law. So may it be your walk with God [to weave your seamless garment].

I AM the Queen of Light, ever at the side of those who rejoice in the joy of Light and resist her

---

<sup>16</sup>John 14:12.

<sup>17</sup>Luke 23:46.

<sup>18</sup>Rev. 21:2.

not.

Messenger's Invocation before the Dictation:

O Light, thou art our Father-Mother God. O Light, thou art the Cosmic Christ. Light, expand now in our grateful hearts. Expand, O Light, as in gratitude we praise thy name, I AM THAT I AM!

I call unto the Holy One of God in the name Elohim, in the name I AM THAT I AM, in the name YOD HE VAU HE. Light-emanations of the Central Sun, Light of far-off worlds of the Spirit cosmos, intensify thy presence here for the consuming of anti-Light. Let Light fill every corner of darkness, deception or treachery and intrigue.

O Light of far-off worlds and legions of the Central Sun, appear! Dissolve and transmute now, thou living sacred fire, all that is unlike our God!

O Mighty Presence of the Lord, descend upon us as thy mantle fills the earth. O Cosmic Christ, O Holy Christ Self, O Seven Holy Kumaras, let us know thy name. Let us enter now the secret place of the Most High and the Holy of Holies. Let us enter nigh unto thee.

O our God, we celebrate thy Power, we celebrate thy Wisdom, we celebrate thy Love, we celebrate thy Purity and Light, Light, Light! Before thy Light, O God, we declare: Holiness unto the Lord! Holiness unto the Lord! Holiness unto the Lord!

O golden victorious Light, O living fire of ascension's flame, spiral through us and re-create in us a right heart. Let our hearts be healed, O God! Let our hearts be opened. Let the power of God Harmony descend as the Electronic Presence of God Harmony. Let the Power of God Harmony, the Wisdom and the Love now seal each one in that Electronic Presence of the Light of Harmony, the Light of Harmony, the Light of Harmony.

O Light of Love, intensify unto the consuming of all fear and doubt, all hate and hate creation! By the cosmic cross of white fire let the angels of the Central Sun build now the tower of Light, build the forcefield of Light and take us unto the Most High in this moment of our holy communion.

This dictation by the Queen of Light was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Friday, June 29, 1990, 10:02-10:30 p.m. MDT, at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under the Queen of Light's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.



# Chapter 22

## Beloved Rose of Light - June 10, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 22 - Beloved Rose of Light - June 10, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

III

The Call to the Practice of Love

Love is the Dividing of the Way Twixt the Human and the Divine

I AM the rose of the Light. And I bring to this Community of the Holy Spirit and to the Mystical Body of God throughout earth and a cosmos my gift of Love - the Love of the Light and the unfolding rose with the petals of Love of the heart.

Therefore, beloved, I come to make possible your transition through Light: Light as the crystalline, unqualified suchness,<sup>1</sup> Light as the crystal-clear river of water of Life.<sup>2</sup> It is Love that does personalize the Light, that does quicken the heart and open it.

Some have neat petals in a spiral unfolding about the heart. But others, even among you, yet have not unfolded the rose of Light of the heart, choosing at times to retain the strident, the unmerciful [expression], the hardness of heart. Thus, the petals are not symmetrical and the golden-pink glow-ray spiral that is a part of this pink rose is not as it should be for the coming of the Queen of Light.

I would remind you that I have offered myself to assist you in the mastery of the fires of the heart, in the intensification of Love.<sup>3</sup> Blessed ones, I pray that this Love shall become such an all-consuming firing and desiring to be God where you are that this city shall soon be - in the name of Sanat Kumara, Lady Venus, the Queen of Light, the Goddess of Light, the Goddess of Purity - surely that city of Light that is set on an hill, that cannot be hid,<sup>4</sup> that does light an entire world, that is seen across a cosmos and that does guide the pilgrim of Light to the place where he may eat the Body and drink of the Blood of Christ, [where] he may assimilate, he may become.<sup>5</sup>

O let the presence of the Buddha, let the presence of the wife of the Buddha, let the love of the

---

<sup>1</sup>Suchness (Sanskrit tathata) is a term in Mahayana Buddhism for Absolute Reality, the true nature or essence of all things; that which is beyond all concepts or distinctions. Tathata is Absolute Truth that is known by the Buddha. One of the Buddha's titles, Tathagata, means one who has attained suchness, one who has arrived at the Truth, or one who has become one with the Dharmakaya. The Buddha-nature within all beings is called tathagata-garbha, or immanent suchness.

<sup>2</sup>Rev. 22:1.

<sup>3</sup>See Rose of Light's dictation delivered at the conclusion of the October 6, 1989 service, in 1989 PoW, pp. 673-82.

<sup>4</sup>Matt. 5:14.

<sup>5</sup>John 6:53-58.

twin flames of the Buddha so infire your heart to build upon Love and upon Love and upon Love! And so in Love are you with the Buddha, beloved, that you simply cannot enter in to any other vibration [but Love] for one another.

You have heard this, beloved. You have known this even from the foundation of the worlds. And when you and your twin flame were sent forth into the Matter cosmos, again the word was spoken to you, "Let Love and only Love be shared as you entwine your arms and share twin cups of Love."

Love will fulfill all the Law. Love will overturn all tyrants and fallen angels. Love will seal you from all going astray and all temptation. Perfect Love will cast out all unlike itself.<sup>6</sup>

Love is still the key, beloved. Therefore, when the tensions mount and disagreements come and there be strife inserted among the brethren, let Love be the recourse. Let Love be at the moment all of thy desiring as you drop your defenses, drop your weapons, drop all desire for vindication, for any satisfaction whatsoever in the redeeming of the human ego. Let it all be dropped, as you would indeed drop it to see the Presence of your Lord Jesus Christ standing before you, standing before you in holiest Love, and Magda attending with arms of flowers and joy. Behold the Lamb's wife!<sup>7</sup>

I shed tears of Love for those who do not receive Love, those all over the world who prefer any manifestation but true Divine Love. It is the desiring of the Father-Mother God and of my own heart, beloved, that you should understand that unless some choose Love and choose it ultimately before any adversary or circumstance, the true and real and undiluted intensity of the flame of Divine Love could go out on planet earth.

You have seen many tested in their responses and reactions to this Community and what has been said about it, whether fact or fantasy. You have seen some with and without religion be turned to stones of hate and hate creation, while others have loved more tenderly [than before], having the compassion of the Christ.

Truly, may you understand that even millions have been tested by their response, whether to the false or the true report. For there cannot be the Mystical Body of God in the earth or the Light in the earth or the Messenger of God in the earth or the Chela of God in the earth without these being that testing, that stone of stumbling<sup>8</sup> and that two-edged sword.<sup>9</sup> Some fall to the Left and some fall to the Right. And as the intensity of the force of anti-Love mounts, so even those called to be the embodiment of Love respond to the temptation to enter into bitterness and its gall.

Blessed ones, the trust wherewith we have given our Love for so long must be kept lest you place in jeopardy, as my cohort has said,<sup>10</sup> so great a salvation<sup>11</sup> possible to you and all whom you will touch with the vibration of Love.

I AM Rose of Light. And I desire to call and to sing to the Rose of Light whose expression I AM; for indeed our Father-Mother God is the Rose of Light and I AM the servant of the Rose of Light. Therefore, beloved, please sing with me now the song of the Rose of Light.

Rose of Light, O Come!

From thy fragrant center Light  
Through thy petals blazing bright  
Comes God's Love intensely pure  
Rose of Light, Love will endure.

---

<sup>6</sup>I John 4:18.

<sup>7</sup>Rev. 19:7, 8; 21:9.

<sup>8</sup>Isa. 8:13-15; Rom. 9:32, 33; I Cor. 1:23; I Pet. 2:6-8.

<sup>9</sup>Psa. 149:6; Heb. 4:12; Rev. 1:16; 2:12.

<sup>10</sup>See pp. 281-88.

<sup>11</sup>Heb. 2:3.

Rose of Light, thy power flows -  
Fiery, silent, majestic rose!  
Through my being enfolded here  
All of Life I now revere.

Expand thy flame's suffusing glow  
Through my substance here below  
My heart cries out for freedom's bloom  
O God, expand my narrow room!

The Love of God enfolds a rose  
Touches lightly a heart that glows  
Like unto Aurora's bloom  
Thy rose Light chases all man's gloom.

Rose of Light, expand through me  
Caress my being, make it free  
To grow and glow upon the loom  
I now command my soul, attune!

Rose of Light, O come today  
In God's name I truly pray:  
From fear and darkness and all hate  
Set my mind in radiance straight.

Rose of Light, I AM all thine  
By God's Love my life refine  
Through us all let Love appear  
In God's image ever dear!<sup>12</sup>

The initiation upon this Community in this hour is one-purposed and one-pointed. It is the call to each and every one of every age to the practice of Love, Christ-Love, God-Love, the Love of the Father, the Love of the Mother, the Love of the Son, the Love of the Holy Spirit. Let these pour through you to one another and to every stranger, friend or foe, that does enter thy gate!

Let Love flow forth from your heart [to every part of Life], no matter [how it is received], no matter what is delivered to you [in return]! It is the practice of Love as merciful Love that will expand the cup and open the chalice of Community for deliverance from all oppressors.

This is not a mere dictation we give. This is not a mere warning we give. You must not leave this court and leave behind you these words! For they are a warning and they are a sign unto you.

Care for one another and let Love be without dissimulation.<sup>13</sup> Let Love be your only reaction to whatever is done to you, given to you, whatever the hurt, whatever the stripes. Whatever it be, beloved, so let the heart pour forth Love!

I tell you this, [as I am] sent by the Father-Mother God and also by the Lords of Karma: You need to pass this test as never before. And there is no time to fail it and receive it again!

You must wear some sort of reminder upon your person that you live each day to pass the

---

<sup>12</sup> "Rose of Light, O Come!" song 468 in The Summit Lighthouse Book of Songs; decree 30.07 in Prayers, Meditations and Dynamic Decrees for the Coming Revolution in Higher Consciousness, Section II; no. 30 in Mantras of the Ascended Masters for the Initiation of the Chakras, booklet p. 8, audiocassette B85135.

<sup>13</sup>Rom. 12:9.

test of Love - Love as tolerance, Love as patience, Love as gratitude, Love as self-givingness and receivingness, above all, Love as the merciful, compassionate heart that must forgive in order to be forgiven,<sup>14</sup> that must love in order to be loved. And that heart of yours needs loving for the resurrection, for the Path, for the ascension, for the new birth!

Yes, beloved, if you are to succeed as a Community of Light to spread this message abroad, your Love must become so great, as God's Love [is great]. And you must recognize [that] God is Love<sup>15</sup> within you. For by the very fervor of Love continually pressing out, of Love desiring to be Love, [Love does] melt down all barriers to [effect] the mighty conversion of the Holy Spirit. [This conversion] begins with your own soul and then reaches out to those whose hearts have been as stones, and stones toward ye all, and yet whose hearts can truly be melted by Love. This is Love with a capital L! It is not possessive love. It is not human love, although it does endow human love with the fire of purity.

This Love, beloved, is the Love of a cosmos, the Love of [the] creation, the Love of Elohim whereby you were created in the beginning. For the act of cosmic creation, beloved, is Love; and without Love there can be no creation.

Seek Love with all your heart and [when you have found it] do not forget [to keep it]. And do not make the angels who tend this place have to cover their ears, for they desire not to hear strident tones and criticism and harshness.

Beloved, we speak to you, for it is beyond now the ability of the Messenger to convert you to Love. The words have been spoken. You can no longer rest in your hardness of heart, whether toward one another or toward your God or toward the Law or toward the law of your karma! You must know that Love is the meaning of the Path.

And if you will not take the trouble to expand the Light, Light, Light, Light, Light of Love in your heart, then I say, the Light, Light, Light, Light of Love of your heart and of God's heart will bring Love's judgment! And Love's judgment is the judgment of the Holy Spirit, and that [judgment of the] Holy Spirit has begun in the planet.<sup>16</sup>

And surely as I live this day and as I speak to you in the name and by the voice of the Lords of Karma, I prophesy to you that except ye be converted by Love this night and cast all else into the fire and forgive all and seek forgiveness, you shall know in time the judgment of the Holy Spirit for your rejection of so great a gift of Love of the Great White Brotherhood, of Lord Morya El, who has succored you and laid down his life for you again and again!

May you hear this voice and know that this is the truth and know that this argumentation and strife and rivalry, et cetera - this deception one toward the other in all manner of human consciousness that was a part of the children of Israel whereby they spent forty years in the wilderness - may not be allowed to manifest again merely because your ancient karma is upon you! You are greater than that karma!

And I AM Rose of Light. And you shall know through me the fierceness of Kali<sup>17</sup> this night as you understand the reprimand of the Divine Mother and her cosmic spanking. Wake up, I tell you! And let your hearts give room to the Prince of Peace, who is the Christ of Love.

All missions shall fail unless you bring Love to its glory and to its height in this hour. Even the mission of the Lord Jesus Christ shall not have that ultimate resolution and resurrection in this age wherein his true teachings cover the earth unless you assimilate that Teaching, endow it with Love

---

<sup>14</sup>Matt. 6:12, 14, 15; 18:21-35; Mark 11:25, 26; Luke 6:37; 11:4; Eph. 4:32.

<sup>15</sup>I John 4:8, 16.

<sup>16</sup>See the Maha Chohan's dictation delivered at the conclusion of the Messenger's February 21, 1988 Stump in Beverly Hills, in 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 225-30, also excerpted in 1990 PoW, p. 116; the Maha Chohan, June 3, 1990, 1990 PoW, p. 271.

<sup>17</sup>Kali. See 1989 PoW, p. 724 n. 2.

and let that Love cover the earth.

I tell you, beloved, you cannot know - but one day you shall know if you do not hear me in this hour - what price shall be paid by anyone who does not heed the call of Love and recount and recite in his heart with overflowing tears of gratitude and joy what the Great White Brotherhood has given since the dispensation of the Ashram Notes and the worldwide Ashram of El Morya in 1952.<sup>18</sup> May all of you reckon the years and know that you are the recipients of all gifts and initiations unto this moment. In order to retain them, from this moment on you must reflect the Love of your Holy Christ Self.

Be ye therefore converted in this hour by the God of Love. And cast yourselves on the Rock of Christ that the overlays of hardness [of heart] of the fallen angels, of the froward heart,<sup>19</sup> of the dweller-on-the-threshold, of the carnal mind might be broken and broken once and for all!

You must know that at a point in every individual's life there is time no longer to choose! For the Law does speak and the right hand of God does descend. And when it does descend, beloved, it cannot be turned back. Know, then, that this is the hour of the conversion of Love.

Let all receive my word and know that I may speak what the Law allows, but I may not speak what it does not allow. Therefore I may not prophesy further this night. I may not open the screen and show you a future, a future without your commitment and conversion to Love. Therefore I say, guard the heart<sup>20</sup> and guard the spoken word.

Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be spared as the children of God.<sup>21</sup> Blessed are ye who send forth Love with no withholding [of Love] no matter what the circumstance.

Yea, the Lord Gautama Buddha, yea, the Lord Jesus Christ have given you an example. Angels of heaven and Ascended Masters have given you an example. Love one another as they have loved you. Love one another as the Hierarchy of Light has loved you, and by this Love convert the millions. By this Holy Spirit that cannot do aught but come into your house because you are so filled with the Love of God, let the teachings be endowed with a life that shall quicken all!

I AM your Rose of Light, your sister of Love. I call my twin flame to true Love, to the true path of the ascension, to the true victory of Love. And I call all twin flames unascended of the Hierarchy of Light to now leave all else for the sake of Love and survive unto the New Day. I call to you [who are] present to call to your twin flames unascended or ascended to heed the call of Love and intensify it in your heart even as you intensify it in their hearts.

I call to the mandala of Lightbearers to be magnetized by the magnet of Love that is now placed by Heros and Amora in this Community as a forcefield of Divine Love. This magnet of Love is so great, beloved, that those who allow themselves to become out of alignment with it will not long remain here, for they will not be able to bear to be in the presence of that magnet while they entertain the perversions of the ruby cross in their beings.

This, then, shall be the key to the salvation of Community as well as the dividing of the way twixt the human and the divine. Your true self is the Divine Self, yet you have a human self. Choose you this day whom ye will serve!<sup>22</sup> As for me and for the Queen of Light, we shall serve the Light and the Love of Light; and we shall become the servants of all who do the same.

With absolute Love and the fire of Shiva and the presence of Kali we come. And the sword of the Ruby Ray does descend for the dividing of the way and the cleaving asunder of the Real from the Unreal. It is done once. It is done twice. It is done thrice. Now, therefore, you have recourse in the

---

<sup>18</sup>Ashram Notes. See p. 216 n. 9.

<sup>19</sup>Ps. 101:4; Prov. 11:20; 17:20.

<sup>20</sup>Guard the heart. See 1989 PoW, pp. 677, 682 n. 15.

<sup>21</sup>Matt. 5:9.

<sup>22</sup>Josh. 24:15.

heart of the Divine Mother.

I seal you in the Love-potential of your own God-free being. May you elect this night to pierce that pearl that the holy oil of Love might be the anointing of your being.

I AM the servant of the rose of Light to be externalized in your hearts.

Messenger's Comments Following the Dictation:

We shall take up the suggestion of the Queen of Light and place our basket before Lord Shiva, the God of Love. And you may place letters or communications of your heart or calls for forgiveness or confessions into that basket to be burned and make your peace with the God of Love, if you will, this night.

I pray for the full power of the God-quality of Love - God-Love on the one o'clock line, God-Obedience on the four, God-Gratitude on the seven, truly God-Vision on the ten. I pray for your victory on the Ruby Ray cross in this hour.

I desire to give to you who have not reached the resolution of Divine Love in your hearts the offering of God's Love that he placed in my heart so long ago for this mission and Jesus' fiery love that burns in my heart. I extend my hand to you, each one, in this hour and I ask you to receive my hand in a transfer of Love from my heart. I ask you to give me, each and every one, all burdens that you discover on the 1/7 and 4/10 axes of your Cosmic Clock that I may cast them into the sacred fire with you and assist you in bearing your burdens of nonresolution.

I call upon my Causal Body of Light and the Causal Body of Lanello that you might receive this Love and know the depth of my Love for you, each one - that you may know the tenderness of my heart, my desire to see you have Love's victory in this life, and my profound grief and sadness when I perceive your expression of free will that takes you in the opposite direction, away from the mystery of Love.

O the great mystery of Love! O the great preciousness of Love! O the heart of Maitreya! I mourn for you when you stray from the path of Love and I rejoice when you find it again.

I pray that this shall be for you a night to remember in the Retreat of the Divine Mother over the Royal Teton Ranch and that you shall emerge in the morning anointed by Love, ready to go forth as a mighty conqueror and a heroine of Light, no longer to step backward a single step on your homeward path of Love.

I will greet you in that Retreat of the Divine Mother with Lanello. And we both will shake your hand. You may give to us with your left hand all that you desire to be rid of. And as you go forth determined, then, to keep that resolve, so it shall be done unto you according to the prayer of your heart and the set of the sail of your ship of life.

This dictation by Rose of Light was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Friday, June 29, 1990, 10:33-11:01 p.m. MDT, during the twelve-day conference FREEDOM 1990: "A New Heaven and a New Earth" held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Rose of Light's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

# Chapter 23

## Beloved Mother Mary - June 17, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 23 - Beloved Mother Mary - June 17, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

IV

You Have Won the Prize!

Now Pass Your Tests!

When the last chord shall have sounded and Finis is written upon the last page of the book of this life, I pray that thou shalt have offered praise unto the Father, Son and Holy Spirit and unto the Divine Mother. And I pray that the single great accomplishment of this life shall truly have been, as the apostle wrote, the bridling of the tongue, together with works that have proven thy faith and indeed multiplied it.<sup>1</sup>

After all, your blessed Bapu,<sup>2</sup> El Morya, is the Chohan of the First Ray and master of the spoken Word through his own Guru, even that Hermes Trismegistus,<sup>3</sup> that God Mercury, even that Great Divine Director, even that Hercules! Thus you should do him proud to have that speech after the manner of the apostles, the Lord Christ, the prophets and the Buddhas.

I speak, then, for your practical implementation of the admonishments of the Queen of Light and of Rose of Light. Blessed ones, the giving of love does come by the release of the love of the heart through the spoken word. And by the spoken word of tenderness and love or perhaps [the] fiery rebuke or chastisement, which is also Love made so practical, you will come to know how more and more Love will flow and how you, in offering Love, may come to the resolution of all that is unresolved and every dispute.

So you have heard that the soft answer does turn away wrath.<sup>4</sup> But remember also these words

---

<sup>1</sup>James 1:26; 2:14-26; 3:1-13.

<sup>2</sup>Bapu [Hindi, from Sanskrit papu ‘protector’]: father. In his October 10, 1981 dictation El Morya said: “Call me Bapu, if you will - ‘Little Father’ - that I might not displace the role, nor of the All-Father, nor of the Great Guru Sanat Kumara.” See 1981 PoW, p. 473.

<sup>3</sup>Hermes Trismegistus was known in ancient times as the great philosopher, priest and king to whom is attributed sacred writings and alchemical and astrological works. Trismegistus means “thrice greatest.” James Campbell Brown writes in his History of Chemistry, “A series of early Egyptian books is attributed to Hermes Trismegistus, who may have been a real savant, or may be a personification of a long succession of writers. . . . He is identified by some with the Greek god Hermes [equated with the Roman god Mercury] and the Egyptian Thoth. . . . The Egyptians regarded him as the god of wisdom, letters, and the recording of time.” The Ascended Master Hermes Trismegistus is also known as the God Mercury. See Hermes Mercurius Trismegistus, August 17, 1981, 1981 PoW, p. 711; The Lost Teachings of Jesus I, p. 365 n. 4.

<sup>4</sup>Prov. 15:1.

of the Lord Christ, "By thy words thou shalt be justified, by thy words thou shalt be condemned,"<sup>5</sup> which is to say, judged, evaluated, by your Christ Self, [who is] your own [True] Self, before the Lords of Karma.

One cannot recall into the bowels of the belly the word spoken in unkindness or harshness. One can only chase the words with violet flame and sacred fire and an inner resolve to bring comfort to life, whereby comfort shall surely return to thee.

To be the Comforter in the earth, therefore, is thy goal. And the Lords of Karma have sent a number of representatives of the Divine Mother to this conference that your souls might receive refining and tutoring from the heart of the Mother Flame. Praise be to God, therefore, that I may speak to you long, long before that Finis is written and the last chord is played.

I come, then, in the supreme summer of life. For no matter what your age, truly this is the season for the blossoming of the flowers of the heart and of all of the chakras, for the unfolding of that Love supernal that, because it is truly Love, is so, so practical in meeting the needs of each and every little one.

May you cherish the opportunity to comfort life and thereby to grow in the grace of the Mother Flame that we bear. Truly the sending forth of that Love to meet whatever [is] the human or the divine need is a calling that gives great satisfaction, great fulfillment within.

And by that use of the tongue in [the recitation of] sacred words and [the practice of] holiness do you not atone, beloved, and balance karma of all misuses of the sacred fire in the throat chakra? Do you not increase the kingdom of heaven upon earth?

Do you not increase the awareness of Love begetting Love, whereby all people realize how wonderful it is to be in your presence, and likewise [do you not] let that Love pass through [you to] them as the rose of Light and many petals and many roses - [let it pass] even unto the Buddha locked in each one, even unto the Christ and to the soul who also needs her pathway scattered with roses that she might come of age, no longer to remain a child out of fear but willing to grow up and take full responsibility for this body, this mind, this heart? Truly, when well loved, the soul can rise in dignity to become the bride of her Husband, that Christ who is Lord.

My Son Jesus left a record of Love that is a permanent challenge to the fallen angels who, though they may try with smooth words and smiles, can never truly duplicate Christ's Love to his own, for they have not bent the knee to Christ in his own. And therefore, beloved, there is no comfort in their sweet words, their sugary phrases, none whatsoever! for they are as sounding brass, as tinkling cymbal.<sup>6</sup>

Let it be understood therefore, beloved, that it matters not what one believes as a matter of doctrine. It only matters that Christ-Love does govern all actions, all words, all deeds. See how angels of the Holy Spirit will never leave this Community as you yourselves become rays of Light of the Maha Chohan.

The Maha Chohan has told me to tell you this evening that he desires to tutor your souls. And therefore you must take note from his instruction that he has given to me for you that in his very desiring, in his very intent, in his very pressing in upon you of that Light of the Holy Spirit [that comes] because you have called it forth, [the Maha Chohan is telling you that] even the approach of the Holy Spirit will bring out all that is unlike the Holy Spirit, the density, the clumsiness, the insensitivity, the ingratitude and inappreciation for the refinements of soul.

Thus, beloved, if you are to fast on the Holy Spirit and to drink in that Love, watch what comes out [of you] and rejoice to see all of that substance and all of those thoughtforms and unclean and even foul spirits coming out. Blessed ones, let them come out! let them go! tend the fire! that when

---

<sup>5</sup>Matt. 12:37.

<sup>6</sup>I Cor. 13:1.



they come forth from you they have nowhere to go but to jump into the sacred fire and be no more.

Surround yourself with the solar ring and the tube of Light. Call for the fire of seraphim of God and know that the purging must come! And if it must come, then I say, let it come! Be purged, then, that you might stand on the next step higher in the service of the Lord Gautama Buddha in his stupa.<sup>7</sup>

O beloved ones, the passageway between your perceptions and the Western Shamballa<sup>8</sup> may be at times as thin as a piece of paper, a single sheet, or even a gossamer veil. You are not so very far from the heart of Lord Gautama Buddha. But you could be standing next to him and be a million light-years away in vibration.

We would take you up to the new place of the new heaven and the new earth. There is a passageway to be crossed through your own electronic belt, through the dweller-on-the-threshold, through the psychology of self. As never before, understand that the Hierarchy has released a spiral of a series of initiations, each one unique for each one here. Each one must needs be passed ere you can arrive at the next and the next.

Blessed hearts, will you not be alert for my sake, my Son's sake and for your sakes and the sakes of your children? Will you not be alert, my dear ones? ["Yes!"]

Remember that I have asked and that you have answered. Let us not see another round of nonassimilation of the Word and the Work of the Father and Son in you. No matter what it takes, pursue this assimilation. Let it be an alchemy of bliss and pain, of [the] glory [of the Lord] and the depths of darkness!

Be willing to let your world pass through this process, beloved, ere the world itself as a planetary home pass through it. For in that hour you shall be called to truly be keepers of the Flame of Life with the Maha Chohan, keepers of the flame of balance, keepers of the threefold Light, keepers of the Light itself, as Lord Lanto was,<sup>9</sup> when all of thy house can be filled with Light and there will be no other luminary [to lead a people through] the dark night of the soul and the Dark Night of the Spirit<sup>10</sup> [except the Light of the Inner Christ].

Blessed ones, we are preparing you for the spiritual path to come. We are preparing you for all eventualities and possibilities. You have passed through a physical preparation not without travail, not without intensity, not without stress, not without pressing against yourself and pushing yourself to that maximum potential and output.

Indeed it has been an experience of an inner Armageddon and of physical challenges in the extreme. But have you not learned something about yourself in the process, even one lesson? Have you not learned what reserves you can call upon in an emergency? Indeed you have, beloved. And the Chohans of the Rays have taught you well and shown you just how much God-mastery you can muster when the need is there.

Do not, I pray you, look back in anger. Do not look back in frustration. Do not look back in cursing. But remember that you have responded to the call of Maitreya's Mystery School.<sup>11</sup> You have known [that] this is a path of initiation. You have known that you are called to be disciples, even chelas of Archangel Michael.<sup>12</sup>

---

<sup>7</sup>Stupa. See 1989 PoW, p. 645 n. 7.

<sup>8</sup>Western Shamballa. See 1989 PoW, pp. 419-22, 597 n. 2; 1984 PoW, Book II, Introduction II, pp. 47-48.

<sup>9</sup>During his final incarnation before his ascension Lord Lanto's adoration of the threefold flame within his heart was so great that the intense glow of his divine spark could be seen emanating a soft golden glow through his chest. See Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *Lords of the Seven Rays: Mirror of Consciousness*, Book One, pp. 91-92.

<sup>10</sup>dark night of the soul and Dark Night of the Spirit. See 1988 PoW, Book II, p. 632 n. 14.

<sup>11</sup>Maitreya's Mystery School. See 1984 PoW, Book I, pp. 1-3, 32 (Introduction I), 316-17, 324; Book II, pp. 43-52 (Introduction II).

<sup>12</sup>The call to be chelas of Archangel Michael. See Archangel Michael, February 3, 1985, and Zarathustra, March 31,

Will you not understand when you ask for the unknown, [for that is what the path of initiation is,] and [you] are guided by those whom you trust most, we of the ascended hosts, that we shall lead you through paths of Darkness and paths of Righteousness, we shall hold your hand as you pass through the labyrinth of self and karma and electronic belt and we shall hold your hand as you approach the Mount of Transfiguration?

I will tell you the secret of [the] healing of all distress. O beloved, it is surrender unto God in childlike faith and love and trust, letting go and entering in to the Holy Spirit, to the Father and the Son. Those who think they are doers instead of instruments of the Great Doer become all too attached to their doings, their work, their projects and what they have been through.

There is indeed a Great Central Sun Magnet that does demagnetize from you all burden, all resentment of the seeming hardness of the way. And I use the word seeming because you do not yet have a sense of co-measurement against the backdrop of the "stars," who once were chelas, became initiates and then adepts and then masters.

Blessed ones, few remember having been there before. And therefore, who can equate a certain level of stress or the calling of God to any other level [or calling] that is required? I would not say that you are on the last step of your path of initiation, beloved. [Nor would I say that you are on the first step.] Therefore I urge you to give the Surrender Rosary<sup>13</sup> as part of your morning service that you might truly feel the letting go of the stresses of the four lower bodies and even the slightest twinge of resentment of the [Lord's] Work of past, present or future.

Blessed ones, these momentums must come out. You have won such a prize of victory. Will you spoil the prize as the spoilers would have you do as they would snatch from you, from your very teeth, even that mighty banner of victory and cause you to lose it by looking back in anger? It is the force most sinister that will cause you to do this. And yet you had not the anger in the moment [of joyful service].

You see how the force attempts to paint the past and what has gone by with the blackness of darkness and anger. And therefore you forget the joy and the strengthening and the Presence of God that was upon you through all that was accomplished. And through levels of fatigue untransmuted there comes the bitterness, the recriminations and the blame.

Remember ye are one! As Micah would say, "Remember ye are brethren and sisters of Light."<sup>14</sup> Remember the cosmic honor flame, for this honor flame must be raised up once again in this entire inner and outer Community, in this valley and planetary home.

Let the cosmic honor flame rise [within you] and with it the love of the honor of God, which means [your] taking responsibility for going on. Do not resent that the Path is not yet through but be grateful that the Path is still before you, that you still have life and breath and presence to go on and to fulfill every last requirement of your goal, which is the ascension.

After all, beloved, you have asked El Morya for goal-fitting, and this is what he is about! Some react to one another, forgetting that the Messenger has also spoken, as Morya has spoken, as Archangel Michael and Hercules have spoken. Is this not the way of the First Ray? Do we not love the Law? Or do we resent the Law in its encroachment upon some paltry sense of free will that we believe has been violated?

No one has violated your free will, beloved, but we come for the fulfilling of the law of your free will. Forget not that you have asked. Forget not that you have implored God to use you as his

---

1985, 1985 PoW, Book I, pp. 101-10, 120, 216, 224; Archangel Michael, delivered at the conclusion of the September 29, 1989 Michaelmas service, 1989 PoW, pp. 599-600.

<sup>13</sup>The Fourteenth Rosary: The Mystery of Surrender, booklet, \$1.00 (add \$.50 for postage); booklet and 2-audiocassette album, includes rosary, 2 lectures, and a dictation by Mother Mary, 3 hr., \$12.95 (add \$1.00 for postage), V7538.

<sup>14</sup>Micah, Angel of Unity. See 1989 PoW, pp. 278-80, 810 n. 2.

instrument. When in prayer you ask for all and give your all, please do not complain when heaven gives you all that you need to become who you really are, beloved.

This is an hour when the flame of trust must be rekindled - [trust] in the ascended hosts, in God and in the assurance that both will not fail you, "will not suffer your foot to be moved,"<sup>15</sup> will protect you through angels.

Remember, this life is an endurance test.<sup>16</sup> Remember, there is no injustice in this universe, as Portia has said, which some seem to forget. Let all things be brought to justice by the heart of mercy. And let there be a loving of the Law and the trusting in the Law and the invoking of the Law each moment when you seem to be bowed down by cares, financial burdens, responsibilities and the seeming injustices even of one another.

Little ones, great ones: these things ought not to be!<sup>17</sup>

I rally the chelas of Light to a new day. I rally you to a new heaven and a new earth. And I say to you, not a son or a daughter of Light has achieved Christhood without this sort of testing and greater.

Those [of you] who have come so far and done so well and performed with skill and love, shall you lose that which is gained for not being attentive to the subtleties of the [negative forces], who have extreme envy for your accomplishment and extreme hatred of the Light you bear and curse God that you have provided a way out for all generations to come as a spiritual linkage of Hierarchy and as a physical continuity of being?

You have won the prize! Will you not value the prize and defend it with your Life and Light? Beloved, you have won the prize! And all seek to take it from you and tear down your love of one another and [of] God!

Do you not understand that all these lesser things can be resolved? You can be victorious in all these lesser matters as long as you do not forget that the sinister force of this planet and beyond will be relentless [in their attempt] to take from you the prize! The prize, beloved!

You have won a great prize. And who has declared you the winner? Why, your Father-Mother God and all the hosts of the LORD! Do not cause us to have tears in our eyes because you succumb to the blinding factors hurled against you by the fallen ones as well as the blinding factor of karma itself. For as the saints go marching on with their prize and trophy and their victory, they must needs be prepared for the karma of April 23<sup>18</sup> each and every month until 100 percent is balanced.

You are candidates for balancing 100 percent of your karma! Now, do not be cowards. Do not flinch! Do not reel! Do not turn back, blessed ones. I AM here, truly the Mother, to cheer you on, to cheer on the conquering heroes and heroines.

Understand, beloved, that perspective is a great gift and co-measurement. Seek, then, Cyclopea and the All-Seeing Eye of God to straighten things out. Abandon that two-eyed vision and center in the All-Seeing Eye of God. And do not leave Cyclopea alone until you have that vision renewed of yourself as a white stone<sup>19</sup> in the City Foursquare, which is just above you. So near is heaven, you need not even raise your arm to the ceiling to touch it.

Blessed hearts of living fire: courage, courage, joy in the strength of the Lord! Have you forgot that 156,000 angels are keeping the flame of this retreat? And do you know that they have determined they will not leave you, they will not leave the Messenger, they will not leave this room of God on earth? Blessed ones, they have set up their rotations, moving to and from even the great Great

---

<sup>15</sup>Pss. 121:3; 94:18; Prov. 3:23, 26.

<sup>16</sup>See Mother Mary, August 14, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 585-98.

<sup>17</sup>James 3:10.

<sup>18</sup>April 23 and the Dark Cycle. See pp. 71, 73-86, 120-21, 225-27.

<sup>19</sup>Rev. 2:17.

Central Sun.

Are you not in awe that something must be right here? Someone must be right and the carnal mind of every man a liar and a murderer from the beginning!<sup>20</sup> Therefore cast it out! I tell you, there has not been such a dispensation of the sustaining intercession of the Lord God and his hosts in such times as I care not to number.

Blessed hearts, know the strength of the Lord in your body. Receive it! Claim it! Throw off the anxiety and the fear that causes even the organs in the body not to function! Throw off the rationalizations that you can now eat anything [you please] and still make it [on the spiritual path]!

We have given you a path and a warning concerning the chemistry of the body.<sup>21</sup> Heed it! For it will spare you the acid tongue and the caustic remarks and statements that should make you weep, for they do make the angels weep.

Therefore, beloved, be in control of self, be in control of the mind, be always watchful. Have the vision of the periphery of self.<sup>22</sup> Let this All-Seeing Eye of God rotate around you as a beacon. Beware of temptation. Watch and pray.<sup>23</sup>

You have climbed a mountain of God and you have mounted a spiral of initiation. You are not beggars! You are not paupers! You are not the disenfranchised! And you have the wealth of God's own Causal Body if you will only love enough to bring it down into the physical. And we will not compromise the Law! If you would have abundance, you must love enough.

Blessed hearts, therefore you have wealth in the sense of having accrued to your Causal Body [lessons learned] of tests passed and a work well done. We have entered a new spiral. If you tarry in the old, you will miss the very initiations of that new spiral and the initiation of the spiral by the Great Divine Director.

Therefore, you see, since you have the Light, since you possess the riches of heaven, since you have the wealth of the Teaching, since you have the gold mine of the gifts of God, you have something that the "have-nots" want.<sup>24</sup> And they will trick you and continue to trick you until you [determine that you will] no longer [be] tricked. They will trick you into giving them bit by bit this storehouse of Light and gold and wealth and riches of the kingdom of God.

This reservoir of that which God has given you is so great in the etheric octave that it is able to magnetize to this Community all the supply you need to solve all of your problems. And therefore, do not enter into degrading, self-degrading spirals of recrimination but seek justice, seek honor, seek mercy, seek compassion and seek the freedom to let these things pass through and go on. Let the Light pass through! Let it flush out the Darkness! And do not be caught in the Darkness as it is being flushed out.

It is as simple as this. It is as simple as the words of Jesus. Watch and pray that ye enter not into the temptation to surrender the prize that you have won; but be ready for the earning of the next prize, for it is there. And ye are able. Ye are able! Ye are able.

I AM your Mother of healing, and [the] healing of the soul is what I AM about in this Community. May you seek my Heart as I hold the immaculate matrix and concept on every line of the Clock for the healing of your soul of all hurt and everything else you can name. If you seek the healing of the

---

<sup>20</sup>John 8:44; Rom. 3:10.

<sup>21</sup>See 1987 PoW, Book I, p. 573; 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 39, 257; 1989 PoW, pp. 186, 203-4, 205, 447, 528, 590, 597-98 n. 7, 641; 1990 PoW, p. 211. For list of lectures delivered by Elizabeth Clare Prophet and Herman Aihara on the macrobiotic diet, see 1989 PoW, p. 532 n. 31.

<sup>22</sup>See Lanello, October 5, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 653-54.

<sup>23</sup>Matt. 26:41; Mark 14:38; Luke 22:46; Matt. 24:42-44; 25:13; Mark 13:33-37; Luke 21:34-36; Eph. 6:18; I Thess. 5:17; Rev. 3:2, 3.

<sup>24</sup>Have-nots. See Jesus Christ, February 28, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book I, p. 293; Archangel Jophiel and Christine, March 26, 1989, 1989 PoW, p. 248.

soul, the body will be whole.

In the words of El Morya, *tempus fugit!* Take advantage of the cups of time, for they are finite. And one day there will not be another cup on the conveyer belt for you. Seek, then, God in compartments of time, and by that [God] conquer space.

I trust I shall find you in a higher time and space when next I greet you on the Path. I AM ever your perfect Love and perfect loving Mother.

Messenger's Invocation before the Dictation:

O Lord God Almighty, our Father-Mother God, we pour forth gratitude and praise unto the Cosmic Virgin, unto the Divine Mother and unto the Immaculate Heart of beloved Mary, the Queen of Angels, the Queen of Heaven.

Blest Mother of our Saviour, O blessed Mother Mary, we ask you in this hour to intercede on our behalf and in our names before the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit.

Beloved Mother Mary, intercede for planet earth, for Lightbearers of a cosmos, for healing, that we might pass all of our tests and be victorious in all of our initiations, that we might demonstrate victory over our karma and the abundant Life and, above all, the victory of the Sacred Heart of Jesus as the fiery love of God and the wisdom of your Immaculate Heart for the resolution of all levels of our being and our mission on planet earth.

Beloved Mother Mary, we trust in thy Immaculate Heart that does hold the immaculate concept for all. Therefore let thy name be blessed forever and forever and forever as we salute the Divine Mother within thee, thou who art our blessed Mediatrix before God.

Into thy keeping, O blessed Mother, we place our lives, our hearts, our children, our loved ones and all Lightbearers. And especially do we pray for those souls who may be lost, that thou wilt keep them in thy care together with the souls of Light aborning in the womb of God.

In the name of the Father, the Son, the Holy Spirit and the Divine Mother, Amen.

Benediction:

Beloved Mother Mary, we bow before the Light of thy Heart and the adornments of Light that God has placed upon you. We are grateful for your divine intercession even in timelessness through the past and unto the future. We are grateful that you have been called and that you answered the call to bear our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. We are grateful that you have come to also bear our souls in the womb of the Cosmic Virgin, to assist us in giving birth to our own Christhood. We are grateful for your comfort, for your teaching, for your chastening, for so tangible a presence that you bring to us in this hour.

Beloved Mother Mary, accept anew in this moment the offering of our lives unto thee, unto Jesus, unto God, unto all of the heavenly hosts and the entire Spirit of the Great White Brotherhood - All Saints in heaven. We are grateful to be extensions of thy Mother Flame in earth and of all Ascended Lady Masters of heaven. We are grateful to be the hand of God in action and desire only to be a ray of Light descending in form that the world might know that Christ the Lord is come, our Saviour, our risen one.

This night, we let go. We confess our sins and our going out of the way. We cast them into the sacred fire and we pray for the new birth and the resurrection on the morrow that we might go forward in the positive Presence of our God with a positive attitude to solve every personal, community and world problem that is ours to solve through God, and God alone.

We accept thy word and thy intercession and ask for thy blessing upon this tangible offering of our gratitude. Let it be multiplied truly a million times over for the glory of God and the victory of his own.

In the name of the Father, the Son, the Holy Spirit and the Divine Mother, Amen.

This dictation by Mother Mary was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Saturday, June 30, 1990, during the twelve-day conference FREEDOM 1990: "A New Heaven and a New Earth" held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Mother Mary's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

# Chapter 24

## John the Beloved - June 24, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 24 - John the Beloved - June 24, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

V

The Great Mystery of the Christos

The White Cube of the Holy City

Beloved of God,

I come to you as the beloved of our Lord. And yet, who is not his beloved?

I will tell you who is. It is the one who loves the Law that is written in his heart, who desires only to press his head against his breast<sup>1</sup> to hear the heartbeat, even the pulsation, of a cosmos. Therefore the one who does love the heart of Christ, the soul of Christ, the mind of Christ, the body of Christ is truly his beloved and in the sense of discipleship is also his wife, his bride.

Therefore I come to you to contemplate the great mystery of the Christos imparted to me and others who surrounded him on earth and [to] many who since that hour have studied at the feet of Jesus, not only in his [etheric] retreat [at] Saudi Arabia but also in other retreats of the Great White Brotherhood.

And Jesus also assigns his apostles and disciples who are ascended ones in heaven to teach in all of the etheric retreats, that souls coming from earth's schoolroom who have embodied the spirit of compassion and humility and works of love in his name might by their love-tie to him now be illumined and walk in a higher wisdom,<sup>2</sup> even [the wisdom of] the things that have been hid from the foundations of the world.<sup>3</sup> These things are made plain, beloved.

Wherefore, those who are taught [in our retreats] desire with a profound desiring to go out again. Even the very ones who may have accepted the denial of reincarnation [while in embodiment] are now so ready and anxious to go back to the plane of earth and to go after those who have been lost to a false doctrine.

You are some of those who have come forth, who have been granted the dispensation to go out of the schoolrooms of Jesus to take embodiment, to find the thread of contact, only to come upon such a cornucopia of books and teachings [dictated to the Messengers] as to fill your heart and your cups and your chakras with the light of wisdom and a deeper love and an inseparable oneness with your

---

<sup>1</sup>John 13:23-25; 21:20.

<sup>2</sup>I Cor. 2.

<sup>3</sup>Matt. 13:35.

Lord that you might go out and bring that teaching to the many.

Thus, you have come to this conference seeking the new heaven and the new earth [and] the renewal of your soul and your four lower bodies as the bride of Christ; [you have come] seeking the New Day, knowing well that you have made a transition and been transformed beyond the old order to the new. For you are already entering in to the new cycles that are presaged by this twelve-year cycle<sup>4</sup> [of] transmutation you are in.

I say to you, then, that the coming Light and the coming resolution and the coming alchemy beyond the year 2000 is already a coil within your bodies. And so while you walk the earth during this time of trouble, trouble such as has not been seen for many tens of thousands of years,<sup>5</sup> you are caught up in the Holy Spirit and in the New Jerusalem, which is the Retreat of the Divine Mother,<sup>6</sup> that City Foursquare in the etheric octave that has its focus over this place.

Thus, you come and go in the Holy City, frequenting it even as you might have frequented an ancient city of Atlantis or Lemuria in the days of their golden ages. Therefore you are content with less in the physical octave, for you daily enter into the luxury of the Light itself in its redundant beauty and abundance. Thus, you live in your own aura in the Holy City, even as I, John, received that city and saw that city descending out of heaven, a bride adorned for her husband.

Is not the white cube<sup>7</sup> of self the distillation of self, [truly] all that one is in Reality, one of the stones that is a part of and does make up that Holy City? See this giant cube [of the Holy City] glistening white suspended in a cosmos! Surely it is the manifestation of many souls who have become brides of Christ with or without the full knowledge of his Divine Doctrine such as you receive here. For by Love and Love alone these have gone through paths and initiations and the purification of the soul and the four lower bodies.

Love is truly the foundation of all that you will be taught and [all that you will] know of a higher Truth. And without that Love, an intellectual recitation of the knowledge of the teachings of Jesus Christ will not suffice.

Thus, [in order to have and to maintain and to sustain the new heaven and the new earth in this octave,] it is necessary to have a living bride in ye all, [to have] a living witness, a living Messenger [and] the activity and the action ongoing of the Light being received, the Light being multiplied, the Light rejoicing in you and you rejoicing in the Light. Such as this is the new heaven and the new earth!

Those who can leave behind the [karmic] burdens of the past may experience this day in their own being and world, consciousness and heart this new heaven, this new earth and maintain it and sustain it through the walk in this physical plane, through the initiation even of the crucifixion, even to the descent into hell<sup>8</sup> to preach to those lost, [to those] gone astray or [to] the proud rebels who remain [in a state of rebellion] and will not be converted.

It matters not whether or not one [to whom you preach] is converted [by you]. It does matter that you speak the Truth and that you speak the message of salvation in “the tongue,” as the Messenger has told you, and in the understanding of your hearer. Therefore let the heart communicate to the heart. This is the true love of Christ and his beloved.

I ask you, then, to seek another gift of God, the eighth.<sup>9</sup> It is the new chelas, the new students

---

<sup>4</sup>Twelve-year cycle. See pp. 64, 71, 73-76, 85-86, 194, 225, 226-27, 233 n. 2.

<sup>5</sup>Dan. 12:1.

<sup>6</sup>See 1989 PoW, p. 756 n. 5.

<sup>7</sup>See p. 278 n. 26.

<sup>8</sup>See 1989 PoW, p. 258 n. 5.

<sup>9</sup>The seven new things. As outlined in The Scofield Reference Bible, chapters 21 and 22 of the Book of Revelation reveal seven new things, or gifts, of God: (1) the new heaven, (2) the new earth, (3) the new peoples, (4) the Lamb's wife, the New Jerusalem, (5) the new temple, (6) the new light, and (7) the new paradise and its river of the water of



of the Ascended Masters, Lightbearers the world around, who have never heard the message of the Ascended Master Jesus Christ. I ask you to seek them [out] by a number of avenues.

May you seek them by announcing, in your local newspapers or in publications [that advertise] spiritual activities, a new meditation group forming so that they might come [to your meeting] and know what is the meaning of a worldwide Ashram that requires no signing of papers, no membership in the outer, no disaffiliation from any other organization but only the [application of the] heart and only a minimum time spent each week in joining, [each in his own home,] in these [meditation] rituals<sup>10</sup> given by El Morya unto the glory of God in Christ in every man and woman.

Thus, beloved, lead them gently by the hand, and by and by let them know of Saint Germain and give them the Messenger's teachings on the steps of alchemy and precipitation.<sup>11</sup> For many love ritual, many love meditation [and] many know already the power of visualization.

Think what can be done for the healing of planet earth [as] more and more come to understand the tremendous power of the group meditation in the Sacred Ritual for the Creation of the Cloud!<sup>12</sup> This ritual, beloved, is surely a testimony in itself of the works of God in his sons and daughters. For when this ritual is followed as given, and the concentration and the love and the visualization and the tremendous desiring to bring about constructive world change are there, [change will come about and] it will be noted, it will be seen. It is almost, beloved, almost impossible to give a nine-day novena or longer in the ritual of the cloud and not to note physical, tangible results!

This method, beloved, of visualizing and intensifying the white fire, the Light of the I AM Presence, does result in the following for the individual who does give it for the benefit of others: the pulling down of the cloud that has been called "the cloud of unknowing."<sup>13</sup> But it is "the cloud of knowing"! For you do not worship the unknown God<sup>14</sup> but you worship the known Divine Monad, the I AM THAT I AM, the YOD HE VAU HE, even the Holy One of God!

And this Holy One is surrounded by the intensity and the immensity of the fiery cloud of the entire Causal Body of your lifestream. Thus, when you call down that Light [in order] to intensify it in this physical plane for physical alchemy, you are also drawing down your Mighty I AM Presence, your Causal Body of Light (known as the Dharmakaya), and you truly walk with God. And not only are you singing the song "I'll Walk with God" but you are walking in the Presence of the I AM.

And this [cloud of knowing] does come to you and you feel it now and then. And it is Holiness unto the Lord! Holiness unto the Lord! Holiness unto the Lord! And you see why the ancient priests had [these words] inscribed upon their foreheads.<sup>15</sup>

Thus, Holiness unto the Lord! was the acknowledgment of the holiness of the I AM THAT I AM that should be the vestment and the clothing of the true priest of God. And aye, it is [the sign] of the true Order of Melchizedek.<sup>16</sup> For those who would walk as priests and priestesses of the sacred

---

Life. The Messenger read and expounded upon Rev. 21; 22:1-7 prior to the dictation.

<sup>10</sup>The Ashram Notes by El Morya includes six Ashram Rituals designed to link "hearts worldwide in a ritual of scheduled group meditations": The Unison Ritual; Great Central Sun Ritual: O Cosmic Christ, Thou Light of the World!; Sacred Ritual for Attunement with God's Holy Will; Sacred Ritual for Soul Purification; Sacred Ritual for Transport and Holy Work; and Sacred Ritual for Oneness. Ashram Notes. The rituals are also published in Ashram Rituals, 64-page booklet. For more on the Ashram Notes and El Morya's "Ashram," see p. 216 n. 9.

<sup>11</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, May 28, 1986, "Saint Germain On Alchemy," includes nine steps to precipitation, given in Portland, Oregon, 3 audiocassettes, 4 hr. 16 min., S86096; 2 videocassettes, 3 hr. 38 min., V8607-0.

<sup>12</sup>See p. 288 n. 3.

<sup>13</sup>In the fourteenth century an anonymous mystic wrote a practical guide to contemplation entitled The Cloud of Unknowing. The book explains that one must put a "cloud of forgetting" beneath one and all creation and reach above to penetrate the "cloud of unknowing" that lies between man and God. The reader is admonished to "strike that thick cloud of unknowing with the sharp dart of longing love, and on no account whatever think of giving up," for it is within that cloud that the soul unites with God.

<sup>14</sup>Acts 17:22, 23.

<sup>15</sup>Exod. 28:36-38; 39:30, 31.

<sup>16</sup>Ps. 110:4; Heb. 5:5-10; 6:20; 7; 1988 PoW, Book I, p. 216.

fire must have as their goal walking in the Presence of the I AM.

As part of that goal, you know that you must first embody the Christos and the mystery of the Christos. And do you know what enhances your embodying of that Christ? It is knowing the mysteries, knowing the teachings, knowing the words of Jesus Christ recorded in the Gospels [and] also in those Gospels not included in the church canon<sup>17</sup> [and recorded as well] in all the dictations of beloved Jesus that have gone forth through the Two Witnesses<sup>18</sup> of his Light, who are the two pillars in this Church Universal and Triumphant.

Know, beloved, that these words are precious, likewise the teachings of the Messengers on the mysteries of Christ. As these are brought to the fore and you contemplate them and learn them anew and go through the exercises of memorizing some, knowing others by logic, knowing others by an inner understanding, you will see how even the meditation upon the Word of God will bring you nigh - unto what? Unto the Holy Spirit. For it is by the Spirit of the Lord that every Christed one does speak.<sup>19</sup>

Blessed hearts, you who seek to know the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ as your own by the living flame of Love, known of the saints of all ages, must seek to remove every little crumb of barrier that would come between you and that Christ and his divine embrace wherein you find yourselves in the arms of Jesus [as] his very own, his precious one, his beloved.

And as you understand that the Father is your very own Father and yours alone, though he be the Father of a cosmos of evolving souls, so you will come to know that when you are with Jesus he is all yours and you are all his. And, of course, there is no barrier in Jesus toward loving you as his own and his bride.

Therefore seek to remove from self those things that you know would stand between you and the divine embrace of your Lord. Only to remember this, only to long for this, only to anticipate this [divine embrace] each day as the bride waits for her Divine Lover! So, blessed ones, this and this alone ought to keep you alert, awake, alive, fully conscious and loving him, performing your duties that are always with the intent of feeding his sheep.<sup>20</sup>

I come representing the new heaven, the new earth and the new Church, the new Light and the new people and the new covenant. I come, beloved, therefore, with my offering. Whether your group of meditators and communers with God should take up the calling of the Lords of the Seven Rays [and teach their way] or go into the Lost Years and Lost Teachings of Jesus, it is up to you to present a graded, measured program to souls of Light whom you may contact.

If [you truly desire] this [work] to be the center and circumference of your life, if removing stones of stumbling between yourself and the heart of Jesus means to become his Sacred Heart, to work his works and to pronounce his word, then I say, accommodate your lives and see to it that [the work does in deed become] the central theme of [your] giving [of] the Word of God to those who have somehow heard [of it] somewhere but have not made the connection.

O pray with such fervor daily that you may meet them, that God will bring them to you! Fill your cup with Light so that you are never empty but always ready to give. Care for your body as Jesus

---

<sup>17</sup>When the scriptures that were to make up the New Testament canon (the official list of approved scriptures) were being selected, between the second and fourth centuries, writings considered to be heretical by the Church Fathers were excluded. Some of these scriptures were unearthed in 1945 near Nag Hammadi, Egypt. See *The Nag Hammadi Library in English*, ed. James M. Robinson (San Francisco: Harper and Row, 1988). Other early Christian texts not included in the New Testament are published in *The Secret Gospel: The Discovery and Interpretation of the Secret Gospel According to Mark*, Morton Smith (Clearlake, Calif.: Dawn Horse Press, 1982); *Pistis Sophia: A Gnostic Gospel*, G. R. S. Mead (Blauvelt, N.Y.: Spiritual Science Library, 1984); and *The Other Bible* (including "The Hymn of the Pearl"), ed. Willis Barnstone (San Francisco: Harper and Row, 1984).

<sup>18</sup>Dan. 12:5; Rev. 11:3-12.

<sup>19</sup>Matt. 10:19, 20; Mark 13:11; Luke 12:11, 12; 21:14, 15.

<sup>20</sup>John 21:15-17.

would and see to it that that body is the servant of the Lord and renewed daily in right nourishment, setting aside all that dulls the mind and weakens the brain and does not allow the full faculties to express.

Your mission will be as good as your physical preparedness. For without the horse, how shall the rider ride? And the mind and the soul and the heart, the desire body and the memory must ride upon a good steed of physical body. And this physical body can be re-created this day by Light if you are willing to put yourself through the process.

Therefore, eat to serve. Eat to live. Eat to deliver the Light. And set aside all indulgences that detract from your calling, whether these be an absence of mental or emotional discipline or otherwise.

I, John, speak to you of the mighty miracle that is spoken of about myself; and I will tell you that the miracles of God that took place in my life were the result of the cells of my body being filled with the Light of my Lord, who is evermore the Lover of my soul.

By the Ashram Ritual meditations given to you from the heart of El Morya this process will take place. The cells must be emptied of such things as lust and desire and slothfulness and addiction to the things of this world that come from drugs and other substances. But, beloved, the cells filling with Light become as that shaft of Light which Jesus purely was, as described by Saint Germain in the opening chapters of [his Studies in] Alchemy.

Thus, that shaft of pure Light can be you! And the ray of Light, of course, comes from the Source, the Unfed Flame - the Light of which, as it has been said, does not cast a shadow. Since that Source is limitless, all you need to understand is the mechanism - I say, the mechanism! For it is a lever of thought! It is a lever of the mind! It is the strength of the mind that opens each day and says:

My God, enter my temple!  
Thou art eternal Life,  
The ever-pure crystal stream of that River of Life.  
Thou art the new Life  
And I AM limitless Light in manifestation!  
And my Life goes forth  
To quicken those who have no Life in them.

Thus, you serve by the descending Niagara of the Light of the I AM THAT I AM, which is closer and closer to you; for this is the known God and the known cloud of infinite energy.

Infinite means infinite! If you have infinite energy, then the wise dominion of your four lower bodies will enable you to serve to a ripe old age, will guarantee your self-mastery, your ascension and that many, many souls will come into the communion of the Lord by the work of your hand.

Praise God that the Book of Revelation has survived! Praise God that my Epistles have survived! May you read between the lines; for herein are the mysteries of God hidden from the foundation of the world and, as it has been said,<sup>21</sup> truly the understanding of your own psychology.

What is desire? One must know desire. And I trust, for I have been sent by Hierarchy to speak on this, that my words concerning desire may seal the many words that have already been spoken to you by those of our bands.

Desire must be acknowledged. One must own [one's wants. One must own up to] what one wants, what one does not want - to be, to do, to speak, to write, to work - the desire for something or to do something or to be something. It is sinful, as El Morya has recently said, to serve God anywhere and not desire to do so. It is a sin to be in church yet to not want to be there or to serve on the staff of this Community while one desires not to serve.

---

<sup>21</sup>See pp. 65-67.

Does that mean because you have a desire not to do what is the will of God that you should not do it and simply go off and play and pipe your tunes and frolic in the breezes, going here and there subject to every whim? I say to you, beloved, not so. Not so! [The key] is to acknowledge one's desire and then to decide if one wants to retain or to remove that desire.

Desires are many times the product of the lesser self, of upbringing, of the norms of civilization, the goals of society, pressure from peers or authority figures saying to you, "You ought to do this, you ought to do that, you ought to do this, you ought to do that," until your life is filled with oughts and you do not own anything you are saying or doing.

It is very clear from scriptures, from the holy words of God spoken by prophets and avatars, Christs and Buddhas, what is the Path, what is the holy will of God. Therefore, if thou desirest not this path, then use the tools you have been given so carefully by the Masters and the Messengers to go after what you perceive in yourself as inordinate desire. But even this you must do because you desire to do it!

So you see, beloved, if there is no resolution, if in the four lower bodies, part pull this way, part the other, where will the soul be? Where will the energy be? Where will the integrated personality in God be?

Overcoming incorrect desire may be a great struggle. But if you determine that you do not want that desire, then you [must] give your commitment to God [that you will] to be done with it! Invoke his mighty intercessors, the Archangels and others of the heavenly hosts, to assist you in binding that [wrong desire] and replacing it by right desire through an ordered life of the study of the scriptures, of prayer, of service and of joy and happiness in personal fulfillment that is indeed lawful and does not detract from [your] goal of service.

For God has never decreed that you should be without love and joy and happiness and freedom; and you need not feel guilty because you desire these, for life must be in balance. And when Adam was alone and cried out for an helpmeet, so God gave her to him, and the twin flame came into manifestation in this plane. Therefore you understand that you are not meant to be alone and that is why there are many gathered together.

But often the karmic lot decrees some situation that must first be fulfilled before the promises of God can be fulfilled in you. For you see, beloved, in the past you have broken your promises to God. You have broken his laws and commandments and you have even broken your vows. Therefore to arrive at the place of balance and perfect happiness may involve passing through a dark passage or the dark night of the soul.

But if the desiring is for true resolution and not partial, if the desiring is to enter in to the Light fully clothed with the wedding garment,<sup>22</sup> then the desire will also be to bear any burden, to pass through any situation that is unpleasant, to work any work. For one knows that this is a means to an end and [one] can keep the perspective that it will not always be this way.

God does keep his promises, beloved, but they are always fulfilled according to his Law of Love. You are a major part of the fulfillment of the promises. And in some instances God can do nothing for the one who ties up all of his energy in a negative spiral and refuses to come out of a black cloud even while asking God to save him.

So you see, beloved, free will harnessed to God's will unlocks the power of a cosmos for constructive change. Try it and you will see! But do not forever be a house divided against itself.<sup>23</sup> And if you do not find the means or the way to come to a resolution of what you believe to be the highest calling and the highest will, seek [the] aid of counsellors, ministers, friends and brothers and sisters on the Path; for they will comfort you and support you.

---

<sup>22</sup>Matt. 22:1-14.

<sup>23</sup>Matt. 12:25; Mark 3:24, 25; Luke 11:17.

If you cannot come to your resolution, then, it is better to go the way of whatever desire it is that you have.<sup>24</sup> For sometimes, as you have also been taught, the fulfilling of these desires does ultimately satiate the soul, who cries out and says, "Enough is enough! My cups are full and yet I am still empty! Now I am ready for the path of the Lord."

Thus, beloved, it may seem a complex process. But if you would read of our Lord's struggle with this, go back to Gethsemane.<sup>25</sup> For as he had his Gethsemane, you may have your own, and the outcome must not depend upon disciples sleeping yonder but upon your communion with God.

This teaching of the Ascended Masters provides you with the means of oneness with God in the most graphic and concrete way by the science of the spoken Word, which is truly the ancient science of the Word practiced on Lemuria, Atlantis and in golden ages.

You have the means to achieve whatever you desire.

This day define your desires and have done with it and get on with your life! For if you think you may betray the Lord or the Community or the kingdom of God with your wrong desires, I say, your wrong desires are already a betrayal. Therefore, let us find true resolution and be "true to thine own self."<sup>26</sup>

May you therefore define the self that you would be true to, whether [you will be] true to the not-self, with its hankering after this and that, true to the soul that is often silenced by the strong intellect, true to the heart in its purest form as the heart of Christ or true to the heart in its sympathetic manifestation before transmutation in the sacred fire. So you see, beloved, even to be true to oneself, one must desire to know who is oneself and one must choose what self one is to be.

Now I would read to you from my own Epistle, that I might illumine this word:

That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of Life;

(For the Life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and shew unto you that eternal Life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us;)

That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.

And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full. - I John 1:1-4

Know, then, that you who would be apostles of Christ Jesus must seek and find and desire with all of your desiring to hear this God, this Father, the I AM THAT I AM, this Son Jesus Christ.

To hear, to see, to look upon and to handle with your hands, truly hands of the heart and the mind, to handle and touch the garment of Jesus as he wears the ruby robe in this hour, as you see the Sacred Heart, to touch his hand, to say, "I have known him intimately," you need not have lived two thousand years ago. You need only to feel such a Love in your heart [whereby you know] that Jesus is standing next to you. He places his arm on your shoulder. His hand rests [there] and you feel that current transferred. And you dare touch his garment, for he is your brother.

This is the Life that is manifest with you now. And I bore witness that I had seen it, and you must also bear witness. Yet you cannot bear false witness. Therefore by the Holy Spirit and by one-pointedness you must seek to "acquaint now thyself with him and be at peace."<sup>27</sup>

What message, then, did we bring for having known Jesus Christ? And what message will you

---

<sup>24</sup>See the Great Divine Director, December 31, 1985, and Sanat Kumara, July 27, 1986, 1986 PoW, Book I, pp. 170, 171-72; Book II, pp. 620-21.

<sup>25</sup>Matt. 26:36-46; Mark 14:32-42; Luke 22:39-46.

<sup>26</sup>"This above all, to thine own self be true, / And it must follow, as the night the day, / Thou canst not then be false to any man." Shakespeare, Hamlet, act 1, sc. 3, lines 78-80.

<sup>27</sup>Job 22:21.

bring? What will you conclude from your intimacy with Christ? This is what I wrote:

This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is Light, [that God is Light! that God is Light!] and in him is no Darkness at all. - I John 1:5

This we saw and witnessed in Jesus. Blessed ones, had my witness been a flesh-and-blood witness, should I have seen the Light? Nay! I saw in him God and I saw in him the Light which is God. And in the place of the Light enshrined as Christos there is no Darkness at all! May it be said of you. May you say it of yourself as a fiat:

Lo, God as Christ lives in me!  
And God is Light!  
In him is no Darkness at all -  
Therefore in me there is no Darkness of wrong desire!  
It is consumed by the sacred fire!  
I submit myself even unto the alchemist's cauldron.  
I submit myself to the sacred fire!

This Truth was and is true of me as it was and is true of Christ Jesus, and this is why we preached the message. We were the witness and we must witness unto the Christ in every man that is the manifestation of God.

If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in Darkness,<sup>28</sup> we lie, and do not the Truth. I John 1:6

I am saddened to tell you, beloved, how many liars there are in Christendom according to this definition. For they do lie. For they yet walk in Darkness as false shepherds, false Christs, false pastors, false rabbis, false priests, beloved. They are abroad in the land, and they transmit their Darkness to others and cannot bear witness to the true and living Ascended Master Jesus Christ! Why do they resist speaking of the Ascended Master Jesus Christ? It is my opinion that they do not desire to see him in the full power of his Ascended Master Light Body, capable of being present here and now simultaneously at every altar and pulpit upon the planet and beyond. They do not desire such proximity, for his Light will expose the Darkness; therefore their doctrine must be dark to camouflage the entire matter.

Yet I call you to be all Light and to embody this Divine Doctrine, for

If we walk in the Light, as he is in the Light, we have fellowship one with another ...

You see, the logic is that if you do not walk in the Light as he has walked in the Light and is in the Light, then you cannot have communion that is true with one another. For true communion is through the Light of the heart, through the Light of the Holy Christ Self, through the Light of the River of Life, through the Light of the I AM Presence.

Do you share true Love, true Communion, true Oneness? How often in the human consciousness do you believe you have a friend and the friend turns out to be a foe?

Blessed ones, there is only one friendship. [And that] friendship is with the Light. And this friendship with the Light is communion with Lightbearers, and this [friendship] is enmity with the world.<sup>29</sup> And if you desire both, I counsel you to fast and pray; for the path that desires both the Light and the god of this world is fraught with pain and detour and ultimate compromise and failure. Have fellowship with the Light and you will see how you will arrive at the gate of Light, your ascension.

---

<sup>28</sup>When the d in darkness is capitalized it means the misqualification of the absolute Light and the absolute God. We are not speaking of humanity's relative good and evil but of the Absolute Evil of the fallen angels in their rebellion against Almighty God.

<sup>29</sup>James 4:4; Rom. 8:7.

“If we walk in the Light, as he is in the Light, we have fellowship with one another,” as I have said. And the conclusion of the matter is

...and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin. - I John 1:7

And what is the Blood of Jesus Christ? It is the Light that was coursing through his veins, the Light with which he filled my cells. For I drank this “Blood.” I partook of this “Body.” He placed that Light in me.

And therefore the miracle of my having been boiled in oil and having emerged again<sup>30</sup> was solely the [demonstration of the] scientific principle of this Light. For this Light is real and tangible! And when it fills all of thy house, thou shalt find thyself a walking miracle, not exception to cosmic law but the fulfillment thereof.

This is the meaning, then, [of the Blood]. You may have never understood how the physical Blood of Jesus Christ could cleanse you from all sin inasmuch as he is not in embodiment today. But you can understand that the Light that coursed through his veins, in the blood vessels, in the blood cells themselves, as [these cells are] cups of Light, was truly for the atonement of world sin. And that Light has increased a millionfold to the present hour [in the Ascended Master Jesus Christ] and it is yet able to cleanse you of all sin.

Do you see, therefore, why there is a belief in a personal Saviour? [It is] because people need a personal relationship to God. Embrace the Lord Jesus Christ as I did! For in one lifetime I did ascend to the throne of God to be at the side of the Lamb. This is the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ. May you know it and be satisfied.

Are you unsatisfied because you eat the wrong foods, have the wrong thoughts, have the wrong feelings? Are you troubled about nothing? Do you argue about nothing? Why is it? Is it because your soul is not satisfied in the arms of the Divine Lover? Is it because you have not embraced the Light nor been willing to be crucified for the Light and by the Light until you became all Light? Why do you fear the process? Some of you stand still as horses who will not move, who will not budge. Or shall I say mules?

Blessed ones, when it comes time to cross the river, then cross the river! I say, you will not take another step for ten embodiments if you are a coward before some pain, some challenge, some difficulty that you must pass through, undo, resolve and deal with. Yes, beloved, you shall not enter in until you become all Light! [And] you shall not become all Light until you can wrestle with the Darkness and stand and still stand.

This is fellowship. You see, when one embraces the Path, one has fellowship through Jesus Christ, and [through] his Light and the Light of God, with all other Lightbearers. And there is a cosmos of [a] community of Lightbearers in whom you find support for this process.

The Devil will also make you believe that you are alone. But once you embrace the path that leads to this consummate Love in Light, you will never be alone. Only the Darkness of the fallen ones whispering in your ear [like a broken record] that you are alone, neglected, betrayed, hurt, bruised, beaten and mistreated [must be overcome, for] that [lie] will come from their lips. It is a lie! Tell that one it is a lie and he is a liar. Believe it not! Take counsel with the Mind of Christ and occupy your own mind with the Law of God and be not deceived by devils that whisper and spirits that mutter.<sup>31</sup>

If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the Truth is not in us. - I John 1:8

Thus you see, beloved, [sin] is the karmic condition. All must know that they have karma. But if they are karma-free, are they without sin?

---

<sup>30</sup>See 1986 PoW, Book II, p. 367 n. 1.

<sup>31</sup>Isa. 8:19.

Blessed ones, the very fact of being in the body of flesh and blood at this [level of] density means that there is the dust of sin upon one's garment. It is not an octave of heaven, beloved, in which you abide; and therefore make haste to seek your mansion secure in the worlds of Light. Thus, do not deceive yourself, whether you have the violet flame or the Teaching, that you are without sin but understand and be somewhat uncomfortable in your present dilemma, the dilemma of the relative plane.

Therefore I wrote,

If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. - I John 1:9

If we confess our sins . . . If you acknowledge wrongdoing, then you have begun the path of undoing wrongdoing. Therefore, you will find the Lord Christ faithful and just. This involves the faithfulness of the Law, the justice of the Law and the mercy of the Law. But [even though] you know the Truth, [that Christ Truth] does not absolve you from balancing your karma, yet [it] forgives you your abrogation of the Law, which guarantees a continuity of life and breath so that you can [go forth as a responsible son of God to] undo the wrongdoing for which God has forgiven you through his Son.

Therefore, Christ not only forgives [our sins] but by Light cleanses us from all unrighteousness. That cleansing is the cleansing of the mind and the heart and the soul of the propensity to unrighteously apply the Law. [And Christ teaches us what is] the righteousness, or the "right use," of the Law and [what is the unrighteousness, or] the wrong use, of the Law. His Light will polarize you to the love of the Law and the respect of the Law and the honor of the Law and therefore its right use in all cases.

If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us. - I John 1:10

And his word is the Word which was in the beginning with Brahman.<sup>32</sup> Therefore if you desire to return to the perfection and the absolute of the Beginning, acknowledge that in this state (which is not the absolute state) where you abide, sin is an ever-present possibility.<sup>33</sup>

One can make karma, beloved, without thinking. And that is why it is not good to be in a state of nonthinking. One must be tethered in the mind. One can easily make karma without feeling, without desiring, without planning. Be on guard and never be in these "un" states.<sup>34</sup> Be fully conscious. For that [karma] which you have paid a price to balance, I should think you would not desire to take to yourselves again.

My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ, the righteous:

And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world. - I John 2:1, 2

And this is the Truth. Therefore this "Advocate with the Father," when you go to him immediately in your heart and confess [your] sin and ask for opportunity to make it right, will give you that forgiveness [so that] you may go out and right the wrong. But if you dally in a sense of shame and in the burdens of the devils that move against you and [you] do not attempt to make this thing right with your brother, with your sister, with your community and in your interchanges with the world, you see, you postpone the day of forgiveness [and therefore] the day [when you begin the process of] being truly cleansed from [the karma of] all unrighteousness, the day when you have a dispensation from God to undo what you have done.

Life is too short, beloved, to postpone this confession to your Lord, your Holy Christ Self, and through your Holy Christ Self to the Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore understand why it is necessary to

---

<sup>32</sup>John 1:1, 2; 1988 PoW, Book II, p. 501 n. 8.

<sup>33</sup>"To err is human, to forgive divine." Alexander Pope, *An Essay on Criticism* (1711).

<sup>34</sup>See the Goddess of Light, October 8, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 691-94, 697-98, 699-700.



[enter in to the ritual of forgiveness] daily, hourly or weekly, [as needed,] to take Communion again, to receive the Body and Blood of Christ in that ritual and to start afresh, clothed upon with his Light and his blessing.

Now, beloved, the Law also decrees that if you make a mockery of the Advocate and a mockery of the law of forgiveness, soon the Law will not act in your behalf<sup>35</sup> and the Advocate must allow the karma to descend. Thus, do not trifle with the Love of God.

It has been said that the Gospel that I wrote and the Epistles, even as I recorded Jesus' Revelation, the final book of the New Testament, are mystical in nature and appeal to the mystics of all ages. Truly it is so, for that which I have written is written out of the Sacred Heart of Jesus.

These teachings and my witness are a witness of Love [and] of a Love that gave me the ability to see beyond this plane into many octaves of the etheric and even into Death and Hell, wherefore I could record scenes taking place in the Great Central Sun at the throne of God even as I could record scenes shown to me in the very depths of the degradations of hell.

These mysteries cannot be seen and felt and known tangibly except you have embraced Love and a path of initiation. You must be locked in the grip of Love, of your Christ Self in Jesus, as well as in that Armageddon, [seeing it through] to the end [of] the carnal mind and the dweller-on-the-threshold, whether of yourself or another or the planet.

When you are engaged in [both] absolute Reality and absolute Unreality, then your vision by Love can span all dimensions. But when you are not, beloved, then your vision is limited, the senses of the soul are not awakened, the third eye has no clear vision. For, beloved, God does not open the kingdom of heaven to you unless he also open the depths of hell.

Thus, as Christians have had taken from them by a false doctrine and a misunderstanding their oneness with the Christ Presence or with Jesus, as they have not understood the nature of Evil [registering] in the unconscious [mind] or the karma of relative good and evil [registering] in the subconscious [mind], so they live in a narrow spectrum of words, which sometimes have no meaning [except] that they have heard [them] again and again and again through many lifetimes.

Understand, then, beloved, that those who truly love will not fear the embrace of Christ or the challenge of Death and Hell. This is why this Church Universal and Triumphant is founded upon the Rock of Christ, the Lord Jesus, of Buddha, the Lord Gautama, and of all saints in heaven who have come into that conformity to the Inner Christ and the Inner Buddha.

May you know, then, that all of heaven champions your Cause. May you champion heaven's and your own lawfully, lovingly, truthfully, honorably, wisely and faithfully.

I AM ever your friend and brother in the living flame of Love and its witness,

John, the beloved of our Lord and Saviour

This dictation by John the Beloved was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Sunday, July 1, 1990, during the twelve-day conference FREEDOM 1990: "A New Heaven and a New Earth" held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under John the Beloved's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

Behold Love!

Beloved mighty victorious Presence of God, I AM in me, my very own beloved Holy Christ Self and Holy Christ Selves of all mankind, beloved K-17, beloved Lanello, the entire Spirit of the Great White

---

<sup>35</sup>See Omri-Tas, July 7, 1984, 1984 PoW, Book II, pp. 137-39, 146 n. 3.

Brotherhood and the World Mother, elemental life - fire, air, water, and earth! By and through the magnetic power of the immortal, victorious Threefold Flame of Love, Wisdom and Power anchored within my heart, I decree:

I AM content with Thy great plan,  
The Wisdom-Love I really am.  
O Secret Love Star, amplify  
The Flame above me in God's eye.  
Let me Perfection see and be,  
For only Love can set me free.

O Love, invoke the Word He spoke!  
O now be free! The Path to see  
Is one of living just to be  
All Love in action now!

Love-Wisdom flame I AM!  
Love-Wisdom now command!  
Love-Wisdom does demand  
The Power to express  
True beauty's happiness -  
My world enfold right now!

(Repeat decree between each ending:)

By Christ-command (3x)  
By God's own hand (3x)  
By Love's great Power (3x)  
Every hour, every hour, every hour

And in full Faith I consciously accept this manifest, manifest, manifest! (3x) right here and now with full Power, eternally sustained, all-powerfully active, ever expanding, and world enfolding until all are wholly ascended in the Light and free!

Beloved I AM! Beloved I AM! Beloved I AM!

## Chapter 25

# Beloved Theosophia, the Goddess of Wisdom - July 1, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 25 - Beloved Theosophia, the Goddess of Wisdom - July 1, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

VI

Signs of the Soul's Longing for Christ

The Living Flame of Love Would Have You unto Itself

Have you heard the song of the soul in this octave, how God has caressed those who have come to bring even the message of the arcing of the soul's longing unto the heart of God? Have you heard your own soul's longing, singing unto her Lord as you have heard this one sing?<sup>1</sup>

Indeed you have, beloved. And each one of us in our own time and space has come to the place where God has allowed us to experience an aloneness. And this aloneness is made plain even by the heart that yearns for only one company, her Lord. And though she may seek company with many and in many places, yet the soul is not satisfied and longs for that one who is the Christ. For only the Christ can bring to one the twin flame and the consummate union, ultimately, in the white fire body.

Therefore, beloved, I come to you, the Almighty having called me to bear the office and mantle of Goddess of Wisdom. And I come to show you signs of the soul's longing for her Christ that are not always self-evident. It may be in the sickness of the mind or the body. It may be in a state of mourning or depression. It may be in a sense of some sadness that something is missing in one's life and all too often one may think it is human companionship. But in reality this sadness and this longing is so loud that it tells one that one has already discovered in many lifetimes that human companionship at its best still leaves something wanting.

There are those who cover this longing with addictions that allow escape - alcohol or drugs or endless noise or endless preoccupations. There are all manner of byways that the soul may take, even entering a roller coaster that goes only down and not up again.

There are peoples all over the world today who long for this union of Love with Christ, yet they know not how to break the bread of Life. They do not understand the Word or the Work of the Lord. And in many, many cases, even if they did understand, they would not be prepared for a path

---

<sup>1</sup>A recording of “Pie Jesu” from Requiem by Andrew Lloyd Webber was played as the meditation music prior to the dictation.

of sacrifice. They would not be prepared to be called by Jesus or Maitreya to undergo the rigors of undoing the old self, peeling away the layers of snakeskins and finally arriving at the place where one may put on the wedding garment, the bridal veil, one may be received by her Lord.

To this end Jesus inspired upon the Messenger to teach the way of Saint John of the Cross in the living flame of Love<sup>2</sup> to show that all saints have gone through the trial and the testing of feeling worthless, feeling rejected by that Lord and by that Christ but often imagining that that rejection or injustice or put-down has come from this or that person.

But, beloved, when you bring yourself nearer and nearer to the living flame of Love, that Flame, because it is Love, because it is the Holy Spirit, because it is the intense fire of a ruby itself, must show you those things which must needs be corrected, transmuted, refined, balanced, resolved ere you may enter in. You can think of the living flame of Love as the doorkeeper who loves you so much that the Flame itself will not allow the door to be opened until you are fully prepared, thus sparing you the rejection by the Lord Christ.

The living flame of Love will lick away at your wounds. And if you enter into the Flame and into the wounds, you will know the Refiner's fire,<sup>3</sup> you will know the sting from which the little child cries out when knees are scraped and must be dressed. Thus, beloved, [as] you comfort the child, [so] the living flame of Love does comfort you.

Instead of wallowing in your sense of absence of self-worth or citing the neglect by God or the neglect by El Morya or the neglect by the Messenger of your lifestream, rather understand that this aloneness goes far beyond anything in the immediate interchanges of day-to-day life. It is, as you would call it, a syndrome and [one] symptomatic of the very necessary malaise that precedes the quickening, the awakening and the path to the resurrection.

We have brought to this conference many statements and teachings that, when put together and assimilated, can solve many a seeming impasse in your own soul. The soul that would fly must oftentimes learn to crawl and walk, and walk the karmic path.

I come to bring you the wisdom of God and the promise that is always kept that you can fulfill all things in Christ.<sup>4</sup> And the day of your passing through the fiery trial need not be long, perhaps only a few hours or, out of the reckoning of time, as a bad dream [that] may seem eternal but take only seconds. [But] it [requires] the preparedness of the heart, the cast of the mind and a will and a willingness to have a heart for anything that you are called upon to do, having as a foundation and knowing that this Light, which is God, is Love and [that] this Love is truly Love and will deal with you lovingly in all things.

If you have sent forth anti-Love, you might be required to feel the sting of anti-Love before it pass into the Flame, else how can you have the lesson? Can you not wager that those things you experience when you have a sense of injustice toward someone may be [given to you] that you might learn to develop a sensitivity toward life where you yourself have been insensitive?

If you would be sensitive to the flame of Love and to the Christ, you must also be sensitive to every part of life and lesser creature. You must be able to enter the heart of the bird, the deer, all creatures and the brethren and sisters.

The living flame of Love would have you unto itself. But, beloved, most do not desire it without some period, not measured by time, in that state of aloneness until they come to the day of knowing that nothing in the whole wide Matter cosmos will suffice to remove this pain of soul aloneness.

---

<sup>2</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, Living Flame of Love, 8-audiocassette album, 12-1/2 hr., A85044. In this series of Summit University lectures, the Messenger offers an in-depth study of the "Living Flame of Love" and other selected works of the sixteenth-century mystic Saint John of the Cross. Includes teachings on the soul's mystical experience in Christ through the initiation of the dark night leading to the alchemical marriage.

<sup>3</sup>Zech. 13:8, 9; Mal. 3:1-3; Matt. 3:11, 12; Luke 3:16, 17.

<sup>4</sup>Phil. 4:13.

When all other things in your life that are not going right come into focus as that particular problem of the soul, then, beloved, you cry out and the Christ does enter, and you transcend the sense of a material universe. You walk in spiritual octaves while fulfilling every requirement of your embodiment in the physical [octave]. You have new strength, new fire, new determination. This world holds nothing for you and yet you are ready to endow this very world with all of the God of Love and to reach out to those who have not come to this point of realization.

And now you become a Mother even as you are Father, Son and Holy Spirit in some aspect of being. And you learn exactly what to feed the little birds that have not yet flown. You learn what to give them, what not to give them, what they can assimilate, what they can take in, what makes them sing.

Yes, beloved, you begin to be so concerned [that you will] be able to give to everyone whom you meet exactly the alchemical formula that is taken always from the flame of Love, that this is now what consumes you - not your aloneness, for you are becoming "all one" in God, but concern for others' aloneness, others' ignorance, others' insensitivity to what are the exigencies of the hour, to what a lifestream must accomplish in a given span to move on in the grand and noble coursings of this cosmos.

Yes, I did sit at the feet of Jesus as Mary [of Bethany].<sup>5</sup> And in my soul and in my Christ Flame I took in and recorded, as on thread of gold, those words, those sayings, those mysteries.

There came a time when Jesus took the inner circle of holy women and disciples into another octave, even out of the body, and did show us how the entire Matter universe is as a scroll - [how] it is [as] a compartment of time and space [unrolled] and a relationship of stars and bodies and planets and individuals who must have and do require some physical existence and experience and a passage through a place such as earth.

[The Master] showed us that all of this is thus created for souls not yet fulfilled in Christ, not yet wed, not [yet] inseparably bound to him. And he did also show us how this Matter universe, when no longer needed, is rolled up as a scroll<sup>6</sup> and put to the torch and is no more. You might say that he showed us that the Matter universe in its entirety is but a reference point for the soul in the state of becoming who has not yet the gossamer veil and the web of Light and the Deathless Solar Body to penetrate the Spirit cosmos.

It was then that I had impressed upon my being the nonpermanence, the nonpermanence and hence the nonreality, of matter in one sense of the word. For unto those who have transcended it, it is as a dreamworld. But to those who are locked into its spirals by karma, it is concrete and very real. Yet as soon as you mount the stars to another octave, to the etheric plane, and wear the garment of that octave, this world does appear as a dream.

Thus in my final incarnation<sup>7</sup> when I took the dictation from Jesus and Mother Mary and the Ascended Master Hilarion (who had been the apostle Paul) to write down these truths, I so inscribed Science and Health with Key to the Scriptures and other writings whereby those souls in transition who could equate both with the unreality of matter and with the necessity for a concrete existence might find the door and the way out.

I can tell you, beloved, these writings, like many other teachings and expressions of the mysteries of God that have been categorized as metaphysics, have surely opened doors to those of a spiritual consciousness who did have within themselves the gift of Christhood and a threefold flame and who

---

<sup>5</sup>Theosophia, the Goddess of Wisdom, was embodied at the time of Jesus as Mary of Bethany. The Messenger was embodied as her sister, Martha. See Matt. 26:6-13; Mark 14:3-9; Luke 10:38-42; John 11:1-45; 12:1-3; Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Lost Teachings of Jesus II*, pp. 46, 229, 230, 247-48; Archangel Raphael, October 12, 1985, 1985 PoW, Book II, p. 581; 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 340-41.

<sup>6</sup>Isa. 34:4; Rev. 6:14; Gospel of Thomas, logion 111.

<sup>7</sup>In her final incarnation, Theosophia was embodied as Mary Baker Eddy (1821-1910), founder of Christian Science in the latter nineteenth century.

were at that place of longing that precedes the soul's transiting<sup>8</sup> beyond these material spheres.

But in the hands of those of only a physical awareness, this teaching has become an orthodoxy shrouded in the limitations of their own minds. Therefore it has become a dogma. And it has become a prison house for some. And those without the Holy Spirit have not been able to succeed in applying this truth to the victory of their souls but, in fact, in its misapplication have made serious karma as they have denied medical assistance and care to those in need. Thus the dilemma, beloved, of being a scribe for God and a reformer and of bringing to the forefront truths with which the many are ill-equipped to deal.

Not so [with] my sister Martha, who stands before you. For she did receive this word even at the same level in which I received it when I wrote it, when she began to read this textbook at the age of nine. And therefore she could be God-taught by Jesus in these mysteries and encompass and understand even the heavenly hosts and reincarnation and karma and what was really [meant] when I wrote, "There is no life, truth, intelligence nor substance in matter . . ." <sup>9</sup>

And thus, by and by her inner walk with me (as I was then ascended), and with Jesus and Mary and Paul, brought her to the conclusion that those who in this world [and] in this life controlled the spreading abroad of Christian Science, the publication of what I gave forth, did not have a chalice big enough to hold what these truths hold.

Thus I remained to comfort and to teach her, not without hope that one day she could bring forth the true understanding of these mysteries. For in their true understanding, beloved, they have also given to her strength and vision and the absolute belief in the absolute God. The faith you have seen in this Messenger, then, is based on the knowledge within of the inner geometry of God and the inner science of Being.

When you have the conviction of the Divine Science and of cosmic law that assures and governs all things, you can truly, as I wrote, quoting Jesus, say to this mountain of karma, this mountain of trouble, this mountain of illness: Be thou removed!<sup>10</sup> And believing, and not only believing [but] having faith, and not only having faith but having internalized the scientific principles of the Word and Work of Christ, you can know that it is done! For you have applied principles that are unerring when they are applied through the Holy Spirit and not through a mental science that uses only the mental body and only the mental body's logic.

Thus I would read to you from my writings, as did John the Beloved [from his]; for I would like to make clear the intent so that you might also understand how misinterpretations have led this movement and its followers far afield from the true spirituality of the Word incarnate.

I wrote the question:

What is the scientific statement of being?

And the answer:

There is no life, truth, intelligence, nor substance in matter. All is infinite Mind and its infinite manifestation, for God is All-in-all. Spirit is immortal Truth; matter is mortal error. Spirit is the real and eternal; matter is the unreal and temporal. Spirit is God, and man is His image and likeness. Therefore man is not material; he is spiritual.<sup>11</sup>

---

<sup>8</sup>transitioning

<sup>9</sup>Mary Baker Eddy, *Science and Health with Key to the Scriptures* (Boston: First Church of Christ, Scientist, 1875), p. 468.

<sup>10</sup>"And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God. For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them." Mark 11:22-24. See also Matt. 17:20; 21:21.

<sup>11</sup>Eddy, *Science and Health*, p. 468.

This is a formula of healing that is complete when understood. But when not understood, it becomes a denial of the very physical existence and the platform of material evolution that is indeed necessary to the soul and is indeed “real”<sup>12</sup> so long as the soul requires this wavelength, this vibration.

Thus, [some] Christian Science practitioners have used this almost in a mental malpractice, denying that anything imperfect [has existence at all], denying that matter itself [has existence], with the result that by their will they have prevented karma [i.e., imperfection] from manifesting and unwittingly postponed the day of the soul’s dealing with that karma, [that imperfection]; [moreover, they have] denied the necessity of pain [and they have] denied the necessity of suffering, and therefore [they have] denied pain and suffering itself as a condition of matter.

Thus goes the circular logic, [which, alas,] never ends. And these so-called Scientists, without the Holy Spirit, have found themselves denying angels and Ascended Masters and Cosmic Beings [even] when they have seen them face-to-face [after] having [themselves] departed this world.

Therefore to understand this [scientific statement of being] does require the true spiritualization of consciousness. It is simply the absolute and ultimate statement of the Law that when one is wholly God-identified, the life, truth, intelligence and substance of one’s being cannot be confined to matter or to a limited wavelength or to the conditions of mortality or [to] that condition of sin of which John spoke<sup>13</sup> that is even a very part of the condition of this octave.

In the universal sense, then, Mind is All. Mind is God and synonymous with God and contains all and is the All-in-all. And this allness of God does endow the Matter universe and the materialization, or the “Mother-realization,” of form wherewith the Divine Mother clothes the naked soul.

And so, as long as souls must abide in a temporal universe, the infinite Mind of God will place a portion of that Mind and of its Light in that dimension, thereby giving truly a temporal reality to matter, to physics, to molecules; so, [you see,] one cannot whisk away the universe, [as some attempt to do by mental willing or wishful thinking,] so long as one is locked into the spirals of karma.

But God has said, “I will not leave you comfortless; I will come to you.”<sup>14</sup> Therefore the Mind of God, the Person of God, the Presence of God, does descend even to this lowly estate.

Therefore, Jesus Christ was that Word incarnate. And before he agreed to embody, the Light shown in the Darkness of materiality and the Darkness of materiality comprehended it not.<sup>15</sup> And therefore we had to behold his glory, even “the glory as of the only begotten Son of God, full of grace and truth,”<sup>16</sup> in the flesh, in the human body, in that manifestation.

And I tell you, the matter body of Jesus Christ was real [in its time] and you are real! And yet you are finding day by day new wavelengths of reality until the passage of the soul from the Matter cosmos to the Spirit [cosmos] “in the twinkling of an eye” shall be hardly noticed.<sup>17</sup> For it [shall be for you but] an infinitesimal increment of vibration from the one to the next.

Thus it is said that “Spirit is immortal Truth.” And you can affirm that the Spirit of the I AM THAT I AM with you is immortal Truth, is the Light endowing every cell of your being with some portion of that Spirit cosmos that you can contain, thus enlivening and quickening the matter molecule until for this moment, this twinkling of the eye of God in eternity in matter, it is real.

“Matter is mortal error” when it contains mortal error by vibration, by endowment, by misqualification. But in and of itself, matter, being the substance of God, is neither sin nor the sinner.

So you understand that even matter at its low vibrating wavelength is the Light of God coalesced

---

<sup>12</sup>i.e., it has a quasi-reality

<sup>13</sup>See pp. 319-21.

<sup>14</sup>John 14:18.

<sup>15</sup>John 1:5.

<sup>16</sup>John 1:14.

<sup>17</sup>I Cor. 15:51-53.

to “comfort ye my people,”<sup>18</sup> who need this arena of life. Yet, for the purposes of divine healing, it is good to know that matter only has the power you give it to entrap the soul to be diseased or to succumb to death.

Taking care to call for the violet flame to transmute all that you have superimposed upon matter, you can then lawfully say, “It is not real.” For anything that is karma-less and karma-free that has to do with matter can definitely be cast into the sacred fire and no longer be an encumbrance. Thus in a given lifetime you rise and pass through many levels of density unto less density, unto Light.

Truly “Spirit is God . . .” And truly you are made in “His image and likeness.” You are indeed spiritual beings, but the patterns made in the heavens<sup>19</sup> are intended to be stamped upon this matter manifestation. And even unascended evolutions of a place like Venus take on a much greater symmetry and quality of beauty and Light in their so-called material forms. But these “material forms” are so far above the wavelength of your present forms that you would say they are not matter, and yet they are of matter and in the Matter cosmos and therefore most real for the duration of this span.

It is true that you are “not material” in the ultimate sense of the word. It is true, however, that you have material thoughts, carnal thoughts and material vibrations, [carnal vibrations]. And insofar as you do, you endow them with reality by the Light that flows over your crystal cord, even making a god of them, of your possessions or of yourself. And this you can do. For it is written, “I have said, Ye are gods; and all of you are sons of the most High.”<sup>20</sup> You are “God” in the sense that you have free will to qualify God’s energy. And if you wish to create a memorial of yourself in matter, you can give semi-permanence to anything.

And there are those who use this Science, even “Christian” Science, to maintain a material status quo of riches and of health - using this Science, [that is,] misusing it, to deny their karma and [to] effectively dodge it. But unknowingly they only postpone the day of reckoning when they must reincarnate and hopefully be placed by the Lords of Karma in another type of environment where they no longer must grapple with the misuses of the Divine Science that Jesus taught and that is a part of his doctrine.

Thus, you see, beloved, I may wear the mantle of Goddess of Wisdom, but I yet retain karma with earth’s evolution for their willful misunderstanding of this very textbook of Science and Health and other writings. And I remain to serve with earth and her evolutions until every last Christian Scientist, so-called, is liberated from his own misconceptions and spiritual-material blindness.

Blessed hearts, I am grateful that you allow me to speak on these things. For though I have spoken of them before,<sup>21</sup> I would come again that you might know how [the] many phases and manifestations [of] religion [on earth today], though not being that far off the mark, may be to those who misunderstand and misapply [them] truly a prison house.

I ask, then, that you see how important it is for the Divine Doctrine [of Jesus Christ], now made perfectly plain through this Community and Church, to be spread abroad as far and as wide as you can spread it. For you will assist many reformers [of the past, such as myself,] who were not able to give the whole Truth, for the dispensation for the whole Truth [to be delivered to mankind] had not yet come [from God]. You will be able to give such reformers and scribes, [who are either ascended or in higher octaves or perhaps reembodied,] the opportunity to balance this karma [they incurred for the error that crept into their belief systems] and to lead their flocks home to the Mighty I AM Presence.

There are any number of embodiments that I had between that two thousand years from the time

---

<sup>18</sup>Isa. 40:1.

<sup>19</sup>Heb. 9:23.

<sup>20</sup>Ps. 82:6; John 10:34.

<sup>21</sup>See the Goddess of Wisdom, January 16, 1977, 1977 PoW, Book I, pp. 33-40.



of Mary of Bethany to the time of Mary Baker Eddy. And during these centuries I myself passed through the initiations with the saints in the Church and even in the East and did study under the great Lights [as I] prepared for this mission.

Therefore, beloved, I studied under those who gave me the teachings of the control of Nature and natural forces. And I was gifted, by the grace of God, whereby through this teaching and writing [of Christian Science] many were healed. But it was truly by the grace of God and my oneness with Christ Jesus, even as the beloved Aimee Semple McPherson was the instrument of Jesus' healing and his Holy Spirit.<sup>22</sup> Though neither one of us had the full outer understanding of what was taking place as he healed through us, yet many were converted to our respective churches and faith and remain there to this day.

They must be liberated into the higher walk with God. Yet these above all do resist this Path and Truth. May you pray therefore for the binding of all erroneous misinterpretations of Christ's true doctrine. And may you call for the binding of the planetary dweller-on-the-threshold that affects all churches and all churchgoers.

My presence with you today is that I might transfer to you at the soul level and at the level of your Holy Christ Self this cube of Light that contains the understanding of the science of Truth and the true Divine Science, which, when you have it at inner levels, becomes a profound strength and foundation for all that you are carrying forward. And the teaching in this activity is, of course, a science in itself.

I come with a comforting rod of Wisdom, which I offer to John the Beloved, that Love and Wisdom might assist you as you must come now to the place, each and every one, [of] facing your Atlantean karma and [dealing] with the [karmic] cycles of April 23;<sup>23</sup> [in order to be successful, you must] directly challenge all misuses of Power. With Wisdom and with Love you can do this, beloved.

May you understand that in the past many have had Power and have abused it and therefore [they] must submit in time and in some sense of the word to those who may yet be abusing Power [in order] to learn the lessons of being on the receiving end [of such abuses] and then to work together [with them] in Love and Mercy and Divine Justice and Wisdom for the true [and righteous] exercise of authority when it is given.

All organizations and institutions must have individuals with varying levels of authority, beloved. El Morya has stated wisely that there are no perfect leaders. Many may be tyrants. The perfect leader is no longer found in this world, for the perfect leader is truly Christ the Lord. And when the leader becomes that Christ, that leader is not long for this world except by very special dispensation.

Thus, beloved, whether or not this Church Universal and Triumphant, [including] its branches in Teaching Centers and Study Groups, does continue to thrive and to grow and to expand depends on [an] enlightened leadership that is full of compassion and the Holy Spirit and that is careful before the power and the authority that is given not to abuse it and not to crush new souls on the Path.

I pray that you pray for the leader within you to rise up and take dominion and that you surrender to that leader and to that law and to the justice, which is absolute and unerring, of your own karmic condition.

I pray that you study the profiles of many [successful leaders in every field] and [the books and courses of] those who are professional teachers in these subjects [today on] how to be a good leader, a good administrator, [and] how to be the servant of all if you would be great among men.<sup>24</sup> The true leader is first and foremost the servant who humbly remembers at all times that he is actually

---

<sup>22</sup>Aimee Semple McPherson (1890-1944), evangelist who founded the International Church of the Foursquare Gospel. See Magda and Jesus, April 9, 1982, 1982 PoW, Book I, pp. 247-48, 250, 252, 257 n. 5; Elizabeth Clare Prophet, July 7, 1985, 1985 PoW, Book II, pp. 453, 454-60.

<sup>23</sup>See pp. 302-3, 306 n. 18.

<sup>24</sup>Matt. 20:26-28; 23:11; Mark 9:35; 10:43-45.

the employee of the Christ of the ones whom he must lead.

Therefore, beloved, let us see and study and come to the gentleness of heart. So, the gentle Spirit most holy shall impart a power not of this world and a fire to consume all temporal power and tyranny and totalitarian regimes.

If there is to be leadership and the shepherding of souls and true ministers of the Word, there must be those who will be sensitive not to hurt any “one of these little ones”<sup>25</sup> and who will always remember: Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of these little ones, even unto the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me, Christ Jesus.<sup>26</sup> I think, beloved, [that it is wise] before addressing anyone [to take that] very simple pause to remember that [although] that one you are speaking to may be a soul bereft of Christhood yet [that one is] still that potential Christ, that potential God.

May you find the profound love of John the Beloved that is great enough to overcome this insensitivity to others, this abuse of Power that results in idolatry, [the personality cult] and so forth. And may you find in the wisdom of the Divine Science, which your Messenger is so capable of teaching you, the wise dominion over self whereby you will never trample upon another. If each one does make himself/herself the committee of one to see to it that this is done, you will see the dream, even the childhood dream of the Messenger, come true.

How oft has she recited the mantra and repeated in her heart, “For the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of God, as the waters cover the sea.”<sup>27</sup> It is the dream of all the saints in heaven. It is the dream of your hearts. It is the longing and the fervor of your souls that not one shall be lost.<sup>28</sup> And you see [now] such a short time [allotted for their deliverance] and you see such a clenched grip of orthodoxy upon the people of all nations and you cry out to God [for their deliverance].

Well, beloved, balance the threefold flame. Become shepherds, truly understanding the mantle of leader, and it shall be accomplished.

Therefore we have contributed our flames this day to the blessed El Morya, the blessed and most beloved one whom we all adore.

Surely he is the example of enlightened leadership. May you resist not his rules of order but remember that you did ask to be part of the highest and the greatest spiritual community that exists on the face of the earth today. By your example this can live forever; for that is its Divine Plan, undergirded by this Divine Science of Love and Wisdom and ultimately of Power.

I withdraw now into the Mother Flame of Wisdom to comfort life by teaching, ever teaching wise dominion.

When you determine to be self-disciplined, I am there affirming the Truth, the immortal Truth of your being, and affirming this scientific statement of being whereby you may be clad in the matrix held for you in the Immaculate Heart of Mary, our Mother.

I am never far from you and here to see to it that this Church shall remain an open door for higher and higher Truth and shall build no fences against Truth or against the entering in of all nations, kindreds, tongues and peoples who are of the Light.

I thank you for your patient attention and your Love.

I am your sister on the Path.

This dictation by Theosophia, the Goddess of Wisdom, was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet following John the Beloved’s dictation on Sunday,

---

<sup>25</sup>Matt. 18:6, 10; Mark 9:42; Luke 17:1, 2.

<sup>26</sup>Matt. 25:40.

<sup>27</sup>Hab. 2:14; Isa. 11:9.

<sup>28</sup>Matt. 18:11-14; Luke 15; 19:10; John 17:12; 18:9.

July 1, 1990, during the twelve-day conference FREEDOM 1990: “A New Heaven and a New Earth” held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under the Goddess of Wisdom’s direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

## 25.1 I AM the Witness - July 1, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 25 - I AM the Witness - July 1, 1990

I AM the Witness

Beloved Mother,

...I must offer my witness to you as the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood.

During the dictation of the Maha Chohan on Pentecost, I experienced something that I’d never before seen. Throughout his dictation as I gazed upon your face, all else on the altar was obscured by an intense white light. The very flames of the candles were not visible to me as this light was so bright. However, when I looked on anything but your face, the light receded from my sight. I could look at the microphone directly in front of you or at your arm or dress and all would appear normal. But the instant I looked back at your face, the light would blot out everything else. This continued through the entire dictation and did not cease until the Maha Chohan concluded his address.

This experience occurred regularly during the dictations at “A New Heaven and a New Earth,” though not as intensely, with one exception. During, I believe it was Rose of Light’s dictation, the Master called to her twin flame and at that exact moment the intensity of the light shot up so that it was as a blinding flash. It almost hurt to look directly at you when this took place.

Furthermore, during some of your lectures on Phylos, I felt my heart burn as you spoke, no doubt as the apostles’ did when they met Jesus after his resurrection and yet did not recognize him. I experienced a burning joy in my heart, as I sat and listened to you, that almost made me forget what you were saying. The quality of the radiation in my heart was such that it distracted me from your words. Once again I have to say that the love of the Master was pouring out from you to contact all who were there and all who will see and hear your lectures.

I never looked for this to happen, but as it has, I feel that it must be witnessed to you that someone has seen this great Light of the Masters radiate from you. I do bear witness of the fact that you are the true Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood and that the Masters do present themselves to mankind through you. Their Light and vibration is tangible to those who have eyes to see and ears to hear.

God bless you, Mother, for your service and the sacrifices you have made to be where you are today. You are an example and guide to us all and I desire to support and assist you in your mission unto the victory of every Lightbearer on this planet.

All my love,

N.B. Testimonies of disciples of Jesus Christ and the Ascended Masters stating their witness to the power of Truth in their lives will regularly appear in this column in the Pearls of Wisdom. If you would like to witness to the power of Truth in your life brought about through the Ascended Masters and their Messengers, we welcome your testimony for publication. Your letter will be kept on file in our archives but your name will be withheld from this page to protect your privacy and your progress on the Path.



## Chapter 26

# The Beloved God and Goddess Meru - July 8, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 26 - The Beloved God and Goddess Meru - July 8, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

VII

The Vision of a New Age

A Babe in the Arms of the Divine Mother

The divine plan for the golden age, beloved, does indeed begin with Cosmic Christ illumination for all - beginning with those who will understand that to be a shaft of illumination's flame, to be a pillar of the Light of God that is the Feminine Ray anchored at Lake Titicaca,<sup>1</sup> is to open the door to that golden age.

Therefore let the goal of your battles fought and won, your entering Armageddon on the astral plane through your good works and decrees - let the goal of that service in the court be to clear the way through the astral plane for illumination's flame to descend from the Central Sun into the hearts of those who are most receptive, most ready by their inner discipleship and most illumined in the inner mysteries.

It is a question of percentages. This figure, [numbering the disciples and the mystics,] cannot be known or told by you. [Suffice it to say that] if a certain percentage of the evolutions of this earth are reached who achieve that thread of contact with the true orb of Cosmic Christ illumination that is their Christ Self, their Mighty I AM Presence and the Central Sun, then you will see that the opening will widen and a continuity of individual Christhood might be the very element that, forged and won, can be the restoration of hope - the hope of the yellow ribbon and the tie that binds, the hope that does become by faith even “the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen”<sup>2</sup> that shall surely come to be.

There will not be allowed a golden age based on any other foundation, beloved, for only by Cosmic Christ illumination can the evolutions of earth be entrusted with the science that is present and the future science that is to come.

---

<sup>1</sup>The God and Goddess Meru focus the Feminine Ray of the Godhead for the planet at their retreat at Lake Titicaca in the Andes mountains, South America. Lord Himalaya focuses the Masculine Ray for the planet at his Retreat of the Blue Lotus in the Himalayan range. (See also Hercules, October 10, 1988, and Mother Mary, October 11, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book II, pp. 626, 645, 646 n. 5.)

<sup>2</sup>Heb. 11:1.

Now, the crown chakra is the highest [chakra] and is reached by the soul by the raising of the Mother Light and the purification of all other chakras. This is why the foundation you lay in your decree work is so necessary. For in the process of world transmutation, you are also clearing your individual chakras and clearing the way for the pure Light rays of the seven rays to be anchored in them.

Therefore, beloved, neglect not the crowning glory of the conclusion of your services, [which is] to offer [an illumination] decree on [the 12-o'clock] line. For it is on the 12/6 axis of your Clock and on the Second Ray [that you gain the mastery of the crown chakra]. Neglect not to offer all that is given in this [decree] work to the Buddhas [and] to the Bodhisattvas [in embodiment], to the World Teachers and Maitreya, to Gautama Buddha [and] to all of the Buddhas and Bodhisattvas at inner levels [and] to those waiting to embody.

This world needs the rain, even the yellow rain, of Cosmic Christ illumination. I know that you perceive this, and the Goddess Meru with me knows that you perceive this. But, beloved, it is one thing to perceive it and one thing to initiate the spiral.

The spiral of illumination, as illumined action, is defined as the internalization of the Christ consciousness. This comes from above, from God your Mighty I AM Presence. But it will never come [to you and it will never] be anchored without your in-depth study of the Teachings that have been given. [For these] are keys that will unlock doors to your own being, [to] your [own] psychology and ultimately to the Mind of God that is intended to embody through you.

Thus, you crochet many chalices that are filled with illumination as stitch by stitch, loop by loop, you are understanding the Teaching in all of its precepts, and this truly is power. It is the power of the Second Ray. It is the power of illumined action.

You take for granted the lights in this room, electric lights, electricity. You take for granted energy, you take for granted even candlepower. But, beloved, imagine yourself on a darkened star, a darkened world where the only light there is the Light that shines from the heart.

Be prepared to illumine a world, not by technology but by your heart flame. And even in the darkest night of a darkened world, that Light raised up will draw all similar Lightbearers unto you.

Earth is in this [darkened] state now, as are her evolutions.

People are blinded by their karma and their lusts, by their programming, by the media and the press. And therefore, you must have a powerful sun center, individual by individual, to draw to this place those who can be God-taught, who are teachable, who are humble enough and without fear to receive the chastening rod of Love's wisdom.

Those who fear contact with God often fear contact with the Messenger. Those who have not much soul-stuff or heart-flame development seek by every means to avoid the encounter, for they have not internalized the chastening Love of the Father-Mother God that peels away and peels away the stubborn pride and allows the soul to take flight in the joy of her own inner illumination. O the child that is neglected is the child that weeps! Therefore seek correction while you have one who holds our rod in your midst.

The divine plan for the golden age of Aquarius, beloved, is surely [to be found in] the illumination of one Francis Bacon, of one Saint Germain and his beloved Portia, setting the tempo that you have glimpsed in this century and did glimpse formerly in prior golden ages of Atlantis and in the last age of Aquarius. May you understand how this illumination - and that is the meaning of the [word] gold, and golden in the term golden age - can enable you to have such great freedom.

See how beautiful is the combination of the color bands of the violet and the purple with a golden yellow! See how one sparks the other and how God-government in the earth can truly be.

Blessed ones, the fact that it can be owes much to a determination and a sacrifice that you have

given and which I counsel you not to regret. Do not regret now the putting back together again of the cosmic honor flame of this Community, each one toward the other and the entire Community toward every part of Life.

This is a moment when you can excel in highest good and rise to the capacity of truly embodying that golden age, as Hope has told you,<sup>3</sup> in your aura, in your being, even as you receive the Second Coming of Christ in your temple.<sup>4</sup> For the moment of this initiation, as you have been told concerning the descent of the City Foursquare,<sup>5</sup> comes to each individual soul as she is prepared [for it].

O the blessed Mother, O the blessed Mother Meru and every other manifestation of the Divine Mother! How it is a moment of tenderness, how it is a moment for each one of you to be a babe again cradled in the arms of Mother!

Fear not to take your rest this night visualizing yourself as a babe in the arms of the Divine Mother. And know that Omega dear caresses you this night, and know that this caressing is that you might have the loving and the tenderness and the bonding for which you have yearned in many cases for century upon century, as human mothers could not truly provide the Light that you [looked for], waited for from the hour of your birth. For some of you this has meant a compromise of your identity and your path, as you could not come to grips in an entire lifetime with the sense of the loss of a mother's love.

This night you shall have it, beloved, if you will accept it. And make a quick call for the binding of all unconscious anger against the Divine Mother or human mothers, for you must let this go into golden illumination's flame! Let it be transmuted, beloved, for then your being will flow freely into the being of Omega and you will feel the warmth, the tenderness, the sustenance [of the Divine Mother]. And bonded forever to Omega, you will no longer have that psychological vulnerability to the forces of the anti-Mother that are everywhere upon earth.

Of course, you know sugar is an anti-Mother [force] and its [false] hierarchy [likewise], as well as drugs and every addiction and the misuses of the sacred fire. And can you imagine [that] so far off from the Divine Mother, so far away from the sound of her voice and the symphony of her heart have her children gone, that they can consider rock music as a lullaby to their beings! How can you equate this [dissonance] to the true lullaby of the Divine Mother?

O precious ones, the vision we envision can be anchored through the lowering of the music of the spheres. And the music you already have has brought many to the fount of the love of Mother.

So remember, many in this world have denied the Divine Mother when she has come. For they have said, "Where have you been? Where were you when we needed you? We will not receive you now. It is too late." Thus, their anger [against the Divine Mother] is truly self-destructive.

This is why it is well to keep your lamps trimmed, to be ready always, each and every day, for the midnight hour when Christ, the Bridegroom, comes.<sup>6</sup> You do not know (and [you] may be least prepared) when an Ascended Master will rap on your window thrice. Blessed ones, if you have not transmuted that something in your being that rebels against the Person of God, you may just miss

---

<sup>3</sup>In her dictation on January 2, 1987, Archeia Hope said, "O blessed hearts, do you know one thing that you have absolute and complete control over? It is this - that the golden age can manifest in this hour where you are! Where the individualization of the God Flame is in you, the golden age can already be in session and [in] progress in your aura. . . . You need no longer speculate, 'Will the golden age come to earth?' [But you can say,] 'It is here in me. That I know, O God. It is where I am, and more than this I cannot even desire. For I am with Hope filling Cosmos with my golden age.'" See 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 79-81.

<sup>4</sup>Second Coming of Christ in your temple. See Jesus Christ, November 23, 1989, and Kuthumi, delivered at the conclusion of the November 25, 1989 service, 1989 PoW, pp. 765-67, 775, 777, 778, 779-80; 1984 PoW, Book I, pp. 11-27, 49-51 (Introduction I), 5; 1983 PoW, pp. 308-10, 331-32, 336-38, 341, 345, 511-13, 517; Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Lost Teachings of Jesus I*, pp. 193-97, 227-28.

<sup>5</sup>See pp. 286, 308-9.

<sup>6</sup>Matt. 25:1-13.

that entire initiation.

Among the parables of Jesus, that of the wise and foolish virgins is most applicable. For the flames you tend, as you know, are [held within] the chalices of the chakras, and the one for whom you wait may be Maitreya or Jesus or one of our bands even from Mount Meru unto Lake Titicaca.

So, dear hearts, do not postpone to a distant day the golden age. You can worship God. You may say in your heart, "I know not what anyone else may do, but as for me and my house, we will worship the Lord I AM THAT I AM!"<sup>7</sup> So fulfilling this to its ultimate, you and your house will stand, a pillar of fire of illumination. And, in a darkened world, gathering more [darkness] unto itself, [this pillar of fire of illumination] shall also gather the little ones.

Unto those of you, then, who have given much, will much be given<sup>8</sup> of succor and healing, riches of the Spirit, which, if you apply the Love Ray, you may crystallize in the abundant Life on earth as love and freedom and the free flow [of the sacred fire] through your being.

Take courage, beloved! We at Lake Titicaca applaud your efforts in many directions, [however] none so much as your efforts at the education of the heart of the child.

The education of the mind is essential, and of the soul. This cannot be omitted. But the neglect of the education of the heart should be [considered] the greatest neglect of all. [The education of the heart] requires love of parents and teachers, love great enough to teach the twelve-petaled chakra and the child's heart what is the way to go, what is the way of doing things - the practical way, the commonsense way, the tidy way, the orderly way, the careful way, the loving way, the gracious way, the magnanimous way, truly the merciful way, the compassionate way, the intelligent way. [These are elements of] the Middle Way of the Buddha and his Eightfold Path,<sup>9</sup> the way of the great commands of Jesus and of the Lords who preceded him and [of Christ] himself, who preceded himself, [wherefore he said: Before Abraham was, I AM<sup>10</sup>].

Yes, beloved, [teaching] the way of doing things, the way of endowing with love and harmony, the balance of strength and knowledge, this, this is the education of the heart! [But these things cannot be learned] without the fundamentals of the three R's and the ability of the child to ferret out knowledge by logic, by conclusion and even by induction. These things are so necessary [and it is necessary that the seeds be planted] before the age of seven and beyond.<sup>11</sup>

I ask every member of this Community worldwide to daily demand the binding and the judgment - calling to us, the Merus, and all of our bands to assist you - of the force of Antichrist that denies that yellow cross over every parent, teacher, child and sponsor of youth. And this should include the entire race.

Let them be cleared of all opposition to that true Cosmic Christ instruction, self-knowledge, initiation descending daily from [heaven] above through the crown chakra that is not closed up tight by ignorance and bigotry and denial of the Christ but that has begun to open in the soul's receptivity to the Buddha.

Thus, beloved, you have battles to fight and win against the sinister force that has opposed the enlightenment of the evolutions of this earth for centuries. Let it come about! And I pray you will ask El Morya for the labor for the binding of the entire lot of serpents and fallen ones that went after the twin flames in the Mystery School.<sup>12</sup> Let these false teachers whose time has come (who abide at inner levels on the astral plane) be the subject of your judgment calls. For they truly sit in the

---

<sup>7</sup>Josh. 24:15.

<sup>8</sup>Matt. 13:12; 25:29; Mark 4:25; Luke 6:38; 8:18; 19:26.

<sup>9</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, May 20, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 446-50; 1983 PoW, pp. 166-67.

<sup>10</sup>John 8:58.

<sup>11</sup>See Gautama Buddha, October 4, 1989, "True Education: A Program for the Education of the Lightbearers of the World," 1989 PoW, pp. 629-45. Includes list of the Messenger's teachings on education, pp. 644-45.

<sup>12</sup>Maitreya's Mystery School, the original Garden of Eden



seat of authority<sup>13</sup> and they have seized the holy place [of the threefold flame] for want of Christed ones seated in the heart chakra.

I say to you, we at Lake Titicaca, combined with all servants of the Second Ray and the Christ and the Buddha and the Light and illumined action, we comprise millions upon millions! We are determined. We are ready. We are waiting for your call for the judgment of the false hierarchy of the Second Ray infiltrating everywhere upon earth. We are ready and hosts of the Lord are ready to make that golden age happen! It may not happen until severe karmic conditions pass through the earth and have been passed through [by you], but happen it can if you will lay this foundation.

Why, the perversion of this ray extends to aliens who hover over earth with one purpose in mind: to see to it that the little children are denied the bread of Life and the opportunity for Christhood. This false hierarchy is fearsome. But fear not, for God is with you and you have demonstrated the Law and you know the yellow flame of victory.

There is goodly time left in this conference for this work. Not neglecting the defense of the Church against its adversaries, may you build your calls upon that [defense] to clear the decks of this planet of those [discarnates] who have overstayed their time because of their entrenchment and their sympathetic ties to those who revere them as great scholars and learned men and women, when in fact they bring only the destruction of the soul.

The vision, then, is of a new age. And if you see it this night, you will see a great golden-age civilization with shafts upon shafts of golden illumination descending and everything bathed in that yellow hue. This vision, beloved, is enough; for it is a vision that is an assignment. When that assignment is engaged, the doors of the vision will open wider and wider to you on an individual basis as you see the role you will play in that age to come, whether as ascended or unascended beings.

May you don the garments now and be dressed in style when the era comes. May you truly know the meaning of applying to Kuthumi to [become a member of] his Order of the Brothers and Sisters of the Golden Robe. For surely that is the foundation that is laid for the Bodhisattva path, which I trust you shall embrace if you have not already done so, and many have. If you would like to know where to begin, then take the Ten Vows of Kuan Yin<sup>14</sup> and you will be on your way.

And now, as the hour has struck here in Lake Titicaca, we shall be on our way. And we bid you a fond adieu in the name of Helios and Vesta.

This dictation by the God and Goddess Meru was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Monday, July 2, 1990, during the twelve-day conference FREEDOM 1990: "A New Heaven and a New Earth" held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under the God and Goddess Meru's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

## 26.1 I AM the Witness - July 8, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 26 - I AM the Witness - July 8, 1990

I AM the Witness

My mother raised her three children in a small town in Cameroon, West Africa, as devout Catholics. She had always been very devoted to Mother Mary and to this day she still recites

---

<sup>13</sup>Matt. 23:2.

<sup>14</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, 1984 PoW, Book I, Introduction I, pp. 35, 36, 37-42, 75 n. 78. 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 388, 394 n. 6.

the rosary twice a day. She believes that her reason for being is to take care of her children and grandchildren and to participate in Mother Mary's work on earth.

My mother's first contact with the Ascended Masters' teachings was in 1986 when I visited Africa and showed her the Chart of the Presence, which she understood immediately as the representation of the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost. However, she did not see any pictures of Mrs. Elizabeth Clare Prophet at that time.

In May 1987 my mother became suddenly so ill in the aftermath of a major car accident that she thought that she was going to pass away. Indeed, one night she had a dream that she was dying. In the dream she was wearing a white robe and angels were taking her up a spiral staircase with levels like balconies along the way. When she reached the fifth level, the angels asked her to stop. She was then taken to a most beautiful room where everything was white and green. There was a round table made out of green marble with chairs around it.

The angels asked her to put her purse on the table and suddenly a very nice lady came in. She was wearing a resplendent robe and her whole face and being was sending out light. She was of medium height and with a very comforting smile she said to my mother, "What are you doing here? You still have work to do for Mother Mary on earth. Take your purse and go back down the stairs with the angels."

My mother followed the lady's instructions. The next day she woke up feeling much better and within one week she was completely cured of her ailment. She came to the U.S. to visit us in August 1987 and my wife put a TV and VCR in the room where she was sleeping. We played Archangel Raphael's dictation from Freedom '86. As soon as my mother saw Mother on video she leaped to her feet and exclaimed, "She is the lady I saw in my dream! She is the one who cured me!"

From then on, my mother spent the rest of her visit glued to the television watching dictations of Jesus, Mother Mary and Archangel Raphael. Although she does not speak English, she insisted on watching dictations every day and asked me or her grandchildren to translate for her.

She was and remains convinced that Mother is a prophet and one of God's messengers.

N.B. Testimonies of disciples of Jesus Christ and the Ascended Masters stating their witness to the power of Truth in their lives will regularly appear in this column in the Pearls of Wisdom. If you would like to witness to the power of Truth in your life brought about through the Ascended Masters and their Messengers, we welcome your testimony for publication. Your letter will be kept on file in our archives but your name will be withheld from this page to protect your privacy and your progress on the Path.

# Chapter 27

## Beloved Archangel Uriel and Aurora - July 15, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 27 - Beloved Archangel Uriel and Aurora - July 15, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

VIII

The Christic Pattern of the Founding of the Nation

You Must Make the Call and the Call Will Be Answered!

Omega Descends with the Judgment of Those Who Oppose the Divine Manchild and the Woman

The Lightbearers' Full and Final Declaration of Independence from the Fallen Ones

Hail, angels of the sacred fire! I AM Uriel and Aurora! For we are one flaming presence in the Central Sun and here, physically, tangibly manifest on this altar of the Unfed Flame whereby our God has established the raising up of the ensign. And that sign of the I AM THAT I AM is the sign of the people of God!<sup>1</sup>

[19-second applause]

Now let the fullness of the Light descend. For ere the moment of the consecration of the signing of the Declaration of Independence descend,<sup>2</sup> this “birth day” of America has not commenced. Therefore, out of the divine conception of the Goddess of Liberty there does descend a net of Light and it is the original Christic pattern, the divine blueprint of the calling together again of the tribes of the Holy One of God, the twelve who are called and the thirteenth, who are the invisible and visible priesthood of Melchizedek, even the Christed ones.

Therefore, come now. Come now, in the name Jesus Christ. Come now, in the name Lord Maitreya. Come now, in the name Lord Gautama Buddha. Come now, in the name Sanat Kumara. Come, all ye hosts of the Lord! Come, ye bands of angels and twelve legions who descend on the lines of the Sun! Come now, and follow the rays to the Unfed Flame and to the heart victorious, the heart victorious, the heart victorious!

For we do draw forth by the power of the dawn, by the power of the Sixth Ray, this Light of Helios and Vesta, this golden pink glow-ray whereby all who are of the Light and serve the Light may once

---

<sup>1</sup>Isa. 5:26; 11:10-12; 18:3; 30:17; 31:9; Zech. 9:16.

<sup>2</sup>According to El Morya's reading of the akashic records, the Declaration of Independence was signed at 5:13 p.m., July 4, 1776. See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*, pp. 141-46; 1988 PoW, Book II, Introduction, pp. 30-33, 122 n. 24; 1989 PoW, pp. 725-28; 1990 PoW, pp. 122-23.

again embody the true founding Spirit, the immaculate conception of the Divine Mother upon this nation under God, whose sponsor is the living, masterful being, truly the Hierarch of Aquarius, Saint Germain, who with his beloved Portia joins us now on this platform and in the heart of the Sun for the arcing of these mighty rays of the sixth and seventh dispensations in the sacred heart of God!

I AM, we are Uriel and Aurora! [18-second applause]

Call for the Christic Pattern of the Founding of the Nation to Be Manifest in You

This is the hour and the moment and the opportunity that you have called forth, and I say, had you not called it forth, it should not have descended! For truly this also is the “April 23rd syndrome,” when if you desire something to be in the earth, you must make the Call, and the Call will be answered.

Therefore, because you have called unto Hercules, Hercules has carved out truly a tunnel of Light from this place to the heart of God, and this through the increasing density of the astral plane. Know, then, that the Call is the Answer, one and the same complete, when offered in selflessness, sacrifice [and] service, and surrendered by the Lightbearer who truly is one [with], and has the resolute momentum and the resolution with, his God.

Therefore know, beloved, that the Call is never in vain and that it is vanity, vanity, vanity not to make the Call! When you sit and think about it, think about it, think about it, you must focus the physical call, else you may be overridden by the fallen ones who wait, who wait and wait to catch you off guard.

Now I say, therefore, this is the Christic pattern of the founding of the nation. I ask you personally and individually to make the Call with all your heart that your being, your Christ Self, your soul, your chakras, your four lower bodies shall now physically manifest this pattern that you might be Lightbearers and torchbearers of freedom to restore the original founding flame of Liberty of this nation under God!

[Personal calls offered by the congregation in a “joyful noise unto the Lord.”]

Behold the immaculate conception of the Divine Mother! Behold the Liberty flame! Behold the Divine Matrix! For in this moment, in the beginning was the Word with Brahman. The Word was with Brahman. The Word was Brahman. And without the Word was not any thing made that was made.<sup>3</sup>

This is the Word of the Divine Mother gone forth again as an arrow from the Great Central Sun. Let the heart of America receive it. And let all true alchemists of Saint Germain know this - that such a Light and such a Matrix, such a descent of that Immaculate Concept must now flush out the Darkness, must now be the Mediator, The Lord Our Righteousness,<sup>4</sup> truly the rod of Aaron.<sup>5</sup>

And let this rod descend! And let the rod be for the dividing of the way. And when you see the power of this original mandate activating! activating! activating! - Be there! Be on call to your God - to make the Call for the binding, the transmutation, the encircling of all records and all manifestations and all individuals who have opposed this divine conception from the beginning.

Blessed ones, they are satisfied to the extent that they believe they have destroyed for all intents and purposes this dispensation of the Liberty flame of America, this dispensation of Maitreya come again in America to bring his own into the Light of Christos, [into] the path of the Bodhisattva and [into] the realization of who is Buddha and who is Christ. Blessed ones, they are convinced that they have succeeded in destroying the minds of the people, the hearts of the people and the souls of the people.

---

<sup>3</sup>John 1:1-3. (See 1988 PoW, Book II, p. 501 n. 8.)

<sup>4</sup>Jer. 23:5, 6; 33:15, 16.

<sup>5</sup>Exod. 7:8-25; 8:1-19; Num. 17:1-10; Heb. 9:4.

There is nothing more powerful as a magnet of God in the earth than the original matrix of the conception of this nation under God to bring back, to bring back [her people] to the starting point of that [founding flame] and likewise to bring forth the judgment of all that is opposed to America, as [she is and as her people are] truly intended to embody the Divine Manchild [i.e., the Christ consciousness] that was [and is] sent by the Divine Mother.

When the Judgment, the Light, and the Woman Descend,

Stand Guard!

Therefore, do you see, when the Judgment descends, when the Light descends, when the Woman descends, when Omega approaches the earth with this mission, as she now does, you must stand guard to see to it that the Light is protected, the Community is protected - the standard, the standard-bearer, the Messenger, the chelas, the Keepers of the Flame!

Be on guard! Be on guard! Be on guard! For I tell you, the Lord God in his meditations and meetings with the councils of his sons and daughters has determined that this must be done, even though there is a record in the past of some Keepers of the Flame and Lightbearers not being attentive to such a great, great alchemy and therefore being overcome by it.

For you see, beloved, [the descent of] this [Judgment, this Light, this Woman] is our only hope! And this is your only hope. And therefore in this hope find again the cosmic honor flame. Remind one another. Commune with one another. Support one another. Pray for one another lest ye forget, lest ye forget, lest ye forget that the fallen ones will be relentless until they are bound and taken by the Right Hand of the Son of God and his hosts, among whom we count ourselves most privileged.

Thus, beloved, we have [released these dispensations of the Lord God] because you have called. We must take this step whether you are ready, whether you are not. Do you understand, beloved, the urgency of the situation in the earth and the urgency of heaven itself on this day and date of July 4, 1990? ["Yes!"]

Therefore, beloved, consider that [you may cast] all that has passed, all that has gone before in your heart and mind and soul and body to this moment [that is not of the highest Good - all that] you may cast into the flame, the violet flame of forgiveness. You may call upon the law of forgiveness. You may write your letters to the Karmic Board. You may implore intercession and the strengthening of your heart and mind to be one in God and in his laws.

We are willing to see all that [has passed] go into the flame if you will give us the commitment, and fulfill it, that you will not be fooled by the machinations of the fallen ones who will come along reacting to the Divine Matrix of the Woman, to the Woman herself in the person of Omega, to the Divine Manchild himself in the person of the Holy Christ Self of every Lightbearer.

Therefore, I say to you, beloved, let this be the day of your full and final declaration of independence from the fallen angels and all servants of Darkness and corruption!<sup>6</sup> Let it be, beloved! And now, won't you repeat after me:

[Congregation repeats each line after Archangel Uriel and Aurora:]

The Lightbearers' Full and Final Declaration of Independence from the Fallen Ones

On this day and date, July 4, 1990,

[And today, \_\_\_\_\_,] and forever,

insert the date each time you give this vow

I state before the altar of the Unfed Flame

---

<sup>6</sup>See also Elizabeth Clare Prophet, December 25, 1981, "Declaration of International Interdependence of the Sons and Daughters of God on Behalf of the People Apart from Their Political, Economic, and Military Oppressors in Every Nation on Earth," 1982 PoW, Book I, pp. 41-48.

My full and final declaration of independence from the  
fallen ones!  
I declare it in the name of Sanat Kumara and his hosts.  
I declare it in the name of my Mighty I AM Presence.  
I declare it in the name of my Holy Christ Self.  
And I declare it on behalf of the youth of the entire world!  
I declare my full and final declaration of independence from  
the fallen ones in the name of Gautama Buddha,  
In the name of Lord Maitreya,  
In the name of Jesus Christ  
And in the name of the World Teachers and the Cosmic Christ.  
I summon now cosmic reinforcements  
To reinforce! reinforce! reinforce!  
The Immaculate Concept of the Divine Mother of the  
United States of America  
And the immaculate conception thereof on this day and date  
by the early American patriots.  
By the living Flame, the cosmic flame of immortal freedom,  
I stand with Saint Germain and Portia unto the coming of  
the golden age of Aquarius.  
I embody the violet flame and the purple fiery heart of  
Saint Germain.  
I call hourly for that flame to intensify! intensify! intensify!  
Therefore I place myself before Almighty God.  
O my Father-Mother,  
Use my being, my chakras, my heart,  
My mind, my consciousness, my soul  
Twenty-four hours a day  
To release thy mighty Light rays  
For the anchoring in the earth  
Of the divine pattern of America  
And all the Light necessary to manifest it,  
As well as the mighty fiat of the Lord  
For the binding and the judgment of those who oppose it.  
I inscribe this day this my vow  
In letters of living gold before the Karmic Board  
That I will stand and still stand for America's victory.

I will stand with Saint Germain for the victory of an age.

I will stand with Portia for Divine Justice.

And I will call unto the entire Spirit of the Great White  
Brotherhood

For the binding and the transmutation of all Neptunian  
delusion and illusion.

Therefore so help me, God! So help me, God! So help me, God!

Blessed hearts, I encourage you to write your letters to the Karmic Board this day, incorporating these sentiments and also setting your course aright again, casting into the sacred fire all that never should have been, calling for the armour and the presence and the support of the Seven Archangels [to be with you] daily as you live your life to fulfill this vow.

Blessed hearts, I pray that you do it. For I have secured your affirmation now, I have secured your statement; and inasmuch as you knew not the words that would be spoken before they were spoken, the Law gives you the opportunity to review them and to determine with finality that indeed you do desire to take this vow.

If you take it, beloved, then the hosts of Light will come to strengthen you, to assist you in all personal problems. Just submit them to the altar and pray without ceasing. Remember to surrender to God, for this is the only way that you can be delivered. When you surrender to God, beloved, God surrenders to you! And you are one with that living Presence, measure for measure in proportion as you are capable of surrendering day by day.

Thus, when you think the price is high, know that our God always pays the full price and [when you also pay the full price, God] gives to you in return the totality of his being. Thus, beloved, I have secured your statement now; for the hour is come, truly, for the judgment of these fallen ones who have sought to destroy the dream of Almighty God for this earth [held in] the heart of Saint Germain and Portia.

Thus, stand fast as I call unto my angels for that judgment:

Call to the Angels of Archangel Uriel's Bands for the Judgment of the Fallen Ones by Archangel Uriel

O Helios and Vesta, O Alpha and Omega, we stand in the earth, we stand in the sun, and the arc of Light is intensifying as a mighty tangible shaft!

Therefore, Almighty God, send forth now thy legions of Light from cosmic heights. Let them descend in numberless numbers by the millions, as they have been awaiting this hour. Let them come into the planetary body for the binding and the taking now of those tares<sup>7</sup> who have come to the hour of their judgment. Let it be done, therefore.

Angels of Light, descend! Angels of all Archangels, descend! Angels of the Elohim, descend! Angels of the Cosmic Christ, descend! Angels of the Sun, descend! Descend now to planet earth. And let there be the binding in this hour of every last demon, discarnate and fallen one, whether in or out of embodiment.

Let those in embodiment, therefore, be bound and stripped and limited in their misuses of the sacred fire of God as they live out their lives now then curtailed by their own misdeeds. Therefore, let those on the astral plane be taken, for this is the hour ordained by God for the sweeping clean of the astral plane as has not been seen in many a century.

I say, beloved ones, hold onto your hats! Hold onto your garments! For the mighty wind of the

---

<sup>7</sup>Matt. 13:24-30, 36-43.

Holy Spirit does commence. And that wind does circle the earth. That wind does circle it again and again and shall continue to do so until there is a clearing of the minds, hearts and souls of all who will respond. For this is the response of the Lord God unto his people who have called for a mitigation of the woes.<sup>8</sup> I say, the woes shall come! But many Lightbearers shall be spared who cleave unto their God.

Therefore, Archangels, I, Uriel, say: Woe! Woe! Woe! Let the karmic woes descend upon those who have created them! And let them be fastened to them and let them be stripped of all defenses whereby they have dodged that karma unto this hour.

Therefore, let the mighty rings of the Sun bind now the fallen ones in their spacecraft, the aliens who are the servants of Darkness. Let them be encircled now! Let them be bound! Let the planet be swept clean now! And let those in the earth who were their pawns and who were their lackeys also be bound and judged.

For this is a day of new beginnings. This is a day of a new heaven and a new earth. And this is a day when the angels of Uriel's bands, bringing the mighty power of the golden pink glow-ray, bringing the very power of the Sun, bringing the very power of the Sixth Ray, do bring therefore ministering servants, angels who are ministers of the Word.

And therefore those who seem to be popular in this hour, and are, with the masses shall also be judged. And there shall be a sifting of hearts and a sifting of minds and an accountability this day.

Therefore let every Lightbearer be accountable unto his God, unto his brother, unto his sister and unto his neighbor. Therefore let that accountability spread forth and let the cosmic honor flame establish each one under his own vine and his own fig tree, yea, under the Tree of Life, that the crystal-clear river of water of Life might descend and accelerate now!

And in all in whom there is the calling upon the law of forgiveness, the bonding to the heart of the Christ, there shall be the increase of the crystal cord. And to those who have misused that Light, lo, there is the reduction of that crystal cord in this very moment!

And it is done by the right hand of Alpha, by the right hand of Omega, by the right hand of Helios and Vesta! Even so, it is done in the name of the Father, the Son, the Holy Spirit and the Divine Mother.

Therefore, beloved, will you ratify that judgment call now in the earth as you give your Judgment Call given to you by the Lord Jesus Christ? ["Yes!"]

The Judgment Call

"They Shall Not Pass!" by Jesus Christ

In the Name of the I AM THAT I AM,

---

<sup>8</sup>Matt. 11:20-24; 18:6, 7; 23: 13-36; Mark 14:21; Luke 11:42-52; Jude 11; Rev. 8:13; 9:1-12; 11:13, 14; 12:12. The term woe means "karma." The pronouncement "Woe!" or "Woe unto you!" means "Your karma shall descend! May your karma be upon you!" In *Mysteries of the Holy Grail* Archangel Gabriel explains, "The denunciation of woes upon the seed of the wicked by John the Baptist and Jesus Christ is the pronouncement of judgment whereby the full intensity of the Light of Alpha and Omega, their twin flames, descends as the sacred fire of the Holy Ghost, the cloven tongues, the plus/the minus, to deliver unto them each one, one by one, the fruit/the fruitlessness of their own dead works. . . . The very spoken Word of the prophet 'Woe unto you!' releases the sacred fire of the judgment, actually unlocking the momentums of relative good and evil and calling the individual to a personal and planetary accountability for all of his past sowings and reapings outside of the law of Love" (*Mysteries of the Holy Grail*, pp. 235-36). The Messenger has taught that when we hear the Woe! Woe! Woe! - the deprecatory woes - pronounced three times as in the Book of Revelation, we are hearing the Lord's pronouncement of the descent of the karma of the people involving their sins against the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost. See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, 1988 PoW, Book II, Introduction, pp. 61-62. In 1987 PoW (Book I), see Gautama Buddha, May 13, 1987; Saint Germain, June 21, 1987; Sean C. Prophet, July 2, 1987; and Saint Germain, October 3, 1987, pp. 240, 242-43, 248-49, 251, 253, 327, 485.



I invoke the Electronic Presence of Jesus Christ:  
They shall not pass!  
They shall not pass!  
They shall not pass!  
By the authority of the cosmic cross of white fire  
it shall be:  
That all that is directed against the Christ  
within me, within the holy innocents,  
within our beloved Messengers,  
within every son and daughter of God ...  
Is now turned back  
by the authority of Alpha and Omega,  
by the authority of my Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ,  
by the authority of Saint Germain!

I AM THAT I AM within the center of this temple  
and I declare in the fullness of  
the entire Spirit of the Great White Brotherhood:  
That those who, then, practice the black arts  
against the children of the Light ...  
Are now bound by the hosts of the Lord,  
Do now receive the judgment of the Lord Christ  
within me, within Jesus,  
and within every Ascended Master,  
Do now receive, then, the full return -  
multiplied by the energy of the Cosmic Christ -  
of their nefarious deeds which they have practiced  
since the very incarnation of the Word!

Lo, I AM a Son of God!  
Lo, I AM a Flame of God!  
Lo, I stand upon the Rock of the living Word  
And I declare with Jesus, the living Son of God:  
They shall not pass!  
They shall not pass!  
They shall not pass!  
Elohim. Elohim. Elohim. (given 5x)

Uriel-Aurora Archangel Summon the Corona of the Sun, the Veritable Aura of the Cosmic Christ  
Consciousness

Now therefore, I, Uriel-Aurora Archangel, summon the corona of the Sun and the angels of the  
corona of the Sun.<sup>9</sup> This corona, beloved, is the literal, veritable aura of the Cosmic Christ con-  
sciousness and therefore does contain within itself the complete circle of the teachings of Christ the  
Lord Jesus, of Christ the Lord Maitreya, of Christ the Lord Gautama, [of] Christ the Lord Sanat  
Kumara. And it does contain the complete circle of the teachings of the Buddha Lord Jesus, the  
Buddha Lord Maitreya, the Buddha Lord Gautama, the Buddha Lord Sanat Kumara.

Therefore know, beloved, that this corona of the Sun may be invoked by you, even as you invoke  
the solar ring around your-selves, around the people of Light, around the earth body. And it is for  
the saturation of the minds and souls and hearts with that Cosmic Christ illumination. And that

---

<sup>9</sup>corona of the Great Central Sun

illumination does take on the coloration of the golden pink glow-ray; for it does contain the love of the heart! the love of the heart! the love of the heart! the compassion and the mercy. For without charity, beloved, all of the Teaching is incomplete.

Therefore let Love-Wisdom be thy lot. Imbibe it. Absorb it. Assimilate it. Know it. Become it, radiating it. Let it radiate through your pores as the fragrance of roses.

And therefore as you summon this Immaculate Concept of America that belongs to all of the I AM Race, all children of the Light of the entire world are included in the canopy of this dispensation; for the tribes come from all of the earth unto the feet of their Mighty I AM Presence. And this nation is the land consecrated to be the place where every man, [every woman,] wherever they may be, may commune with that I AM THAT I AM. Blessed ones, there are nations in the earth so contaminated with dark records that that communion cannot be established in those places [because of] those records.

Now therefore, beloved ones, know this - that in this sealing the Light has come unto you. This is a dictation and a call and an action that ought to be reinvoked daily! reinvoked daily! reinvoked daily! It is not necessary to take the vow daily but it is necessary to reinvoke the divine pattern, the Divine Matrix, the Divine Mother, the Divine Manchild, and the Judgment of all who oppose the fulfillment of the dream of America. It is also necessary [to invoke] the very piercing of Neptunian delusion and illusion. Beloved ones, it is also necessary to go after the false teachers and the false gurus, with the assistance of Jophiel and all of our bands.

Know this, therefore: when the people are taught the Truth in school, in church and in their service in a representative democratic government, they will be restored to the Christ, who is Mediator. Thus, beloved, let illumination be your Call, and defend it with your very life.

We seal you now in the Victory of this day and the Victory of the mandate. Blessed hearts, I AM the servant, we are the servant of the Light within you. When you become the servant of that Light in toto with the fullness of your being, there will be no separation between us.

Angels of Uriel and Aurora love you and ask me to convey to you the message that they are ministering servants side by side with you. Therefore call to them at any hour for strength to complete a task and to realize your Christhood and to fight all forces opposing it.

Now this arc shall remain. And it shall remain as long as you sustain it and sustain the opening by calls to Hercules and by your attunement with God through the Unfed Flame.

Peace and freedom be with you this day and always!

This dictation by Archangel Uriel and Aurora was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Wednesday, July 4, 1990, during the twelve-day conference FREEDOM 1990: "A New Heaven and a New Earth" held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Archangel Uriel and Aurora's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

## **27.1 I AM the Witness - July 15, 1990**

Vol. 33 No. 27 - I AM the Witness - July 15, 1990

I AM the Witness

It was the New Year's class of 1963, when I first attended a meeting of The Summit Lighthouse, that I witnessed a miracle that stands out in my memory. That evening Mighty Victory, the tall Master from Venus, gave a dictation. He expressed a desire to give everyone a feeling of his reality

- the reality of the Ascended Masters. He asked us to cooperate, while he attempted to convey this feeling, by closing our eyes as he stepped down the vibratory action of his release.

I closed my eyes and felt nothing. I opened my eyes and I saw that Mark, who actually looked like the photograph of him in the Chapel of the Holy Grail, had been transfigured into a being of Light. His appearance was that of a youth of 23 years - he was much thinner, his hair was brown, and so much light was emanating from him that he seemed to have a light bulb inside of him radiating through his translucent skin. His white robe was light. "This is the way he will look when he ascends," I recall saying to myself. I closed my eyes and when I opened them again Mark was as he had been at first.

That vision of the Ascended Master Lanello is stamped indelibly in my memory and from that night of December 31, 1962, I never lost the sense of awe of Mark Prophet and, what's more, I never lost the sense of reality of the Ascended Masters' octave. Beyond that, I never lost the sense that Mark and Elizabeth Prophet are true Messengers of God and that this is the highest teaching available on the planet.

After the service, as Mark took my hand I told him about how he had been transformed in my sight. He asked me not to tell anyone what I had seen. Well, I didn't tell many while he was still in embodiment, but now I tell people that I have seen an Ascended Master - Lanello!

It was characteristic of Mark, I was later to learn, that he would try to hide his mastery and power from the public. He was always diverting our attention from his adeptship by doing something absurd, as though he were trying to convince others that he didn't have as much going for him as they had. This was to prevent others from feeling inferior to him, I think; but it made some feel superior and to disbelieve in him as the Master's vessel and they criticized him. But he wore this guise until the end.

N.B. Testimonies of disciples of Jesus Christ and the Ascended Masters stating their witness to the power of Truth in their lives will regularly appear in this column in the Pearls of Wisdom. If you would like to witness to the power of Truth in your life brought about through the Ascended Masters and their Messengers, we welcome your testimony for publication. Your letter will be kept on file in our archives but your name will be withheld from this page to protect your privacy and your progress on the Path.



# Chapter 28

## Beloved Saint Germain and Portia - July 22, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 28 - Beloved Saint Germain and Portia - July 22, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

IX

That the Christ Might Be Born

America Must Return to Her Divine Commitment to Uphold the Life of the Child Aborning in the Womb of the Divine Mother

Sons and daughters of my heart, I welcome you to the immortal flame of Cosmic Christ freedom.

In this day and in this hour - Portia with me, Uriel, Aurora in the Presence of God here - there do come Mary, the Mother of Jesus, and Raphael and the three wise men and the Lord Krishna and the angels of God.

For in this hour of the renewal of the divine conception [of America, and] of the new heaven and the new earth, we have chosen to walk up and down this land bearing the infant Child Jesus as a reminder to all encamped in this wilderness America, “from sea to shining sea,” that the dedication of one nation under the one God is surely that the Christ might be born. And to that end the Christ was born.

Therefore, may America return to her divine commitment to uphold the life of the child aborning in the womb of the Divine Mother and overshadowing every woman with child and every noble father who is the sponsor and the Light of that child. Thus, on this day I bid you be seated in a profound meditation upon the Manchild.<sup>1</sup>

I stand before you today as Joseph, and Portia overshadowing me, Mary at my side and Raphael overshadowing her.<sup>2</sup> We have chosen also the donkey. We are in the hour when the child is born and we must take flight into Egypt.

In this day it is the flight of every Lightbearer with [his] parents to this nation America, where

---

<sup>1</sup>Rev. 12:5, 13.

<sup>2</sup>Archangel Raphael is the divine complement of Mother Mary. When Mary took incarnation on earth, having been chosen by God to give birth to Jesus Christ, the Avatar of the Piscean Age, Archangel Raphael did not embody with her but overshadowed her throughout her mission. Saint Germain embodied as Joseph, having been chosen by God to be the husband of Mary. His twin flame, the Ascended Lady Master Portia, also did not take embodiment but overshadowed him.

the life of the holy innocents<sup>3</sup> and all assigned to birth ought to be fully protected by law. Yet this is not accomplished even unto this late hour.

And I tell you, beloved, the turning of the decade does bring shortly to a close the remaining opportunity for the people of this nation to stand and hold fast in the defense of Life. And they had better make haste to call forth the judgment of those who will champion the right to deny it, the right of Herod's henchmen to kill the infant messiah in the womb of his mother.

Therefore, beloved, we do applaud those prelates who have had the courage to excommunicate those who will champion abortion. It is about time that the Roman Church stood [strong] for the birth of the Christ, and we are heartened by these decisions.<sup>4</sup> If the spiritual leadership of America does not cry halt to this massacre and this holocaust,<sup>5</sup> then, I tell you, you may count the number of July Fourths that will remain to be celebrated. For this nation stands to lose the sponsorship of the Brotherhood for this very infamy!

The fact that this continues shows, beloved, that many, if not the majority of the people, are under the control of the forces of Death and Hell itself. And [these forces] have been at work long enough to keep out of embodiment many, many Christed ones.

Blessed hearts, you may weep at the thought of the abortion of a Christ such as Jesus. Well, I tell you, it has taken place on this soil! And this soil is bloodstained therefor. And that stain will not be washed out without a full national repentance! Why, this could be a day of national mourning, beloved, if the people knew who are the ones who are not here who ought to be here, even amongst yourselves and in every walk of life.

Thus, it is one thing to weep for the physical death of the Christed one, but you must remember that no matter what the evolution, what the ethnic background, how impoverished anyone seems to be or [how] devoid of being able to transfer to a child some endowment of spirituality or ability, I tell you, God is able to bring forth his sons and daughters of Light through anyone. Thus, beloved, in all is the potential. No matter what their karma, they come with opportunity to make good, to turn against the Darkness, to refute all that has gone before of an evil sowing.

Birth is opportunity. And thus Portia stands, willingly being blindfolded in the presence of every abortion that is performed, proclaiming the Divine Justice and the Divine Opportunity on behalf of each soul to again have a place prepared [in the womb of an earthly mother]. And [my Beloved] does extend comfort to each and every one who does go through that horrendous death.

Blessed ones, America ought to weep! Therefore, I too come with a dispensation. It is a dispensation of the blue lightning of the Mind of God, of the sacred fire. And I AM determined and so [very] determined [because] our God has accorded me this day [the dispensation] for the hosts of heaven to go up and down the land to quicken consciences long dead, long turned over to the fallen

---

<sup>3</sup>Matt. 2:1-18.

<sup>4</sup>Abortionists excommunicated. On June 1, 1990, Bishop Rene H. Gracida of Corpus Christi, Texas, formally excommunicated Rachel Vargas, director of the Reproductive Services abortion clinic. In his letter to Ms. Vargas, Bishop Gracida stated: "Your cooperation in procuring abortions is a sin against God and humanity and against the laws of the Roman Catholic Church." He has also excommunicated Dr. Eduardo Aquino, an obstetrician in the Corpus Christi area who performs abortions. In 1986 Bishop Louis Gelineau of Providence, Rhode Island, announced that a woman had in effect excommunicated herself by directing Planned Parenthood in Providence. The woman, Mary Ann Sorrentino, received a letter from a priest on the bishop's behalf, saying she had brought excommunication upon herself. On June 14, 1990, John Cardinal O'Connor, the Archbishop of New York, issued a strongly worded statement in Catholic New York, the archdiocesan weekly newspaper, warning Catholic politicians who persistently supported abortion rights that they were at risk of excommunication. In his statement, which sparked much public controversy, he wrote: "Where Catholics are perceived not only as treating Church teaching on abortion with contempt, but helping to multiply abortions by advocating legislation supporting abortion, or by making public funds available for abortion, bishops may decide that, for the common good, such Catholics must be warned that they are at risk of excommunication." Cardinal O'Connor also pleaded with Catholic officeholders that they be ready "even to accept political defeat, should such be the result, rather than sacrifice human life."

<sup>5</sup>See p. 277 n. 21.

angels of Death - to quicken them! to prick them! to warn them! and to let that lightning break the recalcitrance, the hardness of heart, the layers and layers of hatred of the Child and [of] the Mother that could allow someone to be so insensate and so dense as to deny the Life that is God. Truly, beloved, you must understand that this [denial of Life] is the hatred of God himself.

But all those who have [opted to have] an abortion do not contain that hatred. They have allowed themselves to be influenced by the artful, the deceitful, the scientists, those in the medical profession and those who champion their "freedom" in pleasure and in a life of nonresponsibility. And, I tell you, it is the pastors in their pulpits who proclaim a life of nonaccountability for karma, for sin, and deny reincarnation [who stand accountable this day]! All of this [false doctrine] has given [women an] excuse for abortion.

There are excuses at every level, from every standpoint, from every attitude and belief system [that is] held by the people of the nations. They will grasp at anything to deny the blatant truth that our God is a consuming fire.<sup>6</sup> And this fire shall surely consume those who make the karma of influencing others to kill the unborn, the helpless, defenseless Christ.

And surely, beloved, this sin against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven<sup>7</sup> any of these until they fully repent and serve to bring forth every last child on this earth, or any other world where they may now be assigned, whose abortion they have influenced. And every jot and tittle will be paid. And I tell you, the pain, the pain of such a karma is beyond description.

Let us consider, then, the pain of the karma of those who are silent on the issue yet know the Law. I do not suggest that you demonstrate in the streets [before abortion clinics] and make yourselves obnoxious before the world. But I do suggest that you give forth the true teaching, that you resurrect that teaching, that you place it in books [so] that [it] can be understood.

For I tell you, when the judgment descends upon this nation for this abortion of these children of the Light and these sons of God and, yes, avatars, none will be held guiltless who have failed to speak out on this issue, to write on it and to defend that position [for Life]!

Therefore take the opportunity wherever it may be. Better, beloved, to incur the wrath, the condemnation, the ridicule, the despise and even [to endure] being cast out of acceptable society than to be silent on the defense of Life. For it is by this rationale, this becoming accustomed to death [through the widespread acceptance of abortion], that all other approvals of death in every form continue to be allowed as the people are poisoned as they receive all types of substances into their bodies that cause the [slow] death of the brain, the [slow] death of the organs.

Death is riding.<sup>8</sup> And the Death Rider moves across this nation today, beloved. You can be certain of it. That pale horse has caught up!<sup>9</sup> For the karma of Death must be put upon this planet ere there occur the death of the souls of a large portion of the people.

You understand, beloved, that as swiftly as the karma descends the evil deeds cease, and individuals who receive that karma may come to an awareness by their karma of that which they have done. Thus, that their eyes might be opened, the Call has gone forth from the four hierarchs of Light<sup>10</sup> to the pale horse. And thus you will come to understand that this [ride of the pale horse] is a major turning point in the Dark Cycle of April 23, 1990.

Blessed hearts, the new heaven and the new earth is the place where all of these millions upon millions upon millions of souls are to be born. Let us begin with [new] beginnings here and now. Let us consecrate these temples, one and all of you, of any and every age. For if you are not able to give physical birth to children [or you] are not in the proper circumstance [to do so], remember this -

---

<sup>6</sup>Deut. 4:24; 9:3; Heb. 12:29.

<sup>7</sup>Matt. 12:31, 32; Mark 3:28, 29; Luke 12:10; Gospel of Thomas, logion 44. See p. 245.

<sup>8</sup>Rev. 6:8.

<sup>9</sup>See pp. 43-46, 95-96, 97, 104-11, 161, 162, 167.

<sup>10</sup>Rev. 6:7.

that, overshadowed by the Divine Mother, you can give birth to the Divine Manchild in your heart.

And you can cherish and cradle and rock that precious Child in your heart. And when you come to the altar of your Holy Christ Self, when you come to the altar and there see in the secret chamber of the heart even your Lord Gautama Buddha, you may bear in your arms the Divine Manchild, as I this day bear this Child and as Mother Mary does bear him. For the infant Child Jesus has come to appeal to hearts of stone in this nation, hearts hardened against the little children.

Blessed ones, angels will come with us and we will not leave unattended any household, any place, any abortion clinic [where] any person, any father and mother are in this moment considering abortion [as an alternative to taking responsibility for Life]. We the Holy Family and all who were a part of that birth on earth and in heaven shall be there.

Thus it is indeed “Christmas in July.” Thus it is indeed by this sign of the God Star, Sirius, that we shall inculcate in the heart and the conscience of a nation the restoration to sanity and the elevation of the child to the position of [greatest] importance amongst all people of the population.

We come, beloved, for the sands in the hourglass are running out wherein this nation may make a turnaround. You need to deal with and call for the judgment of those groups who would intimidate, blackmail, threaten and boycott states who are on the verge of putting in place those laws that will curtail abortion or put an end to it entirely except in very specific cases of the danger to the life of the mother.

Blessed ones, these cases are rare but the law should allow for them. There should not be loopholes that allow for a broad interpretation, making excuses for abortion when there ought not to be abortion. You must meditate in your hearts, you must defend Life and you must pray for the will of God in every conception. And therefore when that will of God does take command, children will come forth who are intended to come forth.

Thus it is given to a mighty people.

The Mother of the Flame of the Keepers of the Flame Fraternity, your Messenger, does not let a day go by without calling to us for intercession for Lightbearers in the womb and [for] those intending to descend [into embodiment on planet earth].

Blessed ones, may it be a prayer in your hearts. For by the prayer of just one, and then of many of you who have joined in [this prayer effort], many lifestreams have been spared, as angels have touched the hearts of mother and father. And no matter what the price, they have determined to bring forth the children they have conceived and for which they are therefore karmically responsible.

May you see here [in this Community] the bringing forth of souls and their being raised up in a training appropriate for their victory and their service. May you see it spread to the entire world. For this is the desire of the God and Goddess Meru and their assignment to this Community.<sup>11</sup>

Turn your attention, then, to the publishing of popular books and articles concerning this question [of abortion]. The one thing that can turn many hearts to the Light, beloved, is truly the Ascended Master teaching on this subject. For all other explanations or arguments for Life have not prevailed. And there are many who will listen [to you] and [many] who have listened when the film [A Soul That’s Free] made by the students of Montessori International<sup>12</sup> was played for them. Thus, the understanding of reincarnation, the life of the soul and the temple being prepared [in the womb] and the soul going forth and requiring that temple, all of these things, beloved, serve to convince those who have true hearts of reason and love that Life must be defended.

I tell you, therefore, that all for which this nation was founded and to which it was dedicated is compromised, is blurred and becomes almost irrelevant when the fulcrum of society is not the giving

---

<sup>11</sup>See the God and Goddess Meru, July 2, 1990, pp. 343-45; April 19, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 198-204; and January 6, 1985, 1985 PoW, Book I, pp. 72-75.

<sup>12</sup>A Soul That’s Free videocassette, 27 min. 15 sec., 8106-01.



birth to the Christ. Such as it has become, adults no longer give birth to their own Christhood and they deny the birth of that Christhood in offspring whom they disallow.

O would to God, as I pray to him before you, that there might be a turnaround this day in education and in the defense of Life! Then we could tell you truly, truly, that the possibility of that golden age is at hand. But until these things are solved we cannot tell you this. Yet, the flame of hope will never go out in our hearts, as it does not go out in yours.

I may say to you, then, that though this be a subject heavy upon our hearts this day for the horrendous consequences to all people, I shall seal it now, for I believe you understand our burden and I know it is your own. Let us pray for these little ones and pray that souls who must yet embody be brought forth.

Now then, I would take up with you other concerns and matters that are before the Lords of Karma, knowing that you will not neglect this our Call nor [neglect] to remember us midst your celebrations and to send us a prayer and a heartfelt support, especially a call in your heart to cut free those who must receive our message.

We must turn our attention, then, to the Community of the Holy Spirit, this Sangha of the Buddha, and the Keepers of the Flame worldwide and the communicants and those who are students of the Ascended Masters.

This Community is threatened in this day by fallen ones and archdeceivers in all levels and in all areas where they have placed themselves in positions of power. May you forget not that in this hour of the rebirth [of the nation] the same opposition is leveled at this Community as was leveled at me and at Mary two thousand years ago, at the Christ Child and at what would come forth even out of the Essene community, even out of the mystics of God that had been awaiting His day.

This Community being established, beloved, will secure a place for many Christed ones. That is why I ask you to rise early to make your calls and to respect El Morya's request for the 5:00 a.m. decree sessions wherever you are in the world.<sup>13</sup> This is the hour of communion when angels carry forth your commands and your messages and your blessings to a world. And it is also [the hour] when many dark deeds and plots and conspiracies waiting to happen can be stopped and aborted.

May you know, then, [that] there is nothing more important to the success and the victory of planet earth, and the Great White Brotherhood on it, than this victory of this Community in all areas now posed [as threats] by those who are taking legal action from the level of the federal government, the state government, the county government and [by] those who aid and abet their cause in the press and in the citizenry, who have long, long been dedicated to the forces of anti-Light.

Let us understand that this battle is being won, [that it] can be won, but it must not be neglected for a moment. For the preservation of this circle will give to many, many, many souls in all future generations the continuity of the Word and the Path. And that continuity must not be broken, else how will the little ones taking embodiment be given that flame and be able to transfer it to their own?

And so, beloved, this Community is greater than the sum of its parts. And when some of its parts take their leave for other courses and other calls, they then are equal to the sum of their parts and nothing more. For they [no longer retain] that mystical oneness, that additional element of tremendous power that is the multiplication by the Holy Spirit of all of your prayers, your works, your deeds, your publications, your Teachings, your thoughts and feelings.

This Community, then, is many thousand times more powerful than the sum of individuals in it. For you have, beloved, the backing of the entire Spirit of the Great White Brotherhood as long as you serve your God according to his Law and his Love and his Honor and his Truth.

---

<sup>13</sup>See El Morya, August 8, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book II, p. 599.

So then, inasmuch as each one of you has the reinforcement of many more, giving you that impetus to victory and making possible your ascension (which was not possible before you became a part of this activity), wherever you are on earth [serving in your niche as] a part of this Community, I say to you, remember: of you, to whom so much has been given, it may be required - for the balancing of accounts, for the paying of debts of karma and for the restoration of the flame of cosmic honor - to do those things that you may feel you are not responsible to do.

I, Saint Germain, speak to you directly about those individuals, those businesses and corporations in the local area that are owed money by members of this Church. Beloved ones, this must be resolved swiftly. And if you must leave the area, as the Messenger has told you, to go in search of work that can produce the income to meet the group responsibility, then I say it must be done!

You have entered into contracts, you have formed groups and associations, you have attempted to do what has not been done before in the building of your shelters, in the accomplishment of many goals. Some have private debts for other reasons. But those who have come to you honorably, trusting your word, trusting to be paid, must be paid. And you must settle all of the arguments, all of the differences you may have with them or with one another.

It remains a simple fact that if you have entered into these contracts, whether or not you consider the matter to be just, you must not allow your differences to cause those who are owed money to be left [in a lurch], some of them even [on the verge of] losing their businesses and compromising their very livelihoods [for your nonpayment of your obligations]. This is a karma to the entire Church and the entire Community and it does make you vulnerable.

I suggest, therefore, where there are problems and where there are burdens and where there are misunderstandings and where there are arguments, that these be brought to the altar. These must be examined. These must be looked into and, come what may, there must be a settling of accounts.

I am certain you realize that in many situations the Ascended Masters have been embarrassed by their chelas. Not on any one occasion but on many occasions have you seen how this has happened, whether through thoughtless acts and carelessness on your part or whether by deliberate design or whether by your karma or whether by your ignorance and naiveté. We have therefore had to take the blame for the actions of our chelas even as you have had to take, in a stalwart way, the ridicule for your belief in us.

And so, beloved, we are determined, as we desire to see you determined this day, to be able to go before the Lords of Karma ere this year has ended with these matters settled; for we, quite frankly, cannot seek new dispensations when these [money] matters, [these karmic debts,] are unresolved.

Remember to expand the love flame in your heart. Remember that I, Saint Germain, as Joseph have told you that in this hour you must remember the little child and the Manchild. And if you are entangled in these sorts of karmas, there cannot be the forward movement of all that we can and shall do, [if you will allow it,] in this interval that has truly been bought with a price you know not by your own beloved El Morya.

I speak to you of El Morya now for his dedication to each and every one of you, for his heart's love. El Morya is there and able and [willing and] free to help you in any situation. I ask, however, that you "pay in advance" by giving his decrees and using the tapes the Messengers and chelas have provided for this purpose,<sup>14</sup> giving to El Morya the energy he requires to intercede in your behalf.

Is a nine-day novena to El Morya too much to ask for his entering into your life and world to solve these very financial problems and to help you multiply your supply and to help you in your consciousness whereby you [sometimes] stray into schemes that are full of folly and whereby some of you are yet taking advantage of one another and helping yourselves to one another's pocketbooks by

---

<sup>14</sup>El Morya, Lord of the First Ray: Dynamic Decrees with Prayers and Ballads for Chelas of the Will of God 1-3, 90-min. audiocassettes with booklets, cassette 1, A88125; cassette 2, B88126; cassette 3, B88127.

selling those [products] that ought not to be sold?

Blessed ones, we must understand, and I speak of this entire Community, that anyone who has a doubt about a situation of investment or finances may easily write a letter to be taken to the altar. El Morya will comment or he may not comment, but he will tell you so and you will hear it straight from the Chief, as the Law allows him to speak. If I were you, [living] in this age of such uncertainty in the economy, I would want to have that advice.

Now then, if you will give to El Morya the due that is due him in your love and decrees, you will find that these problematical questions can come to an end and you can move forward.

That which is upon my heart, therefore, in conclusion, has to do with those Lightbearers that we are trying with all determination and all powers of angels to connect to this activity. There must be a reaching out to them by every individual in this Church and Community worldwide. There must be a new look at how to bring the Teachings [to the many whose souls are crying out to God for them], how to write them, how to teach them, how to spread them, how to preach them.

You must go to the fount of Christ and know your oneness with this Jesus, who has borne for you for two thousand years a percentage of your karma, and a large percentage at that, [in addition to] the karma of the world.<sup>15</sup>

If you have never acquainted yourself with the heart of Jesus, I say you ought to. For there is a debt here where this Son of God has taken that position of bearing the burden [of your karma] in the fervent, fiery hope that you would come to that moment of realization that your individual Christhood is the only price that you can truly offer and pay for the gift of so great a salvation that you have enjoyed [through the heart of Jesus].

Therefore rather than becoming enangered with God for the descent of your karma, you should become more profoundly and passionately grateful to Jesus that you walk here this day with life and limb intact and mind and heart, bodies able, and in a nation where you yet have commodities, where you yet have money, where you yet have opportunity.

Thus I tell you, the heart that is full of fervor and oneness with Jesus - and you know you can arrive there by the true path of mercy, compassion and charity and love - that heart, beloved, is the one that can turn around a world and convert a world. For when you have this fire of love for Jesus, you and Jesus are one and you walk together and you move together and he will speak through you and you will find your Christ Self truly one [with Jesus] in your temple.

It has been mentioned that those who are not in proper balance in their bodies are sanpaku.<sup>16</sup> Well, beloved ones, I consider anyone who is sans (or sans) the Christ in his temple, that is, without the Christ, to be in that condition of sanpaku, which makes one vulnerable to death and vulnerable to accident. It is well that the body be strong and that it be in balance; but if you neglect making your peace with your God, you yet have that [sanpaku] condition in your four lower bodies.

Therefore, my call to you is to reach out, to call for the [walls to come tumbling down] - walls of hatred, prejudice, bigotry, misunderstanding, ridicule, distortion of the Teachings, manipulations by the press - [call for] all of these walls to come tumbling down that there might be open contact between your heart and the hearts of all Lightbearers of a planet.

We shall pave the way this day for the opening of hearts and the melting of hearts. Do not fail

---

<sup>15</sup>See pp. 64, 77-78, 81-82, 83-84; Jesus Christ, December 25, 1989, 1989 PoW, pp. 814-15.

<sup>16</sup>sanpaku [Japanese, literally "three (san) whites (paku)"]: a condition in which three white sides show around the iris of the eye. The white of the eye seen beneath the iris (while a person is looking directly forward) denotes a state of extreme physical and spiritual imbalance. A person who is sanpaku may be accident-prone and vulnerable to death. Symptoms include chronic fatigue, poor appetite, inability to sleep soundly, ill humor, poor instinctive reactions and lack of precision in thought and actions. See Sakurazawa Nyoiti (George Ohsawa), *You Are All Sanpaku*, trans. William Dufty (New York: Carol Communications, Citadel Press Book, 1965), available through Summit University Press.

to make the call to Astrea to encircle the hearts of a people, to prick their conscience and to break down this hardness. For until it is gone, they will not receive the little child in the womb, they will not receive the Christ Jesus, [they will not receive the blessed Mother, Mary,] they will not receive me, they will not receive their own Mighty I AM Presence!

In this land, therefore, that is dedicated to the I AM THAT I AM and to the Mighty I AM Presence, we stand this day and we stand for freedom and we say [with El Morya], "Let the chips fall where they may!" Let Keepers of the Flame not forget that the day of judgment and of karma is at hand. You cannot neglect this consideration as you make your decisions as to what you will do from day to day.

My fiat to you remains the same: Be prepared! Be prepared in every level of your being. Be prepared for your ascension. Be prepared for change. Be prepared for the increase of the Light and be prepared for the descent of the Darkness.

Do not flinch. Do not move. Do not move an inch, beloved! For I AM with you, and this battle must be won all the way. If you win it in part, you should consider it lost. There is no partial victory in any war. Either you have all the victory and you are willing to give your all to it, else you cannot claim any portion of it.

Think on these things, beloved, for there are many, many, many components to the Victory. And those who have spoken in this conference have surely outlined them - what must take place within, what must take place without and what must be dealt with in the defense of Life.

Now, therefore, defend the life of Community and of the child and you will see change and new dispensations for America. In the meantime remember, where you are is the new heaven and the new earth and where I AM is the new birth of Christ in all Americans who will not reject us this day.

Putting all ponderous matters aside, I say to you: I wish you a most happy and glorious and spirit-sparked and -infired Fourth of July!

Keepers of the Flame, happy Independence Day!

[80-second standing ovation]

This dictation by Saint Germain and Portia was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Wednesday, July 4, 1990, during the twelve-day conference FREEDOM 1990: "A New Heaven and a New Earth" held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Saint Germain and Portia's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

## **28.1 I AM the Witness - July 22, 1990**

Vol. 33 No. 28 - I AM the Witness - July 22, 1990

I AM the Witness

Every moment of my life - Gratitude -Gratitude -Gratitude - fills my heart. The Goddess of Liberty was my first dictation. I am grateful for the events that took place Sunday, November 17, 1985, at the Penta Hotel in New York City. I would like to share with you the events of that day.

On Thursday, November 14, my husband saw the poster announcing the New York conference with Elizabeth Clare Prophet and the Teachings of the Ascended Masters at the Penta Hotel. He was elated when he saw the poster with Mother's picture in the center surrounded by the Masters. He said to me, "I have been looking for this all my life."

He asked me to teach his scheduled Friday evening seminar so he could go to the meeting. I was happy to do this for him.

He was so enthusiastic about his experience at the meeting Friday night that he asked me to join him on Saturday. My office staff could not work on Saturday, so I had to open the office and be there myself. When I related this to him, he told me emphatically, "My name is on the door. I am telling you to close the office and be at the Penta Hotel at 3:00 p.m."

I was taken aback by his unusual tone and insistence with me, so I obeyed. I closed the office at 2:30 and went to the Penta Hotel.

The service was very different from what I was accustomed to at Self-Realization Fellowship, where we sit in meditation and a quiet atmosphere prevails. I experienced the power of the spoken Word for the first time. The joyful music touched my heart. The Goddess of Liberty gave a dictation.

Until that dictation, I never really thought of New York City as being beneath the Temple of the Sun and it put so much together for me. The dictation brought so much more importance geographically to New York City - the expression of creativity and freedom and the Liberty flame anchored in the very Statue of Liberty itself!

The next morning, Sunday, my husband attended the healing service. He left early. He asked me to go.

I will quote from my diary: "I am not going back today. I feel the need to be away from crowds. I feel the need for my seclusion with God; to be alone in meditation on this Sabbath Day. So, I am home alone with God in meditation, and the study of my S.R.F. Lessons. I have worked very hard all week at the office. I am tired, my throat is scratchy, and I have a headache."

At 1:30 p.m., I was sitting up on my bed reading for the sixth time Paramahansa Yogananda's book *Man's Eternal Quest*. Suddenly, the words THIS IS THE SUN'S DAY got huge! This is an Ascended Master Teaching: We are all Children of the Sun. Therefore we worship on SUNDAY.

The thought passed. I snuggled down and continued reading for another hour. I looked out of my bedroom window where the American flag continuously blows in the breeze over the Guardian Life Building. "Guardian Life" is a huge neon sign on the top of the building under the American flag. I have always had a strong patriotic feeling for my country. I can readily understand Francis Scott Key's joy when he discovered that "our flag was still there!"

Suddenly, the American flag began getting bigger and bigger. I thought this amazing. Then I remembered that Elizabeth Clare Prophet teaches that we are members of the "I AM" RACE. This means that we each have a Mighty "I AM" Presence and the letters of the words "I AM" Race are taken from the word America. AMERICA! Well, I jumped out of bed, got dressed and ran down to Third Avenue to hail a taxi. There were eight people there waiting for a cab, but suddenly they were gone. A cab pulled up to me and I said, "I am going to the Penta Hotel." The driver bowed his head over praying hands and said, "I know. I am here to take you to the meeting."

This was too much for my comprehension. He talked to me about Paramahansa Yogananda all the way through the heavy traffic of Manhattan. When we arrived at the hotel, I thanked him and bid him a good day. He smiled and shook his head knowingly.

At 2:45 I went up to the room where the services were to be held. I sat near the entrance, so I could see my husband when he came in because he was so anxious to have me attend and I wanted him to know I was there. The conference had adjourned for lunch and about six to eight people stood in groups talking.

I was waiting there alone when suddenly through the double door came this "character." I thought to myself, "What kind of an organization is this? This man looks like he is going to a masquerade ball!" He was dressed in purple velvet britches and jacket, a white satin blouse and white boots. He

wore a beige felt hat with large purple, pink and white plumes. What an appearance he made!!!

He was so stately. He walked in front of me and looked right at me. I will never forget his eyes! Then he walked down the side aisle, passed between two rows of chairs, went up to the altar and disappeared. I looked all around for him again, but he was gone.

After the words in the book - SUN'S DAY - the AMERICAN FLAG, the INDIAN CAB DRIVER - NOW THIS! I thought, "What is happening to your mind? You better not tell anyone about this. They will think you are crazy!"

Mother was autographing books. I bought one and waited in line. Finally, it was my turn to meet Mother. I sat opposite her and she said my name and, "Don't you know me?"

I said, "No. I never saw you before in my life."

She said, "I think someday you will find that you know me."

Another strange event:

Saint Germain and Portia dictated and the conference came to a close. I could not forget the unusual experiences, but I told no one. My husband decided to sell the Masters' books in our TV Success School. After three weeks, I was inspired to look up Saint Germain's name in the encyclopedia. There was the picture of the man I had seen at the Penta Hotel! I called our book salesman and asked him if he would come and talk to me. He came, and for the first time, I related to him the events of Sunday, November 17, 1985. He broke out in this glorious smile and said, "That was Saint Germain. He made an appearance to you."

After learning this I sent for my Pearls of Wisdom immediately and became a Keeper of the Flame.

When I was initiated into Kriya Yoga I was told, "You will meet your living Guru in this lifetime." The promise has been fulfilled.

Elizabeth Clare Prophet is my Guru - All Glory to God and the Ascended Masters. I am a teacher and I teach with her and I teach for her. I thank El Morya. I am here in his Ashram. I thank Napoleon Hill for the Positive Mental Attitude Course - PMA. To me it means the Power of the Mother Age - the Aquarian Age of Saint Germain.

I am grateful to Jesus and Kuthumi. They guide and direct my teaching every day as an instrument of the Great White Brotherhood. I also thank the Goddess of Wisdom for her help.

My loyalty to the lineage of Self-Realization Fellowship Gurus - Babaji, Lahiri Mahasaya, Swami Sri Yukteswar and Paramahansa Yogananda - remains forever. The Unascended Master Yogananda guided and directed my way that Sunday, November 17, 1985, to Saint Germain and the Teachings of the Ascended Masters.

My beloved Saint Germain - a positive mental attitude is the Victory Flame! Our Church Universal and Triumphant, the Community of the Holy Spirit and the Lightbearers on planet earth welcome your Aquarian Age!

N.B. Testimonies of disciples of Jesus Christ and the Ascended Masters stating their witness to the power of Truth in their lives will regularly appear in this column in the Pearls of Wisdom. If you would like to witness to the power of Truth in your life brought about through the Ascended Masters and their Messengers, we welcome your testimony for publication. Your letter will be kept on file in our archives but your name will be withheld from this page to protect your privacy and your progress on the Path.

# Chapter 29

## Beloved Ratnasambhava - July 29, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 29 - Beloved Ratnasambhava - July 29, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

X

An Arc from the Great Central Sun

Make Your Vows to God-Harmony!

For Cosmic Beings Are Waiting to Assist You

The Violet Flame Is the Key to the Heart of the Dhyani Buddhas

Cupped in my hands is the wisdom Light and the wisdom Jewel. I AM in the heart of the Sangha of the Buddha that is in the Great Central Sun and I arc a strong arc from that point of Light to the point of this heart and Messenger. And I am fully overshadowing her and my presence is seated here.

In the sweetness of wisdom, in the strength of wisdom, I come to establish the Sun in the zenith and in the cardinal points. For I AM the fulfillment of the Sun and the bearer of the Three Jewels.<sup>1</sup> These jewels are the threefold flame of my heart. Thus I embody and I AM the Buddha, the Sangha, the Dharma and the Mother Flame.

I AM grateful to be called to speak to devotees of the Buddha in the land of the West that is surely becoming the Buddha-land, the stupa-land. How the joy of hope and the hope of joy as Wisdom's flame can instantaneously manifest from the thought of a Cosmic Being to your heart with no passage in time and space but can simply be there! I have established an arc so that you might practice traversing this arc to the Central Sun and returning again by powerful thought-visualization and mantra.

When you link your hearts to Christ and Krishna, you do enter the Dhyani Buddhas' meditations.<sup>2</sup> For our meditations are of the grid of Cosmos and the Mind of God. We are in perpetual meditation in the figure-eight flow twixt the Spirit and the Matter cosmos.

Thus in this meditation we sustain the capacity of any Son of God to contain the pattern of a cosmos, and hence a cosmos. By our ratification of this grand design we are the open door whereby first you enter in to it and second you receive it entering in to you. Thus, weave in and out by the tracing of the mind from the Spirit to the Matter cosmos, from the Matter to the Spirit again.

---

<sup>1</sup>See 1988 PoW, Book II, p. 447 n. 9.

<sup>2</sup>See 1989 PoW, pp. 530 n. 12, 552 n. 12.

When you take moments to close your eyes to fix your gaze upon the star Sirius, you can visualize your journey there as a series of figure-eights, each one allowing you to accelerate from earth vibration to the vibration of this God Star. Because you have called upon us and loved us and sought us and sought the power of our Wisdoms to overcome the poisons five, we send forth on the secret rays our Electronic Presence whenever you can manifest and sustain the magnet of love and joy [that makes] possible [your receptivity to our Presence].

Thus know the sweetness of Gautama and remember [that] ours is a Ruby Ray action, ours is the baptism by the sacred fire of the Ruby Ray. And within the Ruby Ray sealed are five secret rays. Thus, this is a level of Buddhist initiation that comes after the baptism by water, the baptism by fire, wherein you are prepared to move on.

O the Holy of Holies does await the soul's ascent! Thus the Sacred Ritual for Soul Purification<sup>3</sup> when engaged in with such sweet fervor does allow you to rise each day by increment. For do you know this is a ritual of exorcism by Light? And when you invoke Light you empower a cosmos to send back to you precisely the quality of Light you require for healing, [for] wholeness, for all that must be done in preparation for each victory to be won, each initiation to be entered into.

Light, being all Light, includes every ray, even some rays you have never heard of. These rays return to you in a spray of needle rays from the one shaft of Light you have invoked.

Therefore it is good, even when in prayer, to sometimes invoke the Light, commanding the poisons to flee, together with their demons and entities, together with their false hierarchies, and to command them to flee not only your body temple of Light but this entire planetary home! And then you will see how the forces of the Buddhas many will catch them as they are flung off from the earth, for [by the persistent commands of the Lightbearers in embodiment] their vibration may no longer [be allowed to] remain [in the earth body. And this is true exorcism, beloved!]

O such joy to see all of these unclean spirits and foul spirits flung from the earth into the waiting nets of the angels of the Buddhas! And how they rejoice to capture them and take them and cast them for dissolution in the Light, Light, Light of the lake of sacred fire.<sup>4</sup> This place [in the Great Central Sun] of the universal solvent dissolving all does liberate more Light and more Light and more Light. And a percentage of it goes directly to you, for you have made the Call. This is true recycling, beloved!

Would it not be a grace if all things physical that have served their purpose and are no longer needed could also be thus transmuted? It is already so on the violet planet, where the violet flame is used by all every day - in work and jobs and responsibilities and the care of that planet.

We have decided that we shall take you one of these nights, after you perform this Sacred Ritual for Transport and Holy Work,<sup>5</sup> to the violet planet itself. We would take you on tour there that you might truly have recorded in your members how great, how great, how great is the gift of the violet flame!

The violet flame and the giving of violet flame decrees is surely not drudgery, for this is a singing flame. This flame transmutes drudgery. It does not create it. And thus, with the violet flame all around and through you, never neglecting at least a simple [violet flame] mantra in any prayer session, you will see how [your daily work is lightened by your violet flame work and how neither] work is drudgery at all but a continual re-creation in the ritual of the violet flame as it flows from all of your chakras and being and all of your cells, as it sweeps down from your Mighty I AM Presence, lifting the burdens of humanity.

The violet flame is the key to the heart of the Dhyanis Buddhas! For upon that violet flame, as

---

<sup>3</sup>Ashram Ritual 4, in Ashram Notes, pp. 37-40, and in Ashram Rituals booklet, pp. 35-38. (See p. 323 n. 10.)

<sup>4</sup>Rev. 19:20; 20:10-15; 21:8.

<sup>5</sup>Ashram Ritual 5, in Ashram Notes, pp. 46-59, and in Ashram Rituals booklet, pp. 39-52.



you make the transition from the Seventh Ray, you do enter the secret rays and all of their power.

When you are saturated with the violet flame, it is impossible to be without joy, without happiness, without victory, without the sense that nothing and no person, place, condition or thing can ever take from you your victory, your purpose, the keeping of your vows and all things that God desires for you and all things that are lawful for you to desire.

You will find, then, that the Dhyani Buddhas do embody the sweetness of all Buddhas. We are at once in a stage of hoary wisdom and fulfillment and [a stage of] babyhood. Thus, you can visualize us as babes in arm, as wise men, as fathers forever and sons forever and full of the Holy Spirit, whereby we arrive at such a pure and simple, gentle love of the Divine Mother that we cannot be separated from her for a moment - the dreams of all babes and children come true! For nevermore is our hand out of the hand of the Divine Mother.

Thus, this sweetness is contrasted in our innermost being by a momentum of sacred fire so vast that I desire not to give you even a comparison, a co-measurement of it. For I would not have you visualize us in such extents of the expansiveness of our auras or of the concentration of Light that we bear.

But I will give you this one clue and secret, which you may surely apply: when you seal your cloud of infinite energy,<sup>6</sup> which you invoke for the sealing of this Sangha so precious to the Lord [Gautama], remember to name the Five Dhyani Buddhas and ask us to seal your cloud with our great power, sufficient to the consuming of all evil and evil intent directed against the Light of every son of God on this planet and throughout the entire Matter cosmos. And the Great Law will allow us to do it and we shall.

But inasmuch as that Light, beloved, must be anchored in the physical octave through you, we will release it only through those who have proved again and again that they can hold God-Harmony in any circumstance. We give you this promise, I the spokesman for each one of us, that you might find a very real, a very compelling reason to at last make your vows to God-Harmony:

I shall not be moved from my seat of God-Harmony.

I shall not be provoked.

I shall not be tricked.

I shall not be trapped.

I shall not be manipulated to move from my seat of God-Harmony!

O ye who are the blessed, O ye who are the blessed, O ye who are the blessed throughout the earth, may you know that as your love of God-Harmony increases and you are one with that great being Harmony, you are also one in the Divine Mother, one in the inner sound of cosmic music.

Beloved, I must tell you, when you are in that place [of Oneness in your God consciousness and simultaneously in] this physical octave, the planetary forces of inharmony and dissonance and discord and all of their false hierarchies that have contrived to keep the youth and all the world in a state of inharmony, agitation, argumentation and anger and aggression through rock music and drugs and stimulants and all manner of chemical substances that cause disturbance in the body, in the precious body, in the precious body - these forces of hell will array themselves against you.

Therefore we would desire to see accomplished in this court, through the blessed Son of Light El Morya, labors in which these forces of anti-Harmony are named. And we would desire to see you make the calls for their defeat through the eye, the eye of Lord Shiva, the eye of Lord Shiva, the eye of Lord Shiva.

Thus, beloved, you will reach a point of equilibrium where as the rings of Harmony increase round about you, so all forces who would assail [you] or would have assailed [you] shall no longer. For they

---

<sup>6</sup>See pp. 288 n. 3, 309-10.

shall know of a certainty by the writing in the sky that all who have tried it before them have been bound [by the Lord's hosts] and taken [to the Court of the Sacred Fire on the God Star, Sirius,] and judged [before the Twenty-Four Elders] - their inharmony judged by the manifest God-Harmony of the blessed in the earth and in a cosmos.

Yes, beloved, choose well your Flame, your God-Flame for your God-Victory and your God-Ascension. And if I would meet you in the way, I would say to you in the name of the Divine Mother:

Be wise. Choose the flame of God-Harmony and know it contains all others. For the definition of Harmony is the harmonization of all rays of God. And therefore this flame of Harmony is white fire, but the melody of rainbow rays and secret rays is often played across it as an angel would run her hands over the harp or zither or other instruments of heaven.

In this, then, you will see that God-Harmony is the Power, Wisdom and Love to defeat every enemy of the Buddha, the Sangha, the Dharma, the Mother and each and every bodhisattva and child of Light, each chela and disciple and servant of God.

Breathe in the flame of Harmony. The outbreath of Harmony, beloved, is peace at last. Surrender unto Harmony. Know true resolution. Know the Honor Flame. Know the bliss, O the bliss that passes every possible pleasure of the senses and sensations of this world!

O the bliss of God! O the bliss of God! I woo you to the heart of the Mother, as bliss is the nectar that opens the crown chakra, as bliss is the elixir that quickens and balances the physical and spiritual heart. O beloved, true bliss is Harmony. True bliss is Harmony.

I would that you could within these bodies know this ray and keep it. For I tell you, there are unnamed, unknown Cosmic Beings waiting to literally rush in with their angels to assist you in all things that beset you. But they must stand behind a certain barrier, for around this earth there is a barrier of Light that does not allow discord to transmit further to other systems or planetary bodies. And there are Cosmic Beings who by law may not enter [and pass through] that barrier around the earth; they may not step into a forcefield of discord.

The only way they may enter, beloved, is by your ray and arc piercing through it that maintains the tie to the Central Sun; and I have given to you that arc this night. If the Cosmic Being can follow this arc to your heart and auric egg that is sealed and maintained in Love's sweet Harmony, then the Cosmic Being may enter planet earth through you and do those things that that one longs to do to rescue the blessed.

On the other hand, beloved, spacecraft gather to this planet. They come with their technology and they will project every ray of aggravation, of stupidity, of stupefaction.<sup>7</sup> They will project the most aggressive mental suggestion you could ever want to wrestle with in the forcefield of your mind, in the precincts of the mind.

Their rays penetrate in the night. They awaken you. They cause you to be burdened to the uttermost. And if they could find lodging in the mind, they would push you to the brink of self-destruction, convincing you that all is lost, that you cannot win, [that] you might as well throw in the towel and scatter your life to the winds. These projections are ferocious.

Thus, you do have on the one hand the initiations of Maitreya and on the other [the initiations] of the seed of Satan. God must allow it, [even as he allowed Satan to tempt his servant Job and his Son Jesus Christ and the Lord Gautama and all Buddhas and Bodhisattvas; for without the initiations of both Light and Darkness] you cannot come up higher, [because you are] ill-prepared to deal with so great a Light and so great a Darkness [that will oppose your oneness with that Light. Our Father-Mother God will not allow it. First you must fully and finally pass your tests here below!]

---

<sup>7</sup>stupefaction (usage rare): stupefaction; action of stupefying or state of being stupefied; numbness, torpor, or insensibility, of body or mind.

Only you can decide the day and date of your vow to the flame of God-Harmony, your determination to be that place [in consciousness personified] wherein [and through whom] a Cosmic Being may enter.

Since inharmony comes through the mouth before it is physically manifest, [and through the emotional body before it comes through the mouth,] I suggest you practice silence when you know that that which you will speak will be discordant. Hold your Peace! Hold your Peace! Hold your Peace! And thereby hold your Harmony. Hold your Harmony. Hold your Harmony.

And, beloved, resolve this problem that boils in the pot of the belly. Go to another location. Move yourself physically, for this is most important in fulfilling this test. When you are beset by projections or you are bursting with anger toward someone, say, "Excuse me, but I must be elsewhere for some moments and I will return." If possible, place yourself at a distance of miles, but at least go where you can find your peace in God and remember the steps of the Path and give your "Count-to-Nine Decree." And when you have that Peace and that Harmony and that Love in your heart, come back to the scene and pour these upon the troubled waters.

Blessed hearts, when you have this victory and you have held that tongue and you have rechanneled that Light of the Mother that the force would channel into anger, you will look at the situation that has thereby been resolved and you will walk away and you will laugh and you will laugh and you will laugh until they may nickname you the "Laughing Buddha"! For you will be so happy, happy, happy that you have gotten the victory over these things that have beset you for centuries and that have given you a karma of centuries.

O to have the victory over self in such God Self-mastery! And to know that in having that victory you have defeated all of the armies of the Goliath of the Nephilim spacecraft, et cetera, et cetera!

O beloved, think of it! Think of such a victory that causes them to receive back upon themselves their own anger. And they become enraged. And their rage multiplies their anger and thus they are self-consumed. And the Ruby Ray does its work, and you have not been touched at all. You did not fall. You gained your points and you need not step backwards down the ladder. You will continue to ascend Jacob's ladder<sup>8</sup> across a cosmos itself.

I bid you welcome to the plane of perpetual joy. May you know this - that by your love and your calls we five have come closer to earth than in many thousands of years. And truly you have brought the delight of illumination's golden flame for the quickening, the rebirth and the resurrection of the true path of Buddhism and of Lord Gautama, Lord Maitreya [and] Lord Dipamkara, our Sanat Kumara.

Now then, beloved, espouse the noble cause of Love and Love's Harmony and see what twinkling miracles will manifest, which are not miracles at all but the miracle of your determined God Self-mastery.

We are the waiting cosmic Bridegrooms, waiting for our brides. Come.

This dictation was delivered by Ratnasambhava at the conclusion of the July 5, 1990 Thursday evening service at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana.

## 29.1 I AM the Witness - July 29, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 29 - I AM the Witness - July 29, 1990

I AM the Witness

---

<sup>8</sup>Gen. 28:10-15.

Miracles did not stop two thousand years ago!

I can certainly testify to the intercession of heaven when called upon. Jesus said, "Ask and ye shall receive." On October 3, 1988, I returned from Boston, having given a lecture and a Community Meeting, only to find myself in the hospital the next day with a heart attack. The Messenger was immediately contacted during the Harvest Class. She made numerous calls for me throughout the entire conference and also sent telephone trees to Keepers all over the world.

The resulting healing was an absolute miracle. On October 12, while still in the Coronary Care Unit, I suffered a cardiac arrest for twelve minutes. During this time, when my heart absolutely stopped beating, normal routine measures of resuscitation were implemented. The doctor informed Mother immediately by phone and she instantly started making calls at her altar as the medical team simultaneously started the resuscitation procedures. Within minutes Mother had alerted Keepers in the field and in addition to her making invocations, hundreds of devotees were praying for my life while the medical team continued their work on me.

I was told that during this twelve-minute interval the decision was made on the inner that my life should be spared because I could do more good serving on staff at the Messenger's side than I could in heaven with Morya and Lanello.

Thus by the miracle of divine intercession and by the miracle of timing, by the miracles of modern science and the skill of doctors and nurses, the measures were successful. My heart started beating again and brain damage was averted by God's grace.

I have since learned that if resuscitation methods are not started within four minutes of a cardiac arrest, brain damage occurs. And I was told later by the medical staff that it is not a common occurrence for a patient of my age (68) and condition to return to life after that long an arrest.

That was Wednesday. On Friday coronary artery bypass surgery was decided upon as the only available means of prolonging my life since I had already had angioplasty a few days earlier. The night before the surgery I told Jesus, "I am going to have to have one of your miracles to get me through this." However, I had no idea how all-encompassing Jesus' miracles could be! There was also a hereditary problem involved in my case - all of my immediate relatives had died of either heart attack or congestive heart failure, and my one remaining sister is now having chest pains. Praise the Lord, this genetic curse was broken for me!

The surgery was a complete success. I can truthfully say that I experienced absolutely no pain during the entire time of the convalescence, and the surgeon and cardiologist were quite dismayed because I kept insisting I didn't need any pain medication. It just wasn't normal open-heart surgery as they were accustomed to it, and I was just not a normal patient.

I think I can attribute part of my speedy recovery to two devoted Keepers who cooked and brought macrobiotic meals to the hospital three times a day. In fact, it was the main topic of interest in the hospital, "Well, what are you eating today?" I also remained on a strict macrobiotic diet for several months following surgery. As a result of the healing I received from the Ascended Masters and Mother's calls, my cholesterol level and blood pressure returned to normal, and I lost 70 pounds. I had been overweight for years and no matter how hard I tried I could not lose it - even by fasting. So this was a welcome blessing.

At present I am still following cardiac diet recommendations as far as low salt, low fat, low cholesterol and high fiber are concerned. And I have never felt better in my entire life. I recently celebrated my 70th birthday, and I am eagerly anticipating my second birthday in my new body on October 12 of this year. Each morning as I take my exercise, walking along the Yellowstone River, looking up at Montana's beautiful clouds and mountains, I am overwhelmed with gratitude to God for his gift of life.

I feel as though this were a completely new embodiment for me, and in return I have pledged all

my love and energies to be used by the Masters in whatever way I can be of the most service in helping to bring in Saint Germain's golden age of Aquarius and the new heaven and new earth.

I shall be eternally grateful for the intercession of the Masters, for Mother's invocations on my behalf, and for the prayers of Keepers throughout the world and ever indebted to the medical team who were God's instruments on the fateful day.

God has indeed been good to me!

N.B. Testimonies of disciples of Jesus Christ and the Ascended Masters stating their witness to the power of Truth in their lives will regularly appear in this column in the Pearls of Wisdom. If you would like to witness to the power of Truth in your life brought about through the Ascended Masters and their Messengers, we welcome your testimony for publication. Your letter will be kept on file in our archives but your name will be withheld from this page to protect your privacy and your progress on the Path.



## Chapter 30

# Beloved Godfre and Lotus - August 5, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 30 - Beloved Godfre and Lotus - August 5, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

XI

The Point of the Victory

The Continuity of the Message of the Ancient of Days

The Teaching Must Be Spoken!

The Battle Must Be Fought and Won!

Ladies and Gentlemen, Heart Friends of All Ages,

Keepers of the Flame of Liberty:

It gives us great joy to address you in this place, a place truly prepared, which Saint Germain showed to us long ago as a gathering point for those who would continue in the service of the I AM.<sup>1</sup>

Thus, the I AM movement was the foundation and The Summit Lighthouse, as Church Universal and Triumphant, is the continuity of the ancient message of the Ancient of Days come again. Therefore we cherish this movement, for it represents to us all that we have hoped for and [the continuity of] that which we have built and given our lives to.

Today you give gratitude for our foundations laid. And today we give gratitude to you who have kept the flame of the Mighty I AM Presence and will not be moved come what may.

The purity of the message of Saint Germain came to us in the original release of the white light and the sacred fire, and thus the core of this activity is the same. Much has passed in these many years and now we approach the turn of the century. You are chosen to be in embodiment, as we are called to be the ascended ones, to see this Teaching and all that the Lightbearers of this century have labored for move forward [that we may jointly] bequeath a gift to generations unborn and to many souls who will reincarnate for the purpose of the continuation [of our labors].

As you know, the forces of Darkness did move against the I AM Activity. And for many reasons and situations, which we do not care to discuss this evening, that movement did not reach the zenith that Saint Germain would have desired. And therefore El Morya was already preparing The Summit

---

<sup>1</sup>See Godfre Ray King, *Unveiled Mysteries*, 3d ed. (Chicago: Saint Germain Press, 1939), pp. 111-12.

Lighthouse to carry on the work as a new dispensation.<sup>2</sup>

Now we come to the era of the testing of this movement, even as this nation under God was testing and being tested to see whether it could long endure.<sup>3</sup> Thus, in the midst of the Civil War Abraham Lincoln did carry that burden and was slain. In this hour many sons of Lincoln do carry the burden to see whether or not this nation, as one nation, shall endure.

In this hour it is the spiritual continuity of the foundations laid that is being challenged. And because you have laid the foundations and placed the capstone on the pyramid of America,<sup>4</sup> it is known by all forces that have ever assailed this nation (or the I AM Activity, which was dedicated to its freedom) that this is the point at which the Victory shall take place. For this Ascended Master-sponsored activity does truly represent the [culmination] whereby all that has been given from the very moment of its founding [even from the inception of all Ascended Master-sponsored activities of the last 125 years] shall indeed endure.

We have come this night, therefore, to tell you what it is necessary for you to do to win the battle against the forces arrayed against it. Understand, beloved, that they know that to smite the shepherd is to scatter the sheep.<sup>5</sup> Thus, of course, the opposition to the Messenger is great, but the opposition to the chelas is also great.

As you are students of the I AM Law of Life, you carry in your hearts the destiny of America. It is important to realize this, for you must have a recognition of your calling and your reason for being and then be filled with a fervor of the Light of all saints gone before in the understanding that you can and shall achieve the Victory!

Blessed ones, first and foremost, no matter what, the Teaching must be spoken. It must be delivered up and down this nation! It is well that the Messenger has carried it to all nations of the earth, but in this hour the rise or fall of this civilization [that is America] will make all the difference. [And I tell you,] the Lightbearers have not been culled out of the fields of this nation as they should be.

Thus, the Messenger has responded to the call of Venus and Lightbearers there to teach to you the truths found in the book by Phyllos the Thibetan, which we ourselves also read and from which we derived much benefit. The teachings given through this publication on Christ's message, on his deliverance, on the coming of great adepts such as Saint Germain and all of the principles of Truth that emerge from this document must be known and digested by all members of this organization. For, beloved, each and every one of you is appointed, if you will receive it, a committee of one to transmit this teaching.

You must recognize your responsibility in delivering this teaching and [you must] recognize that if you do not understand it clearly and study it well, you may make the karma of sowing seeds of error in the minds of your hearers. And they may not recover from that error and its consequences in this or a number of embodiments, and [your neglect will] lie upon your own record [until the error is corrected in the minds of those you have misled].

Therefore we have convoked Summit University here this summer and also for the fall quarter. And we are calling souls of Light to attend who may be approved [to study at Maitreya's Mystery School] and then be recognized as those able and worthy to [deliver the Teachings] up and down the nations or in their hometowns - to speak the Truth and to speak the Word wherever they are and to be absolutely unmoved by whatever untruths are published in the press against [that Word and that Truth] or by those who would sow seeds of unrest [among the brethren].

---

<sup>2</sup>See El Morya, *The Chela and the Path*, pp. 14-15, 98-106, 121-22.

<sup>3</sup>See Abraham Lincoln, *Gettysburg Address*, 1863.

<sup>4</sup>See p. 216 n. 1.

<sup>5</sup>Zech. 13:7; Matt. 26:31; Mark 14:27.



Blessed hearts, what is that to thee? Follow thou the I AM and the Lord Christ!<sup>6</sup>

We come [to you], then, with this [call to witness to the Teachings] as the first step in the defense of this movement. In addition to speaking the Teachings, you may also speak the truth of your experiences here and of how things truly are.

Secondly, beloved, this Messenger will come in the footsteps of myself and beloved Lotus and she will stand and still stand at this altar, knowing that her place is here in the defense of the activity and in the challenging of those who move against it. As her place is at this [high] altar, so your place is at your own altars and [here] in this court when you are able. But never let a day go by that you do not reaffirm your vow, by the sacred fire, to the Lord God that you will stand for the survival of one nation undivided under God and one Church Universal and Triumphant that is truly the home of all students of the I AM, whether or not they know about it in the outer.

Therefore, beloved, to take your stand by giving decrees is the way. And as Lotus stood and still stood on the platform throughout the entire Second World War, giving those decrees daily in city after city as conferences went on for weeks at a time, so she does know that to win the battle there must be vigilance and the defenders of the Light must be at their posts.

Thus, beloved, the Call will compel the Answer. And the prophecy is that the enemy shall not prevail against this Church and that the Lightbearers shall prevail! But it is necessary that you conscientiously fulfill this prophecy, for no prophecy is self-fulfilling! And the ones who would destroy this movement are relentless in their own negativity and their negative decrees. (There are also, as you have been told by the Messengers, decree groups on the astral plane who continually decree in their monotone, [their] dead voices, against all activities of Light and Truth on this planet.)

Blessed hearts, as there is much delusion in this nation, so there is much treachery and intrigue, and the forces at work are moving at sublevels not apparent to your eyes. Many of these [individuals] are in embodiment and in collusion with one another, and many are on the astral plane.

Thus, when all seems well and all seems quiet, know that it is only that seeming and you must not trust that seeming. For the forces are moving and they are challenging, and they are challenging you at the two-thirds level of the pyramid, where the resurrection flame must burn. The two-thirds level of the pyramid is also your heart chakra, where the resurrection flame must [also] burn. Thus, you know you are defending the Light at that level, and thus you must understand that you have successfully defended our activities and our Teaching up to that level of the pyramid.

Now comes the ultimate test of the heart, whether the heart will faint not and endure, whether the physical heart, then, can be strengthened to become a physical chalice for the threefold flame and for the heart chakra. Be it understood, therefore, that this victory must be a physical victory even as the challenges to it are also physical.

I speak in the name of Saint Germain and Portia! I speak in the name of all hierarchies of Light! I speak in the name of all who have ascended through our own teachings and activity. And I speak in the name of your own ascension in the Light!

Beloved, when you shall have won this battle and you shall have won it for the decade of the nineties, you will come to understand that this was the most serious attempt to snuff out the flame that is America and the flame that is the Ascended Master activities [in many a century]. Reaching that victory, beloved, you will go on to the full victory of the capstone in your individual worlds, in the physical octave and beyond it to your ascension.

This battle, therefore, requires the engaging of the hosts of Light and the engaging of yourselves in the fight against the fallen ones. They also see it as a fight to the finish; for they know that their time is up<sup>7</sup> and they know that there is no more opportunity for them to destroy this nation, to

---

<sup>6</sup>John 21:22.

<sup>7</sup>Rev. 12:12.

destroy freedom upon earth or the freedom of the soul to take flight in that victorious union with God. Thus, beloved, there are final ends, and there are final ends to Evil itself.

You must know where you are in the course of history and the course of prophecy. You must also see yourself against the backdrop of your incarnations on Lemuria and Atlantis. You must know that if this battle were not being fought against the Church and against America, it would still be being fought against you personally. And if the Church and America did not exist, you would have a much more difficult time in dealing with that battle at a personal level without the reinforcement of Community [in Church and State].

Now you do have Community. And you have Community worldwide, and you have the Community of the ascended ones. Now you do recognize that this indeed is taxing and does demand all of your life and your dedication. But I tell you, beloved, if you were alone on the Path as a solitary climber, if these activities had never existed and Saint Germain had never ordained our Messengers to go forth in this wise, you would still be dealing with your own personal necessity for self-transcendence on the Path. Thus, all in all, you should understand that because you have come together, regardless of the fact that it does take extra work to defend a community and a nation, [as individuals] you are faring far better on the Path than you would have without these activities.

Therefore, beloved, do not feel burdened by this responsibility. For, you see, your victory in the One in the defense of Church and State shall become your victory of your soul's union with God. All things do work together for good to those who are called, to those who truly love the Law of the I AM.<sup>8</sup>

And therefore in the very process of defending this the most important activity of the Great White Brotherhood upon earth, you are balancing karma. You are balancing karma by taking your stand for a very unpopular cause in this time; and by doing so, you are earning your stripes and you are receiving the reward that you know not of. This reward extends to you and to many who are tied to you and to loved ones. And when you perform such a noble and holy calling for the Brotherhood, we can perform for you those services [that are so necessary for your day-to-day victories on the Path].

Therefore, beloved, [one of the ways to] defend the Church is to increase its numbers by [demonstrating the power of] the spoken Word and [imparting] the Teaching. Leave this not to the Messenger but recognize that your own union with your Holy Christ Self does come about [through reaching out to extend the hand of the Brotherhood to the many who are almost here but need that helping hand of a friend]. As you would become chelas of Archangel Michael, truly the high and holy calling that every student of the Ascended Masters can aspire to, you yourselves are [ascending the ladder] of Hierarchy, you yourselves are being taken to temples of initiation and receiving blessings while you sleep at night.

Thus, beloved, all [things considered], we would say that we would give anything to be in embodiment today. And therefore we invite you to invite us to place our Electronic Presence over you at all times.

We desire to be in the earth and to be a part of this victory. We desire to be a part of it as [each lesser victory becomes] the [greater] victory of a planet and a solar system and a cosmos. We desire to lay at your feet, beloved, the blessed feet of your understanding, our Causal Bodies and all that we have given to the world. And we have done this and we do it again for this Church and for this Messenger. We would count you as our students and we would urge you to see such a grand opportunity of the hour [as does exist today for your personal victory].

Now, therefore, beloved, as you are aware of the pressing and urgent matters taking place in this nation as decisions are being made by this government and the governments of Europe, you must understand that all things are moving swiftly. And the race is to the swift and the strong.<sup>9</sup> And it

---

<sup>8</sup>Rom. 8:28.

<sup>9</sup>Eccles. 9:11.

is a race to the finish to see who will get there first - those bent on the destruction of the nation and the Church or those bent on the absolute God-victory of both.

Blessed ones, the outcome is not sure until it is won. I must repeat to you, take nothing for granted. Do not take any victory for granted. This is a victory that must be won by you personally and individually.

Do not compromise the law. Do not allow yourselves that vulnerability whereby you are placed in the position of being apprehended through agencies of the government. You must tend to the law in all affairs and in all circumstances. And where you find individuals who are a part of this activity who are ignorantly (or willfully) on the wrong side of the law, I ask you to hasten to instruct them [as to what the law is] and to encourage them to [obey it and to] get legal advice in all of their doings. Be protected by the laws of the land, such as they are, and be protected by the laws of Almighty God.

I pray, then, that you will see how the work of millions who have gone before you in past golden ages, even the golden ages of Atlantis, does rest upon the grand finale of this 25,800 years.<sup>10</sup> It is the desire of the Lords of Karma to see to it that, though the physical karma descend, the Victory shall be obtained.

Is there a group of souls who can face that karma, personal and planetary, and survive and be victors? Is there a group, beloved? I say to you, there is a group and it is this group of souls and all who are a part of this activity who make up this unit of the Mystical Body of God.

We desire, therefore, to see it multiplied for the strengthening of all. We desire to see you who have been here for many years truly feel drop upon your shoulders the mantle of responsibility that Christ gave to Peter to "feed my sheep" - not one shepherd in one Messenger but many shepherds [in many Chelas] to secure the sheepfolds that are all over the world, and especially those sheep that must be called into [Christ's] sheepfold from this nation. We desire to see this expansion, for the expansion of this Church is the expansion of the foundation of strength for the survival of America itself.

Beloved ones, I need not recount to you the members who are not here, whether those [whose mission] has been aborted while [they were yet] in the womb or those [whose souls] have been aborted by deprogramming sessions, by lies and gossip and that which has appeared in the press. The only way to undo this is to go out and find them, to go out and find them, I say - to go out and find them and to bring them in. It is necessary that one by one those things that have been spoken in secret as gossip and calumny be reversed and overturned by the witness to the Truth!

Do you understand, beloved, that the gift of Truth comes to you not without price? And the price is to witness! You must witness to the Truth and you must be shored up with the Truth [in order to be able to witness to it].

Therefore I recommend and I reiterate the recommendation of the Messenger that each and every one of you have with you at all times if possible, at least in your automobiles or near at hand, a copy of the New Testament with all of the words of Jesus in red letter. And therefore, when you feel burdened and despondent you may take out that New Testament and read through those red letters, which represent the blood of Christ<sup>11</sup> that is shed for many for the remission of karma. And reading through them, you shall know comfort and strength and you shall remember that Jesus was persecuted and crucified before you. And you will not lose a moment in self-pity or despair or despondency but you will keep on keeping on.

In truth, beloved ones, the forces of Darkness know that they cannot ultimately win against the Light and the Lightbearers, and therefore their aim is to do as much damage as possible and to stop

---

<sup>10</sup>See pp. 63-64, 73, 76-77, 85.

<sup>11</sup>Matt. 26:28; Heb. 9:22.

you and to prevent your ascension and to see to it that the spreading of these Teachings throughout the world is postponed for as much as centuries. And that is what may truly happen if you do not have your victory now.

I recommend to you, therefore, that you keep on dipping into the Light and that when you feel the weight of world depression descending (for the world itself is depressed at that which is coming upon it, as you have been told), you immediately reverse it and not allow yourself to go down under it. For it can become heavier and heavier the longer you allow it to sit upon you.

We have gone through all that you are going through, beloved. We have gone through it! We have pioneered! Truly, we are pioneers. And we have known what it is like to have black magicians opposing our service. We have known throughout our lifetimes what it is to have betrayers and what it is to have those who would go out with all manner of distortions and lies regarding our activity and service.

And therefore we feel very, very close to you. And we desire that you should feel very, very close to us and understand that you are not some freaks! And this is not some [isolated] event that has happened in your lives! And there is not something wrong with your leadership or the Messengers or the Ascended Masters! There is nothing wrong with anything, beloved. And if there is some error here and there on the part of people, well, that is a human quality and few are free of it.

But you must understand that this Truth is to go marching on and all the legions of Light are there at your command. And it is the Call [to God that is needed]. It is the enduring quality of Love [for one another that is needed]. And it is the ability to look at that which is inside of yourself that says, "I cannot any longer! I cannot be in the midst of this battle any longer! I cannot be under this stress any longer!" [ - and to say to it, "You have no power! Your day is done! Get thee behind me, Satan!" ]

Beloved ones, you must overturn that [defeatist attitude]. You must seek a reprieve. You must take a rest. You must change your circumstance and perhaps change your diet. But, [come what may], you must recuperate [and regroup] your forces and know that all of these are lies and the attempt of the force to defeat you. And that force does insert its own voice into your mind, mimicking your voice, as though you were thinking or speaking to yourself; yet it is no part of your reality.

[Even as the sheep of the Good Shepherd know his voice, so you must also know the voice of the alien that enters the unprotected precincts of the mind to poison it. This is what "aggressive mental suggestion" is all about. Guard against it. Know the Truth and speak it in the face of every lie and liar.]

And therefore this is a time of supreme [soul] testing. [It is a time to be strong in the Lord, the I AM THAT I AM, and] to simply flick all these things aside, toss them out and go on and go on and go on and know that you are winning the Victory and you will not stop until you see that it is done!

Well, what do you say, Keepers of the Flame? Will you be victorious or not? Decide it this day! ["Yes!"]

In the center of the angelic hosts of Light of Mighty Victory we speak, not only out of cosmic heights but from the retreats that you frequent. We are surely a part of this activity and we surely direct all whom we can contact to come to it. Let us have your calls. Let us have the renewed fervor of those who know their Mighty I AM Presence and walk with that Presence and will not compromise for the sake of any human creation or human ideas.

If something you are doing is not right, is out of alignment [with the will of God], and you are told, let go of it and move on! Do not have a war within your members. Be willing to admit error and wrongdoing and to cast it aside and go on as quickly as you can blink your eyes.

It is always well to turn and face the Mighty I AM Presence. It is always well to count on Cyclopea for that unerring ray that does make clear what is the absolute choice that must be taken. Relative

choices, though seemingly good choices, will not do.

You can [always] be a “do-gooder” and you can always find a reason to go hither and yon to take on another project, to embark on another journey or [get involved in] another scheme or another venture. Beloved, [the world is full of do-gooders,] but there is one cause and one cause only that is worthy of your allegiance!

And [therefore] we speak to you out of the Fourth Ray, for we are truly devotees of that Fourth Ray and of the white fire. And it is patently clear that the cause of the continuity of America as the place of the gathering of the “I AM” Race must be paramount and that the cause of the preservation of the Church and its expansion and the delivery of the message to the Lightbearers who are also called to ascend in this life is paramount!

I would that some among you would not rationalize [your involvement in] all kinds of lesser endeavors [simply] because they contribute some good to society. Well, we could be engaged in noble causes, doing good for society or even for one another, for centuries to come and be satisfied that we have done a good deed and helped others this day. But these others whom we would help and render human comfort to, blessed ones, where will they be when their time comes and they must pass their tests? Will they find your footprints? Will they find the records? Will they find the graveclothes in the tomb and bear witness to your resurrection and desire to follow in it?

The question is: Will planet earth endure as an option for a golden age, will planet earth be there when the Buddhas and Bodhisattvas are intended to reembody on it in a golden age and will it be there for you yourself in future lifetimes? For you see, if you dally in your sewings and your quilt makings and all other distractions, will you, [in the final analysis,] make your ascension in any case?

I tell you, it takes a great deal of fire in the rocket to propel you into your ascension! And that fire must be banked daily until the eyes shine with a fire that is holy and unseen in most places on the planet. It must be a fire that builds in the chakras, for you never know when you are called [Home]. And once you are called, everything goes back to zero. You can no longer continue [in your sowings and your reapings]. That which you have completed up to that point is yours, and if you need an ounce more [time], you will not be given an ounce more time. [According to the Great Law,] you will have to reembody, [and if there is to be a mitigation of that Law, it will come only by the grace of God and his Son].

I say, then, the fervor and the zeal of Zarathustra be upon you and of Melchizedek and of all who have served on this white ray! It is time to give true attention to Serapis Bey and to his strictness and his sternness and not shirk it, for it is for your own good. And your own good is the good of the Church and the good of America; they are inextricably woven together. You are surely those who have championed freedom in all ages. You are surely those who deserve the prize. You are surely those who have earned it!

Therefore, know that the initiation at the two-thirds level of the pyramid is the initiation of heart. Heart, then, must be completed, must be fulfilled, all twelve petals and the many petals unnumbered of the rose of Light of the heart. Let the heart glisten with wisdom. Let it glisten with pure white fire and the love that deepens with the years.

May you know, beloved, that you have passed those initiations that qualify you for this one. Do not come to this place in ignorance and, sensing the challenge, withdraw and say, “Now is my time to get off this trolley.”

No, beloved, it is not your time to get off. It is time to get on and stay on and take it to the finish and not lose the momentum of so many, many lifetimes of hard work and struggle and victories [you have won] over [the negative] forces [even] without the aid of such a Community of Light and such a presence of dispensation as we have had in this century. You have struggled long and hard. Will you now faint? Will you faint, beloved? [“No!”]

I pray that you will remember what so many have given before you and that you will know what does not need to be repeated again - that we were given the dispensation of decrees, we were given the violet flame, we were given the Chart of the I AM Presence. These foundations you have built upon.

Without the decrees, the I AM movement would not have lasted for many months. Without the violet flame, many students would not have taken their ascension as they have. And without the vision of the I AM Presence, America could have been lost decades ago. Yet she has been preserved by this continuity of the Word, the bulk of which has been carried [forward] by yourselves. And I say that, beloved, somewhat mournfully; for the I AM movement has not carried the power and decree momentum that you have generated.

And therefore, we two stand on this platform this day in profound gratitude to both of your Messengers. And you should also be grateful that they have brought to you this mighty acceleration of the Word and that you have accepted it despite the criticism, even of I AM students, that your decrees are too fast and therefore psychic. I say, they are not! And you are quivering the very earth body with those decrees.

Thus, beloved, as we are grateful for the Messengers, may your gratitude also be expressed by your own acceptance of this calling to support them and to support your activity, your Church and your future.

We bid you our love with all of our hearts. And we come with legions that God has assigned to us for our service and we add them to your own.

May you be free forever and forever! And may you one day stand with us, ascended in the Light and free, and look back upon this occasion and this decade and see it as your finest hour and your moment of victory when you did not flinch, you did not faint but you did what was required and more to be sure, to be sure, to be sure that you were not outsmarted by the sons of Belial and the fallen ones.

I bid you our Love and our Victory! [57-second standing ovation]

“The Summit Lighthouse Sheds Its Radiance O’er All the World to Manifest as Pearls of Wisdom.” This dictation by Godfre and Lotus was delivered at the conclusion of the July 7, 1990 Saturday evening service at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana.

## **30.1 I AM the Witness - August 5, 1990**

Vol. 33 No. 30 - I AM the Witness - August 5, 1990

I AM the Witness

In the fall of 1984 I had a severe problem with my bladder and a chronic, supposedly incurable condition called interstitial cystitis. The symptoms included bleeding and severe pain in the bladder. I had been unable to work for 3-4 weeks and couldn’t be out of bed for more than an hour at a time due to the pain. The doctors told me there was nothing they could do for me.

One Wednesday evening Mother was scheduled to be at Deer Park Chapel for a healing service, one where she would give calls for people individually. My co-workers fortunately forced me to go to the service and insisted that I go to the altar when Mother called for people.

I went to the service, but by the time I got there and had been in the chapel about an hour, I was in too much pain to stay. At a certain point I decided I just couldn’t sit there one minute longer. When I got up to leave, Mother was walking in the door, so I decided to stay.

When Mother asked for people to come to the altar for her to give calls for them, I forced myself up there. I told my story and she made fiery calls for me and my situation. I remember looking into her eyes and seeing the depth of her love for my soul and her sincere desire to help me. That in itself was a touching experience that I will never forget.

When I left the altar the pain was totally gone and I was back at work the next day for the first time in 3-4 weeks. Although I still had to fight the condition and it took some time to get back in top shape, I remained on my feet after that night and this condition has been in remission to date by the grace of God. It was the most amazing thing I have ever experienced.

N.B. Testimonies of disciples of Jesus Christ and the Ascended Masters stating their witness to the power of Truth in their lives will regularly appear in this column in the Pearls of Wisdom. If you would like to witness to the power of Truth in your life brought about through the Ascended Masters and their Messengers, we welcome your testimony for publication. Your letter will be kept on file in our archives but your name will be withheld from this page to protect your privacy and your progress on the Path.





# Chapter 31

## The Beloved Goddess of Liberty - August 12, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 31 - The Beloved Goddess of Liberty - August 12, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

XII

Claim Your God-Free Being

Desire Your God-Mastery

We Reach Out

The Karmic Board would speak to you this day. Therefore I AM come, the spokesman, in the fullness of the flame of Mother Liberty. For I too am the instrument of the Flame, yet as instrument I AM that Flame. I AM the servant of the Light, yet I have long [ago] become that Light. And I AM the chalice of the flame of God's Liberty, and therefore I AM called the Goddess of Liberty. And it is so that I AM.

I would, then, that you also would identify with the stream of Light passing through you. Though you claim yourself the instrument, you must also claim yourself the Light! Though you claim yourself the servant of God, so you must claim your God-free being!

Thus, the Liberty flame that you serve must be the Liberty flame that you are. And there is no separation between Almighty God and the Light-emanation of his Son. Therefore let there not be a separation by a sense of self apart from God; for in this ye do err and in this ye do fail the initiations that the Lords of Karma send to you, each one, and send to you repeatedly.

Therefore be seated in our presence. For we would seal the teachings thus given with the understanding that unless you identify yourselves as God-free beings and act the part until you become the part, you will forever be the divided self. Therefore know the razor's edge, for many have fallen on the razor's edge of this teaching. The teaching is that no man can claim he is God, and to do so is to follow the betrayal and the fall of Lucifer.<sup>1</sup>

Thus, beloved, while claiming the Godhead dwelling bodily in you,<sup>2</sup> even as that divine spark is that God, you must recognize that the shell, the outer shell of selfhood that has not yet attained the ascension, must be subordinate to that Flame and not rise up in its pomp and circumstance and claim a coequality with that God Flame it has not yet become. But in the very same instant it must

---

<sup>1</sup>Isa. 14:12-17.

<sup>2</sup>Col. 2:9.

acclaim and claim that God Flame; for you see, if it does not, it shall truly be overcome by the force of anti-God [either within or without].

Thus, in claiming that full Godhood, you must know that you do so from the point of the Inner Christ and the True Self; and that portion of the unredeemed self must remain humble before it. Recognizing, then, a part of the self to be in the relative condition, do not seek to exalt it above the stars of God. Recognizing the part of self that is God, claim your Godhood. And know the difference.

For the absolute affirmation of the absolute God [where you are] is necessary to defeat the forces of Evil (with a capital E) and of the Evil One (with a capital E and a capital O), for these have turned inside out the absolute power of God that they have been able to wrest from the children of the Light in their stance of not being on guard.

Thus, to deal with Absolute Evil in the earth, you must know and you must acquaint now yourself with Absolute God-Good, the Mighty I AM Presence. You must walk in your Mighty I AM Presence and claim that Mighty I AM Presence as here and now! You must have no thought or fear or trepidation that when the Mighty I AM Presence descends into your temple you will be overcome. You must not dally in the woes of the lesser self and in its self-pity in this hour or in its self-condemnation as you see the sun and the moon in polarity.<sup>3</sup> You must recognize the forces of Antichrist who would defeat the Father-Mother God manifesting within you!

This is the Divine Science of which we speak, the Divine Science of God whereby you know God and you know God face to face; and every time you say the word "I AM," it is with profound love and reverence. And you may take now the lei of flowers and toss them about your neck,<sup>4</sup> knowing that the Inner Guru is able to raise you up, knowing that the Inner Christ is there, yet knowing that the little one of God, [the soul that is] the shorn lamb, yet needs the Shepherd, yet needs the Messenger and the Teacher in embodiment.

It is important to hold this balance, beloved. For those who are out of balance [in their four lower bodies] and out of alignment [with their Mighty I AM Presence] go either into the depths of despair [in their sense] of worthlessness or into the heights of claiming that they [in their lower self] are God [in manifestation] long before they have that [Christ] attainment. This is because of the misunderstanding of the geometry of God.

And I come to lecture you on this subject this day! For you take as an excuse the remains of your karma, even the dregs thereof, to declare that God is not where you are; and [as a result of your declaration,] you have the excuse to claim all sorts of other problems and [limiting] conditions and [negative] circumstances. And on the other hand, you will dive into the Divine Science, claiming the All of God but pasting it onto the human to put a better face on that human<sup>5</sup> and finally allowing the human to step forth as God, superior to all other beings.

If you will put this matter to rest, if you will ponder my words, if you will think on them and apply them daily, you will continually be affirming:

Lo, the I AM THAT I AM is God in me where I am,  
And naught else has any power this day!

---

<sup>3</sup>Self-pity is a misqualification of the attribute of God-Harmony, charted on the 6-o'clock line of the Cosmic Clock under the hierarchy of Cancer. Self-condemnation is a misqualification of the attribute of God-Power, charted on the 12-o'clock line under the hierarchy of Capricorn. On the day of this dictation, the sun was in Cancer and the moon was full in Capricorn.

<sup>4</sup>See Paramahansa Yogananda, *Autobiography of a Yogi* (1946; reprint, Los Angeles: Self-Realization Fellowship, 1988), p. 91, paperback, available through Summit University Press; and Christopher Isherwood, *Ramakrishna and His Disciples*, 2d ed. (Hollywood: Vedanta Press, 1980), pp. 69-70, 146-47, paperback, available through Summit University Press.

<sup>5</sup>See Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, "Removing the Mask," in *The Lost Teachings of Jesus I*, pp. 11-12.

Thou the All; I the nothing.

And when you say, "I the nothing," [the "I" of which you speak] is the lesser ego. It is the not-self. It is the debased self, which must surely pass into the flame day by day, yet not all at once else the opportunity to overcome the human by the soul should be lost.

Thus, the mantra of Jesus<sup>6</sup> is surely the key to this process:

Thou the All where I AM THAT I AM.  
I the nothing where Thou art.  
For I am in Thee, one with the All-in-all!

This affirmation of being will get you off the line of your indecision, your nondecision, your inability to act [and] to fulfill [and] to realize who the Word is and what is the word that is given - to accept it, to make it happen and to go on.

Shall we longer weary the Messenger with such dictations? Shall we longer weary the cosmos with the repetition of the human consciousness? I trust we shall not, beloved. For the Lords of Karma stand before you, arms folded, saying:

All right, you have piped your tunes. You have asked and asked and asked again, and we have given. Now, when will we be able to trust you to maintain [God-Harmony at] the level of the heart, [at] the level of the Christ, [at] the level of Christ-obedience to the inner voice and to those around you to whom you must give obedience in the order of this organization and in the order of the planet? For some are always above you; some are always beneath you. Thus, you must give and take [in] the divine order [and in the human order of hierarchy] and know that through the heart of Christ is the threading of the needle.

Blessed ones, we must now deliberate and we must determine what [dispensations] we shall send forth in answer to your letters<sup>7</sup> and in answer to your calls. And it is time, therefore, that we must know that we can count on those who ask, that when they receive they will not be overcome by the Light that flushes out the Darkness in them [or by the Darkness as it comes out] and does temporarily put them out of balance.

Recognize the [alchemical] process, as you have been told. Look for it. Wait for it. Greet it with the cry and the shout of victory and of the peace-commanding Presence! Roar like a lion at [your own human creation] and show us that you mean business and that you are not going to take another year and another round on the treadmill of the same old human consciousness! I tell you, if you are not tired of it, we are tired of it! And we shall have it no more. Just remember, beloved, there is a very, very short time to meet these challenges.

---

<sup>6</sup> "Thou the All; I the nothing." Jesus once appeared to Catherine of Siena as she was praying and said: "Do you know, daughter, who you are and who I am? If you knew these two things, you would be blessed. You are that which is not; I am He who is. If you have this knowledge in your soul, the enemy can never deceive you; you will escape all his snares; you will never consent to anything contrary to my commandments; and without difficulty you will acquire every grace, every truth, every light." Biographer Igino Giordani records that "with that lesson Catherine became fundamentally learned: she was founded upon a rock; there were no more shadows. I, nothing; God, All. I, nonbeing; God, Being." See Igino Giordani, *Saint Catherine of Siena - Doctor of the Church*, trans. Thomas J. Tobin (Boston: Daughters of St. Paul, St. Paul Editions, 1975), pp. 35, 36.

<sup>7</sup> The Lords of Karma meet at the Royal Teton Retreat biannually, at winter and summer solstice, to review petitions from unascended mankind and to grant dispensations for their assistance. Traditionally, students of the Ascended Masters write individual petitions to the Karmic Board on New Year's Eve and the Fourth of July, requesting grants of energy, dispensations, and sponsorship for constructive causes, projects and endeavors. If you missed this opportunity, you may still write your petition upon receipt of this Pearl, being certain to resolve to maintain your God-harmony and to fulfill any task to completion for which you request assistance. After completing your letter, seal it in an envelope, consecrate it at your altar and burn it. You may keep a copy in your Bible for your record and to use in your daily decrees for your stated goals.

I will say it again, for it needs saying, though it has been said during this conference: Desire your God-mastery. It is lawful as long as you do not raise [up] the human as tyrant, as long as it is the God Flame that [you raise up to] displace that human tyrant. So it is lawful to desire [your God-mastery] and to get it to the glory of God and to determine you will have it each day and that you will not forever and forever again dip down into the sorrows of Satan as seeds planted in the folds of your garment like briars and burrs that cling to your clothing as you pass through the woods.

May you know, beloved, that this day the Karmic Board is poised and ready to use any servant of God anywhere on earth, in any church or out of church, as long as that servant does glorify God and recognize who is God, who is servant in the Guru-chela relationship and what is not God in the human self and who is the demigod of the dweller-on-the-threshold that must be cast down as the idol that is no more.

We reach out. And if the word [for how we feel] could be translated into human [terms, for it can only be approximated], then I would say it and I would confess it: The Lords of Karma are “desperate” this day to find [in you] those souls who will not waver at the first winds of their human creation returning as karma, who will know that all of the vast Teaching [we have given] and all of the Light [we have sent forth] is to the end that when you meet [your human creation], you shall defeat it!

Blessed ones, we must have souls who will not be moved, because if we are to give the Light that is needed for the turning of an age, we must have those who know that first and foremost their divine calling is to keep that Light in God-Harmony. And because some have lost their harmony again since the last dictation on the subject, I come again. And I come as the Goddess of Liberty. And I tell you, beloved, there is a responsibility when you place yourselves in this court and [you] hear our dictations and [then you] go out and still continue in your old ways.

And now I come, and you understand that when a Cosmic Being does speak to you, as I have and hold by the grace of God that office [of Patroness of Liberty] on behalf of America, [you are accountable to guard the Light and the Teaching in God-Harmony]. For if I had not chosen to manifest my God-Harmony against the hordes of a universe who assailed me when I was up for that initiation to be awarded the mantle of a Cosmic Being, [the mantle] of the Goddess of Liberty, then, beloved ones, I tell you, not one of you would be sitting here this day!

I had to fight that fight in the aloneness of my own God-free being to prove that I could wear [the mantle of] a cosmic momentum of Liberty and keep that flame for the earth and hold it intact and not allow it to be trampled upon and therefore not give so much as an extra drop of it to any of those among the sons and daughters of Liberty who could not bear it.

If I had not passed my test, beloved, Saint Germain could not have been sponsored [by the Karmic Board] to sponsor America and bring forth the flame of freedom to found the Aquarian age. What high hopes are in the hearts of all the Ascended Masters! Yet, I tell you, this would not have come to pass [had I not passed my test]. There was a day and date in cosmic history when I and I alone must pass this test;<sup>8</sup> [there was] no other candidate. And [I knew, for I had been told by my sponsors, that] upon my victory should depend what dispensation should come to planet earth.

Blessed ones, do not wait until the test of your becoming a Cosmic Being is upon you to decide to get disciplined about this subject. For the day may never, never come unless you begin today [to pass all your tests<sup>9</sup>] and determine that you are able to hold [on to] the Light where you are - for the office [of Keeper of the Flame and chela of the will of God that] you hold - and to be a being of

---

<sup>8</sup>The Ascended Masters often draw upon their knowledge of English usage from past centuries. Words used in an archaic or obsolete sense, therefore, often appear in Ascended Master dictations. In this instance, the verb *must* is being used in the past tense, which is uncommon in modern vernacular. The Oxford English Dictionary, however, lists examples of similar usage, common between 1691 and 1894.

<sup>9</sup>See Saint Germain, July 6, 1984, 1984 PoW, Book II, pp. 413-28; also published in Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *Lords of the Seven Rays: Mirror of Consciousness*, Book Two, pp. 249-74.

noncompromise with the human consciousness.

There is too much of a sense that “we ought to compromise, we ought to come down from the level of such a high and holy calling. We ought to be as other people and look normal and natural, and then the world would accept us.” Well, I tell you, the world will never accept you as long as you give allegiance to the Light!<sup>10</sup> And if you want acceptance from the world, then go out and have the world, beloved. For I tell you, it is a losing game, and often it is the very affliction of the psychology of the Lightbearers that [makes them] think they must set aside the Light and cover it over and hide it under a bushel<sup>11</sup> so that these fallen ones will come and admire them.

Well, they will not admire you. They will spit upon you, as they have always done. You are not of them! When will you discover that? You must separate out. [You must separate yourselves out from among them!] And you must know that if there be persecution [of the Lightbearers], there will also be victory when you [the Lightbearers] stay together. For hanging together is the only way, for hanging separately makes you ultimately vulnerable.<sup>12</sup>

I tell you, beloved, there is some sort of [an astral] haze upon [some of] you that makes you think you are not chelas worthy of the highest initiations or that makes you postpone into some far distant future the day when you do meet Maitreya. And then there are others of you who babble like babbling psychic brooks with all of your taking of information supposedly from [the Ascended Masters], and you are so deluded and drowned in the astral plane that Morya has actually instructed the Messenger not to even comment on it because your identity is so caught up in it that only you can extricate yourself. Yes, this happens to be true! And I am sad to say it.

Therefore, to those who have the fiber and to those who have the will, I say: This day hath the Lord begotten thee!<sup>13</sup> This day have the Father-Mother God stood in the Great Central Sun as I speak to you. For they honor the office that I have, beloved, and they honor the Lords of Karma and they desire to honor you also.

There must be a profound soul-searching. I believe that it has been said enough, and I fear lest we will not be allowed to speak again. Either you determine that you are going to carry in harmony the Light that you call for, [or] else you will not receive it. And if you do not receive it, you may lose and lose mightily.

Therefore I have said we are desperate. We should not be desperate! For there are enough individuals who have heard our call and our cry who should be here and who should be ready for me to pass the torch [to them]. After all, it is July 4, 1990. The day has rolled around again and passed. I AM ready to pass this torch. And I look. And I look. To whom shall I pass it?

The haze that is upon you is that you think someone else will be there to do the job while you go your rounds in this world. Look again, beloved. There is no one else who will ever be able to do your job. You can fill your place in the universe by the star of your Causal Body, by the fervor of the Eastern adepts - and you do not need to make any journeys east or west, north or south to find them, for the adept is in your heart and the voice of God is with you - you can fill that space, that vacuum in Cosmos, with your star, else [that space unoccupied] will remain a black hole.

There is a space for all, and God gives you that opportunity until the hour when you no longer desire immortality or victory and you cease trying. Every day is a day of trying and succeeding and of the conquest of self. All of you do have heart for this but [somehow] you allow something, some vibration, some momentum, some astral substance, some toxicity in the body and the brain to

---

<sup>10</sup>“... Know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God.” James 4:4.

<sup>11</sup>Matt. 5:14-16; Mark 4:21; Luke 8:16; 11:33.

<sup>12</sup>“We must all hang together, or assuredly we shall all hang separately.” Benjamin Franklin, at the signing of the Declaration of Independence.

<sup>13</sup>Ps. 2:7; Acts 13:33; Heb. 1:5; 5:5.

depress the fervor of the fire of God [within you].

This planetary pollution that affects the children of the Light and makes you less than the proud bearers of the cosmic flame of Liberty will only get worse before it gets better. Therefore do not count on better days but let the body be purified so that you are not compromised by the pollutants that come even from the four planes of Matter.

I AM your Mother and I AM the Mother of all those who have been exiled, some by their own karma, some by being ostracized by the fallen angels. And as it is the celebration of the conception, which many call the birthday, of a nation,<sup>14</sup> you might say that my dictation is the cosmic spanking that all of America needs. Yet many of these Americans would do better if they knew better. How will they know better? They will only know better if they see the example in you of that cosmic honor flame of a Thomas Becket or a Thomas More.

Helios and Vesta knew well what they did when they assigned El Morya to take you in hand. For chelas of the will of God must be restored to the sense of honor, the honor of God, the white flame of purity, and never, never compromise that honor before God or man. Keep your word, beloved.

I dare say that it is those who do know and [who] do not do better who ought to receive the spanking, and therefore I AM here speaking to you today while I cannot speak to the whole of a nation. You must understand that you are the cauldron of sacred fire of alchemy of Saint Germain, and from that cauldron there must be the refining of the whole of a nation lest it perish.

May you take your stand for the youth of the world. May you shore up the mind. May you not forget the level of discipline that is required.

As the Holy Spirit, the Maha Chohan, could not deliver to you on Pentecost that which he would have [liked to have] delivered [because you were not ready to receive it], so I say the same of you this day! May this day be a day of contemplation of how you shall emerge from these twelve days, a cycle for every day of the Cosmic Clock and a dictation for every day. See how you emerge [out of the old being that was you] into the new being [that is you], the resurrected self. For it is the one who is born again - not out of flesh or out of blood but born out of the Spirit of the I AM THAT I AM<sup>15</sup> - the one who is truly born again who shall receive the new heaven and the new earth!

I AM the Goddess of Liberty. The Karmic Board remains in deliberation [as to what dispensations we may grant to the student body of the Ascended Masters' chelas worldwide]. The conclusion of our deliberations will be based on what is your final word [delivered] to us by midnight tonight.

I seal you in the love of the Cosmic Threefold Flame of Liberty, which is yours to claim with every breath you breathe.<sup>16</sup> May you celebrate the mantra of the threefold flame and live forever as God and no longer as mortals.

This dictation by the Goddess of Liberty was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Sunday, July 8, 1990, during the twelve-day conference FREEDOM 1990: "A New Heaven and a New Earth" held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under the Goddess of Liberty's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

<sup>14</sup>See 1988 PoW, Book II, Introduction, pp. 30-35, 122 n. 24; 1989 PoW, pp. 725-30; 1990 PoW, pp. 122-24; and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*, pp. 141-47.

<sup>15</sup>John 1:12, 13.

<sup>16</sup>See the Goddess of Liberty, July 2, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book II, pp. 481-88.

## 31.1 I AM the Witness - August 12, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 31 - I AM the Witness - August 12, 1990

### I AM the Witness

I found the Teachings in April of 1987 when I discovered and read Lords of the Seven Rays. I attended the Freedom '87 Conference and stayed for the Chohan Retreat, a special two-week course that was open to newcomers.

I left the Ranch with a determination to become "The Best First Ray Chela," as Archangel Michael had instructed us in his recent dictation. I knew this would require a lot of changes in my lifestyle. For starters, I had to stop smoking cigarettes. I had been smoking at least a pack and a half a day for over 30 years. I had attempted to quit numerous times without success. I usually broke out in a rash or developed some sign of serious emotional strain.

I had managed to stop smoking for one week while I was at the Ranch, but then I became extremely agitated to the point where I couldn't sit in the tent for more than 45 minutes at a time. I had to resort to leaving the Ranch once a day, smoking three cigarettes in a row. Then I could return and be fairly comfortable and livable for the next 24 hours, until the beast would raise its ugly head once more.

I rented a cabin in Allentown, Colorado, for the month of August. It was 9,000 feet elevation, primitive and peaceful. It was the perfect place to do my daily ritual of decrees. I was giving 40 Michaels, 40 Cyclopeas, 15 minutes of Suryas, 40 Arcturuses, 40 Astreas and about an hour of decrees from the white section of my decree book at random, plus the newest 12-page Archangel Michael Preamble, which we had received just before I left the Ranch.

One morning, in mid-August, as I awoke I heard a voice say to me, "Fast today and don't smoke." My response was, "Okay, I can do that for one day." I was attempting to limit the amount of cigarettes I was smoking, keeping it under 10 a day and making constant calls to be able to stop completely. I reached for my book and began my daily decrees.

About an hour later I began to crave a cigarette and decided to make some herb tea to get my mind off of smoking. On my way out of the room I paused and began to leaf through the white section of my decree book. I came upon an entity decree by Lanello. I had never noticed this decree in my book before, but I can still envision it. It was a long narrow decree, one page in length. It focused on the nicotine entity.

As I was saying it, I realized Lanello was standing next to me. It wasn't so much a sense of seeing him as it was an extremely strong sense of feeling his presence. He was holding a sword and began cutting this large slug off my body. It started at the crown of my head and wrapped around me all the way to my feet. It took several slashes to cut it off completely.

The craving for a cigarette was gone. I kept repeating the decree to make sure the craving didn't come back. I have never desired a cigarette since, nor have I experienced any negative reactions, agitations, rashes, raw nerves, etc.

I have no idea how that decree got into my book that morning. It was never there before that day and it has never showed up again. I was later told that it had been out of print since the 1970s.

I will never forget my first conference, Freedom '83 in the Heart. I had been in the Teachings for just a few weeks and had never attended a live dictation. Being of a somewhat skeptical frame of mind, I did not embrace the Teachings wholeheartedly and enthusiastically, even though I attended services regularly and joined the Keepers of the Flame Fraternity. I maintained a wait-and-see attitude.

Before I left for the conference, a Keeper of the Flame I met at the Washington, D.C. Teaching

Center told me that if I had doubts about the reality of the Ascended Masters, I should first make a call to the entire Spirit of the Great White Brotherhood to prove their existence to me before I passed judgment upon them. She then related an experience she had after making this call that convinced her of the truth of the Teachings and the authenticity of the Messenger. Perhaps her testimonial will appear in this column at some future date.

So, I made the call and went to the conference. Being unfamiliar with protocol during dictations, I did not know that one had to be quiet. When, in the course of Serapis Bey's dictation, he announced "I AM Serapis Bey!" I said to myself under my breath, "Serapis Bey!" Immediately, the master shouted "Silence!" After that, I became absolutely still and went into a state of profound meditation with my eyes closed.

A little while later, I happened to glance at the Messenger, and above her, filling the space over the altar, were row upon row of white-robed angels with stern faces. They were standing ramrod straight in perfect formation and rapt attention like an army of soldiers listening to their general. I blinked my eyes and they were gone. I had other experiences during that conference and later, but that one glimpse of a legion of Seraphim was enough to convince me of their reality, the existence of Serapis Bey and the Ascended Masters, and the fact that Elizabeth Clare Prophet is the bona fide Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood.

N.B. Testimonies of disciples of Jesus Christ and the Ascended Masters stating their witness to the power of Truth in their lives will regularly appear in this column in the Pearls of Wisdom. If you would like to witness to the power of Truth in your life brought about through the Ascended Masters and their Messengers, we welcome your testimony for publication. Your letter will be kept on file in our archives but your name will be withheld from this page to protect your privacy and your progress on the Path.



## Chapter 32

# Beloved Oromasis and Diana - August 19, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 32 - Beloved Oromasis and Diana - August 19, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

XIII

Call for the Rainbow Fire!

Walk with God and Know That God Walks with You as Elemental Life

A Troop of Twelve Elementals

Given to Each Chela of the Will of God

Now may we lend assistance to those who desire the rainbow fire of fiery salamanders! For we are here in full force and we will have you know it - that this will be a warming affair and fire!

[21-second standing ovation]

We, the four hierarchs of the elements, take our orders from the Lords of Karma and from the Four Cosmic Forces [through] Lord Sanat Kumara, Gautama Buddha, Lord Maitreya, Jesus Christ, who are the four pillars in the temple of our God, even the Ruby Ray Masters.

Therefore, one and all, Oromasis and Diana, Aries and Thor, beloved Neptune and Luara, and Virgo and Pelleur, we do take our assignments and transmit them through elemental life and the Nature kingdom. Thus, under the Lords of Karma does the law of karma itself permeate all space and all matter, and it does bind the very electrons in their courses.

Therefore, beloved ones, we are hierarchs who serve the four quadrants; and we do serve to assist you in regulating the flow of light, energy and consciousness through your four lower bodies. When you receive fiery salamanders, receive them in your etheric body. When you receive the sylphs of the air, receive them in the mind. For the etheric body does require that fiery baptism ere it can descend into the physical plane, and the mind requires aerating and purging and purifying.

When you call Neptune and Luara, when you call the undines, let them come forth for the washing and the scrubbing of the desire body and the astral plane. And when you call forth the gnomes of Pelleur, be ready for a change and a restoration of the physical body.<sup>1</sup>

Thus, with these four gathered, your body elemental will be delighted. For this body elemental, he or she, does in a sense of the word direct these elementals who come to his or her aid. The five,

---

<sup>1</sup>Rev. 15:1, 5-8; 16.

therefore, become an action of the five secret rays, and they also aspire to carry the Light of the Five Dhyani Buddhas. And they are also delighted that you have appealed to the Dhyani Buddhas, for they need those rays of Cosmos for the healing of the cells of your forms.

Now, beloved, be seated for my oration. For I have come to give an oration this day! I have come to speak of liberty and of Mother Liberty, and I have come to speak on the plight of elementals. For they, like the Lords of Karma, are also waiting the day of your God-harmony; for they know [that] in the day of your God-harmony you will have that Christ-accomplishment necessary to give some time in their direction for the action of the violet flame and the action of Astrea.

And so, they are bowed down and do carry the weight of oppression and depression and despair of the world and the discouragement of which you have been hearing. But, beloved ones, you can clear them of it, for they are your loyal servants; but in some sense of the word, they are behaving like the bodies of mankind. They become listless. They become tired. They become burdened. They become overworked. For without the flame invoked in their behalf, until they themselves have a threefold flame whereby they can invoke it they must rely on your heart flame.

Yes, they decree with you but they must have you to decree with, you see. For they depend upon the altar of your heart as you depend on the altar of God's heart and upon the Unfed Flame. As God has placed an Unfed Flame in the earth in this age,<sup>2</sup> so God has placed in you the altar for elemental life and it is your heart chakra.

Now you may understand that it is not just your family and your children [who depend upon you], but each and every one of you has potentially millions of elementals who depend upon that heart flame and upon that Light. And therefore you need not look too far some days when you feel weary [to discover the cause], for they are weary.

Now behold the salamanders! And now behold the salamanders who have become adepts, who are moving toward a path of the ascension under Serapis Bey, as you are. Now behold them, beloved! Behold the fiery salamanders, as they are nine, fifteen and fifty feet tall and each one of them a spiraling, blazing rainbow-ray light! And that rainbow ray does pass through them as a turning spiral. And that turning spiral, as you used to see in the barber shop, is actually a rising flame that, as it passes through anyone whom they will serve, will part [into four streams] and will go into action in those four lower bodies for healing, for enlightenment, for whatever balance is the need of the hour.

And thus you love to go out in Nature. But I tell you Nature will serve you more on your hikes and walks and forays into the mountains if you will take the occasion to make supreme attunement [with your Mighty I AM Presence] and to give fiats on behalf of these servants of God and to send forth the glory that they have sent to you, to return fire for fire and call for the violet flame to saturate them and for Astrea's cosmic circle and sword of blue flame to encircle those who have become bowed down under the curses and the matrices of the black magicians and those who practice witchcraft.

Therefore they have become the servants of the fallen ones and not unwittingly, for they know that they are imprisoned and they know that they are slave. Yes, some of them have taken the left-handed path under the influence [of the fallen ones] but, beloved, many others who are enslaved and know it desire to be cut free. Therefore your decree "Set the Elementals Free!" does work to liberate them from those untoward hexes that are put upon them as they are manipulated [to act] against the powers of Light [to abet] planetary cataclysm and destruction.

Thus, beloved ones, we are the hierarchs who must obey the commands of the Lords of Karma. And do understand that there are cadres of elementals in each of the four quadrants of being who themselves have a certain adeptship; and they lead the troops as [mankind's] karma descends, as it must be delivered. And angels overshadow them, and it is a mighty army of the Lord that does go forth when the time and the hour comes for karma to descend in fulfillment of the [prophecy of the]

---

<sup>2</sup>1988 PoW, Book II, p. 81.

Seven Archangels pouring out the vials of the seven last plagues in the earth.<sup>3</sup>

Thus, beloved, even the Four Horsemen, when they send the edict of descending karma, must rely upon elemental life and the angelic hosts to see that [what is due] comes to each and every one in the exact measure and weight that is prescribed by karmic law.

Now then, beloved, I speak to you for the stepping up of the mind, for the stepping up of the heart, for the stepping up of the soul and the spirit. And it is the stepping up by the rainbow fire! Henceforth when you call to fiery salamanders, call to us, their hierarchs, Oromasis and Diana, for the rainbow fire! Call for this rainbow fire to come upon you, beloved, for you will see how it will not only heal you but also make you the instruments of God's own healing.

God's own healing is available this day! Let it be used by the wise and by the judicious and by those who study to show themselves approved unto God<sup>4</sup> and to the laws and standards of this earth body.

I require and charge each and every one of you who would come into that stance of being able to command elemental life<sup>5</sup> to seek that individual Christhood and seek it by love and seek it by wisdom and seek it by the will. For the will is supreme in your life! You can will anything, for you have a divine spark in your heart. And the elementals who do not have that threefold flame, they also exercise the will of God; for we have taught them so to do.

I must compare you this day, beloved, for sometimes you behave as though you did not have the greatest power in all of Cosmos residing right in your own physical heart! Somehow you sometimes behave as though it were not possible for you to transcend your present self. Well, it is the elementals who have that problem, beloved, but it is surely not yourselves. And when you recognize that will is the fiber and fire of your being, the means whereby you speak and act and do and think and love and plan and realize Godhood, [you will also realize that] without will there is nothing.

Therefore when you purpose to do anything, it is because you will it so and that very action is a decree. Thus, if you will it so, that you shall have your Christhood, I tell you nothing in this cosmos can stop you as long as you do it according to the law of God. And it shall come quickly. And the elementals will honor you and they will perform for you. And they have already done so throughout these years of work and work and more work unto the glory of God.

And those who have gloried in God and not in their lesser egos, they have emerged from the work cycle with a new self-esteem and God-mastery, whereas others who have entered the gall of bitterness,<sup>6</sup> they have lost the prize of the effort nobly begun and nobly won. And it shall be finished, beloved. We will it so, you will it so and we will work together!

Let all forces of heaven and earth work together to defeat all those who oppose the completion of these shelters in the Heart and these shelters in North and South Glastonbury and shelters wherever Keepers of the Flame have enshrined them in the heart of the earth as the place of the stupa of the Buddha. For, beloved, it is the will of God. And those who embody the will of God in the earth will have their victory!

Pass your tests along the way. We shall not whisper in your ear when they are coming, but we will continue to march with you until that moment when the Cosmic Christ does say, "Ho, angels! Ho, elementals! Stand back and let the son of God walk alone! With help from no one he must decide his fate and his future and the rightness of his heart and the cosmic honor flame."

Thus all stand apart and the son of God may feel supremely alone. And if there ever be a moment

---

<sup>3</sup>For further teachings on elemental life, see 1980 PoW, pp. 75-103; Saint Germain On Prophecy, Book Three, pp. 3-52; Climb the Highest Mountain, 2d ed., pp. -70, 58-55, 588 n. 212; Corona Class Lessons, pp. 371-76; 1976 PoW, Book I, pp. 195-200; 1988 PoW, Book II, pp. 69-70, 80 n. 15; 1989 PoW, pp. 617-18.

<sup>4</sup>II Tim. 2:15.

<sup>5</sup>Matt. 1:22-33; 17:2-27; 21:18-20; Mark :35-1; 6:33-; 8:1-9; John 2:1-11; 21:3-6.

<sup>6</sup>Acts 8:23.

when you do feel alone, beloved, remember my word. For the day of aloneness must come to one and to all. Then you know that you are standing in a vacuum waiting to be filled with the will of the son of God, the daughter of God who is that Son in her Christhood.

Therefore, take the sense of aloneness as the sign that you are about to be or are being initiated. Call unto God to fill a giant ovoid, an egg of Light around you, with Light! Light! Light! Light! Light! Light! Light! Light! Light! Light! and the rainbow fire!

You have heard of the rainbow rays and that our fiery salamanders are experts at drawing forth those rays and manifesting them in the rainbow spirals. I have said it [before] and I am saying it again that you might conclude, "Well, if fiery salamanders can do this, then I will do it also! For am I not a son of God sent forth to take dominion in the earth? And is not the Nature kingdom under the command of the one who is that son of God, always in God-harmony? Therefore, I shall learn from fiery salamanders until I have mastered what they have mastered. I shall learn from the sylphs, from the undines, from the gnomes and from their hierarchs, for earth is in trouble."

Thus, beloved, so contemplating your aloneness, even within the entire cosmic egg, as there is an interval and even angels hold their breath, so, in the sense of co-measurement of what you can do if you will pass through the fiery hoop in this particular trial, you go for it! You do, beloved, and you hang on.

Remember the child who did hang on to the log for life for seven hours knowing that if she should let go, her life would be lost in the torrent let loose in the flood.<sup>7</sup> I was there, beloved. So we did tend that calamity, as we do all others. And that child and her determination ought to be recorded on your soul. Can you hang on to the will of God for seven hours knowing that your passing of your initiation depends upon it? ["Yes!"] I pray you will remember this conversation when the time comes.

Remember now, I have said the sign of approaching initiation is the sense of aloneness. What do you feel in that aloneness? Do you feel betrayed? Do you feel that no one understands? Do you feel that you have no identification with anyone else in the entire world? Do you feel that no one knows your heart in that moment, that [it] is so full of love and yet [it] does almost bleed for those who cannot receive that love that Christ has placed there?

I speak not of self-pity and yet it is surely a temptation in that hour. But if you know that it is a moment that must be experienced by one who should enter the ranks of the Sons of the Solitude, then you will endure. You will not escape from the moment and seek to be like your so-called peers, who are not your peers but do surely peer at you and wonder and point.

Do you seek mediocrity to have some sense of being a part of this world? If this is what you need for reinforcement and that is your choice, then you will have it. But you will not have the reinforcement of the angels of God who come to the one who says as Jesus did, "Father, let this cup pass from me. Nevertheless, not my will but thine be done."<sup>8</sup> There are angels specifically assigned to those who come to this place on the Path. Therefore know it is all right to be alone and to sense this aloneness.

How can you fill a space that is full or a time that is full? There must be a vacating of space and time that you might experience the aloneness and will that it be filled with God and God only.

---

<sup>7</sup>On the evening of June 1, 1990, torrential thunderstorms dropped 5.5 inches of rain in eastern Ohio, causing flash floods throughout the area and neighboring states. In Shadyside, Ohio, where the Wegee and Pipe creeks rose between 15 and 25 feet, at least 21 people were killed and hundreds left homeless. Nine-year-old Amber Colvin, whose home was located about 30 yards from the Wegee Creek, was swept into the raging water and carried downstream into the Ohio River. She spent seven hours in the water, holding on to logs until she drifted ashore unharmed seven miles from her home. Amber, who does not know how to swim, explained, "When I first came up in the water I found a log, so I had to grab on to it or I'd drown."

<sup>8</sup>Matt. 26:39;

You know your God as companion and then you do not feel alone. But the next test, beloved, is to know your God as the internal Self without failing the test of self-idolatry. When you know yourself as God, beloved, you shall find a new aloneness in a larger cosmos. Hopefully, in each succeeding test of aloneness you will translate that word to “all-oneness” and be at peace and enter samadhi, truly the samadhi of Love and Love and Love and Love.

May this be your purpose for going forth into the high country that surrounds you when next you determine to put on your backpacks and take a true re-creation through the fire in the mountain and through all that is waiting for you. May you walk along and say:

“Flee, all human consciousness! Flee, all human conditions! Be gone! Be exorcised from this temple, for I would be alone with my God in the ovoid of Light. And I would make my companions those who need me most, the elementals who languish for need of the World Mother, the World Father, the world brothers and world sisters.”

Make for your companions these sheep. For I say to you in Jesus’ name: Feed my sheep, the blessed salamanders. Feed the sheep of Aries and Thor, the blessed sylphs. Feed the sheep of Neptune and Luara, the blessed undines. Feed the sheep of Virgo and Pelleur, the blessed gnomes. Feed our sheep, for they are yours and they love you. They love you and they love you and they love you!

Some of you know how great is the love of man’s best friend. Well, beloved, so great is the love of elemental life. Not only do they love but they adore. They adore the flame in your heart. And if you neglect them, they still adore. There is almost nothing you can do to an elemental to thwart his love except to practice black magic or witchcraft against him.

And this brings me to my subject, beloved. For you see, any negativity in your consciousness does affect the elementals, for they are keenly sensitive. And therefore it is as though you were practicing black magic or witchcraft upon them [when you engage your feeling world in negative momentums], because they do bear the weight of the planetary feeling body. You will understand why our God has assigned billions and billions of elementals to a planetary home such as this, for out of compassion he has seen that they cannot bear it unless they are practically in numberless numbers, as the count may go.

So you see, beloved, you have a number of reasons to reject the projection of planetary depression from your world, from your chakras. Thrust it off! Do not allow it in your house, so that the elementals who tend you and would be tended by you will not be burdened by your emotional bodies. When you feel that vibration coming upon you of the weight of the world, make the fiery fiat of which you are so capable - one single fiery fiat into the sky! and behold how many thousands of elementals will rush to fulfill it along with the angels of God!

This life is intended to be joyous. If you become merry in the violet flame, [elementals and angels] will become merry and [that merriment] will reflect on humanity. And when that joy comes it is so powerful it bursts the bubble of [humanity’s] delusions and illusions. For you see, precious ones, this level of being deluded cannot stand in the place of joy, for joy dispels the need to find delusions and illusions as an escape from reality. Whatever is contained in reality on this earth and the levels of actuality in which you live, it is better to contact it, be pricked by the pain and name the pain and cast it into the flame swiftly! swiftly! swiftly!

We stand in the presence of Helios and Vesta as we stand upon this altar. And in this moment you will feel the cool breezes of the sun of your system. Yes, I said the cool breezes of the Holy Spirit.

Diana will speak to you now.

Beloved Diana

I am called Diana, yet my name is taken from dhyani. For I AM the Mother meditating upon the fire of the Buddhas on behalf of all of our children and all elemental life. And so, as Mother Mary does hold the Immaculate Concept for the evolutions of God and also for elemental life, I raise up

the Mother Flame. I raise up the Mother Flame with Virgo, with Luara, with the beloved Mother of the sylphs. May you understand, blessed hearts, how needful this is. May you enter into our calls in their behalf.

I have brought with me today representatives of the four kingdoms. To each one of you is given a troop of elementals, some from each of the kingdoms. They will stay with you and obey your command that is heart-centered in the Diamond Heart of Mary and Morya. And they will remain as long as you tend them and nurture them, include them in your calls and give them assignments only in keeping with the will of God - so long as you do not abuse them but invoke them for many, many purposes in your life, not excluding the healing of the four lower bodies or the tending to practical matters.

It is the desire of the Mother Omega that you should have this opportunity. For Mother Omega has said to us, "If [chelas of El Morya who are given charge of these elementals] feel the responsibility to be in the peace-commanding presence of the God-Power, the God-Control, the God-Reality of [the] God-Harmony [of God], then they may rise to the occasion of setting aside the former ways of the human consciousness and in so doing gain their own cadres of elementals who work in their behalf."

Blessed ones, any assignment to an elemental that is not the will of God - and God forbid [that you would enlist them in a cause that is not the will of God] (not that we think you would, nevertheless it has happened that individuals have sought to use elementals to wreak havoc upon their enemies or to bring down some calamity upon them) - any such notion entertained, beloved, and you will find yourself without these servers.

Thus, they are children. And you may consider that you have adopted a little tribe today numbering twelve. If any of you would prefer not to have this responsibility, then you may so signify [and they will not be given to you].

This is a trust that can be given to you. And as you see the results of your interactions with them and take them with you on your hikes, so you may come to realize what is this segment of the army of the Lord. For remember, our elementals range from those who are the least of the brethren in the earth and in the Nature kingdom all the way to those mighty elementals that serve with us under the Elohim of God, the builders of creation and of the temple of man.

You will find elementals who have earned a threefold flame, who are wise indeed and know all of the secrets of the science of health concerning the body and the earth body. They are chemists and alchemists. They are geologists and engineers. They even work under the Archangels as architects of planetary systems. Thus, when these who are higher up on the scale of the hierarchy of our bands perceive your gentleness yet your firmness and your ability to marshal the forces of elementals for good works, they will begin to consider also becoming your obedient servants.

By definition, the Christed one does have angels and elementals in his command. Wherefore you remember the words of Jesus, "Do you think that I cannot in this hour call to my Father and that he will send twelve legions of angels?"<sup>9</sup> Thus you realize that an initiation passed may accord you new contingents of servers.

Therefore, beloved, if you decide today after hearing all of us speak to you that you are your own worst enemy, then I suggest that you remember that a house divided against itself cannot stand<sup>10</sup> and that you understand that the reason it cannot stand is because that house and that individual has no support from any God-manifestation until this problem [of the psyche] be solved.

For [one who is] a divided house has not yet entered the path of chelaship. And the one who so allows his four lower bodies to divide him right and left, or his karma or his psychology, should know

---

<sup>9</sup>Matt. 26:39; Mark 1:35, 36; Luke 22:2, 3.

<sup>10</sup>Matt. 26:53.

that this is true. And this may be the root cause of your not going forward on the Path as you can and as you should.

Contemplate all of these things and know that at this moment God in you is the healer [and he uses] many instruments to that end. You need not take years and years to come to a resolution with your God. It is a matter of your determined will. If you will summon it, you will know that God's will will join you and you will reach a level of mastery, albeit not the highest level, but [it will be] a level of resolution and harmony whereby you can be assisted.

I AM Diana, Dhyani. And I am surely the repository of the secret rays of the Buddhas on behalf of elemental life. I come to offer you this help. Will you receive me and our bands as your helpers, beloved? ["Yes!"]

In this solemn moment the four hierarchs, their twin flames and selected numbers of their legions now bow before this altar of the Unfed Flame, before the Messenger and before the God Flame of yourselves. May you in turn also bow before your God and embrace that God, for none other may enter your temple and do this for you. [Messenger and congregation kneel in silent prayer. Messenger then stands holding a crystal sphere in each hand as she faces the congregation.]

This is the sphere of Omega. [Messenger raises sphere in right hand above her head.] This is the sphere of Alpha. [Messenger raises sphere in left hand above her head.] The four hierarchs and all of elemental life have vowed before this altar to keep the crystal cosmic cube as a focus in the etheric octave of the new heaven and the new earth and the New Jerusalem coming down from God out of heaven.

As they keep the flame in the center of the crystal cube, may you remember that you are sons and daughters of Alpha. And you may hurl the crystal sphere! You may hurl the crystal sphere and send it forth into every knotty problem and everything that Mara and the legions of Darkness may throw in your direction. Remember to say:

I AM a son of Alpha, a daughter of Omega. And I hurl the sphere of Alpha! I hurl the sphere, crystal white fire, of Omega into the cause and core of this challenge to my God-identity, my God-realization and the precipitation of this Word and Work of God that is the will of my Father-Mother. So I make it my will and I do it! For I am a doer of the Word and Work of God and not a hearer and a spectator only.<sup>11</sup>

By the cosmic fohat that is released through our hierarchs, we seal you now and seal you unto your God. Keep the seal and let it not be broken in a rash moment. Only we can give it and only you can keep it.

Keepers of the Flame, walk with God and as you do, know that God as elemental life walks with you. [37-second standing ovation]

This dictation by Oromasis and Diana was delivered on July 8, 1990.

## **32.1 I AM the Witness - August 19, 1990**

Vol. 33 No. 32 - I AM the Witness - August 19, 1990

I AM the Witness

Dear Mother,

I wanted to thank you for the wonderful comfort that you gave my family when my father passed on recently. It was a very sudden and sad occasion for us as we are a close family, but I wanted to

---

<sup>11</sup>James 1:22-25.

tell you about the comforting presence that we all felt and the support of the entire community.

The Sunday service was particularly moving for me. It was three days after my father had passed on and we had planned the funeral for the afternoon, but we attended the Sunday morning service in the chapel and Jesus dictated. After the dictation communion was served and you sat in the chair beside Jesus' picture on the altar and watched the congregation as they received communion.

I came forward with my family to take communion directly in front of you, and I experienced the great love and compassion of Jesus ministering very personally and lovingly to each one. I watched your face and eyes and could see the great, great love and tenderness that Jesus showed through you. It is hard to describe such tenderness and it brings tears to my eyes to even think of it now. When it came to my turn, I was not able to look into your eyes as I was afraid that my heart would burst and I would weep openly. I truly felt the great tenderness of the heart of Jesus in that experience and his love for each one personally as I saw it in your face that day and I shall not forget it. I really feel that the miracle of the change of heart is the greatest miracle there is, for truly that day I did experience the love of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

We had our own candlelight service at the funeral home after the Sunday service and it was the most joyous funeral I have ever been to. We reminisced, laughed, and remembered the good times. We spoke of my father and could feel his presence there and we know he loved it too, amongst all his friends. We could also feel your presence at the service, Mother. The lady who worked at the funeral home joined the service with us and said how much she was moved by it and how much she had enjoyed it also.

Finally I wanted to share that although my father's health did not permit him to go to services he faithfully decreed at home for hours at a time. Not many months before he passed on he had a wonderful experience. It was a very busy time and my mother was not able to decree as much as usual and it bothered her and she mentioned it to him. Dad said, "Don't worry, love, I'll decree for both of us." Having said the words he saw a big white angel come and sit where my mother usually sat to do her decrees. He described the angel as having very big wings, white and majestic, and looking quite serious. The angel had his own decree book open and he sat with my father and gave decrees with him. I think he saw him for some weeks because he would say to my mother from time to time, "Your angel is still there."

The night before he passed on he walked about the house telling the family members how much he loved and appreciated them and telling my mother how much he loved her and what a wonderful wife she had been. A few days earlier he had knelt before the picture of the Virgin Mary which is in our home, which was a very difficult thing for him as he could barely bend his knees or hips because of severe arthritis. He had told me many years ago that there was something that he had to do at the end of his life and that when the time came he would know what to do. I feel in my heart that kneeling before the Divine Mother was that final act, and your message to us after he passed on confirmed that for me.

I also wanted to share with you the following experience which occurred to me recently, when I was present at the occasion of the wedding of two members of your staff. It was a very happy time of course, entirely different to that of conferences or dictations - a very joyous family affair. The groomsmen looked wonderful, the bridesmaids were lovely, the families of the couple had come long distances from out of state and we were all waiting expectantly for the arrival of the bride, who was a little late as brides are wont to be.

You arrived with Edward and joined the gathering, talking and smiling and laughing with the family, making them feel at home, just generally being part of the crowd. All eyes were of course on the bride as soon as she arrived and she indeed looked a picture, radiant and white. The bridesmaids gathered around, fixing the veil to look "just right." I saw you take a few steps in my direction to take something from your purse and I happened to catch the look in your eyes as you glanced



up and I was astounded to see that your eyes were no longer mortal eyes but the eyes of a divine being. They were a brilliant blue-green color unlike anything that I had seen before and not as your eyes usually look. They seemed to light up the whole room, being quite luminous and beautiful, full of light, compassion and love. I looked into them and felt as though I could look into eternity and remember thinking that this must be the way the eyes look in the ascended state, this is what painters try to portray yet I cannot even now describe them adequately.

It lasted only a short while. You took a little comb from your purse, turned and in a very motherly gesture, went over to the bride and proceeded to brush back a few stray wisps of hair as the other attendants made their finishing touches. The mother of the bride was there also, very happy and excited, taking a few final photographs before the wedding was to begin and ensuring that everything was just so. It was a touching family scene.

I looked around to see if anyone else had noticed those eyes but if they had, there was no indication of it. It occurred to me that I had seen a glimpse of the eyes of the Divine Mother, who rejoices with us at our soul's union with the Blessed Holy Christ Self and who cares for us in a most tender and personal way, through both human and unseen angel hands. I must say that those eyes, although they radiated tremendous power and inspired devotion and reverence, were not alarming and did not leave one feeling unworthy or in awe. Instead they were familiar and comforting. I was left with the definite impression that this was something that we were all intended to become and that it was not that far from us. I have seen your eyes before but this was the first time in this life that I had seen those eyes shining through.

The next few days I thought about this experience, very personal and very profound, and realized that "yet in my flesh" did I see God in manifestation in his messenger and I wanted to bear witness to this fact.

The Divine Mother is coming to Summit University this Fall and the world has waited a long time for her coming. I wish that the world could see her Eyes as I saw her Eyes that day, for having seen them they would cease their wandering, embrace the homeward path and return to her waiting Heart.

Thank you for embracing the Path of the Ascended Masters so that the Children of the Divine Mother, who are just like me, can find their way home.



# Chapter 33

## Beloved Jesus Christ - August 26, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 33 - Beloved Jesus Christ - August 26, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

XIV

The Gift of Resurrection’s Flame

“I Come as Your Friend and Comforter”

The Guru-Chela Relationship

So shall it be that Christ shall descend into your temple with such fanfare.<sup>1</sup> For all the heavenly hosts do gather on the day when, as Above so below, the will of God does fulfill all things in you and you fulfill all things in the will of God; and therefore Christ is come to reign forever and forever in the temple of the living God that you have consecrated totally unto him.

I AM Jesus. I AM the one who was and is and yet shall be in your life.<sup>2</sup> You have known me always, as I have known you. Therefore come into my Sacred Heart this day, for I would take you to my Heart and deliver you from the burdens of Death and Hell. (Now then, be seated in the lotus of the cosmic heart.)

You have welcomed me as Brother. Some have called to me as Lord and Saviour. I am grateful for your true acceptance in the most profound reaches of your being of my lifestream, for thereby I may serve you this day and unto your victory.

I, too, have heard all the words that have been spoken [at this conference] and the admonishments. But I have desired with a profound desiring of my Heart to be able to give you a gift of myself this day though it may not have been earned. Therefore I have appealed to my Father-Mother God to allow me to bear the karma of this gift should you misuse it.

Beloved ones, I have asked for another opportunity to save your souls, even when some of you would not be saved and have forgotten to make the call for [your] salvation from the very dregs of your own human consciousness, multiplied as they are by the forces from beneath.

Therefore, beloved, you have been told of the testing within the pyramid at the two-thirds level.<sup>3</sup> You have been told of the initiation of the heart. I, Jesus, have come to you as your true Friend and

---

<sup>1</sup>“Resurrexit” from the oratorio Christus by Franz Liszt was played during the meditation prior to the dictation.

<sup>2</sup>Rev. 1:4, 8.

<sup>3</sup>See pp. 388, 394. See also Jesus Christ, December 25, 1986, 1986 PoW, Book II, p. 677; Arcturus, December 30, 1984, 1985 PoW, Book I, p. 31; Jesus Christ, December 4, 1983, 1983 PoW, p. 684; Sanat Kumara, May 27, 1979, 1979 PoW, Book I, p. 124.

Comforter. Do you suffer burdens of the soul and separation from life because you have not known a true Friend or a true Comforter or because you are smarting from the wounds inflicted by those who have been the enemy or the betrayer? I bid you receive me now as Friend and let my Friendship be to you the healing of all that has not met your expectations.

I come to you as Comforter. Be comforted, then! For you see, I can fill all of the vacancies and the hollowness and the hollowed-outness. I can fill the body temple with our Love.

Now you must decide if you would have me as your Friend and as your Comforter; for the decision involves, beloved, your commitment, your desire to let go of all other hurts, [all negative] encounters [of this world] that have become excuses not to embrace your own Holy Christ Self.

I come as someone you know or ought to know from your readings and prayers. I come as someone who extends beyond all time and space, offering indeed my hand of Friendship.

Do you understand my point, beloved? I will make it very clear: If you can so receive me, then the very process of receiving me will involve the letting go of all other persons, considerations and experiences that have led to disappointment and sorrow and vacancy, disillusionment, cynicism, despair.

You have been as Diogenes with his lantern, seeking an honest man, seeking an honest friend, but always seeking someone to adorn the needs of the lesser self, someone to comfort the human. These you have called friend and comforter until the day when they did turn and rend you.

Such is the carnal mind. Do not be so dismayed or hurt. Dogs bark and lions roar and leopards have their spots. Therefore, know the characteristics of that with which you deal and know that until the individual attains union with God, there is that potential for carnal-mindedness and the potential to be used against the aspiring Lightbearer.

Thus, I tell you, ere you can receive me in the offering of myself, you must desire to have the kind of Friend that I am, the kind of Comforter that I am. If you are ready for such a Friendship and such a Comfort, then, beloved, you need not go back to revolving the old records that keep you bound to the world of nothing and the not-self, that keep you from the marriage to the Bridegroom.

And so, beloved, you will come to the place - indeed you must if you would accept my gift - of no longer desiring this type of satisfaction but truly desiring the God-satisfaction of the true Path and the true Friend and the true Comforter. Your own willingness to accept me or lack of it will reveal to you just how much you are attached or unattached to all that has gone before.

Now then, I offer you my Friendship and the presence of my Comfort to this end, [that I may] give you the gift that can be received only from Friend and Comforter.

The gift, beloved, is a magnificent portion of resurrection's flame that I desire to place in your heart this day, that you may bank the fires of the heart with this sacred fire of resurrection's flame and use it to balance and expand that threefold flame and use it to increase the Christ heart flame unto the day and the hour of your testing at the two-thirds level of the pyramid, which is the point where the resurrection flame does burn.

But the resurrection flame, beloved, is a manifestation of the threefold flame that has begun to rotate and to turn. The resurrection flame is an accelerated version of the rainbow flame of God. The resurrection flame is a mother-of-pearl radiance. And so, you see, in order to have it, in order to meet the initiation of that level, you must have balanced your threefold flame; for there cannot be rotation of the flame when [the three plumes] are unequal.

Thus, you see the dilemma that I have perceived regarding your soul's meeting of the tests that are down the Path and down the dates from this moment. How can you pass the test of the two-thirds level [of the pyramid] if you have not balanced a threefold flame and thereby established within yourself a co-measurement of resurrection's fire?

It is not possible, beloved. And though you serve and work and meditate and invoke Light for this purpose, the balancing of the threefold flame does also involve the balancing of karma that has caused it to be out of kilter. You cannot suddenly raise up the blue plume in proper proportion to the other two if you have not balanced the karma of the abuse of power and of the will of God and if you have not understood the causes of your misuse of the First Ray. And you can only gain an understanding of those causes if you will pursue the study of your psychology.

Therefore, in addition to the courses already set forth for the summer and the fall, we must emphasize the study of one's psyche, or soul, in ever-increasing depths of intensity. Therefore, let those come to Summit University who are fed up with the schisms and wish to cut right through and reach that point of Christ realization.

Seeing the causes, beloved, is the most of the victory. [First is] seeing the causes. Second is the desiring to be rid of them and their effects. And third is the will, the absolute God-will in you that says, "I will do it! And I will do it now! For nothing is impossible to me in God."<sup>4</sup>

Thus, I am truly sent. And for thousands of years I have been sent as the Saviour. Now you may understand the meaning of Saviour and go and do likewise and also be the Saviour, as God would use you as saviour unto many souls.

When you recognize the dilemma of a loved one and the place where that loved one needs to be in consciousness to fulfill his duty to the law of his God Presence, and yet that one, though sincere, is not able and is overcome by his own depressions and despair, and you see that the heart chakra is not cleared and the flame is not balanced, you will have the desire that I have, which is to bear some burden of the karma of that one, to impart the resurrection flame and to be willing to stand before God and say, "I will sponsor that one as Guru for chela. And therefore I know that it is I who will pay the price if the gift is misappropriated."

This is the meaning of the Guru-chela relationship. May you indeed "love one another as I have loved you."<sup>5</sup>

Study the equation, beloved. The disciple cannot rise in the disciple's present state, yet the disciple must rise if there is to be salvation. Enter the Saviour who does say, "I will make up the difference. And I will pray fervently [for that one] and stand for that one to reach for that difference even when that one does not contain the ability in the present moment to do so."

The very gift itself imparts the ability to fulfill the dharma of the moment. And therefore the Guru must believe in the chela, that if the chela had this much more of the divine substance and energy and quickening, that chela would rise, would respond to the gift, would maintain a consciousness of gratitude even when ingratitude of the past has not been transmuted.

Do you understand, beloved, why it is Love and Love alone that will sustain this relationship and the Path itself? For if the chela be not able, then that which will make the difference in the chela's striving will be the chela's absolute love for the Guru. This love becomes an adoration. For, beloved, in the Guru the chela sees the Saviour and knows that without that Guru he cannot move forward. It is as though he were locked in the box of his own thinking and feeling world, had lost the key and were about to perish!

Enter the Christ.

Beloved, called by God to be a Saviour unto all, I cannot leave that calling. I know this is the finish of this age of Pisces and it is an hour when the vast majority of the population of the planet must receive their full karma. But I have asked for and received this opportunity to assist you, by asking that I might help those who are students of the Ascended Masters on the Path, who could hear my message, who could know of my offering of Friendship and Comfort and of the gift of a portion

---

<sup>4</sup>Matt.19:26; Mark 10:27; Luke 1:37; 18:27.

<sup>5</sup>John 13:34; 15:12.

of resurrection's flame. [These] could then decide consciously whether or not to receive it honorably with fervent hope and faith, with fervent charity toward me and all, with determined effort to use the gift, even if one has not earned that gift nor quite attained the mastery to uphold it.

Yes, beloved, I would do this. And know that I do it not alone for you but, in doing it for you, I do it for the entire planetary home. For if this divine experiment should succeed mightily, you can understand how there might be thousands, counting all those who receive the Pearls of Wisdom, who should accept the proffered gift and ever thereafter be those who carry and multiply the resurrection flame. And [they would be those] who multiply by that resurrection flame their own threefold flame [in order] to intensify and balance their gifts and graces and the Light of God with the intent to glorify our Father-Mother Light, with the intent to "feed my sheep."<sup>6</sup>

Thus, I have defined for you the purpose of the gift. [It is] to assist you to rise, as I rose even from the place where I was entombed, that you might rise in stature before God in glorifying him, letting all see your works and words,<sup>7</sup> and know that they truly shine as from the kingdom of God, remembering also that the gift is not unto the [human] self but a boost that the soul who is disciple might become apostle and shepherd.

There are many sheep this day whose souls are worthy yet who cannot receive me in this my offering. But as you do receive me, they shall one day receive it through you, even as you pursue the meditations of El Morya's Ashram. As you direct that Light, God shall direct it to them. They shall be raised up, they shall be quickened and nothing shall stand between them and this Path and this Teaching! They shall reach out and my angels shall deliver them. And they shall come into consonance with this harmony of those whom I have drawn from all races and kindreds and peoples, all nations of the earth.

I have heard the call of the Lords of Karma. I have heard them in their "desperation."<sup>8</sup> I have sat in the Darjeeling Council meetings. I have heard Saint Germain and Portia. Beloved ones, every Master and Cosmic Being has an offering of the heart, but I am the one whom God sent in the role of Saviour. And those who would reach Maitreya, as you know, must come through my Heart. It is a principle, beloved, of humility.

I do not desire that this be the Law, yet it is the Law; and therefore I desire the Law, if you understand what I mean. And so, as I have looked at many servants of God in the heaven world and beyond, I have said, "Truly I am the only one who can offer the gift that is the necessary gift, the practical gift, the gift that will work!" Therefore, I have chosen to believe you in your prayers and your promises and your vows despite the karmic record.

I, Jesus, your Friend and Brother, I who occupy the office of Saviour unto you until you can fully merge with the Christ that is your true Real Self and ultimate Saviour, I have come, beloved. And I have come that you might understand (for the Law requires that I say it) that if you forget the gift or neglect it or return to the ways of the misuses of the heart, I, Jesus, will pay the price; for I must bear that karma. In so doing, beloved, I will be deprived of helping others of the little ones who are yet the shorn lambs.

For you, beloved, are not shorn lambs. You have somewhat the garment of your Christ Self, which you have woven with violet flame and sacred fire. Though [the garment be] not complete, you may yet stand in the presence of these dictations without harm, which in itself is many steps in the right direction.

This, then, beloved, is my message today. I desire not to speak further to you. I would rather see you receive me in meditation and spoken word and in a rejoicing in my Heart with yours and in a rejoicing in resurrection's flame.

---

<sup>6</sup>John 21:15-17.

<sup>7</sup>Matt. 5:16.

<sup>8</sup>See pp. 401, 403.

I only ask, beloved, that you will take this offering and remember that the Church that I have founded with Lord Gautama, the Church Universal and Triumphant, needs the offering of your heart, needs the offering to sustain its continuity. May this resurrection flame also provide you with the means to give what is necessary to the work of the Church in this hour.

I am now in this moment withdrawing into the secret chamber of your heart. I shall abide there tending the threefold flame with your Christ Self, regulating and balancing this release of resurrection's flame, which shall now be your portion if you accept it.

And if you decide not to accept it, you may surely honorably decline.

Thus, beloved, the Spirit of the Resurrection from the Great Central Sun, Uriel and Aurora, Gabriel and Hope, angels of the resurrection come nigh. And as they come nigh, I desire that you should recite an Ashram ritual that you might retain this mode of communion with my Heart, as I am in your heart.<sup>9</sup>

I truly am Jesus, your Friend and Brother, your Comforter, your Healer, your Saviour and your Lord if ye would confess me before God and man.

This dictation by Jesus Christ was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Sunday, July 8, 1990, during the twelve-day conference FREEDOM 1990: "A New Heaven and a New Earth" held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Jesus' direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

## 33.1 I AM the Witness - August 26, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 33 - I AM the Witness - August 26, 1990

I AM the Witness

I wanted to share with you an experience of beloved Jesus reaching out and touching me personally. This occurred during the dictation he gave on July 8. It was at the point in the dictation when the Master offered a portion of resurrection's flame to each one of us. As I called to him to receive this blessing, immediately my heart was quickened and filled with a great light. This was a very tangible presence of the Master with me. I could feel it in my chest.

My heart was on fire in a very wonderful way. There was a presence of light all around my heart. It was as if this presence had a gravity or weight to it. It was incredible. I was totally enveloped in the Master's presence. And I wasn't even in King Arthur's Court, I was in a different building watching the dictation on a TV. And there was the Master right there with me!

In that moment I felt so blessed to be in the presence of the Master. I thanked beloved Jesus with all of the gratitude of my being. I was deeply affected by this experience. I could see how much this great Master had done for me lifetime after lifetime and how little I had returned to the Master. It was time to make room in my life for the Master.

I daily pray to Jesus for that portion of the resurrection flame and for that comfort and companionship he has offered. I also confess to beloved Jesus that he is my Lord and Savior. I have found that this confession brings a great blessing in return from the Master (Mother has given a wonderful teaching on the great blessing of accepting Jesus as your Lord and Savior in her recent A Dweller on Two Planets lecture series).

---

<sup>9</sup>Following Jesus' dictation the Messenger led the congregation in giving Ashram Ritual 6, Sacred Ritual for Oneness. (See El Morya, Ashram Notes, pp. 63-68; Ashram Rituals booklet, pp. 55-60.)

This daily communion with the Master is a very important part of my life. On those days when keeping the vision of why we are on planet earth becomes difficult, it is this contact with the Master that makes the difference. If I get a little negative, I stop for a minute and see myself at my altar praying to the Master. This immediately dispels that which is upon me. This is why I wanted to share this experience with you.

By this contact each day, the Master has become a real and living person to me. The Master sustains me by his strength and his strength is greater than the illusion of the world. Try this practice of daily establishing contact with beloved Jesus or one of the Ascended Masters. There is nothing like walking with the Master.

To My Brothers and Sisters,

As a small child, I used to pray in a favorite spot in my dad's office by a big picture of Jesus. I always felt that I knew him well and that he was listening to my prayers.

Shortly after I found the Teachings and our beloved Messengers, I was called by the Holy Spirit to attend Summit University at Camelot. I told my friends that Jesus had called me to his quarter and it was finally announced that Jesus would indeed sponsor that next quarter.

I left everything in New York City to follow Jesus. When I got to Los Angeles, I went to the Ashram of the World Mother for a service. I saw Mother and Mark for the first time in a video on "the Community." I recognized them instantly: Mark by his joyful gait and Mother by her gracious gestures. You see, I had been a dancer all my life and knew people by the flame in their movements. Never before had I seen such purity in form as in our beloved Messengers.

During Summit University I was baptized. I knew that I had found Jesus when I felt him bless me through Mother. I knew the healing touch of my Lord and there it was. Jesus made his Second Coming on Ascension Hill at Camelot during that quarter; and the beautiful Teachings we received at S.U. changed my life completely, for which I will be eternally grateful.

One year or so later, we were preparing for a dictation by beloved Jesus at the Chapel of the Holy Grail. That day, Mother entered through the doors of the chapel and walked down the center aisle to the altar. When I turned to look at her I could not see her. I could see only the commanding Presence of Jesus over her. He wore a white robe and was carrying a magnificent golden shepherd's crook. A few years later, that very shepherd's crook was brought to the altar to be used by the Messenger for the first time.

To this day, I witness to the Presence of beloved Jesus and his mantle upon our beloved Mother, to the love of the Guru-chela relationship and to the joy experienced in witnessing the Peace-commanding presence of our Lord upon our Messenger each time she raises the shepherd's crook at the high altar while making calls for the freedom of the lightbearers of Earth.

God bless you forever, Mother, for holding the vision of this "Place Prepared" which Jesus showed you two thousand years ago.

All my love,

Dearest Mother,

I had attended the Spring quarter of Summit University in 1984 and had been given the opportunity to come up to the Inner Retreat with part of my quarter to prepare the Heart for the July conference. I arrived May 25th.

Jesus' Ascension Day address was to be given in the Heart on May 31, 1984. Due to a health problem I was experiencing at the time, and adjusting to the new altitude, I decided I had better stay home and rest. I was lying in my bed trying to sleep and feeling very miserable that I could not be with Jesus and I was crying and praying and telling him I was sorry I could not hear his message that evening. I felt the angels in my room and Mother Mary and Jesus, who had come to comfort



me. I felt the most gentle, tender stroke of a hand on my cheek. I touched my hand to my face and wondered what that was and fell asleep holding my cheek.

Jesus' dictation was given later in the evening and it was that monumental message when he announced the Mystery School of Lord Maitreya to be here at the Inner Retreat and the release of the ONLY MARK tapes and how important they are as the footsteps, the Path, the understanding, the KEYS. His dictation went on for some time and at the end Jesus said, "So may you be, may you do, may you go forth in my name and in the remembrance of my sweet caress as I place my hand upon your cheek, each one, and you remember how much I have loved thee ..."

When my roommates came home and were excitedly telling me about this, I burst into tears of love, heartfelt gratitude and AWE to realize that truly Jesus had been with me, I had not missed his precious presence. I had not been forgotten, Jesus had come to me BEFORE He gave his dictation.

O God, you are so magnificent!

In Jesus' name,  
I AM the Witness,



# Chapter 34

## Beloved El Morya - September 2, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 34 - Beloved El Morya - September 2, 1990

FREEDOM 1990

“A New Heaven and a New Earth”

XV

The Universal Ashram of Devotees of the Will of God

Contact with the Brotherhood by the Ashram Ritual Meditations

Now I come in the ending to set my seal upon your brow, O chela of the will of God. Here in full presence yet also in Darjeeling, I AM the Diamond Heart of this movement. And I AM determined that it shall not fail, for the chela one by one will not fail.

I am present in the midst of the eye of the hurricane, as are ye all in this hour though you know it not, so sealed are you in the great manifestation of the will of God that is the vortex of Light around this Community. Therefore, beloved, when you shall go forth on the morrow, go forth arrayed in the armour of Archangel Michael. And do not flinch. And consider failure to be not an alternative.

Thus, we are in the heart of the Ashram, for is not the Ashram the nucleus of all energy systems? Aye, indeed it is! Therefore, let us chat together this evening.

The accomplishment of the publishing of the Ashram Notes<sup>1</sup> we laud. Now we inspire you to understand that this is the foundation of the cone that did begin The Summit Lighthouse.

The Ashram is ever present. It is a world order. There are many members outside of this Community who are my chelas. They uphold the Ashramic consciousness;<sup>2</sup> and the antahkarana<sup>3</sup> has been abuilding for thirty, forty years and more. For the understanding of the Ashram as the house of Light, the dwelling place of the Guru and the chela, gives comfort to all. It is the comfort flame midst the storm. It is the light in the cabin window that is seen afar off by the traveler through

---

<sup>1</sup>The Ashram Notes were dictated between 1952 and 1958 by the Ascended Master El Morya to his amanuensis Mark L. Prophet. The published volume includes 39 letters to chelas who compose the “Ashram” and six rituals to be given simultaneously around the world. In chapter 2 of Ashram Notes, El Morya explains, “Our principal reason for founding this Ashram is for the linking of hearts worldwide in a ritual of scheduled group meditations. Even though we are separated by time and space, we shall all meet in a union of consciousness, laboring and traveling together to give birth to our Ashram for God.” The six rituals are: The Unison Ritual; Great Central Sun Ritual: O Cosmic Christ, Thou Light of the World; Sacred Ritual for Attunement with God’s Holy Will; Sacred Ritual for Soul Purification; Sacred Ritual for Transport and Holy Work; and Sacred Ritual for Oneness. Ashram Notes, bound in golden-brown Kivar leatherette with gold foil stamping. Rituals also published in Ashram Rituals, 64-page booklet.

<sup>2</sup>See Ashram Notes, pp. 1, 6, 35, 144, 146.

<sup>3</sup>antahkarana [Sanskrit, “internal sense organ”]: the web of life; the net of light spanning Spirit and Matter connecting and sensitizing the whole of creation within itself and to the heart of God.

the night storm.

The Ashram is the haven. It is the resting place. It is the special place that, wherever you find it, is the same as every other such place. Surcease from the struggle, entering in for the recharge, brothers and sisters of one mind and heart and purpose meeting here and there along life's way in our secluded outposts - such is the vision of the Ashram that I hold and that does exist.

Therefore you, too, have been nestled in that place, which many have prepared by the stretching of the antahkarana of a cosmos. Feel now the thread of this antahkarana pass through your heart. It is truly a thread of Light. And therefore, if you will tremble the thread by using at least one of the meditations daily (and there are indeed short ones that no one should find excuse to neglect), then you see, you will always be a part of the antahkarana. You will always be able to hear with the inner ear and hear with the heart what is the situation of all servitors of the will of God of a cosmos.

You stand to benefit much from this association; for admittedly many are beyond your attainment, some the unascended adepts, others Ascended Masters and Cosmic Beings. And therefore, you may deliver to those of lesser attainment their momentum even while you yourselves are strengthened by that impetus from above.

Indeed the Ashram is an impulse. It is an impulse to love and to fulfill the commands of Christ Jesus. We are worshipers of the universal manifestation of the Christ. Yet we are here to fulfill the words of the Saviour Jesus Christ, who is Lord and must be seen as Lord by those who would enter the heart of God's will and receive the strength to fulfill it; for without Christ ye cannot.

Shorn lambs, yes, karma-bearers, yes, and those who have vested no small amount of energy in other causes that are not of God's will. Therefore, until all of these strands be withdrawn from an investment unwise, you see, you require the intercessor in order to do the will of God. The intercessor is indeed the mantram, is indeed the meditation, is indeed the ritual! For I and my Father are one.<sup>4</sup>

And, lo, Christ will whisper to you, "I AM the Word and my Word is manifest in you as you allow that Word to resound through you." And so as you do, beloved, first you become the manifestation of the words of Christ, and then, beloved, millions of words clustered together in a diamond heart become the chalice for the Word itself. And one day you will know:

I, too, with Christ am the Word incarnate,  
For there is no longer separation  
between me and my Lord.  
For I AM one in his words.  
I have drunk his Blood.  
I have assimilated his Flesh.  
And I am that I AM, which He is, where I am.

Lo, it is He!  
Lo, He cometh!  
Lo, He cometh where I AM in the Ashram  
or in the eye of the hurricane.  
Lo, He cometh.  
Ten thousand of his saints surround me.  
And I AM One -  
I AM One in Him and He in me by the Word incarnate.

Thus, the Ashram is indeed a means to an end, and that end is total identification with the Word of God. It is the strengthening of hearts that we seek, and ritual has evermore been the means to

---

<sup>4</sup>John 10:30.

that end. The ritual itself does increase the capacity of the individual to hold mighty currents of energy. As the capacity does increase, you are transformed. Rituals are self-transforming.

Listen as I give them with you through the Messenger. Listen to the quality of the voice of Lanello and of myself as you hear the fervor of love and realize that the Messenger is teaching you by example how to create a chalice for Light from the recitation of the Word.

The mere repetition of words will not suffice in this pursuit. Every word you speak, even as you hear me speaking now, is put forth with a power, with a fervor of adoration and gratitude to God. In fact, our spoken word does carry all of our being and the stamp of our individuality. So when you recite your rituals, may the sacred fire breath carry into your words the Light of your heart.

When these words are sent forth, there is no ending to them. They cross the Matter spheres and bless all Life. Such is the nature of the word of the Guru! Emulate this delivery, beloved, in your Ashram rituals so that your words, as cups of Light moving on a conveyor belt, shall reach millions of hearts of Light, never stopped by distance; for these words given in this fashion travel beyond ordinary wavelengths of sound.

There is indeed the Light and Sound Ray whereby the words of the Guru are carried wherever in the universe the Guru is manifest as God. And they are shuttled across the skies from star to star, and all who are chelas of the will of God who have reached a certain level of attainment listen with the inner ear for the conveyances of the Word as Power, the Word as Teaching, the Word as Love, the Word as the exegesis on the Law itself and the scriptures of East and West.

Now understand how the Word of Jesus Christ does live forever beyond heaven and earth. For it is beyond these octaves that the Word goes coursing on its way, nourishing Life and holding the balance of the universal Ashram of the devotees of the will of God.

Blessed ones, all who have any level of attainment whatsoever must be devotees of the will of God. Thus, you begin to see the magnitude of our Ashram, that the entire Spirit of the Great White Brotherhood is a part of the antahkarana that you enter when with regular rhythmic cycle you recite our rituals.

In the beginning was the Word, indeed. And in the ending is the Word as the Work of the Lord. And in the middle is the Word. And everywhere is the Word!

Now then, beloved, I assure you that it would please me highly if you should seek out and find those souls of Light of a similar wavelength to your own to bring them the message of the universal Ashram of the Light of God's holy will, that they might understand that by a little entering in and a little joy in the vibrations that pour through the worded release of our meditations, they might find the true communion of saints and oneness with all who have ever loved the will of God.

This strengthening process is necessary. For when you do not receive from the earth currents or the earth itself its nutrients and all that you require for the strength of the body and the mind, for clarity of perception, for functioning in the capacity of an un-ascended adept, as you are called to do, then I tell you that the channels that you tie in to and reinforce by your words in our meditations will open up to you the energy and the currents of Light to make up the difference against the problems of pollution of this world or any other world so contaminated.

Our God does not leave you comfortless! Our God can supply you with Light and equalize your needs. But if the channels be not open, if they be not sustained, beloved, then when you have need you are not tied in to the Ashram. Moreover, through this antahkarana you experience the direct tie to your Mighty I AM Presence (when in the karmic state you would not otherwise be able to sustain it), for you are perpetually in touch with Cosmic Beings.

What of the decrees and the decree momentum of many years? All of this does reinforce the rituals, but the rituals are very special. They are very precious. They are foundational and fundamental to

all who would begin on the Path and run and not be weary<sup>5</sup> and complete their course.

The ritual is the means of devotion, and through this devotion and your application of the instructions for visualization, you gain a certain skill by fervor of heart, by will of the mind and by caring for other parts of Life. To send Light and to intensify the Light ray, as you see it shoot forth from your heart, you must visualize the intensification of it and direct it for all God-Good wherever the need is greatest. Thus, meditation will strengthen your vision and aid in the clearing of the third-eye chakra as you use it more and more to project only good to every part of God's Life.

The meditations are a dispensation. They come from the Causal Body of a great Cosmic Being who has also been my mentor. And through my heart this release to my chelas does complete a circle that can take you to far-off worlds that are the abode of this great being.

Thus, beloved, in all ways know that we have many reasons for which we do many things. And though I could speak to you for many an hour on the realities of the Ashram and what it can mean to your acceleration on the Path, I do request that as chelas of the will of God you will accept my word, that it is so. Accept that this bonding together of your souls with one another, with my heart and with all servants of God's will is a major key in your success and your God-victory. This applies even in the matter of the initiation at the two-thirds level of the pyramid, even in the matter of the expansion of resurrection's flame in your heart, given to you with such love, such ineffable love, by Jesus.<sup>6</sup> Yes, your participation in the Ashram ritual-meditations will strengthen you to accomplish all that you desire by a path of self-mastery.

Thus, let the Community, let the chelas determine when they desire to group together to give these rituals. Let it be the spontaneous will of all. Let their votes be made known and suggestions filed. Thus, we may commune together in these rituals when it is the free, God-given gift of those who participate. May it be your link to the future and the arc whereby the soul may pass over the Dark Night of the nineties and be in place in the matrix of the will of God.

Trust me that you must be in the earth yet not of it. Conquer self. Establish Right Livelihood. And if you do not have it as a sufficiency in your life, know that inasmuch as it is one of the requirements of the Eightfold Path of the Buddha,<sup>7</sup> there is some force of the anti-Buddha within the self that you must go after. For Right Livelihood is the very nature of the Path itself, and wrong livelihood will not profit your soul nor be for the balancing of karma.

Thus, if greed or any other vice color your motive in livelihood, you will not be accelerating on the Path. Consider, then, the requirements of the Buddha on the Eightfold Path and bring your lives into proper adjustment. Unless you can call to the Five Dhyani Buddhas and earnestly desire the removal of the five poisons, unless you can call to Cyclopea for the vision to see what poisons bring ailments to the spirit and the soul and the mind, it is difficult for me to help you.

But when you are a part of the Ashram rituals, you receive pulsations of my mind and you enter into your own mind of Christ; and you see things in yourself that you don't like and you are strengthened to deal with them. And you will not fall apart when you discover things about yourself that you have not been willing to look at before.

The abundant Life must be demonstrated by those who espouse the path of embodying virtue. Virtue does lead to the building of the magnet of the heart, and Love can only attract more of itself. And the magnet of Love does always bring all things necessary to the one who carries that magnet of Love to the exclusion of all lesser vibrations.

Now in the heart of the Mystery School I AM come. The thread of the antahkarana of the Ashram I have passed through your heart. Now I make this offer to you to establish a focus of the Ashram by

---

<sup>5</sup>Isa. 40:31.

<sup>6</sup>See pp. 423-27.

<sup>7</sup>Right Understanding, Right Thought, Right Speech, Right Action, Right Livelihood, Right Effort, Right Mindfulness, Right Concentration.

giving the rituals and seeking to expand the circle of your meditation, inviting those who will come and those who would enter in.

If you establish this forcefield, even if you are alone in your home, if you establish a weekly routine of daily meditations and keep it, I, Morya, Lord of the First Ray, will sustain for you the matrix of the Ashram where you are. If possible, consecrate a place where you give your rituals and keep it holy. Even a little corner of a room will do.

Thus, beloved, the Ashram always has been and always will be without requirements except devotion. You do not need membership cards. You do not need written pledges or dues or anything else. You have the Ashram Notes to study and restudy.

There are souls in other dimensions who use this little book as a bible for their entering into the heart of the will of God. The Notes give impetus to profound meditation upon God and his Christ; they are like the bittersweet candy in the mouth that will never dissolve but always be there to savor again and again.

The Notes will draw those whom you include in your circle into a desiring to know more of the Path, more of the Chohans of the Rays, more of the Great White Brotherhood. Let them ask for more, for their cup is full as they receive those Notes and do the rituals. Never offer a seeker more than he is ready to receive. Let him be content to glory in the Word of God and in his Presence, being so suffused and so satisfied thereby that it may take time for him to desire more.

It matters not. It is the quality of love in the spoken word that you give that will bring that one to the heart of Christ, and this is our goal. For when one who does not know Christ Jesus comes to that point of love and profound knowing of the Master, all doors of a cosmos can be opened unto him.

Thus, I, El Morya, with my chelas desire without pushing or pulling, without tugging or forcing, to bring to all whom we meet the Communion cup and morsel by morsel the bread of angels, panis angelicus. It is a piece<sup>8</sup> I love to hear again and again. Whenever you play it, I shall be there; for I love Jesus' sermon "I AM the bread of Life which came down from heaven."<sup>9</sup>

Truly Christ is the bread of Life, and one crumb of that loaf is able to transform a universe. Therefore, not in mountains of material but in the love quality of your heart will you find yourself being able to offer morsels of that bread of our Lord. And the wine of the Spirit each one shall drink in, for you cannot send forth the word of a ritual unto a cosmos without it returning to you the Light essence of your immortality to be.

In truth, with my amanuensis Mark Prophet I have opened a door to thousands and millions through the Ashramic consciousness. Now, beloved, I have passed the torch, I have given you the key. The book is in your hands. May you let it do the work, and may you be its handmaid and the handmaid delivering souls to worship their God and to be free to know Christ.

This is my plea to you, beloved. For it is the true introduction to The Summit Lighthouse, which is built on this foundation. May you now go about placing that foundation in your lives, for you will need it in the coming days and months.

I desire you to know that the time allotted to us is an open span. I shall no longer define it in weeks or months, but I shall define the time available to you as Opportunity. When Opportunity is taken and fulfilled each day, you yourselves might provide the extensions of time and even the extensions of space.

Work while ye have the Light,<sup>10</sup> yet always be prepared. Look to the future with hope but never with confidence in converting the enemy. His jaw is set against the Lord. He will not receive the

---

<sup>8</sup> "Panis Angelicus" by composer César Franck.

<sup>9</sup> John 6:26-59.

<sup>10</sup> John 9:4, 5; 12:35.

conversion of the Holy Spirit, for God simply does not desire to convert the enemy.<sup>11</sup> Therefore be always watchful, for the enemy has not gone through a metamorphosis to somehow become the Lamb of God. It is not possible.

Thus, prophecy has not changed. Cycles have not changed. But what you make of them and what your communion with God shall be will indeed determine the term of months or years allotted to you as a cycle to build the new heaven and the new earth, which I am certain you realize is entirely an inner building of the temple of God.

Thus, you will have to learn to plan for infinity and to be prepared for the finite world. You must in your own heart sense the timings and the cycles and the limits to your manifestation upon earth. This you can achieve as well by your meditation on the rituals.

Go to the heart of God to determine your fate. And have a heart for any fate! The future is an open door. You will not control it all, but you will send forth forces of Light that may do your bidding as you serve the Light.

Blessed ones, I do not avoid telling you that you may go forward with your lives, nor do I avoid the subject of whether there shall be war and what shall become of the economy. But I will not cross the line to make definite prognostications. The astrology that you have heard bears consideration; for, as you know, it is a mathematical formula of karmic forces as they interplay through this solar system and beyond. Many things can be calculated and foreseen, but what is not foreseen is the intercession of the Great White Brotherhood and the intercession of the unascended chelas of the will of God.

How you take what is given, how you lock your forces with this antahkarana of God, how you increase the resurrection fire, how you do all these things is the most determining factor of all. Not what I say, beloved, but what you say and do will determine the outcome of your life and of this Community. Hear it well and know it clearly! Be practical. This is your hour on earth. Use all sixty minutes of it to the highest good and gain for God, yourself and all Lightbearers.

What I say in this hour, then, is that Opportunity is still at hand. Yet the enemy is fast winding about himself the coils of his own karma. And by and by he shall reap it and there shall not be any turning back of it. See, then, what the Light of God can do and know that only you are the doers in this hour.

I remind you of the pay-as-you-go policy of the Brotherhood. What you give us in the decrees offered in my name through the tapes, we will multiply and send back to you. Give us the Light, the energy and the decree momentum. Increase your contact with the Brotherhood by the rituals, and you will see what Morya will do for each and every one of you. It is a pact we make with all who are true members by action of our Ashram.

We will not fail you, beloved. Give us the Light. Give us the energy. Give us the will. Give us the faith and trust, and listen with the inner ear to obey our voice. Then you shall see in full, grand display what the brothers in white are capable of on behalf of true chelas.

These are my thoughts in this hour, beloved. Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation, and watch the events of the world scene. No chela must ever be caught off guard when it comes to planetary events and cycles and his own personal life. You must be astute enough to anticipate the future by the signs of the times that you read and sense each and every day.

Thus, I AM with you. Thus, my Presence remains over my Messenger that you might contact me at a more physical level. And I am truly grateful for her service and staying power as well as for her compassionate heart, even as I am grateful to you for your faithfulness and your striving and your devotion and your presence that continually makes possible the activities of this Church and

---

<sup>11</sup> "Lest they should be converted." Isa. 6:9, 10; Matt. 13:13-15; Mark 4:11, 12; Luke 8:10; John 12:37-40; Acts 28:25-28.



the service of the Messenger.

We of the Darjeeling Council salute you.

We encourage you!

And we say: Onward, chelas of the sacred fire!

Courage! Courage! Courage!

This dictation by El Morya was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Sunday, July 8, 1990, during the twelve-day conference FREEDOM 1990: "A New Heaven and a New Earth" held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. For clarity in the written word, the Messenger has prepared this dictation for print under the direction of El Morya.

## **34.1 I AM the Witness - September 2, 1990**

Vol. 33 No. 34 - I AM the Witness - September 2, 1990

I AM the Witness

This is my witness to the reality of the Ascended Masters through their anointed Messenger, Elizabeth Clare Prophet.

I attended my first conference at Easter, 1979. I had been a Keeper of the Flame for a year, but really didn't have much contact with a Study Group or other students of the Ascended Masters. As I sat in the Chapel of the Holy Grail at Camelot, I was so happy to be directly in front of a large picture of El Morya for the first time.

The congregation was doing their decrees and I was trying to keep up with them. As I decreed, I looked at El Morya and was sending my love to him because I was very joyous to be there. To my surprise El Morya moved back and forth from his picture, almost like he was playing hide and seek with me. I just kept smiling and sending him love. He was extremely playful, almost winking at me. I especially related to him because he had big brown eyes, although I also saw him with blue eyes. The last time he moved out from his picture he sent a bolt of energy to my heart that was electrifying. I was very amazed at the energy I received and how much power this Master had. It sobered me up quite a bit because I realized I was not dealing with a happy-go-lucky Master, but one of great power and purpose.

Then the Messenger came on the platform and began to give a dictation by Amazonia. As soon as the dictation started, I saw multicolored rays of light beaming out from the Messenger. I thought it was a light show directed by the audiovisual crew, but looked around and saw no spotlights at all. I also looked to see if other people were noticing the beautiful bands of colors that were streaming from Mother. The whole chapel was filled with gold, blue and purple hues. Everyone was drenched in magnificent light colors, although no one was acting as if anything unusual was going on. So I perceived that the cosmic being Amazonia was causing this phenomenon. As soon as the dictation was finished, the room became normal again and there were no light rays coming from the Messenger.

About a year later I became a communicant of the Church. As a group of us were preparing to become communicants, I decided to do the Surrender Rosary to Mother Mary that morning before the ceremony. We were in the Chapel of the Holy Family, which had a beautiful statue of Mother Mary suspended on a cross placed above the altar. We were having a wonderful decree session in the chapel when the Messenger came in to give us a teaching and the blessing. I was meditating on Mother Mary and looking at her statue.

The moment the Messenger walked in I saw Mother Mary come into the statue and animate it. She was a beautiful young woman surrounded by pink cherubs and angels and she was suspended on a gold cross. From her Immaculate Heart, beams of light went everywhere and I felt my hardness of heart being dissolved in her presence. I could not take my eyes off of her Heart because it was sending out so much light. It was almost blinding. I could not stop the tears from falling down my cheeks. This continued for one and a half to two hours until the Messenger left the chapel. It was the greatest day of my life because, like other pilgrims at Fátima and Medjugorje, I had actually witnessed Mother Mary with my own eyes and heart.

Dear Hearts on the Path,

I had been working on staff in the editorial department at Camelot for about a year and a half when we began getting a certain project ready for publication. There were a lot of things that were new to me on the project and I was learning as I was going. Our timelines for having sections ready to send to the graphics department were tight. One Saturday evening I was asked to keep working instead of going to the Saint Germain service.

Toward the end of the evening I had finished my work so I went to join the service, but it was too late. The service was just ending. Before going home, though, I decided I would go in to the chapel to say some prayers.

I sat in the chapel off to the side near El Morya's large portrait. I was thinking about the day and all the tests that had come my way. It had been a long and full day. While my mind was reviewing the day's events, I felt a gentle pull on me as though I should go and kneel before El Morya's picture and say a prayer to him. While I had seen others do that, I had never done it, but I found myself going to the side altar and kneeling in front of the Master's portrait.

I started to pray to El Morya and raised my head to look up into his eyes. When I did, I saw El Morya was looking back at me. His portrait had come alive and I thought to myself, "I'm looking at El Morya, not his picture." His face was intensely radiant and around his head and face there was a shimmering white light, like a brilliant white cloud. I was speechless before this magnificent vision and flooded with the feeling of joy. The vision lasted only a few seconds. I heard a noise behind me and looked away. When I turned back to El Morya, the portrait had returned and the vision was gone.

The Messenger has told us that the Ascended Masters sometimes use their photographs or portraits to convey blessings and that they love each one of us individually. My vision of El Morya is a testimony to this truth, to El Morya's care and blessing extended to me at the end of a long day of striving. I have never had another experience like this and it is one that I will never forget.

I am grateful for this opportunity to record my "Witness" about El Morya. I know we all have special moments and inner experiences with the Masters which we haven't shared before. While I was writing this account, I realized I was feeling much of the joy that I had during this experience and it made me doubly grateful.

With love,

Dear Mother, Dear Staff at the Inner Retreat,

This is my testimony of the truth of the Teachings of the Great White Brotherhood and of Mother truly being the Messenger of God.

Ever since I heard about the Inner Retreat for the first time, I have had a constant and intense longing to be there at Maitreya's Mystery School and serve with my fellow chelas there. However, due to different circumstances in my life, I have been unable to have this dream of mine fulfilled.

In 1989, I was blessed to be serving at the Chicago Teaching Center while working at my job in the city. In May of 1989, Mother visited the Teaching Center on her way back to the Ranch from

the conference in New York, and we were all very excited.

When she came, Mother announced to us the pending completion of the El Morya 3 tape and we were very pleased to hear the wonderful songs from the tape. When the song "Forget Me Not" was played, I found myself transported up into the Light of God in total bliss, completely open to God, like a child trustingly throwing himself into the arms of a loving father. I know that Mother's physical presence made this possible and I also think that I was more than usually open to the octaves of Light.

My longing to be at the Ranch burned on intensely and undiminished. I remembered Mother's words, which she has said on many occasions, that she is with us wherever we are and that we but have to invoke her mantle and Lanello's and they will be with us and will be able to intercede for us. So I always invoked their mantle when we were having decree services at the Teaching Center.

One Saturday evening, I was conducting the Saint Germain service with another chela. At the end of the service, we usually sang a song to Beloved El Morya facing his picture in the sanctuary. On this particular evening when the song was played I turned around to face El Morya's picture, but this time it was not El Morya's - but Mother's loving eyes smiling at me through El Morya's picture! This experience lasted only for a few seconds and then it was El Morya's eyes in his picture again, but it was so real and tangible as if Mother were actually physically there. And I knew she was, and I know that she is wherever we are, if we invoke her mantle and presence.

This experience also told me that where El Morya is, there is Mother, where Mother is, there is El Morya. I know that many people can testify to this, having received El Morya's words and teachings from Mother on numerous occasions.

I am eternally grateful to have a living Guru, Elizabeth Clare Prophet, and to have found this most wonderful Teaching and this beautiful Path to God. All glory to God.

Very sincerely and with all my love,



# Chapter 35

## Beloved El Morya - September 9, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 35 - Beloved El Morya - September 9, 1990

Poised for the Victory

The Cycles Can Be Turned!

At King Arthur's Court on the Occasion of the Thirty-Second

Anniversary of the Founding of The Summit Lighthouse

Our Alchemy for the Crystallization of the God Flame

Hail, chelas of my heart! I truly am with you in this hour as the forces of Darkness rage and the karma becomes more physical day by day.<sup>1</sup> I am in your heart, you are in my heart and we are one for this glorious celebration of this thirty-second anniversary of our Summit Lighthouse! [28-second standing ovation]

Surely, surely some of you have attained to the bonding<sup>2</sup> of our hearts and our spirits as one. Surely some yet seek to enter into this communion with me, while others, knowing not what they do<sup>3</sup> to prevent it, yet remain outside the door of my Ashram.

I come to woo you, beloved, to enter and sit by my fire. For surely it is a sacred fire. Surely it is tended by salamanders and spirits of fire. Therefore be seated with me now that we might have our fireside chat to contemplate the achievements of these years and those things left undone.

Mighty is the achievement, truly an adequate foundation for the victory; yet the fullness of the cup must be drunk.<sup>4</sup> This year we will work through the full power of the flame of God-Justice<sup>5</sup> with beloved Portia [and] all of the ascended hosts. It is our goal and truly our very purpose to see to it that the karma of Community and of individuals does pass into the violet fire of transmutation, [its situations resolved] through the way of service. [It is our desire that] all might achieve that coming into balance whereby the star of Christhood and the birth of a Christ might be the sign next year of a thirty-three-year spiral.<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>At about 2 a.m. on August 2, 1990, five days prior to El Morya's dictation, Iraq invaded Kuwait with 100,000 troops, seizing control of the country and its oil fields, and throwing the Persian Gulf region into crisis. An estimated 200,000 U.S. troops have been sent to the area, joined by forces from at least 25 other nations. The invasion, triggered in part by an eclipse of the moon on August 6, 1990, is analyzed by the Messenger in her book *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*, pp. 337-80 (\$5.95, add \$1.25 for postage).

<sup>2</sup>See pp. 203-9, 213.

<sup>3</sup>Luke 23:34.

<sup>4</sup>Matt. 26:27.

<sup>5</sup>The Summit Lighthouse entered the 8 o'clock line of the Cosmic Clock on August 7, 1990. The flame of God-Justice is charted on the 8 o'clock line under the solar hierarchy of Virgo.

<sup>6</sup>The number 33 symbolically represents the Christ. As Jesus manifested the full victory of his Christhood at age

Would to God you would rise, starting at the beginning, that you might pass through the Teachings and the Way and the lessons unto your own thirty-three-year spiral of victory. It matters not whether it take you thirty-three centuries or whether, beloved, you do this in thirty-three months or thirty-three weeks.

May you know, then, that the cycles can be turned. For this [reason] I am so grateful that we have the Ashram Notes and rituals; for passing through these spirals [of our early beginnings], you lock in to the foundation [of this organization].

And truly I tell you that the founding fathers of this activity, who were present in Philadelphia on August 7, 1958, are here again this day. And they are the Masters who have truly formed that great alliance with me as members of the Darjeeling Council, and they did stake their lives and Causal Bodies upon this effort and upon the Messenger and the few who did gather with him.

Therefore there came Archangel Michael with magnificent protection, representing the Archangels. And this protection surely must be invoked from its inception to this hour; for it is the momentum of this thirty-three-year spiral that we would see anchored in the physical octave come next year. Understand this, my beloved.

Understand that Elohim Peace came representing the Mighty Elohim of God that you might keep the peace as watchmen on the wall of the Lord and the wall of the world. Therefore dedicate your hearts this day anew to holding that flame of peace while there is the raging of war in the earth.

There did come, beloved, that Saint Germain, even the hierarch of Aquarius, to endow with his momentum of all ages and ages to come that little band that has become almost numberless numbers by the count of souls who have been contacted through the books and publications and by the wavelength of the violet flame. Millions, beloved, are tied to the heart of these Messengers. For the Light has gone forth through your decrees, and Saint Germain's love on that day, beloved, did endow this activity with its Seventh-Ray and seventh-age mission.

Blessed ones, there did come the Maha Chohan. And as he stood there with me on that day, I did contemplate how those who would come in succeeding decades would purify themselves, become holy and therefore be able to receive not only the Father and the Son in their temples but also that Holy Spirit.

Blessed hearts, this is the day when you ought to recognize [the seven founders of this activity] and even this very night as you meet in the Retreat of the Divine Mother. [This is the day] for you to make your pact with these seven<sup>7</sup> who spoke that day, to enjoin them and to seal your hearts in that grand alliance of the ages. [Thus may you] bring forward to the present all the dispensations of these years, especially that of the inception, that very initiation of dispensation from the Great Central Sun that did unleash a spiral which, I tell you, was planned to be unleashed in Philadelphia. [For our] purpose was to tie in to the great alliance of minds and hearts and souls who converged in that city for the signing of the Declaration of Independence.

And I tell you, beloved, these two acts are the greatest in the history of this present world. [The first] is the founding of this civilization on the foundations of freedom and the principles of God whereby two hundred years later there could come about [the second], the founding of The Summit Lighthouse as the spiritual culmination and the capstone on that pyramid. These are the Alpha and the Omega of this civilization.

And I tell you, beloved, the momentum of Light poured into America on the day of that signing and that conception of this nation was extraordinary indeed! And inasmuch as there is the resurrection in

---

33, we also are intended to internalize the Christ Self and become the Christ incarnate by our thirty-third year. It is at age 33 when the fullness of one's mission begins. See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Great White Brotherhood in the Culture, History and Religion of America*, pp. 183-95.

<sup>7</sup>Archangel Michael, Elohim of Peace, Saint Germain, the Maha Chohan, El Morya, Gautama Buddha, Godfre

this year of that original fervor of the Founding Fathers,<sup>8</sup> I ask you to claim it, to claim their Causal Bodies, to claim all the Causal Bodies of all Ascended Masters who were a part of that founding with Saint Germain as well as [the Causal Bodies of] those unspoken who were with me in 1958 in Philadelphia.

Therefore, beloved hearts, I did speak also on that occasion, as did Lord Gautama Buddha and beloved Godfre. Every line of their dictations and my own, every dispensation is forever as long as you will claim it again and again and seal it in your heart.

Know, then, beloved, that to lay the foundation strong for this year of challenges, it is well to look back and reap the blessings and the Teachings. And inasmuch as all of you cannot read all of the Teachings or listen to all of the dictations, I suggest that you divide them up amongst yourselves so that when you take the staff as a whole and the larger Community as a whole there will be experts on certain years of Teachings, certain Masters and certain subjects, whereby the whole may be held in the heart one by one, some providing this portion, some another, and sharing it gladly with one another.

This Teaching must be a living and a vibrant teaching. It must be alive in your hearts and minds so that when you come together with your planning, beloved, you may also share the precious gems, many of which have not been found or looked into, many of which apply to the very current world scene. Even these seven dictations were for some time unnoticed [in the archives] and therefore heretofore you have celebrated the beginning of our organization on the eighth [of August] with the first Pearl of Wisdom.

Now you understand that it was the seventh when that divine dispensation and endowment of Causal Bodies unnumbered went forth. May you know this, beloved, and know that it is your hour to dedicate the founding of this Church Universal and Triumphant anew in the new heaven, in the new earth that is given.

Truly, beloved, you understand that month by month and day by day you see the April 23rd syndrome, and you see how pertinent were the warnings of the Messenger again and again regarding Third World countries and their desire to move against the Light and the United States. Consider, then, Iraq, [who] without even having the full force of nuclear weapons at hand would unleash the taking of territory and challenge the [global] balance of power and the very flame of Liberty. What, then, would these powers do with [a full nuclear] arsenal under their control?

Blessed hearts, there has truly been unleashed in this action the karma of the West. And there do come forth individuals who are the sign and the signet of that karma - the karma of nonpreparedness, the karma of not being alert. There is a time when it can be turned back and a time when it will outplay itself. This situation [in Iraq] is most serious, beloved, and you must provide the counterbalance by intensifying the Light of the spiritual flame and by keeping the vigil here [at the Royal Teton Ranch and in your centers throughout the world].

I tell you, then, that this vigil of keeping the flame of Church Universal and Triumphant was never more urgent than it is in this hour. Everyone who has received the blessings of these dispensations, everyone who continues to read the handwriting on the wall of a prophecy that is unchanged must understand that for the saving of a planet the Church must survive, the outer Community must survive and you, one by one by one as the individualization of the God Flame, must survive. And that survival is a spiritual continuity of being whose fires you must bank daily, never taking for granted that the fire of Darjeeling will reach you in time [to save you], when you yourselves might be as unprepared as the other Arab states [were] or even the United States [was] for this particular maneuver of Iraq.

Therefore, beloved, it must be told and I must tell you that because of the expenses of many Keepers of the Flame around the world in their preparations, we are not receiving the necessary funds

---

<sup>8</sup>See pp. 347-57.

to hold the balance, to make the payments month by month to keep this organization functioning as it should be. I therefore must inaugurate this day a fund-raising campaign and the increase of your calls for supply. I also ask you to take action to bring in that supply by your good works.

This Community is the bread of Life, even the whole loaf of the Christ consciousness when you count the unascended and ascended beings who make it up. The loaf is required, beloved, else how shall we give the crumbs to the multitudes - yes, crumbs from the Master's table?<sup>9</sup>

There must be outreach and there must be seminars [held] and books published. But above all, there must be an immediate rallying by Keepers of the Flame around the world to the financial needs that moment by moment must be met. . . .

I ask you, beloved, to consider the offer of the Messenger that was made at my request last evening (and the directive to make this offer was given to her at a meeting of the Darjeeling Council) to be present without fail on Wednesday evening beginning with the sacred ritual of the "Watch With Me." [The Messenger has offered to] keep the vigil of the Sacred Heart of Jesus, continuing with fervent calls for supply and for the clearing of the seven deadly fears<sup>10</sup> from your worlds, that you might precipitate that supply, and for the clearing of all blocks and opposition to your realization that you can indeed work the works of him that sent you.<sup>11</sup>

For I have sent you, your Mighty I AM Presence has sent you, the Cosmic Christ has sent you! We do not fail you. We would see you open up your consciousness to the abundance that is at hand in a willingness to work and work hard and to increase and multiply that abundance.

Therefore the Darjeeling Council has said to the Messenger what I shall repeat to you now, that those who come must put something into the collection plate, whether it be a quarter, a dime, a dollar, but something that can be the focus for their multiplication of the loaves and fishes so needed.

Those who would have the mantle and the sponsorship of the Messenger with them as they go out from this ["Watch With Me"] service to do their work and to attempt to provide the necessary aid may have that blessing and that mantle if they will commit to me that all monies that they henceforth receive into their hands they shall first tithe<sup>12</sup> to the Church and then use the rest for the paying of their bills, et cetera.

By that commitment, beloved, you make the same commitment to the living Guru that I made in my own time to the great Guru Melchizedek.<sup>13</sup> And therefore, I tell you, I did never want for abundance and had tremendous assets under my dominion, for I did always tithe to the living representative of the Almighty.

And this is the measure of your portion, beloved, [that you must give; for the Law of the One states that a tenth of your daily portion] does already belong to God. [And the Lord, your Mighty I AM Presence, will take your tithe and return it to you tenfold in one form or another.] And therefore be grateful that you have one in embodiment who has the mantle of the Guru, through whom you may fulfill this law [of the tithe] to your own benefit as well as to the benefit of our blessed and beloved Church.

---

<sup>9</sup>Matt. 15:21-28; Mark 7:24-30.

<sup>10</sup>Seven deadly fears. Fear of poverty, fear of criticism, fear of ill health, fear of loss of love, fear of loss of liberty, fear of old age, and fear of death. See Napoleon Hill, Ballantine Books paperbacks: *Grow Rich! With Peace of Mind*, pp. 50-62; *Think and Grow Rich*, pp. 221-54; *The Master-Key to Riches*, pp. 187-89. Available through Summit University Press, \$4.95 each (add \$.90 each for postage).

<sup>11</sup>John 9:4.

<sup>12</sup>tithe: to give a tenth part of one's income as a voluntary contribution for the support of the Church. Members, called "communicants," of Church Universal and Triumphant regularly tithe in support of this activity and its worldwide dissemination of the Teachings of the Ascended Masters.

<sup>13</sup>El Morya was embodied as the Hebrew patriarch Abraham, who gave tithes to Melchizedek, king of Salem. See Gen. 14:17-20; Heb. 7:1-10; and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, August 25-27, 1982, "Teachings of the Mother on Morya as Abraham," and January 24, 1982, "The Story of Our Father Abraham and of His Chela and of His Guru," on *In the Heart of the Inner Retreat 1982 I and II*, 6-audiocassette albums A82105, A82111.



This, then, we shall do; and you shall find that that momentum of the Founding Fathers of both the United States and The Summit Lighthouse is again with you. You shall find them multiplying your efforts and you shall find tremendous assistance from the heart of Kuthumi,<sup>14</sup> who comes into your own individual alliances, beloved, for the purpose of being that psychologist who does assist you in transmuting the negatives by seeing through them, by blowing them away by Divine Love and Mercy, and mercy toward every part of Life.

Blessed ones, you will have to “bless your enemies”<sup>15</sup> as never before, all those from whom you have received negative vibrations and matrices. For, beloved, they presented to you the [test] that one day you would pass, [the initiation that] you would get through, [the obstacle that] one day you would overcome. [And] one day you will no longer carry [the burden of] their challenges.

Blessed hearts, they are the initiators who come from the dark side of life. Bless them for the great strengthening you have received [from God as you determined to meet those challenges victoriously. Indeed, bless them] for the lessons you have learned so that you could pass the tests of Maitreya and the Cosmic Christ when these did come.

Therefore, beloved, [since] you will see that one day you shall have absolute God-gratitude for all who may have ever injured you, I suggest that you have it this day. And in gratitude and in mercy, let that Light go forth! For when you are in that state of mind, you become invulnerable and invincible and it is then that the healing angels can perform the permanent mending of the holes in your garments.

Blessed ones, I encourage you to do all that you have been told to do in the way of the multiplication of the Light. I encourage you to know what the oneness of this body, this Mystical Body of our Community, does mean. The gathering together of your souls of Light is a [thing of] beauty and a joy forever! There are souls of Light on planetary homes, such as Venus and beyond, who look with rejoicing to see that out of the Darkness of the Earth and the dark hour that is come upon Earth there are yet souls who have stood and still stood, as you have.

And here you are together in this considerable number, and your numbers are increasing all over the world. And, beloved, you have been able to raise up this retreat, to have it, to seal it, to own the land, to have this court and chapel, to have your publications, to have your children properly educated and to be sponsored by myself and others in the bringing forth of Lightbearers who are destined to set this world on fire.

I tell you, all the way back to the Great Central Sun there is rejoicing this night for your presence, for your hearts and for your dedication. And, beloved, I tell you that in this hour this Community, though the world may know it not, is indeed the hope of the world! And therefore I ask you, beloved, to save it and to recognize this need of the hour! [16-second applause]

I tell you, by the law of abundance the supply can flood and flood and flood through you! Therefore let us see what we can do with our alchemy of the crystallization of the God Flame. Let us see what we can do with the principles that are given by the Messenger, that are given to you from many sources, that are given to you, beloved one, by that individual and others whom we have sponsored to bring forth truly an understanding of the principles of God-success.

I remind you, beloved, [to bear in mind] when you read the stories of those who have been successful in the history of this land, that they got what they wanted, exactly what they wanted. Many of them wanted material success. Many of them saw that that success was empty and that

---

<sup>14</sup>On July 19, 1990, the Messenger announced: “A beloved Master has stepped forth to tell you that he is willing to be the Master Mind in your alliances - Kuthumi Lal Singh.” Napoleon Hill, proponent of the science of success, defines the Master Mind alliance as “an alliance of two or more minds blended in a spirit of perfect harmony and cooperating for the attainment of a definite purpose.” See *Think and Grow Rich*, pp. 167-73; *The Master-Key to Riches*, pp. 87-92; *Grow Rich! With Peace of Mind*, pp. 126-38 (price and postage in note 9 above).

<sup>15</sup>Matt. 5:44; Luke 6:27-35; Rom. 12:14.

they must turn and give of themselves to Life to truly have their cups filled. Others, though they were successful, passed on with hardly a shred of spirituality and now return again to seek the higher success of the Path.

I say, the materialization of the God Flame is within your grasp. And when you dedicate [this alchemy] to the greatest purpose of all time, the preservation and the protection of this activity, you will see how you will gain the victory of God-mastery in the physical octave and God-mastery in the spiritual and therefore graduate from earth's schoolroom with both prizes. I wish this upon you. I desire it for you. And I offer myself as a part of this entire endeavor to bring it forth. . . .

Therefore I say, lose not the minutes. And take the opportunity in the morning, as you remember that I penned the first Pearl of Wisdom on the eighth to "Chelas Mine," to remind yourselves, beloved, that on the morrow we must pay the piper, we must come forward with what we have in the support of this activity. And on the next day we must plan, truly, all of the methods we will use to reach the Lightbearers, to tear down the barriers and the walls that have been built by fallen ones to insulate us against the world and to insulate the world against us by a wall of hatred.

I say, let the walls of hatred within your own beings, within your own electronic belts and within your own dweller[-on-the-threshold] come tumbling down, and thereby let the walls [of hatred] erected around our Inner Retreat [by the misguided] also come tumbling down!

The service that you are about to render on Wednesday nights with the emerald ray should be incomparable, should be for the sustaining of the capstone on the pyramid of this civilization, should be for the raising of the Kundalini to the third eye by the power of that ray, should be for wholeness in your body temples, should be for the victory of healing, of supply, of abundance, of science, of music, of technology, of reaching out while there is time to reach out.

The Messenger is ready to be sent anywhere. And I desire to send you [also], beloved, and I ask you to gather this supply and to occupy yourselves for the sustainment of this effort even while you disentangle yourselves from your own karmic debts. All of this is possible but you must have that positive frame of mind that is the sign of the victors, the sign that says:

"I will not accept defeat! I will not engage in any pessimism. I will not engage in any negativity. I will fill my house with Light! I will see what I can do extra and above what I am already doing in terms of bringing in the supply, that by the end of this year this activity might find itself in a more secure stronghold financially than it finds itself today." . . .

In their anger and in their hatred, beloved, [the fallen ones] have caught the disease of insanity. It is indeed a pity, when they could have taken the Light and applied it [to healing the spiritual schism they have created between themselves and their own Divine Reality] and moved on to their own spiritual victory. You may know, beloved, that those who oppose the Light do so truly under the agency of the powers of Darkness, who have never bent the knee before the living God or his Christ.

I say to you, it is long past due for them to have had a change of heart. [But most of them have not.] They are relentless and determined [as they wage war against the emergent Christhood of the children of God]. Therefore, you must be more relentless and more determined. Whatever they put into Darkness, beloved, you must put ten times that effort into the Light so that a portion of that Light may be for the defeat of [the forces of Darkness] in this battle of Armageddon, which they have started but which we shall finish.

Blessed ones, we must take another tenth of that extra Light and put it into publishing, another tenth and put it into speaking the Teachings and sending our teams out across this nation for the gathering of the Lightbearers who will be gathered. We must put it into weekend seminars conducted by the Messenger across this country after the teams have gone forth to clear the way, for this truly is the way of the Brotherhood.

As the disciples went before Jesus to prepare the people in the towns where he would come,<sup>16</sup> as the disciples of Gautama Buddha went before him in his lifetime and [as they have done so] ever since, so this process of [the chelas] bringing the Word and then [the Messenger holding] a conference at the [conclusion of their tour] is our plan. And we see you as absolutely essential to this plan, each and every one of you. No matter what your daily occupation may be, here in this state or in [the remaining forty-nine] or in the nations of the world, the keeping of the flame for the Word going forth is absolutely essential.

There are souls who must be saved and they are part of this mandala.<sup>17</sup> They are part of the Great White Brotherhood. Their divine plans have come due and they are ready to enter in.

And therefore let this lightning go forth out of the East and unto the West!<sup>18</sup> Let it circle the earth. And let our chelas speak the Word because they have assimilated it, because it has become a part of their total being - because it is your being, beloved. Let the Word in its entirety live in you and let the Work as its complement be for the anchoring and the balance.

Fear not the work, for thy strength is the strength of God. And when you are right with God and one with God and when all of your being is the affirmation of God and there are no negatives, there are no minuses, then what can enter in?

Truly your health is based upon the ever-flowing stream of the crystal-clear river of Life.<sup>19</sup> Truly that health is available to you. And I can do much through the practitioners of health in this Community who surely do submit to the path of chelaship and the will of God, who truly place that chelaship first and will give God the glory.

When you receive a dispensation through me from great beings of Light who are healing Masters, beloved, who come not only for the healing of the body but [also] for the [healing of the] four lower bodies [as a unit] and the healing and the health of the Community and the supply of the Community, [you ought to receive it with utter humility and gratitude]. For I tell you, these beings are of such a cosmic stature and of such a benign presence that unless [as a practitioner of the healing arts or as a patient] you give them the glory step-by-step, the Law instantaneously decrees that the gift be taken from you.

Therefore remember, beloved, that you are recipients of great Light from above. And we are determined that this activity under God shall not fail, even as we are determined that a remnant of Lightbearers shall be there, shall stand and shall be the flame America and shall wave the flag and shall be able to pass on to posterity that original flame, the flame of the Founding Fathers.

Has it ever occurred to you, beloved ones, that when you say you are a Keeper of the Flame, you are a keeper of that very flame whereby the signing of that Declaration of Independence took place, whereby each hand took that pen knowing that they could pay with their life if the war were not victorious?

And therefore did Godfre come on the occasion of the founding of this activity to bring you the tremendous heart of General George Washington and President George Washington and truly the Messenger of the end of this age. Blessed hearts, with that fervor and that Light and that Causal Body, that Causal Body of Richard the Lion-Hearted, you can understand that there is a great heart even in this one Ascended Master who has been a part of the sponsoring of this Community of Light.<sup>20</sup>

---

<sup>16</sup>Luke 10:1-12, 16, 17.

<sup>17</sup>mandala [Sanskrit, literally "circle," "sphere"]: a group, company or assembly; a circle of friends; an assembly or gathering of Buddhas and Bodhisattvas. Also a circular design containing images of deities symbolizing the universe, totality, or wholeness; used in meditation Hindus and Buddhists.

<sup>18</sup>Matt. 24:27.

<sup>19</sup>Rev. 22:1.

<sup>20</sup>The Ascended Master Godfre was embodied as Richard I (the "Lion Heart"), king of England (1157-1199); George Washington, first president of the United States (1732-1799); and the Messenger Guy W. Ballard, through whom Saint

I tell you, blessed ones, all is poised for the Victory. You must simply go through the footsteps of making it happen.

[16-second applause]

See what you can do for me, beloved. I need you in this hour. . . . [See] what you can do immediately, what you can do a little later, how you can help. This is my cry to you in this hour even as I come with this dispensation of the Wednesday-night fervor, even the fervor of the fervent ones.

I take my leave of you now, as you can well understand that I am involved in many situations in the governments of nations [and] in the economy. Things are worse than they seem, beloved. Thus, the Lighthouse must rise taller and the beacon be sent with greater intensity to a greater distance.

May it be so, beloved, for this is truly your hour and the power of Light to triumph over Darkness<sup>21</sup> and its hour.

Tempus fugit. I AM with you always.

This Pearl of Wisdom is excerpted from the dictation by El Morya delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Tuesday, August 7, 1990, at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana, upon the occasion of the thirty-second anniversary of the founding of The Summit Lighthouse by the Ascended Master El Morya through the Messenger Mark L. Prophet. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under El Morya's direction for clarity in the written word.]

## 35.1 I AM the Witness - September 9, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 35 - I AM the Witness - September 9, 1990

I AM the Witness

In 1960 I had a football accident which landed me in the hospital. It was thought that I had an appendicitis attack. However, in the operating room it was found to be a more serious situation - I had a ruptured spleen, liver and kidney. I was declared clinically dead for a period of about seven minutes. During this time I found myself transported through a dark tunnel into a bright white light. Standing in this light was a bearded gentleman who told me that there was more work to be done. Very soon after hearing this I awoke on the operating table to the amazement of the doctors and nurses present.

For many years after this incident I had the feeling that there was something more to be accomplished than bar-hopping and night life. In 1977 I met my wife, who introduced me to the Teachings of the Ascended Masters. In 1984 we came to the Ranch. Upon entering what was then called the Crystal Chapel at East Gate I saw El Morya's picture and realized that this was the bearded man whom I had seen many years before. At that point I realized that my search had ended. I am grateful to Morya for hanging in there a lot better than I did or I would have never found the Teachings and the truths that they reveal.

---

Germain founded the I AM Activity in the early 1930s (1878-1939).

<sup>21</sup>Luke 22:53.

# Chapter 36

## Beloved Mother Mary - September 16, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 36 - Beloved Mother Mary - September 16, 1990

The Gift of Alchemy Is in My Hand

What Price Will You Pay for the Christ Presence?

The Science of the Raising Up of the Mother Flame

The Great Emerald Sphere of My Causal Body

Shall Rest over This Place

Come, tender hearts, into my heart. I am joyous in my appearing to you in this hour. For as we approach the moment of midnight, so that boon which you request<sup>1</sup> and do require of me may be released to you, beloved. Therefore, tender hearts, come unto my heart.

I would tell you an additional reason why God sent me to embody on planet earth. It was so that one of the attainment and presence of an Archeia might descend into form and leave the record for a number of lifetimes<sup>2</sup> of that level of God-identification. For truly those of the level of the Archangels do walk in the Presence of their God, I AM THAT I AM, and do always carry that Presence, that Dharmakaya, that Causal Body.

I descended to the lowly estate of the flesh that all those who had so descended to that level by karma, by sin, by going away from the Great Teacher, the Cosmic Christ, might find anchored in

---

<sup>1</sup>During the service prior to the dictation, the Messenger announced: "Mother Mary says that on this day, August 15, 1990, marking her ascension, she has received a dispensation from God to grant to each one of you a boon. And so you will have to consider what is the most important request that you can make of Mother Mary, not alone for your private person but for the Church and its membership. El Morya has stated our need for funds. And we know that many Keepers of the Flame also are in need of funds. . . . I think that we all have to realize that our individual indebtedness affects all of us because we are one. . . . I know that sometimes when you do not receive the dispensations you ask for or the sponsorship from El Morya, it is because of your physical monetary indebtedness as well as your karmic indebtedness. So you need to consider the boon that you request in terms of that boon putting you in a much better place to support the Brotherhood, to do their work, to support the Church and to have less karma upon you so that you may be subject to new grants and dispensations. . . . So I ask that you make this decision advisedly, for after all, when have you had a Master step forward and say he could give you a boon? I can't remember it myself in many a season." Each one receiving this message from Mother Mary may request of her a boon, a grant or dispensation - i.e., a divine favor.

<sup>2</sup>In the early days of Atlantis, Mother Mary was embodied as a priestess in the Temple of Truth. As a temple virgin, she studied the healing arts and the science of flow and tended the emerald fires of the Fifth Ray. It was through her magnification of the Christ Light and the Mother Flame that the healing focus in the Temple of Truth was sustained; through her daily devotions, its emanations were expanded throughout Atlantis. See Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, "The Soul of Mary on Earth," in *My Soul Doth Magnify the Lord!* pp. 25-39.

such a low level even the footprints of our God, even the record of the I AM Presence of the Archeia of the Fifth Ray.

This [dispensation] has enabled science, invention, music, healing, medicine and all such practicalities as are native to my Causal Body, the Causal Body of Raphael and all who serve in the heavenly hierarchy of the Fifth Ray [to be brought forth on earth]. Civilizations have been built upon the foundation of this record, beloved, and therefore into those civilizations have been born Christed ones, who have walked the earth.

For I have kept the vigil in this octave and I have not ceased to do so from the hour of my ascension, but rather have I continued with my Son Jesus to be the Mediatrix before God on behalf of souls of Light and souls not of the Light who have appealed to me for intercession. Not a few of these not of the Light have received that intercession and have step-by-step reearned a threefold flame and come into the Light.

Because we have had success over tens of thousands of years of our presence in the physical earth in bringing some of the wayward ones of the bands of fallen angels back to an allegiance to their God-estate and to a point where true humility does replace their pride, so we have never ceased [in our efforts] to bring them back, to woo them back to the heart most sacred of my Son.

Thus, beloved, we have already come to the end of the dispensations of Pisces available. Yet while the seasons roll and all things are as they were and earth is not yet troubled by the events of coming calamity and catastrophe, so there are moments in which some may return. And I wish to tell you this evening that some are still returning. Some have been contacted at inner levels, even by this Messenger and others of our bands, and they have been wooed on the Homeward path even when those of our octave have thought that it was no longer possible that they should make the turnaround.

Is not the knowledge of this, beloved, worth the prayer vigil and the entering in [to the heart of the Lord] and the setting aside of those things that limit your expression of God?

I greet you, beloved, as true shepherds of the Light and I remind you that the shepherd will always leave the ninety and nine to go after the one who is lost.<sup>3</sup> This role of the shepherd is the role of your Holy Christ Self, which you are becoming as you make room for that Holy Christ Self to enter, to rebuild, to reoccupy your four lower bodies.

Some of you have caught the message, which is truly the teaching of the Divine Mother, of the affirmation of the positive always, as you have seen by a miracle of our transmission by the Holy Spirit that it is just as easy to hold on to a positive mental attitude as it is to sustain a negative mental attitude. Blessed ones, it is even easier! For you see, every positive affirmation displaces many negatives and draws unto itself the multiplying power of the Godhead, which is without limit.

Did you hear me say it, beloved? Every positive thought and feeling that you hold on to unwaveringly in the face of the waves of doubt and fear of the astral sea - that single positive thought [or feeling] - is multiplied by your God and mine!

Realize, then, [what a blessing] such a multiplication factor is, [and how scientific it is], how God the Mighty I AM Presence thereby enters the vessels of consciousness. Truly, it is to glorify the Lord, to magnify the Lord! Truly, it is the wonder of Life. It is the rejoicing of the Mother Flame within you that your Christhood is being born anew and that you yourselves are catching the view of the new heaven and the new earth.

Think, then, beloved, as you walk with me, as you enter my heart and I enter yours, how you may also bring to this lowly estate of the flesh the Presence of your Mighty I AM THAT I AM. Should this not be your goal, beloved? Oh yes, it should.

---

<sup>3</sup>Matt. 18:11-14; Luke 15:3-7.

You must think about the price you will pay if you ask for your I AM Presence to enter your temple. But think again, beloved: What price have you [already] paid to be without it?

Persecution has been there when you were bereft of that Presence. As the Light has increased [in your aura], you have seen not only greater opposition [to that Light] but also a greater bounty from heaven of the power of a cosmos and cosmic legions who have come [distances measured in] light years to defend those who would dare to bring the Light of God to the very depths of the astral plane and even to the levels of Death and Hell itself. For, truly, there are territories on the planet that are nothing more, even in the physical octave.

Thus, courage is matched by Courage and hope by Hope and Truth for truth. And legions [of angels] come [in answer to your call], and they are granted dispensations by the Great Law commensurate with that which you yourselves have manifested. So the qualities you call forth and the decrees you give create the magnet that compels heaven to respond.

Such an extraordinary dispensation as the legions of the God Star encamping here in the Holy City! I am in awe of it myself. It is almost a wonder of wonders to those of us who have waited in heaven for so long for such a fiery response [to be given to unascended chelas of the Great White Brotherhood]. Therefore, once again I cheer you on and I say, keep on keeping on.

Know, then, that if you determine to walk the earth the embodiment of your Christ Self, which is the first step toward being the embodiment of your I AM Presence, you may receive persecutions, you may enter the initiation of the crucifixion, which never comes to a son of God until that Christ is incarnate. But I tell you, beloved, you will also know the initiation of God and Maitreya, the power of the Three-Times-Three, whereupon, [having received it,] Jesus declared, "All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth!"<sup>4</sup>

The willingness to pay the price for that Christ Presence, beloved, brings untold rewards. And at a certain point in your career as a son or a daughter of God, it is no longer even lawful for you to deny that Christ incarnate [within you] or to shun the initiations, whose pain is only the precursor of bliss. All challenges come to you to compel you to step up the ladder of initiation, to accelerate; for our God knows when you are ready.

By meeting the current financial challenge, beloved, you are forced to discard quickly old doubts and fears and cobwebs of wrong programming by the fallen ones. [Meeting the challenge] is compelling, for it is necessary. It is indeed the compulsion of the hour that produces that white-hot heat of desire, the desire to live and to be who you are, the desire to give the gift most precious to beloved El Morya. These [tests] bring out the highest, the noblest, the best [in you as well as those elements of the negative side of self that must be brought] to the surface [to be cast into the flame].

Therefore, we have contained that great desiring for your victory and we know that you can demonstrate this alchemy. But in so doing, you will discover that to become the alchemist you must set aside certain things. Nevertheless, those whose hearts are on fire with love would rather be the alchemist and let go of the not-chemist - i.e., the not-self [that is] the not-chemist.

Therefore, I stand before you this night. In my hand [is] the gift of alchemy, the gift whereby you may truly become the alchemist in Saint Germain's name to draw forth the abundance of every good and perfect gift<sup>5</sup> from the Father-Mother God. Blessed ones, I will not give you the gift unless you first give to me the nongift, the nondeveloped self, the resistive self, the selfish self, the ball of wax of that self that has not accomplished, has not achieved because of negative building[- the building of negative spirals of thought and feeling into the subconscious].

Some of you have in your subconscious mind a tower of Babel consisting of the entire negative momentums of all of your past history. Let the tower come tumbling down ere it destroy you, beloved,

---

<sup>4</sup>Matt. 28:18.

<sup>5</sup>James 1:17.

and divide you so that one part of yourself cannot even talk to the other part of yourself.

It is good to understand, therefore, [that there are] those who have become attached to their sorrows, to their emotions, to their negatives, to their minuses, to their pride, to old buildings that may have once been grand but are no longer so, to imaginary dreamworlds nonproductive of the common good. I request that you make the call for the collapsing of all of these fantasies that occupy too much of your beings, that bloat your four lower bodies. We need a detoxification of these bodies [from delusion and illusion], beloved.

Therefore, the prize is in my hand and I will give it to you, perhaps not today, perhaps not tomorrow but in that moment when you want to be the alchemist more than you want to be the elements of your not-self. It is truly a divine exchange - old lamps for new. Yet this lamp is far greater than Aladdin's. This lamp, beloved, is a lamp of true self-knowledge and of [the] science [of the Inner Self. The lamp that I give you, beloved, is the lamp that was yours to begin with - the lamp of your Real Self that sheds the Greater Light of All-Knowing from your I AM Presence.]

It is true that I am a scientist, beloved, and the first lesson in science that I give to my pupils at our retreat is on the science of the raising up of the Mother Flame. Gently, gently souls of Light begin to raise that sacred fire. And I show them how to be sensitive when that purity, that pure power of the Mother, does begin almost immediately [as it rises up the spinal altar from the base chakra to the crown] to contact records [in the four lower bodies] of the misuses of that very Light.

And thus our lesson goes, day by day. Each one may not raise that Light any higher than the level of transmutation that has been attained, perhaps [only] one-hundredth of an inch. And within that one-hundredth [of an inch] there is a level of karma that must be transmuted.

Beloved ones, those who come to my retreat for this training come, of course, [by] soul [travel], in their finer bodies. And for the purposes of this exercise they go back to the level of the inner child of the heart and therefore they are humble and joyous and [unfettered by the outer self]. And in that soul state they, for the love of God and his Christ Jesus, will diligently pursue the exercises of the violet flame, withdrawing Light from [their unlawful] investment [of it] anywhere in this cosmos.

And little by little this sacred fire rises, never uncomfortably, beloved. But I tell you, with the supporting work that they do, there are days when - by the accumulation and concentration of the Light and the invoking of the cloud of infinite energy<sup>6</sup> (much in the same way you do here) - they are able to take certain leaps in the raising of that sacred fire. For their momentum is so great, by and by, that there can be a consuming and a collapsing of certain levels of karma that the rising Mother energy does contact.

This science is primary; [it] is foundational because all that you would achieve in the science of the Matter cosmos cannot be fully achieved without the sacred fire of the Mother. This is a law, beloved. And if one's works and inventions, [one's] offerings upon the altar and service to Life, or [even one's] decrees for supply are not endowed with the Mother fire, they shall not endure. For the Mother fire counteracts the disintegration spirals of this Matter universe.

So you see, if you would build forever, you must know that that foundation that you would lay of the Teachings of the Church, of the rituals [and meditations], and of this Home, are truly of Jesus and Gautama. And if these foundations are without the sacred fire, the building shall not endure. But if you endow the foundations with sacred fire, the edifice shall endure, not only in the physical octave but in the spiritual octaves of Light. Thus, with all thy building, build with the sacred fire of the Mother.

Know, beloved, that you who would enjoy the rejuvenation, the intense illumination and the quickening that comes from the Mother Flame must travel with that Kundalini from the base[-of-the-spine] to the crown chakra every point of the way. You will encounter every past momentum,

---

<sup>6</sup>See pp. 288 n. 3, 309-10, 378.



for this is the ascension flame. And you will always have to answer the question: Do you desire this attainment more than you desire to reengage yourself in your old habits and old ways into which you have invested the Mother energy?

Thus, you see, beloved, each point of the way the Mother is there - [waiting with] the gift in the right hand, showing you what you will get for your struggle, your striving, your persistence, your noncompromise, and waiting to receive from you with [the left] hand that which it is no longer appropriate for you to retain if you would stand on this next rung of the ladder. The step of a single rung, beloved, may involve one hundred to ten thousand initiations, [depending on how many have been failed on that rung in the past].

Come to understand the depth of the meaning of the path of God, how moment by moment throughout the day angels of the Mother are ascending and descending upon this spinal altar, even as you have read of Jacob's ladder and the angels ascending and descending [thereon].<sup>7</sup> Therefore, beloved, count the seconds and the moments and the minutes and endow them each with the flame of Mastery and of Love and of Comfort and of Giving.

It is so important to always give a teaching wherever it will be heard, to inject something of wisdom, something of practicality, something of your know-how [into the dialogue]. And if you would be appreciated, beloved, teach the little children. For they yearn to learn your practical skills and what you know, and they are so happy when you take the trouble to teach them; for they are at a most sensitive period of learning, and they are nearer to the earth than you are and nearer to the levels of practicality and [to] the desire of mastering the earth planet.

Giving to others what you know, blessed hearts, is a requirement, else you will not leave this earth [at the end of this lifetime] but reembody. Never consider, then, that it is too much trouble to teach someone who obviously does not have the expertise or the understanding to solve a certain equation or problem that you do.

Be humble, beloved, before the ignorance of others. I say, be humble before it. Consider it, then, a vacuum that you can fill with joy, as you would pour the most precious wine into another's cup. Be humble before it, beloved, for God, who has given you the gift of wisdom, may also take from you the gift of wisdom if you do not share it by breaking the bread of Life.

It is essential that those who have gifts in the trades and in every area of human knowledge volunteer to teach the children and to teach the adults, to teach the senior citizens [in order] to keep this flame of the crown chakra ever burning. For to impart what one knows, beloved, is to empty the cup of wisdom that God might fill it again with greater knowledge. The cup of wisdom that is not shared begins to ferment and then it may no longer be drunk.

May you understand that it is essential that you look at the Cosmic Clock, consider where the sun has shone [at your birth] as your sun sign of this embodiment, and know thyself. What are your very best momentums? What are the things you do best? Consider on what line of the [Cosmic] Clock they fit. [For I gave that Clock to the Messenger for your self-knowledge in anticipating the cycles of your karma and your Dharma.] Then make up your mind, as an element of your definite major purpose in life, that you will master that line as one of the twelve [paths of the] disciples of Jesus Christ and that you will make your ascension on that line.

Blessed ones, it is essential that you do attain God-mastery on that [line] of the Clock you select. And when you do, beloved, lines of force will come out of that one position to contact and [connect and] strengthen every other line of the Clock.

Having mastered one, it will be easier to master the second, [and the third]. And with each succeeding [line you take on], beloved, although I admit there are major difficulties along the way as you encounter the line where you have the least attainment and the worst of your karma, [it will be

---

<sup>7</sup>Gen. 28:10-12.

still easier]. It is well, then, to have a momentum built on those lines where you see yourself having served before. [For these momentums will serve you as you work towards your self-mastery on the lines where you have a lesser attainment.]

This is the value of following the Seven Chohans and the Dhyani Buddhas, recognizing their place in your life. Setting your mark on [the lines of the Chohans and the Buddhas], beloved, you will never fail to call for the binding of the dweller-on-the-threshold [charted on each line] or to magnify the Lord of the God-quality [on each line].

It is well to choose [the line of] your sun sign [as the first line you master, but it is] not mandatory, beloved. Search your own heart and remember you must not come empty-handed to Serapis Bey's temple or before the Lords of Karma. You must be able to say:

I have fought the good fight<sup>8</sup> and, in fulfilling all other things of my karma, I have won the prize of this line and I offer it to you, Serapis Bey, and the brothers of your retreat. For I would come in profound gratitude before the ascension flame to add my momentum of the Flame of the Divine Mother's attainment on this line to that of those adepts of Luxor in gratitude for their service. Thus, they might have in me a reward for keeping the flame of the ascension on planet earth for those who would enter in.

Now, beloved, I meditate upon the Eternal Logos. For, you know, that Logos, that Word with Brahman in the beginning,<sup>9</sup> is the Great Shakti, [the Feminine Principle,] of God. And so I am the counterpart of the Trinity and I come very close to this Matter plane. I am in it much of the time, beloved, yet I carry the apex of [the] highest attainment of the Godhead with me. You can see why I bring not only grace and mercy but also the fierce judgment of the Divine Mother. For this is grace and mercy. This is, beloved, the purpose of the Mother Flame in you in this octave.

When you have fought and won and attained [the raising up of] this [sacred] fire, beloved, you will count yourself as three or five - such strength, such ability to give and serve and cast aside the negatives of a world shall you have!

There are some things that come from heaven and from the depths of your being that can manifest in you, beloved. The price for the single pearl is all of thyself.<sup>10</sup> If you want these attainments, these siddhis, or powers, of the Divine Mother, you must want them more than the entire weight of negative momentum that is in [your four lower bodies] that opposes your getting of them. This is the showdown, beloved, this is the telling.

“Oh, I would like to do this. Oh, I would like to be that. Someday I will get around to it.” Well, this is not even desire at all, it is not even worthy of being called a desire. It is wishful thinking that has no roots and will wither as the sun reaches its zenith.

Take care, beloved, when you express a desire for more of God, that you think about it, that you enter a meditative and philosophical mode. And see if you cannot say to yourself, “This God-mastery I want more than anything else in the world, for I see that with it not only will I be able to help all people but I will also be able to have those things that I thought I had while I retained those elements of my personality that were and are antithetical to the fulfillment of that desire and do prevent it day by day.” When you reach for the star of God-mastery, beloved, most of the things that you had to give up will also return to you; for the one who is the master of himself does not want.

Now you may see the great sphere of my emerald Causal Body glowing before you as a magnet of Love and as a sphere of manifest science and mathematics and their proof.

I ask each of you, then, to take this occasion of the needs of yourselves and your Church to rise to

---

<sup>8</sup>I Tim. 6:12; II Tim. 4:7.

<sup>9</sup>John 1:1, 2; 1988 PoW, Book II, p. 501 n. 8.

<sup>10</sup>Matt. 13:45, 46.

the level of being true scientists of Spirit and Matter to prove the Law, to conquer fear and doubt and death, to freely give as you have freely received, to pray for ingenuity and practicality, to go after the education that is necessary to increase your earning power - to do all things to warrant the supply returning to you again and again through the heart of service, the heart of faith, the heart [that belongs to] God.

This great sphere of Light shall rest over this place as a magnet of my being, whereby I shall prove to you what God will do when you prove to him through my Immaculate Heart what you will do [to achieve your goal in life].

I tell you, beloved, this financial challenge can be the springboard to your fearlessness, to your victory, to your peace, to your mastery and to your real ability to convey the Teachings to all whom you meet, for you will have applied [the principles of Saint Germain's alchemy] in crisis and you will have proven that they work.

Where is the slothful one and the dullard and the rebel who says, "The Teaching does not work, the decrees do not work, nothing works"? Well, what that one ought to say is: "I do not work, because I do not desire to see them work. For if [the Teaching and the decrees] should work for me and I should work them, I should then have to change my stance and become who I really am. And I do not have the courage to become who I am."

The science of God, the science of the Mother, the science of the Immaculate Concept that I taught Mary Baker Eddy is truly workable only by those who want it to work, who know it works, who believe it works and who are willing to roll up their sleeves and make it work even to the extent [that] my Jesus [worked], who sweat, as it were, great drops of blood in Gethsemane.<sup>11</sup> Only when you work to the level of [a sufficiency of] that sacred fire burning within you to achieve a cause will the Law work for you, beloved.

Get to the root of your desires and recognize that the negative desires are the negative program-mings of yourself, yes, but moreover of parents and [authority figures and] ancestors and fallen ones. [For often] you have thought [that these negatives] were your own.

I tell you truly, the Lord Gautama Buddha set the foundation for Jesus, my Son, in unfolding the cause of human suffering, that being inordinate desire.<sup>12</sup> You do not suffer when your desires are only God-desires but when you have lesser desires and they are not fulfilled, lesser expectations from those around you and they do not come through, then of course, beloved, you suffer.

Therefore, the desiring of God relieves all suffering, for you desire only to be in that Presence and apart from that God you are miserable. And therefore you begin to grow in [fervor and] intensity [for the mission], and as the devils come to assail you, you knock them down by the mighty arm of Hercules! And each and every one that would stop you in fulfilling that desire to be [all one in] God meets with a greater desire from within you, and thus [right] desire kindles [right] desire!

And as that desire is God's desiring in you and is the true Light, you come under greater and greater attack [from the forces of anti-God-desire working through people who have no desire for God and no self-discipline to get that God-desire for themselves. These, beloved, resent your all-oneness with God and they covet your Light (that is God's Light). But they want the Light without giving allegiance to the Light and when they get it they consume it on their lusts.<sup>13</sup> I say, do not part with your Light, your resources, your money or your sacred labor except it be in the service of the Light].

You must prove to God again and again and again that no matter what the attack, no matter what the force, no matter what the negative, God in you is the greater positive, God in you is that great Christ Presence, that I AM THAT I AM. [Yes, you must prove to God that you will not surrender

---

<sup>11</sup>Luke 22:41-44.

<sup>12</sup>See 1989 PoW, pp. 447-48; 1988 PoW, Book II, p. 496 n. 3; 1983 PoW, pp. 166-67.

<sup>13</sup>James 4:3.

his Light to those individuals who come in the name of the Light but are servants of Darkness.]

Do you see, beloved, when you state your desire for God, then God says, "Prove that you love me more than anything, more than anyone, more than all the world that could be given to you by the fallen ones who will tempt you with that offer."

If God is to give you all of himself, he must have all of yourself. Thus, the keystone of the arch is the first commandment: Thou shalt have no other gods before me.<sup>14</sup> Thou shalt have no other desire before me, no other love before me, no other mind before me, no other accomplishment, no other goal before the attainment of myself in thee! And when you have that, you will have the All-in-all.

Seek, then, beloved, to become the goose that laid the golden egg. Then you will never be without golden eggs. Then you will have and possess the cosmic egg. Then you will know the true power of the Mother in your midst, the Mother Flame in your heart. It is the power, beloved, of fertility, creativity, multiplicity, redundancy! Go forth, beloved. Produce one golden egg and you will be able to produce a million. Therefore, seek not the egg but to become the Mother.

I AM the Flame of Mother with you. Portion by portion, appropriate my Mother Flame unto yourself. Do this by being the tender heart, the gentle heart, the great strength of Kali, the great wisdom of Sarasvati, the great abundance of Lakshmi and the full-wielding power of the sword of Kali, of Durga to defeat the enemy of the little ones.

I tell you how you achieve the power of Durga and of Kali. [You desire it with all your being] because it is intolerable to you that there should be a single abortion on this planet [or] that there should be the abuse of a single child! And if you feel helpless before [the forces of Antichrist that promote abortion] and can do nothing about [them], take stock of what is in you and in your life and see what you would give up to be able to have the power of the Divine Mother to stop this deadly sin against the Holy Ghost, against the little child upon this planet.

I think you understand my message, beloved. If you want the pearl of great price, sell all those old human momentums if the world wants them, or build a gigantic bonfire that reaches unto the Mount Kailasa and to the heart of Shiva [and cast them into it].

Yes, beloved, I will be watching to see what you desire and how you determine to get it, for this is how we grade the souls who are tutored in our retreat. You must not only raise the fire of the Mother but [also] do something with it to save your soul and the little ones of God, who need your care. Begin by comforting Life, being kind, thoughtful, careful and always polite and [especially by being] always kind in your speech. Let your interchanges be gentle ones and always let the soft answer turn away wrath.<sup>15</sup> It is well, beloved.

I am your Teacher and I shall be one of the Ascended Lady Masters present with you at Summit University, for I have somewhat to say about this Literacy Army.<sup>16</sup> And I have some judgment to bring upon the fallen ones who deliberately deny the gift of speech and of reading and of writing to the little children. Through your calls to me on this subject, beloved, we will once and for all rout the look-say method from the schools of the world!

---

<sup>14</sup>Exod. 20:3-6; Deut. 5:7-10.

<sup>15</sup>Prov. 15:1.

<sup>16</sup>In 1986, the Department of Education estimated that from 17 million to 21 million American adults cannot read; 72 million, one out of three adult Americans, are not competent in reading. El Morya's solution to this problem of illiteracy in America is a Literacy Army to begin at Summit University. The Messenger has defined the goals of this army: "From now on, graduates of any quarter of Summit University will be Good Samaritans who are part of a 'Literacy Army.' They will always be ready to help any child they meet learn to read and spell." Summit University students will study the reading program in use at the Montessori International school at the Royal Teton Ranch, which presents phonetic lessons based on Maria Montessori's teaching philosophy as well as on the Spalding method. The Messenger has said, "We cannot enter a golden age unless we have a literate America." For further information on the problem of illiteracy and reading methods used in the classroom, see Erin Lynn Prophet, January 1, 1989, "Restoring Literacy," on 2 audiocassettes, 3 hr., \$13.00 (add \$.95 for postage), A89006.

[16-second applause]

New lamps for old, beloved - it is the great key. And of course I bring the true and real lamp of knowledge [and take from you the lamp of self-serving].

I seal you in the third eye. By my right hand receive [this blessing], beloved, for I am helping you to clear the unclear concepts, the murkiness, the out-of-alignment vision and the fuzziness. This, too, [this clarity of mind and vision,] is the faculty of the sacred fire raised up. May you desire it also.

I now join Lady Master Venus and the committee, not small, of Ascended Lady Masters who meet in the Retreat of the Divine Mother over this place.<sup>17</sup> Come and counsel with us in the coming hours, beloved, and make the call to be taken there so that you will learn how to teach the children of the whole world what they must know. I rejoice in your coming and in [the next] quarter of Summit University.

For this cause did I ascend, that I might descend again with a momentum of Light whereby I could once again make the difference. May you see [to it] that your ascension here and now is defined by the ascension of the sacred fire of the Mother on your spinal altar. This is the first ascension and by it you engage in the weaving of the Deathless Solar Body. With this ascension, you already descend again in this embodiment with so many fruits of your Tree of Life to give. The next ascension, beloved, is on the path of initiation, whereby those that come to the Christed One fully clothed with the bridal veil and wedding garment do ascend [to the heart of God].

There are a series of ascents that, when accomplished victoriously, require the soul to descend again to give of herself in the world. These happen, a number of them in a lifetime over [the course of] many embodiments, until in the final altar call the bride comes Home, nevermore to go out to the lowest levels yet to move again as an ascended one in the midst of the people. 'Tis then you will wish for and see to it that you have one and many instruments on earth.

For your instrumentation of my Immaculate Heart wherever you are, I am grateful. And that Immaculate Heart always affirms the positive potential of anyone and everyone despite all evidence of the negatives to the contrary. The power of the Mother's Immaculate Heart is greater than all of these, for it is God's desiring through the Mother for his little ones to be perfected in Love.

May you go forth and see to it that in your life love is perfected in Love.

This dictation by Mother Mary was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Wednesday, August 15, 1990, at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana, upon the occasion of the celebration of Mother Mary's Ascension Day. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Mother Mary's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

## **36.1 Novena to Beloved El Morya - September 16, 1990**

Vol. 33 No. 36 - Novena to Beloved El Morya - September 16, 1990

Novena to Beloved El Morya

The Messenger has noted that she often receives personal mail from chelas around the world asking advice about various circumstances in their lives and whether or not they should take a certain course of action. When she brings these questions to the heart of El Morya, his consistent response is that the individual should give a novena. The Master sometimes recommends five minutes or an hour

---

<sup>17</sup>See 1989 PoW, p. 756 n. 5.

a day of giving specific decrees - or perhaps one or both sides of one of the El Morya tapes. The instructions vary, based on the individual chela's temperament, his needs, and ability to fulfill a certain matrix.

What Mother has concluded from this and what she would like everyone to know is that El Morya wants to help each one of us but we must give him the energy. El Morya desires to help his chelas but they are not giving him enough decrees for the Great Law to allow him to expend the necessary energy in their behalf to bring about the dispensations they are seeking.

On July 4, 1990, Saint Germain told us:

I speak to you of El Morya now for his dedication to each and every one of you, for his heart's love. El Morya is there and able and [willing and] free to help you in any situation. I ask, however, that you "pay in advance" by giving his decrees and using the tapes the Messengers and chelas have provided for this purpose, giving to El Morya the energy he requires to intercede in your behalf.

Is a nine-day novena to El Morya too much to ask for his entering into your life and world to solve these very financial problems and to help you multiply your supply and to help you in your consciousness? ...

Now then, if you will give to El Morya the due that is due him in your love and decrees, you will find that these problematical questions can come to an end and you can move forward.

What a blessed dispensation! And how grateful we are to receive from the heart of our beloved Guru the assistance we so very much need to triumph over every problem.

The Messenger is recommending that chelas of El Morya and readers of the Pearls of Wisdom begin a nine-day novena to El Morya. She asks that you bring every problem and concern of your heart - all the matters you thought were beyond resolution or seemed impossible. Lay them upon the altar these nine days. Withdraw your light and energy from them as you surrender them unto God, and then make the call to beloved El Morya with faith that our Father and the ascended hosts truly have the answer to our every need.

Below is an outline that Mother has suggested for this novena. It takes approximately forty-five minutes, once a day. You may choose to follow this matrix or adapt it, perhaps adding other decrees and songs and the special element of your own heart's devotion. The vigil may be as long (or short) as you wish and may be held at any time of the day. As you give, so may you receive.

Begin each session by giving your calls to the heart of El Morya on all personal burdens, the problems affecting the Church and Community, including current legal matters and the need for supply, as well as for the cutting free of the Lightbearers.

1- Song to El Morya. You may choose from:

"Master Morya," song 192 (El Morya tape 1)

"The Guru Song," song 210C (El Morya tape 1)

(song 190 in the new song book)

"El Morya, Thou Chohan of Power," song 198 (El Morya tape 1)

"More," song 210A (El Morya tape 1)

(song 188 in the new song book)

"El Morya, We Love You," song 197 (El Morya tape 1)

"Gratitude to Our Master Morya," song 193 (El Morya tape 2)

"O Presence of the Diamond Heart," song 202 (El Morya tape 3)

The following songs are optional and may be added to your novena; however, they should not

replace the songs to El Morya listed above:

“Beyond the Blue Horizon,” song 210D (El Morya tape 1)

(song 191 in the new song book)

“Forget-Me-Not,” song 209 (El Morya tape 3)

“Light Will Overcome,” song 207 (El Morya tape 3)

“The Will of God Is Good,” song 200 (El Morya tape 1)

2- Prayer for the bonding to El Morya’s heart (see p. 204 of this volume)

3- Decree 10.03, “I AM God’s Will” (El Morya tape 1)

Alternate every other day with:

Decree 10.09, “El Morya, Thou Chohan of Power” (El Morya tape 1)

(If you prefer, these decrees may be given without the tape 40 times each, or as many times as you like.)

4- Mantra:

“I AM, I AM, I AM the resurrection and the life of my finances (3x)

now made manifest in my hands and use today!” (give for 5 min.)

5- Song to Lanello (optional):

“To Our Beloved Lanello,” song 514 (El Morya tape 2)

“Hail to Thee, Lanello!” song 516 (El Morya tape 2)

6- A Kuan Yin mantra (see Kuan Yin’s Crystal Rosary)

Note: Because decree 10.09 takes less time to give than decree 10.03, you may wish to fill in the extra time on the days you give 10.09 by also giving decree 6.02, “Summit Lighthouse Success and Expansion,” with verse 9. Or you may choose to give decree 50.05, “Beloved Cyclopea, Beholder of Perfection” (El Morya tape 3).

El Morya tapes: El Morya, Lord of the First Ray: Dynamic Decrees with Prayers and Ballads for Chelas of the Will of God 1-3, 90-min. audiocassettes with booklets, cassette 1, A88125; cassette 2, B88126; cassette 3, B88127.

Decree 6.02: See Prayers, Meditations and Dynamic Decrees for the Coming Revolution in Higher Consciousness, Section II. Kuan Yin mantras: Kuan Yin’s Crystal Rosary: Devotions to the Divine Mother East and West, 3-audiocassette album, 4 hr. 40 min., plus 40-page booklet, A88084. Booklet.

## **36.2 I AM the Witness - September 16, 1990**

Vol. 33 No. 36 - I AM the Witness - September 16, 1990

I AM the Witness

A True Happening

By a Grateful Mother

Part I

The Pain of a Mother’s Heart

When my son Bradley was 14, he chose to live with his father and stepmother. (I would not

allow rock music in our home, neither did I drink or smoke. I seemed to have a limited capacity to understand and deal with the needs of my son at that time.) I could only pray that his choice was for his highest good.

When he was 16 years old, the neighbor boy told me that Bradley was smoking marijuana and probably taking other drugs as well. I couldn't believe it, didn't want to believe it, but when it finally penetrated that this was probably the case, I was shaken beyond words.

I went to the altar in my home and cried to God to help me to help him. How could I help him when I became paralyzed at the sound of the word "drugs"? How could I help him when in the first 14 years of his life, I had not shown him a better way? Oh God, take dominion here. I cried my heart out. I called to God to forgive me for having allowed this to happen.

After baring my soul to God, I was finally able to pray and decree. I prayed to Mother Mary to take care of him - to protect him, direct his path so that he would see a better vision to follow, to give him a sense of self-respect and responsibility. I asked Mother Mary to give me the ability to see her Immaculate Concept for his life and to hold it in spite of all outer appearances.

I began to sing songs to Mother Mary, and I began to feel her Presence very close to me; and the sobbing, tears, and aching heart were beginning to be still within me.

## Part II

### The Appearance of Mother Mary

At a certain point, while I was singing I realized that the whole living room was singing - there was more sound than I could make by myself. I heard harmony, and the music seemed transcendent. I felt tingling all through me and felt a strong presence of comfort and blessing.

Mother Mary stood before me holding a child and I heard her say, "I AM HIS MOTHER." She remained before me as we communicated just like I would to any person face-to-face. She received my broken heart - took it from me. She impressed upon me very specific things that I would need to do and remember.

She gave me a vision of what it is like to be a Mother of all God's sons and daughters. She impressed upon me what the Immaculate Concept means - that it is the image and likeness of God in which she holds every one of his sons and daughters through her Immaculate Heart. She gave me hope. She raised me into a state of ecstasy and a full knowledge of the victory of my son and told me to affirm my full acceptance of his victory that very day.

Over three hours had passed as I had poured out my broken heart and moved through an eternity in prayer and communion.

She stood only a foot away from me, and I felt totally wrapped in her Presence. It seemed like she was before me for at least five minutes, and then as she disappeared she said again, "I AM HIS MOTHER." I will never forget the sound of her voice speaking those words to me. Just as she departed I heard a tiny click near where my altar candle was burning.

I continued in meditation by singing songs of gratitude and victory, of praise and adoration to God.

When I went to blow out the candle at the conclusion of my meditation I saw a tiny piece of wax that had fallen from the candle. It was shaped in the same form as Mother Mary had appeared to me - a mother with a child in her arms. Her gift to me - that I would always remember her promise to me and my commitment to her.

## Part III

### Communion with My Son

Many times over a period of five years I took out the wax impression to become closer to the



reality of Mother Mary's promise to me and of my commitment to her. Because word from Bradley always broke my heart - he was living in such an unreal world, and was very troubled.

During this five years he fought life and death. He hadn't been able to keep a job, was getting into motorcycle accidents, was nearly stabbed in a bar fight, had little respect for his parents or family, wore long hair and dirty clothes with no awareness of being sloppy or deprived, lost his balance and physical fitness, and on and on. There was no doubt he was in trouble.

I could only strengthen my faith and trust that he would be protected until the day when he would find it within himself to turn around. I could only strengthen my faith and trust that Mother Mary would go to him, counsel him, help him identify the potential of God within him, and inspire him to fulfill his divine plan.

Our opportunity came in January of 1977.

Bradley came to visit me while I was living in Pasadena. He met me outside the Church after a Sunday service and went through the receiving line with me, and there met Mother. Mother said warmly to him, "I'm so grateful to meet you, Bradley." And he was touched.

We went backpacking and camping in the San Gabriel Mountains. We had a great time enjoying each other and sharing the outdoors, the beauty and peace of the waterfalls, exhilaration of the mountains and the winter's cold.

We ended our first long day of hiking, set up camp, and were retired into our two-man tent by 9 p.m. I was full of joy as I went to God in prayer that night. I knew this was a cosmic opportunity of my life. I prayed to Mother Mary to overshadow us, and then I proceeded to pray and commune with every Ascended Master, elemental and Cosmic Being I had ever heard of.

I asked for a dispensation to be given to Bradley. I asked for forgiveness of all wrong and injustice that I had ever caused him in any embodiment. I asked for a dispensation where he could be given a new birth, free of any impositions that I might have placed upon him. I asked that if he was caught in a trap of drugs, that it be broken, and if I could take upon myself any burden from him that would free him, then let me take the burden, whatever it would be. I offered my body as the womb wherein a new birth could occur.

My communion continued in ecstasy because of the total awareness of heaven on earth, because of the closeness of Mother Mary, the elementals and angels. Soon I realized that I was experiencing a sharp physical pain in my right side. The pain moved to my heart and then to my left arm. Soon, I was paralyzed with pain - barely able to breathe.

I felt I was dying. I knew the extreme agony of this pain, yet I was consumed in the Presence of God all around me. I felt energy moving through my body. I saw the cells dissolve and be consumed in light. I saw Bradley enveloped, as in a white oval shaped egg, and I saw angels minister to both of us.

Many treasured visions and communications were given to me during this night. Since it seemed apparent that I was going to die, and if this were really my last hours, I had a lot of thanking God to do. The night was spent in prayers of gratitude, then prayers of intercession for every single person I could remember, and for every cause that I knew was noble and pure and God's will; prayers for new life for every son and daughter of God.

Paralyzed, and in extreme agony with physical pain, I was relieved when Bradley spoke to me at about 6 o'clock in the morning. "Are you awake, Mom?"

I said, "I'm awake. In fact I haven't been to sleep." Immediately after I told him the pain I was experiencing, he comforted me and said he would be right back. He was going for help.

Within about two hours I heard a helicopter circling overhead and then realized it was landing very close to where I was. Bradley came running into the tent. "Are you okay, Mother?" "Yes." He

fell facedown beside me and said, "Praise God!"

He had actually run nine miles to find help at a Ranger Station. He returned with a rescue helicopter and seven men.

The emergency hospital tests could find no physical reason for the pain, and doctors prescribed rest for a few days.

I believe that I was allowed to experience as much pain as I could handle for the transmutation of a certain amount of karma. And I am ever grateful for the opportunity.

Part IV

The Miracle

In May of 1977, I received a phone call from Bradley saying that he had committed himself to the hospital for alcohol and drug treatment.

The next part of this story is written by Bradley.

I really couldn't put this on paper until Bradley had reached a point of maturity where I could share it personally with him. And that time has come.

Bradley put himself through school, received a master's degree in psychology, is studying for his doctorate and now serves in a city as the Executive Director of the Council on Alcoholism and Drug Abuse, is married and has a precious one-year-old son, doesn't smoke or drink, listens to well-chosen classical music and is careful to get proper nutrition and exercise, and is living a productive life.

Continuing chapters are being written - all in deep gratitude for Mother Mary's Immaculate Concept and miracle of love.

I tell every mother whose heart is breaking from a child's involvement with drugs and alcohol that there is hope - and to seek it in the heart of Mother Mary, the heart of our Beloved Mother, and within their own heart.

Thank you, Mother Mary. Thank you, Beloved Mother. Thank you, Father. Thank you, Bradley.

# Chapter 37

## Beloved Cyclopea and Virginia - September 23, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 37 - Beloved Cyclopea and Virginia - September 23, 1990

A Vision of Wholeness for the New Age

I

You Must Attain Fusion with Your Holy Christ Self

Walk with Jesus in the Resurrection Flame

A Giant Grid of Light, a Cradle for the Manchild

Initiation for Every Keeper of the Flame

Now in the fullness of the Eye of God, I descend. I would place the eye of my body of Light centered in this retreat and heart.

I AM Cyclopea/I AM Virginia. We are the manifestation of Elohim<sup>1</sup> [serving] on [and embodying] the Fifth Ray of God. We contain all Light, for such is the definition of Elohim. We take in to our being all that is Church Universal and Triumphant, worlds without end.

It is not comprehensible to your mind, yet you might find a point of co-measurement to experience what is the City Foursquare, what is the meaning of Church Universal and Triumphant. It is a cosmic cube. It is the vessel of the Body of God, even the Mystical Body of God, the entire Spirit of the Great White Brotherhood, made up of all Lightbearers in all worlds. This is the meaning of Church:<sup>2</sup> [it is] the temple of God and of the godly and of the God-manifestation.

This Church exists independent of this earth body [and] yet [it] does take in every child of Light, every son and daughter of God. Fear not, then, for there is no separation in death or dying or in compartments of karma that seem to separate loved one from loved one.

Blessed ones, discover the point of being [that is] between the heart and the solar-plexus chakras. Discover that point, which is another point of centering, beloved, and know that it is a point of contact with Elohim.

Let, then, the legacy of this Church Universal be unto all who reach out, whose hands reach up to God as Elohim. Our hands reach out to receive them, yet this Mystical Body of the Church must

---

<sup>1</sup>Elohim [Hebrew, plural of Eloah, God]: the Biblical uni-plural noun for the "Divine Us" who created male and female in their image and likeness. Used 2,500 times in the Old Testament. The seven Elohim embody the light of the Father-Mother God, whom they personify on each of the seven rays. These seven sets of twin God-flames are the "seven Spirits of God" referred to in Revelation 1:4; 3:1; 4:5; 5:6.

<sup>2</sup>Church, or ekklesia [from Greek ek 'out of'; kaleo 'to call']: community of the called-out ones.

provide the intermediary between those reaching for God and God reaching for them. This is the meaning of the Christ.

You have been called by Jesus many times and in many ways to become that Christ.<sup>3</sup> Yet, beloved, though the footprints are clear and the teaching plain, it is necessary for you to focus on [those footprints and on] that teaching so that you may understand this daily process of the soul's weaving a Deathless Solar Body, weaving a garment that Christ may enter.

There is no more important goal for the communicant of this Church than to be fused to the Holy Christ Self. Not many will you find who have achieved this distinction. [But those who do] achieve it, beloved, must walk the earth in the expectancy of [receiving] the full initiations received by Jesus Christ.

This anticipation should in no way deter you from seeking that union; for without it, beloved, your life may be fraught with uncertainty. Without the fusing to the Holy Christ Self, there is not the certainty of union with God, the Mighty I AM Presence, when your course is through.

We are Elohim called to quicken the inner sight that you may know the presence of the Christed One, that you may understand that until you achieve this fusing to your Holy Christ Self it is necessary that you have with you the one who bears the mantle, the office and the authority of the Guru. For that, beloved, does give you the security of two [extra] hands - one to hold your own, one to hold the hand of your Holy Christ Self and therefore to establish the connection until you are able.

To attain this fusing with your Christ, you must seek to be Christlike. It is well to keep with your Bible at your bedside a copy of the book *The Imitation of Christ* by Thomas à Kempis. It is well to assimilate that Body and Blood of Christ even by reading a few words and taking in those words as you fall asleep, thereby determining that you shall go forth to be God-taught in the hours of rest.

And your soul shall return infilled with the fervor to realize a practical Christhood of words and works, of kindness and compassion, of upliftment, of understanding, of taking no offense in the untransmuted self of a brother or a sister but always having [available] the fountain of Light [flowing] from the very center of being. [This is] true holy water that pours from the Christ in you to [give to that one to] drink, to [anoint that one's body that that one might] truly imbibe [through the chakras] the elixir of shafts of Light that come forth from the Sacred Heart of Jesus.

Blessed ones, moment by moment feel the pressing in upon you of the Body of Elohim and of the Blood itself, the Light essence of Alpha and Omega, which we share with you. Listen to my words, beloved. Feel the weight of the geometrization of the God Flame of Elohim. Feel, then, how every word is chosen that is spoken; for when we speak, the Light, the message, the teaching does reach the boundaries of the Matter cosmos.

You must also consider that by the power that you have increased in your beings in exercising the science of the spoken Word, you also empower your words with a momentum that does move far and beyond your immediate aura to influence life. That is why when you reach this level on the Path of having restored to you the gift of the spoken Word, karma comes more swiftly; for those who misuse [this gift] must learn the lessons immediately and understand that this is God's sacred science.

When you are deliberate in your speech and not careless, when you refrain from the idle word but speak only something well chosen when [something] must be spoken, you shall no longer make the karma of the idle words [made by the fallen ones whom Jesus rebuked], for which you shall give account<sup>4</sup> before the Lords of Karma.

Knowing, then, the great assimilation of Light that has taken place for many decades in ye all, you must realize that the forward progress of your soul's entering in to the fullness of the Holy Christ

---

<sup>3</sup>See p. 244.

<sup>4</sup>Matt. 12:36.

Presence does surely rest upon this square [of the spoken Word] that does form the foundation of thy platform in matter. And now the squaring of the circle and now the increase that is desired. The increase can come to anyone.

We initiate individually this night, for all are on different rungs of the ladder and mastering different points of the Law. We come to initiate all who call themselves Keepers of the Flame. And I tell you, beloved, this initiation will find you at the very point where you have the greatest strength and the greatest weakness - strength with which to receive the initiation, to assimilate it and to become in physical manifestation more of who you are.

The initiation will take you at that weakest point when, if you remember this dictation, you will summon your greatest strength, you will defeat that element of weakness that is your vulnerability and you will move on! You will move on in the ascending cycles of being!

Blessed ones, the universe awaits thy exploration - such vastness of the Mind of God that you would enter [into] in your field of concentration! These doors are waiting to be opened unto you. Angels guard them. They carry the key. Man may not enter, woman may not enter who does not guard the harmony of the cosmic honor flame.

The test is not to be moved by whatever assails, whatever disrupts, whatever abruptly changes the course you are on. Be as ready as a star athlete to receive on the moment this initiation, beloved, for we must move on at this quadrant of the year from the place where we were at summer solstice. We must have the step-up. We must have those who can hold the Light at a higher level. For the astral sea is rising, beloved, and we must see to it that the walls are higher, the chelas stand taller, the bastions are defended and the angels of Light tarry for the Victory.

Let the fusion with your Christ become the all of your desiring. Would you know Melchizedek, king of Salem and priest of the Most High God?<sup>5</sup> Then I say, leave behind you the lesser preoccupations. Fulfill all responsibilities to the Law above and below, but let go of those things that keep you from entering through the doors that wait and wait. Let thy desiring be so great to enter in to this joy of thy Lord that on the very point of the brow that determination and that vision are one and you know that all that you do and say and are is toward that goal of fusion.

You must attain it in this life, beloved. There are many reasons, but I simply state what is accurate for you, each one. You must attain that fusion in this life. Seek it with all your heart. Gauge your steps, your activities always as opportunities to be self-emptied that the Christ might enter in and you might be that sweet expression, that strong expression, that needful and wise expression, that love in action. When it is time for this fusion, which you have called the alchemical marriage, the Lord will come to you.

Beloved one, this fusion cannot be undone.<sup>6</sup> Therefore, all of Cosmos must be certain that that alchemical marriage is forever.

Church Universal and Triumphant must be built upon the rock of this manifestation, this initiation. Those, then, who have not attained to it must call and call again for the overshadowing presence of that Christ.

As the Christ does descend, placing the mantle upon you from time to time, you are building the inner ties and connections. When the Christ does withdraw, for you are in the [throes of the]

---

<sup>5</sup>Gen. 14:18; Ps. 110:4; Heb. 5:6, 10; 6:20; 7.

<sup>6</sup>In the case of the fallen angels, such as Lucifer and others, their bonding to God (which took place at their creation) is undone if and when they pass through the second death after the Final Judgment. When they were cast out of heaven by Archangel Michael and his hosts, they were given an allotted span to embody in the physical universe and repent of their rebellion against God. Those who do not repent by the time this opportunity is up will be sentenced to the second death at the Court of the Sacred Fire. Although they were cut off from the Deity at their first judgment (when they were cast out of heaven), the breaking of their bond to the Godhead is not made final until the Last Judgment.

tossing and tumbling of the karmic self, then you must seek and find [Him] again and again and again, beloved, until there is no lesser state to return to, for you have overcome all.

Count the hours, the twenty-four. Know thyself. Know the geometry of thy being in those hours. Keep the vigil and discover what is the difficulty or the weakness when that vigil is not kept. You will find cycles in the day and hours in the day when you are always able to pass your tests; you will find other hours where with regularity you may fail your tests. This has to do with the cycles and the sine wave of energy flow in the four lower bodies. To know thyself and to anticipate these cycles will lead to greater victories and less sense of worthlessness for the failure.

There is no reason why those who have this Path and Teaching cannot master time and space where they are, cannot make more rapid strides. It is but the perception, or lack of it, [that holds you back]: it is but the sense of limitation displacing the Limitless One and his limitless energy.

But the overwhelming gift that secures this attainment, beloved, is the gift of “unconditional love.” That is not to say there are not conditions for the release of God’s love to you, but it is to say that you must love unconditionally the soul that is in the state of overcoming and leave to God the chastening rod, the preparation of the soul, the leading of the soul.

There is a love that must be held in heart for the God of which the individual is made, the very Life that flows. There is a love to be extended. It is not a love of compromise or agreement with the lower self. It is a love that is steady as a giant tree in the earth that is unmoved with the comings and the goings of the wild animals in the forest. There is a love that shapes your words, your expression, your giving and receiving and sustains your communion with God. Be aware, then, of sharpness, for sharpness sent forth is the sharpness that returns.

During this speaking<sup>7</sup> we have built a giant grid of light. It is a reward to this Community for labors won, not lost, beloved. And this grid of light, as the presence of Elohim of the Fifth Ray, can hold far greater Light than you have held before without it. It does encompass the spiritual body of the Community as well as the physical body. It will hold a weight of Light to which you must become accustomed.

I trust you will not go out from this place and forget my words and my warning that to be comfortable in the grid of light and the greater Light that it shall hold for this Community, you must move into that grid and that greater Light, else find yourself uncomfortable, untethered and not having the rapprochement with your Holy Christ Self. [As a result,] you may determine, for seeming practical reasons, to displace yourself from Maitreya’s Mystery School and be elsewhere.

Therefore, beloved ones, as the warning was given already in July, so it is given again. For Church Universal and Triumphant to remain in this octave, there must be greater Light, greater support from Hierarchy, a greater judgment in the earth and the dividing of the way, individual by individual, of Light and Darkness.

You are up to the challenge! It is the desire, beloved. Do you have the desire to meet this gift of Elohim with joy? [“Yes!”]

O beloved, take moments, then, in your day to breathe the sacred fire breath, to give the simple call, to venture in the outside and take in the wind and the sun and the elements and blend yourself with the universal Holy Spirit of God. Reacquaint yourself with your reason for being and why you placed your foot upon the threshold of our retreat and did enter. This was one door [to Hierarchy that was] open to you in this life and you passed through it to much initiation and hard work and inner joy, [eventually coming] to the place of immense self-knowledge in the outer, which before was only on the inner.

We have been able to give you this, beloved, through the aura of the Messengers. Both are always present on the altar, and by those auras there has been the stepping down through their Christ

---

<sup>7</sup>speech, discourse (Webster’s Third New International Dictionary)

Presence of many truths and intimations of Reality and the inner sense of Cosmos.

You have awareness, beloved, that is second nature; and yet, a short while ago that awareness of the auric egg around you was not there. Do not defile the temple of God which ye are<sup>8</sup> with discord or dissonance, for angels move about and assist you mightily when you refrain from [engaging] the stresses that come from the pulls and the pushes of the desire body.

You are making progress, beloved. I congratulate not a few who have indeed passed what to them were severe tests in these intervening months. Well done, I say! Keep the faith, for the mark you have won will now be tested by the Tempter from the dark side.

Those who are the “have-nots” have nothing to lose and nothing to defend. You are the “haves.”<sup>9</sup> Therefore you must guard well your supply, your Light, your levels of attainment. For the have-nots will always covet the abundance of the haves, seeking to gain it not by oneness with God but by fraudulent means, for it is “too much effort” and they are “too tired” to make the same effort you have made to be with Jesus in the holy mountain of God.

The cosmos is a better place, especially in this sector of this solar system, for the great victory of your labor regarding the Twelfth Planet. This, beloved, provided a stupendous arena of a vast light show for many evolutions beyond who watched with wonder, some in joy and some in anger. Let them look back in anger. We look back and forward in joy!

Until you come into the consonance of your Divine Reality in Alpha and Omega, we, Elohim of God, who are God, tarry with you for only one reason - that some among you have merit and merit this presence. May you know, beloved, that the Law shows no compromise when it comes to the interaction of Elohim with unascended lifestreams. Elohim may come when [and where] there is [soul] merit.

Be grateful for the blessed in your midst and you yourself will become more blessed. Blessedness is a perpetual state of grace. Blessedness is that state which is approaching fusion with the Holy Christ Self. Blessedness is the joy of the overcomers, those who see the star and do not shirk the responsibility of karma or the work that must be accomplished while the Light is nigh.<sup>10</sup>

One hundred thousand legions of Elohim of the Fifth Ray are the builders of this grid of light. They shall work throughout this night and day and another day unto the fulfilling of this grid that is as a cradle, a cradle for Light, a cradle for the Manchild, a cradle for the Christ being born in you as your soul is born in Christ.

A very large circle is drawn. It is a circle far beyond the walls of the Inner Retreat. This circle is drawn now as the extension of the grid. It does encompass larger territory that may now be protected by legions of Light - this the reward for the labor accomplished.

We approach cycles again and again wherein we may open pockets of Darkness where labors must begin again. This conference is a respite, a period of healing, of retreat. Neglect not the perpetual flame of the resurrection. It does burn in the heart [when you call it forth] but tends to rise [to the level of the Holy Christ Self] when you do not draw it down [daily and sustain it at your level].

This is a season<sup>11</sup> when the Spirit of the Resurrection in the heart of God in the Great Central

---

<sup>8</sup>I Cor. 3:16, 17; 6:19, 20; II Cor. 6:16.

<sup>9</sup>By definition, the “have-nots,” spiritually speaking, are those who have no Light, no Christ-Self awareness and therefore no internal magnet to hold the Light. The “haves” are those who have Light, have Christ-Self awareness and have the internal magnet of the threefold flame to hold fast to that which they receive from God. Jesus described this dilemma when he said: “For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath” (Mark 4:25). See also Matt. 13:12; 25:29; Luke 8:18; 19:26; and The Lost Teachings of Jesus I, pp. 133-34, 156.

<sup>10</sup>John 9:4, 5; 12:35.

<sup>11</sup>marked by the Light of autumn equinox in polarity with the Light of spring equinox, an opportune time to anchor the resurrection flame in the physical plane.

Sun is closest to earth. If you desire healing, renewal, the reversing of the cycles of old age, disease and death, take advantage of the moment of this retreat. As a mighty sea crashes upon a rock and jumps into the sky, so is the moment of the resurrection flame appearing in this very place. Every cell and atom of your being can be infused with this flame. May you see it as a perpetual grace in the remaining hours of our days together.

You can drink in this flame. You can assimilate it. Each of the four lower bodies may be a chalice for and be strengthened by [the resurrection currents]. This is the resurrection of purpose, of direction, of will, of supply. This is the resurrection of the Christ in you in the final quadrant of the year, when much of earth is cycling in the disintegration that moves towards the new birth of spring. This is the moment to seize those energies, recycling them by the resurrection flame so that they do not add a ring of mortality to the tree of life.

Let them be turned. [Let the negative spirals of mortality be turned to the positive spirals of immortality by resurrection's flame!] Let the Light go forth. Let each one know the resurrection of holy purpose unto the goal-fitting, unto the fusion with Christ. As Jesus did walk in the resurrection flame, fused to his Christ, so, beloved, may you walk in his footsteps until the very fire of the resurrection flame does burn your feet and consume the dross until your feet are cool once again.

The legions of Elohim pause for this moment. Each raises a communion cup in salutation, in gratitude and in acknowledgment for the achievements won. This, beloved, is "awards night" for chelas of the sacred fire. You will see on the inner who may come to the platform to receive that acknowledgment while others remain in their seats, for they have not passed their tests in this quadrant of the year.

Know, then, beloved, that the reward is always given, even when the outer self may not receive the praise. All things accrue to the accounts of each lifestream. May your awards be greater than the demerits that detract from the awards and therefore compromise the full cup of Victory's mead.

Bask in this moment, beloved, for you are fully surrounded and sealed in this grid of light abuilding.

I withdraw now, Virginia with me, to the level of the I AM Presence and the Causal Body, the Dharmakaya. When your desire to be in that Presence is greater than your desire to be anywhere else, you may also withdraw to that level. But first things first, beloved. So become the Son of God, shining in his strength<sup>12</sup> in your temple.

This dictation was delivered on October 6, 1990.

---

<sup>12</sup>Rev. 1:16.



# Chapter 38

## John the Beloved - September 30, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 38 - John the Beloved - September 30, 1990

A Vision of Wholeness for the New Age

II

Called to Be Apostles of God in Jesus Christ

Be Led by Love in All Ways

Jesus' Words as Chalices of Violet Fire

Upon a hillside the Teacher stands and the pupils gather to hear the Word of the Lord. I am that one who does stand and I speak in His name. And [I teach in the] retreat [of the Divine Mother] that is over this land, for I have come with those who gather in the etheric octave at my retreat<sup>1</sup> to share His communion cup of Love with all [who are here] who drink in the Light of this civilization.

My beloved, I bring you the love of Christ Jesus. I bring you that which he has transferred to me - his essence, his presence, his very spirit. I invite you to deliver his Word, his Lost Teaching out of the fount of Divine Love. Divine Love is a chalice for wisdom. It is a chalice of that elixir whereby souls are healed through the Holy Spirit as the words are spoken.

My desire for you, and I pray that it be your desire for yourself, is that you might cross this land, up and down, east and west, as ministers of Christ's healing love. The love you must bring, beloved, is his love and therefore you must make it your own.

Human love is not enough to bring surcease from deep sorrow and inner pain and anguish. Nice words and sympathy do not heal the broken heart. Moreover, they often exacerbate the agony. They are hollow when spoken to the one who is crucified.

Thus, beloved, do not go empty-handed or with chalices empty when you go to serve those in the field, when you go to hearts of gold who are waiting for shepherds true. It is a high calling to be an apostle of God and of Jesus Christ, yet to this calling are you called.

Let the ruby fire burn in you. Do not fear it. Do not shun it. Do not shield yourself against it. For the ruby fire to burn, beloved, you must know what is true selflessness, yet you must be unconscious of it. To be selfless and not even have a thought of [being in] that state is true selflessness.

Thus, sacrifice is the same. Those who think they sacrifice do not. For you should not be conscious of sacrifices, so caught up should you be in the Holy Spirit, in the sheer joy of Love and the perpetually flowing Love that comes through you as you serve Him.

The love of Christ is your love of the soul and your love of the human self that cannot figure out

---

<sup>1</sup>The retreat of John the Beloved is in the etheric plane over the state of Arizona.

how to get out of itself, how to escape the conundrum of being “human.” I will tell you the secret, beloved. Becoming the Christ, loving the Christ, the individual by and by finds himself no longer in the human socket.

To be unconscious of the sense of serving and being the servant, yet to be that servant, this is pure love. To seek no reward save Christ and Christ resurrected in you, this truly allows you to step apart from the old self, to step apart, beloved, and not even sense the loss; for in truth there is none. You need not be concerned, for the Law will not allow you to step apart from yourself until you have already become acquainted with the new self, the new creature in Christ<sup>2</sup> and the Christ Self in you.

Surrender unto God is a mystery. The mystery is known by those who have become that mystery. Therefore, in one sense of the word, this is not a formula to be pondered.

I call you to be led by Love in all ways, to enter in [to Christ’s love] that your countenance might always shine with the Light of the Christ, whom you adore. So caught up in the ecstasy of the bliss of this oneness, you will fulfill all things of the Path of the Ruby Ray. You will know sacrifice, selflessness, service and surrender and yet, as I have said, not be conscious that you embody this example.

The world does not know the great gift of Love that is only inches from their heartbeat. If they knew what is this gift of Love, they would surely sell all that they have for that pearl of great price.<sup>3</sup>

The great price of this Love, beloved, is truly to allow transmutation to pass through all things so that present in thy life is the one, the pearl of great price. The cost, beloved, is that karma into the flame.

I AM John, scribe of visions of the Holy City given to me by God in Jesus Christ. I AM John and I have written what I have written. Let the eye of the soul discover the deeper meaning of each verse of Revelation, for the revelation is of thy True Self and of the unreal self.

The coming to pass of the events recorded [in Revelation] is seen today, as many of these images are advancing to the fore on the astral plane, in the mental belt, in the physical octave. The economy comes up on the screen and we see great distress. We see distress in this nation and the nations for the misuse of the lifeblood and the abundance God gave to his people.

Therefore, beloved, the karma descends upon the abusers of this sacred fire, this Light that is the quickening, that is the energy whereby a civilization does function. Many have abused the very foundations of the system and the elements of the Holy Spirit that have brought forth such a great civilization as America has been. They have so misused the money of the people that they have forfeited their opportunity to deliver truly the capstone of what this civilization was intended to be.

May you know God-harmony and the abundance of your Causal Body, but may you not be unrealistic concerning the manipulations of finance [that have occurred to such an extent that] there is scarcely any means known to man to rectify the worldwide abuse of the money system.

Would to God that many had already claimed the violet flame as saviour of this economy. Would to God that men and women of courage in responsible positions had dared to challenge the abuse of power and money in America.

For some things it is too late and they cannot be checked. Therefore [in some areas] elements of what you see will continue on their course, whereas in other areas, where there are pockets of Lightbearers with a positive thrust, there may be time and yet time for the fulfillment of those things that God does yet offer unto the faithful and the true of his witnesses on earth.

Therefore you see an admixture, and so it is. You see those of Light claiming the resurrection,

---

<sup>2</sup>II Cor. 5:17.

<sup>3</sup>Matt. 13:45, 46.

even of their finances, even of the economy of the nation<sup>4</sup> - and in [certain] areas this will work. Then you see those who have already been propelled [into negative spirals] by the car of juggernaut of their own karma. And they, beloved, will not prosper, for they are the abusers of the systems and of the hearts of the people, [especially] the working people and the farmer and all those who depend upon fixed incomes for their daily bread.

Blessed ones, I pray that you have enough lamentation for the failure of many [that you yourselves will] take the opportunity to become disciples of Christ and, with the mantle of the apostle, truly stand in the nation for the right and for the principles of Jesus. I pray that you will see that so many have abdicated their Christhood that there has not been a sufficiency of Christed ones to hold that balance in various fields of service and industry and government and the economy to indeed maintain this civilization in its upward spiral.

I speak on these things, for I, John, am of the City Foursquare, and the foundations of that city are in the heart of Sanat Kumara and Gautama Buddha and Lord Maitreya and my Jesus Christ. These foundations were well laid, yet [on earth] we see a crumbling of the systems from within.

The realism of the hour is that where there is Christ there is the Life and there is the abundant Life intended for all. Midst a decaying and a dying system and world, you by the power of resurrection's flame may quickly take the tide that comes and in taking that tide move on to certain fortune. You must understand that you do this as though floating upon a decaying barge. You will maintain and sustain for a time, but you must be prepared, beloved, with many contingency plans and alternatives ere this transmutation, this cataclysm that must come, shall be sorted through, rectified and the Place Prepared restored.

I speak, then, truly of a world in transition and a world between two ages. Those things of which you are confident today you may not be confident of on the morrow. Those things which appear dark may change to brightness and those which appear bright may change to darkness, so much so that the call of the hour to enter in to the fusing of the soul with Christ has never been more important.

Thus, beloved, know that your confidence, your security, your life, your abundance and your health is truly with the Inner Christ. I desire to see serenity and peace become a powerful momentum in you, even as [there is that momentum in] the great swelling of the seas. So the power of water, the power of peace, the power of the mind at peace will see you through.

You will remember the vision that Peter had of the great burning, even the burning of the elements of earth with a fervent heat.<sup>5</sup> This is the age of the great conflagration of sacred fire, of transmutation, of a world that must change if that world is to receive the Saviour.

Many suffer in this hour. We cannot walk through the earth without encountering untold suffering in every quarter. No matter what the level of being, somewhere in everyone there is that element of pain and suffering. Some know the joyous travail of giving birth to the Christ, while others go through the agony of self-disintegration. For though their hands reach out, there is not one embodied near to them who can stretch forth the hand of the Christ.

Negligence in care for those entrusted to you, professionally or in connection with your religious service, is fraught with the most severe karma. It is well to draw a circle around yourself and to make a list of your responsibilities: What part of life are you responsible to? What segment of the population or of this Community or of souls who have not yet been contacted by the Teachings [do you have an obligation to]?

---

<sup>4</sup>For the healing of the economy, Saint Germain recommends giving the mantra "I AM, I AM, I AM the Resurrection and the Life of my finances and the U.S. economy (3x) now made manifest in my hands and use today!" thirty-three times daily - along with decrees to the violet flame and the "I AM the Light of the Heart" mantra (decree 0.07A), alternated with the mantra to Helios and Vesta, "The New Day" (decree 20.21). See "Saint Germain's 8th Ray Solution to the Economy," in Saint Germain On Prophecy, Book Two, pp. 79-92.

<sup>5</sup>II Pet. 3:10, 12.

Draw the line where you can say you are not responsible for this or that one and I will tell you, beloved, in the true spirit of the Bodhisattva, there is a responsibility to all sentient life on the part of all who aspire to Christhood and Buddhahood. When you see that responsibility and you are overwhelmed by the immensity of it or the challenge of your job, then know, beloved, that to fulfill the Law you must pass through the ritual of self-transcendence and this by the power of resurrection's flame.

This is why you gather to recite your decrees to the Spirit of the Resurrection; and the All-Seeing Eye of God, who is the All-Knowing Eye of God, has strongly recommended this.<sup>6</sup> It is because of the inadequacy of the present self. You see those inadequacies and so do we, and sometimes you despair for fear that you cannot measure up to what you would like to be and what you would like to do.

The answer is [to be found in the appreciation of] the resurrection flame [together] with the violet flame and in the sense that you are the chalice of the Limitless One. Acknowledge no limitation whatsoever, beloved, but see that limitless being as the Christ in you; [see] yourself reaching out for that love to deliver that love into the very heart that needs it. See the decree as the answer, believing that ten billion souls can be healed by a single fiat. Then give that fiat and accept it done.

As you are on the path of the World Saviour, know that through his heart and [through] his presence in your heart you may also touch millions. With that sense of confidence in the law of God and in the dispensations at hand, you then will know not only the gift of self-transcendence but also the satisfaction of fulfilling all responsibilities to God and the evolutions of this earth.

I would read to you again the words of Jesus.<sup>7</sup> I would read to you these words, beloved, that you might know the power of love in the delivery of the Word. And I ask you to once again receive this gift of my heart. Receive it from Jesus, receive it from God. Accept the Truth [of this message] and know that it is fulfilled [in you], that it is taking place [as I break the bread of Life with you in] the true alchemy of [his] Love.

Jesus gave to me the gift of the violet flame, a very special gift to my heart alone. Therefore by that violet flame I, too, ascended at the conclusion of that embodiment, a rare gift and a treasured gift. Know, beloved, that this gift to me was [what made] the difference, making my victory secure, as apart from others of the apostles who waited two thousand years for their victory.

Blessed ones, this gift could not have come to me except by initiation, and initiation earned. So you see, beloved, by love, as the greatest of all qualities of God, I was able to drink of that cup of the violet flame. It is not, therefore, love alone that many sense in my Gospel and Epistles but it is the very vibration of the violet flame itself.

As I read to you, then, feel the love and know that you are presently immersed in a violet flame sea of light. As I received the gift of the violet flame through Jesus' love, so I give to you now Jesus' love through the violet flame that is already yours. I pray that this day you will make this violet flame your own in a way that you have not experienced before - as the treasured gift, as though drops of Blood came to you directly from the heart of Jesus, drops of Light, of precious substance of his cosmic being.

To sense the miracle of the violet flame rather than just the rote of a decree, to sense that it is the gift of eternal Life making possible all things that you do, to approach this flame with the reverence of love and the sense of such great worth that it has [to impart to you] will enable you to convey it to others, to give it as that most treasured Light that is the key and that makes the difference between eternal Life and continuous reincarnation.

---

<sup>6</sup>See pp. 481-82.

<sup>7</sup>During his dictation given July 1, 1990, at FREEDOM 1990, John the Beloved read I John 1:1-10; 2:1, 2. See pp. 315-20.

Take, then, these words as chalices of the violet flame:

Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

I John 3:1-3

These words were written, beloved, in the full knowledge of the transforming power of Love's own violet flame from the Holy Spirit. The absolute certainty that you shall be found in the likeness of your Christ is the guarantee of the violet flame. Yet the violet flame itself cannot guarantee your free will or the choices you will make; and of course it simply cannot work if you do not invoke it, if you do not sense the preciousness of this Blood of Jesus Christ.

It is tragic that some gifts of God [that are] so precious have become so common that the sense of the miracle is lost and therefore the miracle does not manifest. Truly it is the cup of the miracle that makes the miracle, and you must hold the cup into which [the miracle] can be poured. And as the sense of struggle makes the struggle, so the sense of the miracle guarantees the alchemy of the miracle. Therefore,

Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.

And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin.

Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him.  
I John 3:4-6

And so you see, beloved, if you continue to make karma, it is only because the density and the ignorance of the lesser self has denied you the very personal knowledge of Jesus Christ in your heart, in your being, one with your Holy Christ Self.

These are not mere words, beloved. [These] words are used [in an attempt] to convey to you something that is more glorious that cannot be conveyed in words. It is truly a great truth that the direct knowledge of your Christ Self through Jesus Christ would forbid ever thereafter that you should commit sin or make karma. Therefore get that which is beyond the words that I speak, beloved. Truly get that Presence and [get] that Christ!

Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous.

He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

I John 3:7, 8

If you commit sin, in that moment of the committing of sin your vibration is of the devil. It does not mean that you are of the devil nor that you have an everlasting punishment.

[Originally,] the capacity to sin was not in the child of Light.

And therefore, Jesus Christ is come to stand between you as the shorn lamb (shorn of your contact with God) and the fallen ones who would move in in that hour of aloneness, that hour of separation from God, to insert the works of the devil into the psyche, those works that you no longer distinguish as evil, for the Christ Light is not bright enough in you to show up those works

as the works of Darkness. Therefore the Son of God is come into your temple now through your Holy Christ Self to destroy the works of the devil that yet lurk in the untransmuted self and in the dweller-on-the-threshold.

Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin . . .

Therefore affirm this day that you are born not of flesh and blood nor of the will of man but of God himself.<sup>8</sup> Affirm that you are reborn of God and you will see that [in the rebirth] you have lost all capacity to violate the laws of God in sin.

. . . for his seed remaineth in him:<sup>9</sup> and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

I John 3:9

Let the seed of Light be sealed. That seed of Light is your protection against all sin.

In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

I John 3:10

There are still some among you who despise your brother or your sister. Take heed, beloved, for you have closed the door tight shut against the entering in of your own Christ Self. These things ought not to be and [yet the arguments and animosities] are affirmed [by you] as though of just cause.

There is no justification for hardness of heart and there is no justification [before God] of the chela on the Path who will not work to overcome it. It is a stone of stumbling that will one day become a boulder. And instead of your being broken on the Rock of Christ,<sup>10</sup> you will break on the boulder of your own human pride and hardness of heart.

You should be grateful to kiss and wash the feet of the one whom you have despised. For, beloved, those who are the brothers and sisters are potential chalices of that Christ and you must not [through despise] deny them or yourself from entering in.

Therefore when you see in yourself or another or in children actions not of the Light, pray for one another, pray earnestly [and call to Archangel Michael] for the binding of the dweller-on-the-threshold and the carnal mind that does prevent anyone from manifesting his true Christ Self.

And if you are the one despised, pray for those who spitefully use you and persecute you [and say all manner of evil against you falsely].<sup>11</sup> And pray especially for the great wisdom of God [as you call] for the binding of the forces of Darkness over which the individual has apparently little or no control. A part of that noncontrol, beloved, is due to the willfulness of the individual himself, and a part of it is due to the fact that the not-self has been allowed to grow and grow until it has become greater than the individual can deal with.

For this is the message that ye have heard from the beginning, that we should love one another.

I John 3:11

If you consider another to be beneath you [in station or spiritual attainment], then love that one in the deep desiring of your heart to see the Christ unfold [in him. This will come about] not merely

---

<sup>8</sup>John 1:12, 13.

<sup>9</sup>This verse refers to the guarding and the sanctification of both the physical seed and the spiritual seed of man. (See Gen. 38:7-10 and I John 5:18.)

<sup>10</sup>Matt. 21:42, 44; Luke 20:17, 18; I Cor. 10:4; I Pet. 2:6-8.

<sup>11</sup>Matt. 5:11, 44.

by a process of the denial [of the mortal self, but by the affirmation of the immortal self and by] a process of the Light annihilating that which is the Darkness.

“Feed my sheep,” Jesus said. It is up to you to make powerful calls [on behalf of] all those who falter [on this Path] and are burdened [by the karma of the Dark Cycle] until you have [walked the last mile and] exhausted all possibilities, until such a one does declare himself a servant of Darkness and not a servant of Light[ - and even then you may still call for his salvation through Christ].

Many karmas committed require all to go seventy times seven in the process of forgiveness. Remember this, beloved, for [it is often the case that] the Father and the Son have forgiven you many, many more times than you have forgiven others. [In order] for the full cup of the violet flame and the elixir to be yours, therefore, you must truly give and give again.

Have the patience of angels with all who are a part of the Keepers of the Flame Fraternity and the worldwide Body of God. Then you will see how angels will give you that patience that you yourselves so need to be overcomers.

Not as Cain, who was of that Wicked One, and slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother’s righteous.

Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

We know that we have passed from Death unto Life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in Death. Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal Life abiding in him.

I John 3:12-15

This is Saint Germain’s great teaching [on the misuse of the law of] alchemy: that hatred of anyone is the murder of that one [by degrees] - by thought, by feeling, by unconscious decree. Therefore take heed when you feel hatred in your heart. Many deny that they have it, and therefore they do not transmute it and it lingers as a poison in the heart chambers. This poison causes hardness of heart, the hardening of the arteries of the brain and ultimately the loss of life in the one who [practices denial and] refuses to surrender it.

Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

I John 3:16

As you serve to set life free, you will know the meaning of the words “spend and be spent.”<sup>12</sup> You will give your life to the very last drop to save those who need to be saved. But in this, beloved, you are self-emptied and God will fill your cups full with violet flame for renewal and self-transcendence.

But whoso hath this world’s good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?

My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.

And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him.

For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things.

Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God.

And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

And this is his commandment, That we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment.

---

<sup>12</sup>II Cor. 12:15.

And he that keepeth his commandments dwelleth in him, and he in him. And hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

I John 3:17-24

Beloved, if you identify a condition of consciousness in another that is not Christlike, these are the steps to follow: First, pray for that one with great fervor. Pray to Jesus. Pray to Jesus for the conversion of that soul, for the violet flame to pass through that momentum; and see it utterly consumed. Secondly, do call for [the consuming by the sacred fire of all] spiritual blindness, for the binding of the dweller-on-the-threshold and the carnal mind within that one as well as all forces from without who would ravage that soul through the open [door] of that untransmuted condition.

Once you have engaged in prayer and decree for some period of faithfulness and watchfulness, ask God to give you the opportunity to speak [to that one]. Ask that the occasion might arise that carefully and gently you might draw to the attention of that one that this condition of mind or heart is [not only] detrimental to his own life and progress [but also to his loved ones and ultimately to planet earth and the cause of the Great White Brotherhood].

In a Community such as this you must be willing to hear the words of a brother or sister, not only receiving [correction] but also giving [it] to others. True shepherding and true caring is this, beloved, that you pray for one another, [that you] love one another and [that you] do not walk away [from another] to “mind your own business” when prayer [and love and even a gentle rebuke] are in order.

When you see such positive results from your prayers, [your love and your admonishments,] you will know that it was not the true will of the individual to be thus engaged with that element of darkness. But if you see the individual persisting in that darkness, you will know that that individual has resisted the angels whom you have sent by your prayers to deliver him. In the final analysis, you must discover whether or not there is resolution. And if there is not resolution, it is well to take up the matter with the Messenger.

I would like you to experience the power of prayer and see how prayer can assist you in truly helping one another with that profound Divine Love that is the compassion of the Christ, that does not leave anyone where you find him but always brings the individual to a higher plane of recognition of his Christhood through you.

As you grow in grace and love and Christ-illuminated action as the scriptures come alive within you, know, beloved, that you are rebuilding the temple of man and that you are securing the foundations of your being in preparation for the world's dealing with its karma.

I call you to the path of true love, true love for Jesus that says,

“I truly want to expand this Teaching and this Community and give of its cup to all Lightbearers. And because I desire this, I will give up all nonsurrender, all selfishness, all nonservice. I will give up that which I must give up in order to fulfill my deepest desire.” You who give this communion cup, beloved, truly give the cup of Christ's Body and his Blood.

Now I will read to you again from my Epistle:

Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat loveth him also that is begotten of him.

By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep his commandments.

For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous.

For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.



Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood.<sup>13</sup> And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is Truth.

For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.<sup>14</sup>

And there are three that bear witness in the earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.

If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God which he hath testified of his Son.

He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar; because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son.

And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal Life, and this Life<sup>15</sup> is in his Son.

He that hath the Son hath Life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not Life.

I John 5:1-12

Beloved, the teaching of the Son of God, Jesus Christ, concerning his mission is that he has come to reignite the threefold flame in those in whom it has gone out<sup>16</sup> and to reconnect with their Holy Christ Self those who have become disconnected. This Life of the Son is both the Life of the Son Jesus and the Life of the Holy Christ Self. Without this connection, beloved, there is no true Life.

Thus you see the immensity of the gift of God in sending that Son, Jesus Christ, into the world. For without Jesus as the initiator, as the Guru of the age of Pisces, the majority of those of this planet could not enter in to their Holy Christ Self. This, then, is the great promise of the intercessor. And this is God's promise to you as you would be in the role of intercessor to many, that you receive Jesus Christ and thereby allow him to work through you in assisting many to come into the knowledge of their own threefold flame.

These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal Life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.

And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us:

And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.

If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it.

---

<sup>13</sup>According to Church Father Augustine, John's reference to "water and blood" in this verse is an allusion to the water and blood that poured forth when a soldier pierced the side of Jesus at the crucifixion. Most modern commentators, however, interpret the water as referring to Jesus' baptism and the blood as referring to his death on the cross. Biblical scholars believe that John's emphasis on the blood as well as the water was meant as a refutation of the false theology that the Christ descended upon Jesus at his baptism and remained only until the time of his crucifixion. Those who propounded this heretical concept denied that Christ had ever been subject to human suffering and death. John's understanding of the Incarnation is correct: The Christ was crucified and the Christ did suffer. Jesus and the Christ were one. There was no separation between the two. Jesus was fully fused to his Christhood - he was the Word Incarnate.

<sup>14</sup>The Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost. [5]

<sup>15</sup>The word Life (with a capital L) is a synonym for God. If you read God in the place of Life, you will gain a deeper meaning of the inherent teaching.

<sup>16</sup>See Jesus Christ, December 25, 1985, 1986 PoW, Book I, pp. 112-15.

All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death.

We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that Wicked One toucheth him not.

And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.

And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal Life.

Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

I John 5:13-21

May you extend the comfort and the compassion and the instruction that you find in my Gospel and Epistles and those of the other apostles to the Body of God in the earth. To do this, beloved, you must become them. Unless the messenger become the message, the message is delivered in vain.

May you see the violet flame. May you know it is the gift of God. May you demonstrate it and live it that others might see and know that you also have been sent by Jesus Christ and called by his apostle John to embark from this day on on a ministry of Love.

May this love prepare you not only for the gifts of the Holy Spirit but for the baptism by fire. And then, beloved, then, beloved, you will set this world on fire with violet flame and you shall know such stupendous miracles and alchemies of an age that you will scarcely be able to believe that they are happening.

I AM your brother John and your Teacher, and I also hold the office of scribe of the Lord Jesus Christ. I have written down many visions and books that the Lord has given me. Perhaps by and by he may also allow me to read to you from these books.

I seal you in your missionary work. I seal you in the calling to be communicants in this Church, to drink the full cup of his Blood, to take the full measure of his Body. I seal you in the calling of ministering servant. I seal you in the office of teacher and healer.

Blessed ones, do come forward now to receive Holy Communion. This is the Body and Blood of Christ Jesus and also of my humble self. For I would share with you the essence of the Alpha-Omega of my being that you might also go forth in my name to spread the gospel of the miracle love of Christ.

Let our servers take their stations that I might give you this Communion.

In preparation for receiving Communion, I ask you to kneel in prayer now to call on the law of forgiveness for all those things that you desire to see pass into the flame, that the alchemy of the bread and the wine might create in you that new creature in Christ. [Congregation kneels in prayer.]

I, John, come to your stations. I place my Electronic Presence there and I serve you now the Holy Communion of the Body and Blood of our Lord. Receive him now even as you receive me as your humble servant. Come forward. [Holy Communion is served.]

And now abideth faith, hope and charity, these three comprising the threefold flame in your heart. But the greatest of these is charity.<sup>17</sup> The giving of the self unto others, this is truly the key to the balanced threefold flame, to its restoration in those in whom it has gone out; and it is the sealing of the tie. In fact it is the tie that binds you to your Holy Christ Self through Jesus. May charity as self-givingness be unto you the pearl of great price.

I am standing above in the Temple Beautiful with our Lord. And I seal you in the name of the Father and of the Son, in the name of the Holy Spirit and the Divine Mother. Amen.

---

<sup>17</sup>I Cor. 13:13.

This dictation by John the Beloved was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Sunday, October 7, 1990, during the six-day conference A Vision of Wholeness for the New Age held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana.

## 38.1 I AM the Witness - September 30, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 38 - I AM the Witness - September 30, 1990

I AM the Witness

I would like to witness to the Word of God through Elizabeth Clare Prophet. All my life, as I was growing up, I tried to read the scriptures and was never able to really comprehend them. Not just read them but really understand them. I found the teachings in 1979 and one of my greatest joys was listening to Mother preach out of the Bible. The Word would come alive and have more meaning than I ever thought possible.

One day, after a Sunday Service in which she had preached out of the Bible, as I was leaving the chapel and walking across the parking lot to my car, a very strange thing happened. I was walking along thinking about what she had taught that day and was not paying much attention to anything else, when a sparrow flew by me right under my nose and missed me by inches. It startled me and I automatically threw up my head. What happened next is very hard to describe but I'll try.

When I looked up I saw what souls have been trying to describe for centuries. I saw God. Not an anthropomorphic God who sits on a throne, but God in all things. I saw that the sky, the trees, the cars, the very ground itself was alive - it had life, vibration, being. Everything was changed, was vibrant, clear and was God. I realized that it was true: God is All and in all and "in Him is no darkness at all." Everything that is physical is because He has made it so, for us, to help us to learn to outpicture Him and become all that we really are, His Sons and Daughters.

When this happened I stooped and picked up a stone, held it in my hand and just looked at it. If anyone saw me, I'm sure I looked very strange, standing there, looking at a rock. But I knew the truth that Jesus knew also and stated in Luke 19:40. When the Pharisees told Him to rebuke His disciples he said, "If these should hold their peace, the stones themselves would cry out." It is true, for I have seen it. That stone I was holding had God, God as Holy Spirit, in it, and it could just as well bear witness of the Son of God as could all of Cosmos.

The Bible also says you should never blaspheme the Holy Spirit and I know why, for it is All, and in all. This is a precious gift that was given to me. It only lasted a few seconds in time, but it is still in my heart, and I am grateful to Mother, who by her love and the Word through her, has opened my eyes not to just the Word in verse, but to the understanding of the Word in me. "In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made." (John 1:1-3)

Thank you for this opportunity  
to witness to the Word



# Chapter 39

## Beloved Hilarion - October 7, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 39 - Beloved Hilarion - October 7, 1990

A Vision of Wholeness for the New Age

III

Preach the Gospel of Salvation in Every Nation!

I Am in the Zeal of My Apostleship in the Defense of My Saviour!

Thou who art the beloved of the Light, I AM come again in the full mantle and empowerment of my Lord! I move across this continent to contact the hearts of those whom Jesus has called! [16-second applause]

As the Saviour has called us one and all to preach that Word, so I AM come. As the Saviour of us all has called John the Beloved to preach the gospel of [Christ] Love through you, beloved, so I am called of him in this hour to bring through you the great gospel of Christ Truth.

Lo, I AM the witness of that Truth! I AM the witness here below and at inner levels. I AM the witness of the Ascended Master Jesus Christ. I AM the witness, for he has taken me with others into his retreat over the Holy Land and at Arabia. I have been there and learned of him. And this was my desert sojourn in meditation with him,<sup>1</sup> taken up as I was in my finer bodies and trained directly heart to heart.

I bring that empowerment, beloved, for my heart has been kissed by my Saviour. And I am bonded to him and I would assist you in the bonding of your souls to your Holy Christ Self through Jesus Christ.

And I offer you my heart. I offer you my mantle. I offer you the staff of the Lord this day if you will but place yourself on that path of being tutored and God-taught, that you may indeed know the scriptures and impart them by the Holy Spirit. And [I desire you to] know the Word and Work of God and to know the meaning of and to use those teachings brought together under the office of the Messenger. [Thus] fully and finally shall this seed of Christ in every nation hear spoken and taught in their [own] language that which is the true mystery of God as that mystery was broken and shared by our Lord Jesus Christ.

---

<sup>1</sup>The Ascended Master Hilarion was embodied as the apostle Paul. For a period following his conversion to Christ, Paul retreated into the Arabian desert. In Galatians 1:16-18, Paul records: "I conferred not with flesh and blood. Neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were apostles before me; but I went into Arabia and returned again unto Damascus. Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem . . ." Commentators have often speculated as to what Paul did during his sojourn in the desert. O. F. Blackwelder, in his exposition on Galatians in *The Interpreter's Bible*, writes: "What Paul did there and how long he stayed, no man really knows. He did not tell even Luke, his biographer and intimate friend; or if he did, Luke regarded [it] as a personal matter which did not belong in the record of the public ministry which is described in the book of Acts."

O beloved, the fervor of my being is that I myself have been unleashed by the Lord God as never before! And I am determined that ere this cycle of this decade pass, this teaching (but a portion of which you have heard this evening<sup>2</sup>) shall reach every Lightbearer on this planet!

My beloved, will you help me?

["Yes!" (38-second standing ovation)]

My beloved, it is this gospel of salvation that must be preached in every nation before the end shall come<sup>3</sup> - the end of opportunity for souls of Light to be bonded to their Lord. Therefore understand that many have thought that it is the orthodox Christian message that had to be preached in every nation, but I tell you, it is the true mysteries of Jesus Christ that must be preached.

And therefore we see and we decree for that new heaven and new earth and the resurrection and the life of this Church Universal and Triumphant. And we send you, but we cannot send you without the full understanding and comprehension of what you must deliver. And that is why we announce to you at this conference the Summit University Extension Course whereby you will learn, focus by focus, line by line, the teachings that do come forth based on that [volume] A Dweller on Two Planets by Phylos the Thibetan.

This is a necessary book to this age. It is directed to the children of Atlantis and the old souls who have come back from that continent. They must know their 25,800-year history from then until now. They must know our Saviour as the Great One who did impart the Law unto that people and did impart the very flame that burned and continued to burn until it had to be withdrawn,<sup>4</sup> for the people did forsake their God and they did go after the fallen angels and the Nephilim as they do this day!

And this must be stopped! And it can be stopped by the action of that Cosmic Christ illumination which true Divine Love shall deliver through the beloved John and that true [Cosmic] Christ illumination which shall be delivered as the Truth is spoken.

O the Truth is powerful! And when you take up this calling of Truth, beloved, you will have as your champion, without fail, the beloved Pallas Athena, who steps forth from among the Lords of Karma this night and stands before you with that mighty shield and sword, as she is determined to pierce the lie of the fallen ones about this activity, this Messenger and the Teachings of the Ascended Masters.

Beloved, enough is enough! And we of heaven are determined to work through you. Only prepare yourselves to receive that stone which has been known as the philosophers' stone, which is indeed that white cube of the heart that each one of you must have if you would truly impart by the Holy Spirit those elements of Truth and of Love that are the needful, the needful elements of the moment to the individual. By word, beloved, by example, you will impart the Body and Blood of Christ, truly the body of the Teaching and the blood of the sacred mysteries, as our Messenger has written.<sup>5</sup>

O beloved, this Truth shall go marching on! It must go marching on! And therefore the angels of the Lord who keep the way of the Tree of Life and the Unfed Flame in this retreat and at this altar have pledged to stay and to come again and again, even as the legions of the God Star, Sirius, have so pledged.

---

<sup>2</sup>Prior to Hilarion's dictation, the Messenger read excerpts from her new book, *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen: How You Can Heal Yourself and Planet Earth*, pp. 3-19, 52-61, 477-85, 494-98. Topics included: astrology as the prophecy of karma, karma in the Bible, the path of personal Christhood, the Chart of Your Divine Self, the mystery of the Lord's Body and the Law of the One. Pocketbook, 640 pp., \$5.95 (add \$1.25 for postage).

<sup>3</sup>Matt. 24:14; Mark 13:10.

<sup>4</sup>See *Phylos the Thibetan, A Dweller on Two Planets*, pp. 131-33, 400-404 in paperback (Harper and Row, 1974); or pp. 136-38, 417-21 in hardbound (Borden Publishing Co., 1952), available through Summit University Press, \$15.95 (add \$1.50 for postage).

<sup>5</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*, pp. 479-85, 496.

You now also have the tremendous boon from the level of Elohim, 6EN earned by your giving of your hearts in your sacred labors. Blessed ones, we shall send more labors, we shall send more teachings, and we shall see that more books are written! And we ask you to protect the Messenger, to protect the time and space of the Messenger, for writing pages does take time and space and the cycles of the hours.

Therefore, in protecting the Messenger protect yourselves. Attempt to find the sufficiency of God in your own heart, in the Ascended Masters and in the Teachings. Attempt to have a go at problem solving, beloved.

Nevertheless, do not hesitate to call when you truly have need. But also make the call daily for the binding of the dweller-on-the-threshold of yourself and that carnal mind that is enmity with Christ.<sup>6</sup> Make the call daily, beloved one, that you might find yourself in the bliss and harmony of God, working the works that must be done, being a team player, being a part of this Community. And know that every single one of you throughout this planetary body who is affiliated with this organization has made possible the writing and the publishing of this book!<sup>7</sup>

You are important, beloved! And I say this to you with all the love and the fervor of my heart and that of untold thousands of saints robed in white who wish that they could also speak to you this night. And therefore they shall speak to you, for they are journeying to the Retreat of the Divine Mother, where you may also go in your [etheric] bodies this night and hear them speak to you of their trials and tribulations, their overcoming and their washing of their garments in the mighty Blood of the Lamb.<sup>8</sup>

Yes, their minds and souls and hearts were washed clean by the violet flame, by the flame of Cosmic Christ illumination. And they did bow before the Christ in Lord Buddha, and they did bow before the Buddha in the Lord Jesus Christ. And they now know the universality of the God Presence in each one and they are absolutely determined to stand with you side by side.

One of these saints who stand before the throne of God will be assigned to each of you who desires to be a part of the apostles come again. You may have walking and talking with you one of these saints, beloved. Some of them are Ascended Masters and some are at the highest levels of the etheric octave just prior to their ascension. And some of them wait at the altar of God for the hour and moment of your own Victory, for it is written that these shall not ascend until you also ascend.

They have chosen not to leave you alone but to tarry in the Matter universe. And therefore they too cry out, "How long, O Lord?"<sup>9</sup> And we have answered them, we who are the ascended hosts, and we have cried out and said, "No longer!" [28-second standing ovation]

Now, my beloved, we counsel you not to engage in polemics with those who would establish by argument the mysteries of God and the true divine doctrine. Argument has never established the foundation of the teaching of God, but only the heart attuned to the heart of Christ.

Nevertheless, you will see abundant example in the scriptures of Jesus receiving the accusation, the argumentation of the scribes, the Pharisees, the Sadducees and those who would tempt him, even the careful arguments of Satan himself. Therefore you must understand that though you do not go forth to establish the true teachings of Jesus Christ by argument, you must not shirk the responsibility to speak the truth in the face of those who challenge not only your word but also your authority to speak that word.

Therefore, first and foremost, when you are asked, "By what authority do you speak?" you must always say, "I speak by the authority of my Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, of whom I bear witness this day before you."

---

<sup>6</sup>Rom. 8:7.

<sup>7</sup>The Astrology of the Four Horsemen. See note 2 above.

<sup>8</sup>Rev. 7:9-17.

<sup>9</sup>Rev. 6:9-11.

Then, beloved, you must be able to deal with every question, every argument and every denial of the truth by that [specific] means that will [both] silence the accuser of the brethren and satisfy the child of God, the son or daughter who stands by listening, waiting to be convinced by you, who already knows in his or her heart that the truth that you bring and the love that you bring are true but who desires to know what is the explanation that does clarify that inner communion of the soul's heart with her God.

So you see, beloved, it is necessary to have all of the tools. And some of you are long on bliss and short on study. Now is the time to nail down the points of the Law. And you must begin by knowing the New Testament and reading it in both the King James Version and the Jerusalem Bible. Then you will begin to really have a grasp of all of the hooks upon which those who have incomplete knowledge hang their arguments.

It was the same with myself, beloved. I had to deal with the arguments based on the Old Testament, for I did preach to the Jews. And therefore, they would set forth their law and their principles and I would truly have to give them the understanding of the true grace of Jesus Christ, also pointing out that he did come and did fulfill all of the law and the prophets.<sup>10</sup> Thus, when you are most familiar with the New Testament you will do well to study the law and the prophets.

And I tell you, beloved, you must have just as intricate a knowledge of the Teachings of the Ascended Masters as you do of the Old and New Testaments. It is essential. And therefore, let the courses and the study begin! Let it be across the land. May you take those courses and understand that this [knowledge] is something that you must be able to carry with you.

As you know, I was well educated in [my] embodiment [as Paul]. I sat at the feet of those who had the great wisdom of our time.<sup>11</sup> This stood me in good stead, beloved, because I was continually speaking with the representatives of the Jews and of Rome, and I must have that education and that ability whereby I might truly speak out of the authority of their own background.

But all these things, beloved, were only tools. For I came in the love of Jesus, in the empowerment of Jesus. And I came as a little child. I came and I loved and I adored. And he gave my heart that mouth-to-mouth resuscitation. He restored me to Life.

Remember the sin of my life, beloved. [Remember that] I did stand by as a representative of the Jews, consenting to the stoning and the death of Saint Stephen.<sup>12</sup> You will understand how Jesus so loved me that he appeared to me on the road to Damascus, and by my karma my sight was blinded.<sup>13</sup> And therefore I must have the development of the inner sight. I must go within and I must become sensitive to my own Inner Christ, whom I had also silenced in aiding the cause of the persecution of Christians.

Think, then, beloved, how I was called and how the zeal I had spent in the wrong direction was repolarized. The zeal of the Lord was upon me and I could not stop preaching that mighty Word. And the miracles took place, beloved, and I was found in the great joy of being the apostle.

And apostle, beloved, is messenger. The word means the same. You see standing before you also

---

<sup>10</sup>Matt. 5:17.

<sup>11</sup>Paul was born the son of a Pharisee and raised in strict observance of the traditions of Judaism, beginning his studies of the Old Testament scriptures as a young boy. As Paul tells us in Acts 22:3, he was later educated "at the feet of Gamaliel," one of the most learned and esteemed rabbis of the day, and was "taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers." He excelled in his studies above his contemporaries, becoming, in his own words "exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers" (Gal. 1:14). John D. Davis notes in his Dictionary of the Bible that under Gamaliel, Paul was trained "not only in the teaching of the Old Testament, but in the subtleties of rabbinical interpretation. . . . The future apostle grew up an ardent Pharisee, trained in the religious and intellectual ideas of his people, and from his personal qualities, his course of education, and probably his family connections [was] prepared to take a high position among his countrymen."

<sup>12</sup>Acts 7:54-60; 8:1-3; 22:20.

<sup>13</sup>Acts 9:1-9.



an apostle of Jesus Christ, who since those days has carried in her heart these sacred teachings and whose heart is bursting with the fire of God to deliver them to every man, woman and child on this planet.

O beloved ones, to reach the millions is our cause! Therefore, do apply to me, for I AM the Chohan of the Fifth Ray and therefore I have somewhat to give you [as you apply] the science of precipitation on that ray. And I will help you and I will assist you.

But we cannot do the work that only you can do, and that is to bring in the new souls of Light - to go after them, to love them, to pray for them, to use all the calls that you have to cut them free! For they are pulled in many directions by relatives, by family, by spouses, by those who will not let them leave organized religion to go out into the desert as John the Baptist did, as I did as Hilarion, my final incarnation. For I, beloved, had to be in embodiment again after [my life as] the apostle Paul [in order] to balance fully my karma for the persecution of Christians.

And therefore God gave me great gifts, gifts of healing [and command over the forces of Nature]. And multitudes were healed, so much so that I had to escape from them and hide from them, for they did not cease to pursue me all the days of my life. And then the devils would also pursue me through the insane.<sup>14</sup>

And thus, Hilarion came to be known as a healer. And that great gift to me, beloved, came by the grace of the Lord and Saviour; it was the gift of the Holy Spirit, at once a reward for my service as the apostle Paul, at once a dispensation whereby in healing the many I could atone for that which was done through me in my blindness.

Do you see, beloved, that it does not matter what you have been or what you have done? There is the saving grace, there is casting yourself upon the Lord and asking to be received again, asking to have the empowerment to become a son of God, to receive a greater increment of the threefold flame or even to have it reignited again if you have lost it (and some have lost it) and to be reconnected to your Holy Christ Self. Do you see that that is the great grace that God has promised by your acceptance, by your belief, by your taking of the name [Jesus Christ] and accepting that Beloved One as the Lord and Saviour?<sup>15</sup>

Then, beloved, you will be prepared for that reigniting and for that reconnection, which is given according to the path that you have been taught. And that gift is given when it is known by Jesus that it will be secure and that it will be secured by you and sealed and that you will have the strength to hold on to it and not lose it again and not be so out of alignment in your four lower bodies that you no sooner receive again the connection [to your Holy Christ Self] than you lose it by fits of anger or depression or sudden behavior that is out of keeping with God-harmony. I speak of the extremes, beloved.

And therefore you see that the path of the Ascended Masters must be taught and demonstrated so that those who are not stable emotionally, those who have severe disturbances in the psyche may be brought to a consonance of oneness with the Christ that they might once again be entrusted with this great gift. For, beloved, it cannot be offered again and again. To lose it at all has caused many much suffering and wandering in outer darkness. And therefore to regain it is like being [once again] with your twin flame in the Great Central Sun in the beginning and being given the original gift of God-Identity. One must not count on more than a second chance.

Therefore, the preparation [of the soul to receive her Lord] is so important! And you who have already gone to great extents to prepare yourselves must now see how you can, as brother and sister on the Path, help in the preparation of others. And diet is all-important, beloved, for much of what is wrong with people that puts them so far out "in left field," as you say, [apart] from their

---

<sup>14</sup>See Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, "Hilarion (The Apostle Paul): Gifts of Healing," in *Lords of the Seven Rays: Mirror of Consciousness, Book One*, pp. 204-6.

<sup>15</sup>John 1:12, 13; 3:14-18, 36; 11:25, 26; 20:31. See also *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*, pp. 494-96.

God-centeredness, is those chemicals and toxins they take in through the mouth through all manner of substances that they imbibe. This must be stopped, beloved. The mouth has become the opening for the very poisoning of the mind and the very putting askew of the soul herself.

Thus, beloved, we speak, then, of drugs and alcohol and nicotine and all manner of harmful substances. [The partaking of] these things has caused souls to lose the threefold flame because [as a result] they get into a place of such extremes of the emotions and of words and of deeds [that they open themselves up to the dark forces].

Violence, then, is the enemy of the soul on the Path; and yet violence comes through substances that enter the body one way or another, even through the environment, and distort the ability of the mind to function through the brain.

This is the great tragedy that we see occurring [in the lives of] many children of the Light and souls of Light. This is the cause of Mother Mary's lamentation, the cause of her sorrow and her tears,<sup>16</sup> that those of Light who have been taken aside by false doctrine and dogma are now in those places where they have been overcome by rock music and by all manner of [chemical] manipulation.

It need not have been, beloved, for in this century the great Chart of the I AM Presence [and] the great teaching of the violet flame have been available already now for sixty years. Do you see, beloved, that if those who had been in their pulpits, those who had been in their synagogues and in their temples had taken that violet flame - that mighty gift of Saint Germain and Jesus Christ, that mighty gift, beloved - all these things that have assailed the souls of Light would not have been? Had the churches taken in the understanding of the Ascended Masters and the Archangels [and the practice of intercessory prayer appealing to the heavenly hosts] - why, beloved, this is scarcely any different than the [Catholic] concept of [calling upon] the saints - [the world would be ready for the decade of the 1990s]!

We look for interpreters of the Word. We look for those of the Holy Spirit who do have the gift of translating to others of another mind-set, another cast, what is the teaching of the Ascended Masters that is parallel with their own convictions.

Make no mistake about it, beloved, the fallen ones in Church and State, especially in religion, do not want this Teaching proliferated. They do not want you taking one single individual [by the hand to] the path of [Christ] illumination and away from the blindness of the blind leaders of the blind.

Therefore you have been given your judgment calls, your calls to be made on the dweller-on-the-threshold. All of these [decrees] must be done [in the name of the Cosmic Virgin]. There must be a placing in chains and a binding by the hosts of the Lord of that untransmuted self, that not-self, that unconscious self that rages and lashes out against the living Christ wherever it is found.

You, then, will have to deal with the reality that to preach this message is truly to be a soldier of the cross, to be the crossbearer and to be one with Archangel Michael, and to know that you must defeat in God's name, in the name Jesus Christ and the entire Spirit of the Great White Brotherhood all those forces of Evil, all of those fallen ones who are determined by the logic of the carnal mind to hold souls [of Light] bound until the era of opportunity is past and the cycles change.

They believe they have this decade to destroy the souls of Light on this planet. And they believe that if they can destroy them and [if they] have but this decade to do it, the cycle of opportunity [for those souls] will be through; and even though they themselves will go to the Final Judgment, they will [take satisfaction (they think) in] having accomplished the destruction of the seed of the Woman.

---

<sup>16</sup>Hundreds of statues of Mother Mary throughout the world and in several U.S. cities have been seen and photographed shedding tears. The phenomenon has been witnessed particularly with the two statues known as the Pilgrim Madonna, which travel from nation to nation and bear the likeness of Our Lady of Fátima. Observers have noted a correlation between world events and the weeping of the statues. See also 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 140, 220, 311, 313, 319; Book II, pp. 587, 643.

Blessed ones, we have come to tell you that we are determined with you to prove them wrong!  
[22-second standing ovation]

There is much that they do not know about the mercy of God or the grace of the Son. But one thing is certain, beloved, no matter what the imperilment of a soul of God, if that soul by free will chooses not to enter in to the God-estate, not to receive her inheritance of that Christ-potential, the Law states that there is nothing we can do. We cannot act against free will. We cannot force a soul to receive salvation. We cannot drag a soul to the altar of God.

And therefore, it is [the fallen ones who practice] indoctrination. Those who do deprogrammings are themselves brainwashers. They are the ones who program souls to lose faith in God and Guru and a path and a teaching. By the time [these souls have been through lengthy sessions with] the deprogrammers, they are disillusioned with all religion and they decide to go apart from any. [And more often than not, they go out from these sessions possessed by the deprogrammer's demons of anger against the Word incarnate in the Messenger and the chelas of the Ascended Masters.]

This is the true goal of the deprogrammer, beloved. [It is he who desires to occupy and control the mind of the one he claims has been brainwashed.<sup>17</sup>] Beware of [this intent] and defend [yourselves, your Messenger and your Church] with your calls [at the altar of God] and with your [public] statements and with your publishing of the facts to counter the lies that are being told in secret. They will not proclaim them in the open, for they know that they will be refuted. And yet souls have been taken out of the way [by the lies and distortions of so-called deprogrammers].

You must realize that they are fully engaged in the war against you and against us who are behind you. You, then, must fully engage yourselves and not assume that all will automatically come out right in the end and everyone will live happily ever after.<sup>18</sup>

Mother Mary has been saying since 1917 that souls can and will be lost unless you pray for them and go after them. These souls have had 25,800 years to elect to receive their Saviour but they

---

<sup>17</sup>In a memorandum opinion filed April 13, 1990, in U.S. District Court, Northern District of California, Judge D. Lowell Jensen ruled to exclude the testimony of Dr. Margaret Thaler Singer and Dr. Richard Ofshe on "thought reform" (brainwashing) from the criminal trial of Stephen Fishman (United States v. Fishman). Fishman, a member of the Church of Scientology, was charged with 11 counts of mail fraud involving false claims against companies involved in class-action lawsuits. Defense lawyers held that Fishman was not guilty by reason of insanity. They planned to use the testimony of Singer, a clinical psychologist who has testified in numerous civil trials against religious sects, and Ofshe, a social psychologist, to show that thought-control techniques were used on Fishman by the Church of Scientology, contributing to his unbalanced mental state and causing him to be unable to distinguish right from wrong. The prosecution and the Church of Scientology maintained that Fishman was responsible for his own actions. In his 24-page opinion, Judge Jensen rejected Singer and Ofshe's contention that an individual's free will can be overborne by persuasion techniques in the absence of physical force. He wrote: "There is no consensus or general acceptance within [the American Psychological Association and the American Sociological Association] regarding the thought reform theories of Dr. Singer and Dr. Ofshe. The proffered testimony in this case has been challenged by the scientific community on grounds of both scientific merit and methodological rigor." Legal authorities believe that this ruling has set a substantial precedent that could significantly restrict the use of expert testimony on mind control in future trials.

<sup>18</sup>Cult Awareness Network (CAN), formerly Citizens Freedom Foundation, is a national nonprofit organization headquartered in Chicago which is actively engaged in a war against what it calls "destructive cults." CAN Executive Director Cynthia Kisser says the organization deals with more than 2,000 religious groups. CAN has targeted Church Universal and Triumphant as well as the Unification Church and the Church of Scientology as major destructive cults. Although CAN claims that its major goal is to educate the public, proponents of religious freedom have charged that the organization serves as an underground network for brutal kidnappings and deprogrammings. John Nordquist, a former deprogrammer, claims his training was sponsored by CAN and that CAN is deceptive. He says, "You have to maintain that the Cult Awareness Network doesn't condone deprogramming even though it's being run right out of their national office. . . . We forged documents. We did anything to try to convince the guy we were deprogramming that he was wrong. The end justified the means." CAN's twelfth annual national conference - "Cults: Perpetrators and Victims" - was held in Lincolnshire, Illinois, November 1-4, 1990, and attended by approximately 400 people. Conference speakers included Dr. Margaret T. Singer and exit counselor Steve Hassan, author of *Combating Cult Mind Control*, who have both vociferously attacked Church Universal and Triumphant. Scheduled events included a "mock cult trial."

have lost the way because they have not been correctly taught the Teaching and they have not been nurtured and shepherded and assisted each step of the way; and somehow [they have] wound up instead under the influence and the absolute control of fallen angels whom they have made their gods. This is the plight of planet earth and we must deal with it else forever regret that we did not act when we could have acted.

Therefore, my Lord has sent me to you, and I send you to study and to know the Word. For did I not tell Timothy, “Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth”?<sup>19</sup> This is the work of the disciples and the students [who serve with and] under the apostles.

Now let those of leadership throughout this Community organize such courses of study. And let all know that the Messenger has taught for many years, and there are many teachings that [have been given by both Messengers that] are not being reviewed or taught. It is time that you allow the Messenger to go on to write more books and to do those things that no one else can do in this hour. You are qualified and able to take the teachings already delivered and to teach them to those who come [to sit at the feet of the Ascended Masters and their own God Presence]. You are qualified to teach the scriptures. You must do so.

Blessed ones, do not put it all upon this heart, for [the Messenger’s body is a physical body, subject to the same laws and limits as your own]. And though you may need her, I will tell you that the Great White Brotherhood needs her as never before to complete this message and to go before you with that mantle to defy the fallen ones.

Therefore take to yourselves those things that you rightly ought to do [for yourselves], that are both your dharma and your karma. And let the Messenger continue to deliver to you those breakthroughs of teaching and of dispensation such as have come forth in this book, [and] such as have come forth in the dictation of Cyclopea<sup>20</sup> and the many dictations that have covered almost the entire adult life of this Messenger.

So, beloved, this is the course [that I set before you this day]. And I tell you, though the fallen ones may count upon a decade, you should not. Time is of the essence and many things hang in the balance, and the prophecies are true.

There is one hope for mitigation. It is the conversion of millions. We have not given up. Have you? [“No!”] Therefore we shall see what fiery hearts of Love can do!

I tell you, beloved, you have advanced mightily by the initiations you have come through in recent years. You are expressing more of your Real Self today than you were a month or a year or ten years ago. And you know it and the Messenger knows it, for all have grown [in grace and some are wiser for their mistakes]. Therefore, because it is so, because you have made greater gain than you have lost, I am speaking to you this night; and were it not so, I would not have been sent. It is because you have the ability to accomplish the task that I am here.

I, Hilarion, take up residence in this Community, beloved, and I will not leave you. For I am in the zeal of my apostleship in the defense of my Saviour! [25-second standing ovation]

May you contemplate this night how he has saved you.

In the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, in the name of the Divine Mother, it is done, it is finished, it is sealed! Onward, Christian soldiers! [23-second standing ovation]

This dictation by Hilarion was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet at the conclusion of the October 7, 1990 Sunday evening service during the six-day conference A Vision of Wholeness for the New Age held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation,

---

<sup>19</sup>II Tim. 2:15.

<sup>20</sup>See pp. 479-80, 481.

added by the Messenger under Hilarion's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.



# Chapter 40

## Beloved Lady Master Venus - October 14, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 40 - Beloved Lady Master Venus - October 14, 1990

A Vision of Wholeness for the New Age

IV

The Hatred of the Divine Mother on Planet Earth

Instruction for the Mighty Mission

Yes, I AM the Divine Mother occupying this Retreat of the Divine Mother here over the Royal Teton Ranch. It is my home away from home and yet I am fully at home. Many Ascended Masters and high adepts of Venus have come to place themselves in this retreat, beloved. They are with you as the watchmen upon the wall. They are the presence of Venus in this wilderness place.

Blessed ones, I have been matriarch of Venus for longer than I should care to number the years. You have been a part of our home and yet retain the memory of that higher state and the call of Sanat Kumara. Some of you accompanied him to this planet with the original mission and others have come subsequently to keep the flame of the culture of Venus and to hold the love flame in this civilization.<sup>1</sup>

Blessed hearts, the love flame of the Divine Mother is the most hated element upon planet Earth. You will take note that once we as Ascended Lady Masters determined to sponsor Summit University, for the very first time since 1973 a quarter had to be canceled for want of registrants. This is not only because there has not been enough outreach and bringing in of souls but also because there has been such hatred of the Mother directed against this Messenger and ourselves.

The key to the victory of planet Earth is the reinstilling and reinfusing in the hearts of all Lightbearers and servants of God the true love of the Divine Mother; the love of the Father-Mother God, Alpha and Omega; [and] the love of Mary, the mother of Jesus

Christ, so held in the hearts of those who remain in the Catholic Church and so taken [away] from many outside of that church.

Blessed ones, it is the force of the hatred of the Mother that you must work against - to consume it, to see it transmuted and to see that the fallen angels whose original rebellion was against the Woman clothed with the Sun and her Divine Manchild are bound.

Recognize that the hatred of God as Mother is truly the hatred of her seed, her issue, her offspring. The fallen ones have the knowledge that in the end of the age, as Alpha is the beginning and Omega

---

<sup>1</sup>See Sanat Kumara on the Path of the Ruby Ray: The Opening of the Seventh Seal, 1979 PoW, Book I, pp. 73 ff.

the ending, so it is the Mother who comes to judge the [seed of the Wicked One] on planet Earth.

Therefore it is they who have desecrated her image and her body in the motion-picture industry, in advertising and in every manner possible, including the ultimate degradation of woman in the act of abortion itself, whereby the true Divine Feminine is also aborted.

Thus, beloved, we look forward to Summit University convening the first of the year 1991. And we ask you between now and then to hold your prayer vigils to deal with the opposition to the Mother and to her children in education, in the situation with drugs, in the situation of the nondefense of this nation, which has not the capacity to turn back and destroy incoming nuclear warheads, [in the situation of] the absence of the defense of the minds of children from what is shown on television and from the absolute desecration of their bodies in all manner of toxins and poisons and junk foods. Major, of course, is caffeine itself, which these children are imbibing from [their soft drinks at] such early ages, as the Messenger has discussed this day.<sup>2</sup>

We have reached the point of what you might call a critical mass on planet Earth, [and it remains to be seen] whether indeed the souls of Lightbearers can survive.

We have touched upon this subject before in [the deliberations of] our councils and in our dictations. And we have said that until something is done [about all of the above], there cannot be sent to Earth those souls who would then run the risk of being lost by having so many toxins [in their bodies] and [by being exposed to] so much programming coming through television and through rock music and [other sources] as to take them far afield from their inner soul memory and cause them great inner soul trauma and grief, beloved ones.<sup>3</sup>

Some of these children who have tried to enter have been aborted and the scars of that experience remain with them when they come again to be embodied among you. Therefore have profound compassion for these little ones.

The Messenger has called to your attention the persecution of the child on a planetary scale. Think of the level of civilization of this modern world and of the wealth of nations and consider the report that 40,000 children die daily on this planetary home.<sup>4</sup> Can it be, beloved? Can you understand that there is yet barbarism on Earth even as there is the highest development in certain areas of science and culture? It is the development of the soul and the spirit and of true oneness with God that is wanting, [and this] creates such schism and such imbalance in the levels of evolution upon Earth.

When you see black brother killing black brother in Africa, can you not understand how the Divine Mother does weep<sup>5</sup> that there is yet such hate and hate creation? To kill the offspring of the Mother is to kill the Mother. Do you not understand, therefore, that this killing is also an expression of the hatred of the Mother?

If the Mother herself were venerated in all cultures and esteemed highly, there would not be the desecration of her child. But you see, Mary was not venerated by the then Roman gods or the Sanhedrin and therefore they did crucify her Son. Thus ultimately the Mother of God is crucified, for every Mother does know what is the crucifixion when harm does come to one of her children.

Blessed hearts, the Messenger does bear a great burden of Light from those of us who keep the Mother Flame. And she has not in any way turned back or denied the intensity of our presence

---

<sup>2</sup>On October 8, 1990, the Messenger delivered her lecture "The Death Spiral of Caffeine," in which she discussed the origin of coffee as a genetically engineered Nephilim invention; the historical background of coffee consumption; the caffeine content in coffee, soft drinks, teas, chocolate, and over-the-counter pain relievers; the physiological and behavioral effects of caffeine and its addictive properties; caffeine's contributing role in disease; and a program for eliminating coffee residues and caffeine from the body. Questions and answers followed.

<sup>3</sup>Sanat Kumara, July 3, 1983, "Of the Coming Race." See also 1986 PoW, Book I, p. 84 n. 5.

<sup>4</sup>Report on the U.N. World Summit for Children, ABC World News Sunday, September 30, 1990.

<sup>5</sup>See p. 510 n. 17.



that we place over and through her body, for she knows that the Divine Mother must be manifest physically.

You must see [to it], then, that the dweller-on-the-threshold within you is bound and that all substance of hatred of the Mother in the unconscious is consumed, which means, beloved, that there must be no strife or argumentation or harsh words or dissonance between any of you. For it is the breaking of a mother's heart and it is your "ignore-ance"<sup>6</sup> of your own Divine Mother, your own human mothers and the office of Mother.

In deference to the Mother, her children do not squabble and grumble and come into conflict one with the other. Therefore know, beloved, that you will have to settle these problems that you bring upon yourselves, for we will not allow the Messenger to be taken to the level of settling the problems of squabbling children.

You must get along with one another and work together and rise above the pettiness and the smallness of the mind. You must recognize that it is a major challenge to be in two worlds, and that is the challenge that the one who holds the office of Messenger must accept in order to have that mantle.

It is a stressful situation upon the body. And when you as Chelas with a capital C agree to be the manifestation of your Morya, you will take on some of that very same stress. To bear the burden of the Lord of the Chohan of the First Ray by asking to be his representative and the vessel for that Ascended Master to step through the veil, beloved ones, [is a sacrifice that is not without commensurate reward].

When you know the presence of the lower self and the presence of an Ascended Master in the same place, you will come to understand that this is no small challenge. And you will recognize that the harmony of your being with that Master and with that presence does bring great Light to the Earth. But the greater the Light, the greater the opposition to that Light.

You yourselves have known persecution<sup>7</sup> individually and you have taken that persecution on behalf of the Divine Mother Omega, on behalf of Mother Mary and all of us who serve that [Mother] Flame, as well as on behalf of your Messenger. You have been stalwart souls around the world. You have seen through the lies of the fallen ones, else you would not be here. But I tell you, all of those lies are directed toward the character assassination, toward the desecration and toward the impugning of the moral integrity of the Messenger.

Be it understood that such statements have been said about Mother Mary for two thousand years. They have been said about the saints. They have been said about you. Therefore you know the truth; for your own souls, your own inner beings, bear witness to the Light that God has placed upon you. And you have some sense of co-measurement; [for you have seen] how when the dial of that Light is turned up the forces of Darkness will assail at one's weakest place and [in one's] weakest moment, whether of fatigue in service or whether in the giving of oneself until that body must surely retreat into the fiery coil of the center of being for re-creation and the recharge.

Blessed ones, you are soldiers of the cross indeed and you understand the defense of Truth. Now realize just how intense is the hatred of the Mother on planet Earth.

We have placed the Retreat of the Divine Mother here, and this retreat has been a manifestation for far longer than you realized in the moment of its unveiling.<sup>8</sup> This Holy City is the presence of many forces of Light. It is a vast temple and city, beloved, and no small retreat. And therefore those who come are special envoys and initiates of Omega. They come not only from Venus but from other planetary homes and systems, for they see how the battle rages to destroy the seed of the Woman

---

<sup>6</sup>ignoring of (ignorance of)

<sup>7</sup>John 15:20.

<sup>8</sup>See Sanat Kumara, December 15, 1985, in 1986 PoW, Book I, pp. 70-71; and 1990 PoW, p. 308.

in this age.

Now then, it is well for you to take the bija mantras [for meditation on the Divine Mother and the intoning of the keys that unlock her power in your chakras. It is well] for you to offer the bhajans to the [Divine] Mother, to enter into that high state of oneness and attunement in her bliss and to experience the consequence of the gentle rising of the sacred fire on the spinal altar for the nourishing of your chakras, for the regeneration and rejuvenation of your bodies. Therefore we are gratified that you have found the means to detoxify your bodies with another system and another method that can greatly enhance your progress. 2EN

The statement of Saint Germain remains true, that certain substances that accumulate in the brain do prevent the full focusing of the Light of your I AM Presence.<sup>9</sup> I am certain that you realize that [such substances] affect your ability to be one in sensitivity and in vibration with the [highest Light that can be focused in the] crown chakra [and your ability] to increase that Light of the crown as well as of the third eye.

When it is put this way, beloved, is it not with a [greater] sense of immediacy as well as with a greater [sense of] ease that you are able to look at those substances that you formerly took in (and that took you in!) and to recognize that these must be flushed out by the violet flame [with the aid of] these products that are being made available to you, [which detoxify] by physical chemistry?

We look, then, for those bodies (and correspondingly those souls) that can contain more Light. And we look to the deliverance of [your souls as well as] your bodies, which are the body of the Mother, from all stress and burden and pain and distress that comes about by the accumulation [of poisonous substances in the organs].

Surely, beloved, the fallen ones have genetically engineered more than coffee and more than caffeine for their own entertainment and to the destruction of the Lightbearers, as Morya revealed this day. For he has shown the Messenger that this is true and that these substances are enjoyed as stimulants by the Nephilim themselves, who brought such products [as well as recreational drugs] from the Twelfth Planet.<sup>10</sup>

Well, they brought many more products [with them to planet Earth than] drugs for [pleasure and simulated states of exhilaration], as you were told, whose harmful effects they neutralized with [special] equipment. The substances they brought, beloved, included pesticides and all types of contaminants that do not agree with the natural order or the natural vibration of planet Earth [and her evolutions. Their] knowledge of chemistry [enabled them] to create toxic substances that always produce a negative spiral that turns counter to the positive clockwise spiral, even [counter to] the upward spiraling flame of the resurrection and [counter to] the positive spiral [with which God as Elohim originally charged] every cell and atom of your being.

Thus they have introduced into the bodies that were provided for the souls of Light on this Earth substances that are totally intolerable [and totally] destructive, [causing degeneration, disease and death]. You must understand that this [systematic] destruction of the Lightbearers is a masterminded process.

And [these fallen ones] do indeed fear the soul's contact with her Christ Self and the tremendous Power, Wisdom and Love of the Inner God, the Inner Buddha, the Inner Christ of everyone who is the issue of the Light of Alpha and Omega in the Great Central Sun. They are desperate. They are envious. They are angry. And they have never ceased in their perpetual hatred of the Woman and

---

<sup>9</sup>In the book *The Magic Presence*, Saint Germain states: "There are several things that leave a substance in the brain which must be cleared away if the Full Perfection from the 'Mighty I AM Presence' is to be released through the personal consciousness. These are, in the order of their importance: narcotics, alcohol, meat, tobacco, excess sugar, salt, and strong coffee" (Godfre Ray King, *The Magic Presence*, 5th ed. [Chicago: Saint Germain Press, 1982], p. 151). See also *Saint Germain On Alchemy*, p. 276.

<sup>10</sup>See Zecharia Sitchin, *The Twelfth Planet* (New York: Avon Books, 1978), *The Stairway to Heaven* (New York: Avon Books, 1983), and *The Wars of Gods and Men* (New York: Avon Books, 1985).

her seed.

And therefore they are as machines of imperil grinding out that imperil [and directing it] against you, seeking to trap you in every way possible - whether it be in psychological sockets wherein you bemoan your fate, whether it be in [mental and emotional states] of depression that are caused by these substances in the body, whether it be through schism in the psyche, whether it be that they have moved against your parents and those with you to cause all manner of burdens to be experienced by you in your childhood.

No matter what the case [or circumstance], beloved, when you look at limitation and when you look at the [obvious] determination [of some one or some force] to snuff out your opportunity and your life, look to the Twelfth Planet, look to their organized confrontation with the forces of Light of planet Earth and just remember that that Twelfth Planet is the headquarters of Armageddon for the forces of the dark side in this sector of this universe.

We shall, as we have said, continue to give you [spiritual] labors [to be taken up in your decree sessions]. But, beloved ones, you must understand that this conference has taken place at a certain interval. As you look upon the walls of the Inner Retreat this night, they are clear. As you look upon the dome, it is also clear. And the legions of Cyclopea have completed seven-eighths of the structure of the grid of light,<sup>11</sup> which is for this Community a manifestation of protection [of] vast [proportions].

Now, beloved, look across the plain - the plain that surrounds the Inner Retreat at inner levels and extends as far as the horizon, representing the world and [its day-to-day] doings. For on that plain this night there is a mist; and that mist is penetrated by the Eye of God, even the "night radar," as you would call it.

Beyond the mist, then, we see the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse. They are there, beloved, and they are at rest. They are awaiting the command of the Four Cosmic Forces to go forth [to deliver yet another] release of karmic judgment to the planetary body. Their time is not yet, but it soon dawns with the dawning of the sun.

Therefore be prepared and immerse yourselves in calls to Archangel Michael and the Archangel Michael Rosary for the absolute God-protection of the Lightbearers and of all things that you must accomplish in this cycle. [For the Four Horsemen] will go forth, beloved, and they will deliver a severe judgment. And they will also deal with the adversaries of God and the Woman [and her seed] on this planet.

Let it be known and let it be understood that we [Sanat Kumara and I] have met with cosmic councils and the Four and Twenty Elders, as our beloved Sanat Kumara is truly the Great Guru of this system and the sponsor of this final opportunity that Earth has been given for so many thousands of years.

Therefore we know and we understand, as it has been said, that with the April 23 date there has come a certain finality. And certain individuals who have persecuted the Light, incarnation after incarnation, who have surely persecuted the Christians and those followers of the Buddha in Tibet and in China and of every religion upon Earth in its time - blessed ones, these persecutors of the religious upon Earth who do embody the God Flame must know that their time is exceedingly short and that they can no longer persecute that God Flame in these little ones, in these stalwart souls with impunity.

And they do know it. It is true. They must know it and they do know it. They know it, beloved, but they have already made their peace with their own [soul's] suicide and their own final judgment. Therefore they have nothing to lose, and they go all out in their attempt to destroy that which will guarantee the path of eternal Life in the physical octave of this cosmos. They have gone forth to

---

<sup>11</sup>See pp. 479-80, 481.

destroy all that is godly and all that they know will be the snuffing out of their mechanization man and their creation that is not of God.

Except those among that creation come forward to serve the Great White Brotherhood, to accept the Lord Jesus Christ, who has come from our home of Light to serve this Earth, except they accept him as the Lord and Saviour and are willing to follow the path of the balancing of their karma, these mechanization men will not survive beyond the 25,800-year dispensation now drawing to a close.

That which is of God must expand and increase, and that which is not must choose to become a part of the great chariot of fire of the great Elijah<sup>12</sup> or else be no more. There must be a conclusion to the creations of evil minds who have created a mechanization man only for the purposes of destroying the little ones of God and the holy innocents.

Therefore, beloved, God did send this Son Jesus Christ into the world to give opportunity to every creation, whether God's or that of angels. And therefore that opportunity has been extended, not for a mere century or a mere 2,000 years but for the full 25,800 years, which as time is measured for the evolution of souls, and in the karmic sense of reincarnation, is plenty of time to decide to bend the knee before the Almighty and to receive his Son. Thus, beloved, there is absolute justice in this cosmos.

Your memories are ancient and go to ancient civilizations and golden ages that predate Lemuria and Atlantis and then to other planetary homes. May you know that in this hour Earth is a crossroads for fallen ones who are the archdeceivers and archrebels against Christ and his own. It is [also] the crossroads of the greatest souls of Light who have come from various planetary homes down the centuries. Great avatars have walked the Earth in the physical plane, not the least of whom is Jesus himself. Earth has known the highest and the lowest, and that spectrum is still present.

Therefore, beloved, it is the place where the victory of Light must be won. Though it is preordained, it is not predestined. By this I say that that which God preordains, his sons and daughters must confirm and bring forth in the physical octave and in the Matter universe. This is the choice of the sons and daughters of God.

If the battle is not won on this planet as it is intended, it will be taken to another and to another until there may be many souls lost in many systems of worlds. The battle will rage stronger as the forces of Darkness see themselves strengthened for the failure of those who have not understood that the victory is to those in embodiment who take their stand [against embodied Evil] and are unflinching and unswerving [in their dedication to the cause of the Great White Brotherhood].

There have been periods such as that known as the Hundred Years' War. There have been extended battles, beloved, but none so extended as the continuous battle of the fallen ones against the Lightbearers since these fallen ones were cast out of the heaven plane, the etheric octave, by Archangel Michael and his legions of Light.<sup>13</sup>

Some [students of the Ascended Masters] have backed away from this altar, for they have become weary of the battle. And they have said, "We are tired of continuous labors and hours of decrees. We want our services to be thus and such, kept simple, and we prefer to meditate than to engage." And thus, beloved, they point the finger at the Messenger and they do say, "The Messenger is wrong. The Messenger is wrong. The Messenger is wrong. And therefore we will do it the right way."

Blessed ones, when you have climbed a third or two-thirds of the mountain, there is only one way to go and that is up! And when you are in the midst of a battle, the battle of Armageddon itself, there is only one thing to do and that is to keep on fighting to defend your own life and your right to defeat the forces of Darkness.

You cannot take that reprieve [anytime you feel like it]. You cannot take that interlude unless it

---

<sup>12</sup>II Kings 2:11, 12.

<sup>13</sup>Rev. 12.

is given to you by your commander in chief, beloved El Morya. When there is time for a surcease, he does decree it; and therefore this is what this conference has been. But you will pick up on the morrow with the battle and therefore I say be prepared, for tomorrow is already today.

This is the hour for self-transcendence. And as you understand that the goal of the Path is to increase the Light in your body temple [in preparation for] the descent of your Holy Christ Self, then know, blessed hearts, that to clear the physical body, to purify it and to strengthen it will result in far less distress in those periods when we must give you the initiation of increased Light.

I am Lady Master Venus. I embody the soul of a planet. And I am the Keeper of the Flame, yea, the Mother of the Flame of all sons and daughters of Venus, whom we have sent far and wide to the planetary homes to bring the culture of the Seven Holy Kumaras and of Divine Love.

Remember it is Divine Love and the love of the Mother and her physical presence in the earth that will spell an end to the fallen ones forever. They know it. And each time that Mother Flame begins to flower within you, each time that Light is rising in your temple, each time, beloved, you can be the full expression of that love, they come along and send lesser hierarchies of devils to taunt, to tempt, to aggravate, to irritate and to cause strife to the troops, who truly in their hearts do love one another, who truly in their hearts love God with all their heart and soul and mind.

May you defeat and outsmart the forces of anti-Love that would set one against another over nothing. The best way to cure such situations is simply to walk away from them, to refuse to be offended or intimidated by anything or anyone, to look into the face of Jesus and remember his words to disciples who would be rivalrous, who would be concerned of who would be the greatest in heaven or the greatest on earth, who would be the favorite, who would be this, who would be that: "What is that to thee? Follow thou me."<sup>14</sup>

I say to you, follow the living Christ and follow the Divine Mother. Bring her down into this octave in your own temple, beloved. Do it for the precious love of the precious little ones who in this hour are not defended.

Come to our retreat, beloved, this night. We would instruct you and prepare you for that mighty mission. And we shall agree together on earth and in heaven (in that etheric octave) that the souls of Light who are intended to be a part of our Literacy Army,<sup>15</sup> our ministers of the Word and our teachers shall be here come January 1! And then we shall go out and find them and, as the Lord has said, "compel them to come in" by the fire of Love!

I send you to your Victory, O victorious ones!

[28-second standing ovation]

This dictation by Lady Master Venus was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet at the conclusion of the October 8, 1990 Monday evening service during the six-day conference A Vision of Wholeness for the New Age held at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. [N.B. Bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Lady Master Venus' direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

<sup>14</sup>John 21:22.

<sup>15</sup>See p. 467 n. 16.



# Chapter 41

## Beloved Mother Mary - October 21, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 41 - Beloved Mother Mary - October 21, 1990

The Lost Teachings of Jesus

On Women's Rights at the Whole Life Expo in New York

Event I

A Message to the Women of the World on Their Divine Rights

A Spiritual Revolution for Woman

The Right of Woman to Be Woman Must Be Defended by Woman!

O thou who art the beloved of God, I am welcome in this city by your presence, by your devotion and by your meditation upon the Law of the One, the indivisible whole of thy life. Therefore as one Mystical Body in this hour, you form the chalice, even the electrode, for the anchoring of my love unto the millions, not alone in this city but throughout planet earth.

I come, O beloved, in a dark hour of earth's history that does precede the dawn of the birth of the Divine Manchild within you. Contemplate this mystery of the Saviour born in your heart this night. Celebrate with me the Christ Mass, for in each twenty-four-hour cycle I do celebrate the birth not only of my Son but also of your own true divine Sonship, which has been denied you by the label of "sinner" that has been pronounced too long and long enough!

Therefore I come to break the curse of this appellation [that has been put upon] the children of the Light. You may have sinned, beloved, but this does not make of you "sinners." Know the difference. You may have lied in your life, but this does not make of you "liars." In both cases it means that you have transgressed the law of God. You have soiled your clothes. As every mother knows, when children play they get their clothes dirty. Yet you can wash the clothes and the soul can be cleansed and the purification can be made by partaking of Holy Communion.<sup>1</sup>

Know this, beloved: You are children of the Light. You have been children of the Light from the beginning and [children of the Light you shall be] unto the ending. Yet you have soiled your garments and even the [fabric of the] soul herself. [You have sinned but you are not sinners.<sup>2</sup>]

---

<sup>1</sup>Holy Communion. See *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*, pp. 479-82, 496; *The Lost Teachings of Jesus I*, pp. 116-18; *The Lost Teachings of Jesus II*, pp. 426-27; and *Ashram Ritual 1, The Unison Ritual*, in *Ashram Notes*, pp. 12-13, and *Ashram Rituals* booklet, pp. 21-22.

<sup>2</sup>"You have sinned but you are not sinners." The Ascended Masters teach that the fallen angels are the original sinners, who committed the original sin against God by challenging the Divine Mother and the Divine Manchild. They have led the children of God into paths of sinfulness in order to convince them that they are "sinners" and hence unworthy to follow in the footsteps of Jesus Christ. The fallen angels have kept from the children of God the true understanding that God has endowed each of them with the Divine Image; instead they have taught them that they

I come to wrap you in my swaddling garment, which [is made of] the very fabric of the true teaching of the Divine Mother that Jesus spoke, that Gautama spoke, that Maitreya spoke, that Lord Sanat Kumara spoke. Now you must speak it, for the time has come to loose your tongues.<sup>3</sup>

I would loose them.

Therefore receive the fiery baptism of the Holy Ghost this night if you will, for the Maha Chohan, the [Ascended Master who is the] representative of the Holy Spirit, does stand by to deliver that Light. Only welcome the fire and the purging, beloved, and know that there is a cleansing by water and there is a cleansing by fire and there is a cleansing by total immersion in the water [and the fire] of the Word itself.

Therefore, beloved, [let] those who have stopped up your mouths that you may not speak the truth of your heart and your soul, let them now receive [back unto themselves] their cursing of the children of the Light. And let the Lightbearer stand forth and understand [what his role must be in this decade].

[When you have been cleansed by water and by fire and you “go and sin no more,” you are no longer called sinners but saints who comprise the Mystical Body of God on earth.] You, beloved, are the repository of the Christ. Your heart is that manger. Let the Manchild be born within you! For truly that Light of the incarnate one<sup>4</sup> [is multiplied] many times over in those who consider themselves the poor and the downtrodden and the “huddled masses yearning to breathe free.”<sup>5</sup> These, beloved, are the repository of that Light. These are the hope of the world in a dark hour.

The forces of karma are gathering in the Middle East. I say pray for all who are there. Pray for the servants of the Light in every nation and in every religion. Pray earnestly, beloved, that there might be a mitigation of the outcome of the configurations now forming.

I, Mary, say to you, let the power of the Holy Ghost descend in judgment upon those who move to be the instruments of war to the death of my children! Do you think my children are only Christians? I tell you nay. They are Jew and Moslem and Hindu. They are Buddha’s own.

I truly mother the flame of Life and nourish that flame in all whether or not I am acknowledged [by them], whether I am cursed or misunderstood. May you do likewise and recognize that to become the mother of all life, as is my calling, is also your [calling. To fulfill that calling you must] raise up within yourselves that lost potential that must be found again, truly the potential of the soul to magnetize and to become all that God is.

And where you are, there is that God! And the denial of that presence in you [by yourself or another] and the appellation given to you of “sinner” has allowed you to give up in [the sense of] hopelessness that you cannot become like the Son of God. Yet I say of you, as of Jesus, ye are all sons and daughters of God. But you have gone astray, far astray from the house of the Divine Father

---

are forever stained by ‘original sin’ and can never become Christlike or realize their own Christ potential. The fallen angels have thus promulgated the false doctrine that because the children of God are sinners, they can only be saved by grace, thereby denying the necessity for each one to “work the works of him that sent me,” as Jesus declared of his own mission (John 9:4).

God has called us to forsake the sinful life of the fallen angels and to put behind us the sense of forever being sinners. We must accept forgiveness through Jesus Christ for our past transgressions and accept him as our Saviour. We must walk the true course set before us by the Lord, who said, “He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works shall he do because I go unto my Father” (John 14:12). This is made possible by the grace of Jesus Christ, which restores our oneness with him and with our own inner Christ potential. This grace affords us the opportunity to atone for our misdeeds and mistakes and pursue our own path of individual Christhood. (See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*, pp. 11-17, 47-48, 229-30, and *Jesus and Kuthumi*, Corona Class Lessons, pp. 145-205.)

<sup>3</sup>Isa. 6:5-8.

<sup>4</sup>the Light of the one who incarnates the Christ

<sup>5</sup>From the poem “The New Colossus” by Emma Lazarus, inscribed on the pedestal of the Statue of Liberty on Liberty Island, New York Harbor.



and the Son and the Holy Spirit.

I am in the earth, yet I am an ascended being and truly the Archeia of the Fifth Ray. I come from the level of the Archangels, yet I come to minister, to call you Home. I come for the reparation of the Church and I come to speak to you of your right as man, as woman, as soul, as Light-emanation of the Godhead.

The right of the soul is to be the fullness of that God-manifestation. The right of woman is to be mother. It is her greatest calling and her highest bliss to know the fusion of her being with God, to know the descent of that child that must be born in her to continue that walk with God, that experience-gathering that life on earth is.

O the process of bringing forth the children of God upon earth! The right to be woman, the right to be love [as well as to love and be loved], the right to be free, the right to have proper education for her children and the right not to deny life aborting in her womb.

Blessed hearts, no matter what the argument, no matter what the evidence, life begins at conception. And I speak of the conception of the soul in the heart of the Great Central Sun - of you and your twin flame in the beginning. Life on earth likewise begins at conception, and even at that moment does the spirit begin to weave itself as part of the fabric, even the warp and woof of that body. Therefore, beloved, woman has a right to bring forth that which is conceived by love and in love by God.

May you know, beloved, that this [issue] which has become such a controversy in this nation may be dispensed with by the very simple teaching: Abortion in the physical sense is also abortion in the spiritual sense. [And] to abort the divine plan of a life, [whether physically or spiritually,] is a sin against the Holy Ghost.<sup>6</sup>

Consider if your parents had aborted you. This room would be empty. The city would be empty, devastated. And souls would be deprived of their calling to be in embodiment in 1990 at this hour and this moment of worlds at a crossroads and worlds in transition.

Blessed hearts, [abortion] is against the law of God [and it] always has been. Abortion, denying both the spiritual and physical destiny of a soul, is the murder of a God-potential. You have a right to bring forth children, and you also have a right to decide not to bring forth children and to see to it. You have that right, beloved. But you do not have the right to take from anyone the breath of life, the divine spark or the opportunity to live and breathe on planet earth.<sup>7</sup> [And this right to be begins at physical conception.]

Thus, beloved, there is a grave karma upon this nation and all nations that have accepted this lie of the fallen angels who have come [to planet earth] to see to it that those souls who should be in embodiment at the turn of the age of Aquarius are not in embodiment. [They determined to do this] by convincing woman that she has the right to privacy in her body [and that this right supersedes her right, yea, her duty before God,] to preserve life.

---

<sup>6</sup>Abortion as a sin against the Holy Ghost. See p. 361 and Matt. 12:31, 32; Mark 3:28, 29; Luke 12:10; Gospel of Thomas, logion 44.

<sup>7</sup>This statement should not be misconstrued as a refutation of capital punishment. In a dictation given July 3, 1976, the Ascended Master Godfre, speaking on behalf of the Great Divine Director and the Karmic Board, ratified the Supreme Court decision affirming the death penalty in the United States. The teaching of the Great Divine Director on this subject was summarized in a dictation given April 15, 1981, by Lord Lanto: "The Karmic Board approves of the death penalty, for it represents a lesson to souls: that if they continue to take life, life will be taken from them. It teaches them that the end of the road of their activity is the second death; and by losing that physical life and being reborn again, they have the deepest record in their soul to reinforce in them the will to resist the marauding entities of evil that take over their temples to destroy life" (1981 PoW, Book I, p. 199). As explained by Godfre: "The Lords of Karma realize that the soul that goes through that ultimate punishment will be given very quickly an opportunity to reincarnate. And on the record of that soul will be that record of the judgment." Archangel Uriel on March 30, 1983, said, "The new beginning is the only hope for such individuals. And the only lesson whereby they may be deterred from the same crime again is to know the loss of their own life" (1983 PoW, p. 188).

Understand this, beloved, and recognize that it is the calling of all men and women to pray fervently to my Immaculate Heart that the vision of God might come upon this people and that this people might receive in joy the children of the Most High.

Saint Germain has said, even my beloved Joseph, that abortion is allowed [only] in cases where the life of the mother is in jeopardy.<sup>8</sup> This is as it should be. But, beloved, you must know that where there is conception there is indeed the divine hand and the divine will. And if conception take place by incest [or] by rape, let it be understood that that conception [is the will of God and] must be hallowed even though [that life at its] inception was not hallowed [by the parents]. It is God who sanctifies life; therefore [let those who so conceive] receive that sanctification [and not deny it].<sup>9</sup>

Know, then, beloved, that it is the right of every woman to defend the right of souls to take embodiment. Whether you believe it or not, it is so that your soul [and every soul] requires many incarnations on earth to fulfill her divine plan.

Think, then, what is the karma of abortion! The karma is that one day, should you pass from the screen of life not having fulfilled your mission [on earth] and not having balanced sufficient karma [to enter heaven's gates], which would have allowed you to pass through [the initiations of] the resurrection and the ascension, you yourself will be seeking entrée to the physical octave through the portals of birth. And at that moment, beloved, the karma of having performed or had an abortion may greet you with the denial [of opportunity] to once again enter earth's schoolroom because you have denied life to another. This is the law of karma. It is real and it is true.

Therefore there be<sup>10</sup> souls at inner levels, beloved, who have been denied that life who have a tremendous anguish and frustration that they are not in embodiment to help you meet the crisis of your cities and your nations [and] every [other] crisis that besets you this day. One of the principal reasons why there is such crisis is that those whom God has sent to be here when these challenges were to come upon earth are not in embodiment. They are crying on the astral plane and in the etheric octave because they do not stand [at your side] to assist you.

Thus, the woes<sup>11</sup> shall come upon this earth, beloved, for this karma of the nations. Therefore I ask you to pray to my Immaculate Heart and to give the New Age rosary as I have given it to this Messenger,<sup>12</sup> which does avail much for yourself and much for the world. There are things that can be mitigated, beloved, and then there are freewill decisions made in spiritual blindness by those in

---

<sup>8</sup>See p. 363.

<sup>9</sup>An October 4, 1990 article in the New York City Tribune, "Message from a Child of Rape: We Don't Deserve to Die," by Michael Henderson deals with the subject of conception by rape. Henderson tells the story of Julie Makimaa, a young, attractive and energetic Christian woman living in Michigan. Julie, who had been an adopted child, desired to know the identity of her true parents. After four years of searching, she finally made contact with her mother, Lee, who painfully revealed to her that she had been conceived as a result of a rape at an office party. Lee had been an 18-year-old virgin at the time and was encouraged by friends to forgo abortion and place the baby with an adoption agency. This message, rather than upsetting Julie, evoked a response of intense gratitude. "I was very sorry that my mother had to go through that terrible experience," she said, "but I am so thankful that I am here. For me, I feel that it doesn't matter how I got here; what's important is what I do now." Julie's husband told Lee: "I want to thank you for not aborting Julie. I don't know what my life would be without her and my daughter." Julie is the founder of Fortress, an organization dedicated to defending women who become pregnant and children conceived through sexual assault.

<sup>10</sup>Ascended Masters' English usage. Frequently, English usage of past centuries comes into play in Ascended Master dictations. In this sentence, Mother Mary uses the verb be in place of are, as was common in the sixteenth century. In current usage, are would be used for the third person plural in the present tense. (See Webster's Dictionary of English Usage, s.v. "be.")

<sup>11</sup>Woes. See pp. 353, 357 n. 8.

<sup>12</sup>See Mary's Scriptural Rosary for the New Age, thirteen rosaries dictated by Mother Mary to the Messenger - one for each morning of the week and one for each evening, Sunday through Friday; on 10-cassette album A7326. The Sunday evening and seven morning rosaries are also published in My Soul Doth Magnify the Lord! pp. 135-224. See also A Child's Rosary to Mother Mary, 15-minute rosaries with scriptural readings from the New Testament for adults and children, on four 3-cassette albums, A7864, A7905, A7934, A8045.

embodiment that do upset the cycles of the turning of the ages.

When you think of 23 million [“legal”] abortions in this nation alone,<sup>13</sup> you can see how the course of this civilization has been altered [by the forbidding of] these souls [from] coming into embodiment to add their body of skill and knowledge and attainment and [eventually] their progeny as well. And thus, those who should be here are not here. Then there are those who are on the inner planes who are not [being allowed to] take embodiment [for a season] because of the karma of their unwillingness to sponsor life.

[Abortion, which in its far-reaching ramifications has] upset the spiritual-cosmic ecosystem, has not been so rampant upon earth since the last days of Atlantis, when this abomination was practiced in the temples of God.

Let those who hear me and feel my heart that is truly pierced by the sword on this occasion make yourselves a committee of one to go forth and turn around this practice that denies woman her right to be woman and the father to be father. Abortion is the desecration of the Father-Mother God and the father and mother in this life.

Blessed hearts, there are many families who are childless who could easily absorb all unwanted children. There need not be unwanted children, for so many desire to have them. I speak on this issue not alone on behalf of those who have been silenced, whose cries are not heard, [for] their screams are silent. I speak on behalf of yourself. I speak on behalf of your future. I must do this where I have a mouthpiece.

This is not a political issue. It is not a Catholic issue. It is the issue of life and the preservation of life. [Abortion] is the ultimate degradation of woman and the neutralization of her sensitivity to the things of God.

Blessed hearts, let there be the healing of all fathers and mothers who have chosen this course. Let them receive the mercy of God. Let them receive Holy Communion. Let them atone [in a lifelong penance of] serving to set all life free. [Let them yet bring forth children if they are able and willing.] God is not in condemnation of the ignorant, who sin ignorantly, but of the fallen ones who move among you as [the embodied] fallen angels to [evilily] influence the very course and direction of life.

Therefore we have called and the apostles ascended of Jesus Christ have called for apostles who will go forth from among you to be teachers and to preach the Word once again with the same fiery spirit with which it was delivered in the beginning.<sup>14</sup>

I speak, then, of the right of woman to be on that pedestal. Since the feminine portion (i.e., the soul) of each lifestream, [male or female,] is that which has the superior oneness with God, you may see woman, [in whom the feminine attributes are dominant,] as leader and in a leadership capacity in both Church and State. Let man [also] be liberated to express his feminine potential, and let all be liberated to receive Christ [equally] into their temple.

The manipulation of the economy of this nation has also been an abomination against woman. And where, as in so many households, there are single mothers or both parents working because of the tax structure and the manipulation of [the money system], there woman cannot fulfill her most important role as educator, as mother of culture; nor can she play a prominent role in government on behalf of her children.

This suppression of all that is natural and holy concerning woman does deprive an entire civilization and all children coming into embodiment of their rightful inheritance of the true feminine

---

<sup>13</sup>The altering of the course of civilization through abortion. Since the 1973 Roe v. Wade U.S. Supreme Court decision legalizing abortion, at least 23 million abortions have been performed in the United States, which is about 9.2 percent of the current U.S. population. An estimated 40 million to 60 million abortions each year have been performed worldwide since 1973, making a total of between 680 million and 1.02 billion.

<sup>14</sup>See pp. 483-96, 499-509.

potential.

The right of woman to be woman must be defended by woman!

Blessed hearts, it is not the subjugation of woman by man but it is the subjugation of woman by woman, who has allowed herself to come under the dominion of the fallen masculine, [that is at the heart of the issue of women's rights]. If woman would conserve the sacred fire and rise up [to take dominion over her self, her psychology and her household], no one would be able to put her down or detract from her presence. Let the women of this world know that the future of the entire course of civilization rests upon their correct attitude toward God, toward one another, toward fathers, sons, husbands, friends [and all children].

Blessed hearts, it is woman who has allowed herself to be placed in the image of the sinful, of the sinner, of one who could not rise again. And this, as the Messenger has told you and as I have said before, is laid largely to the Church's denial of woman of her sacred role<sup>15</sup> [and its failure to fulfill its responsibility to elevate her to the office of "Mother of the Universe," which my Son proclaimed for her].<sup>16</sup>

Blessed ones, this dictation and the message [delivered prior to it by the Messenger] can be the start of a spiritual revolution for woman in this nation and the world. If you make it your cause and your revolution, it shall so become. Let you who truly hear me know that you come representing the Christ in you and in my Son - if you will obey the commandments of true love, if you will enter into the Holy Spirit, if you will correct your diets that are debilitating to both body and soul and the astral body.

By wrong diet, beloved, you are placed in the frequencies of the astral plane and you do not contain the higher vibrations of the Holy Spirit. Even so, let the diet be the perfect balance of the yin and the yang principles within you. For in the physical sense, you are what you eat. And in the sense of infertility, in the sense of those many who cannot bear children, it has been diet [as well as karma] that has caused this; and yet this is not proclaimed as it should be by the medical and health professions. Correct the diet, beloved, and you will see healthier children coming forth who can focus their minds, who can learn what they must learn.

Blessed hearts, it is a fact that the leadership of this nation (which happens to be largely male, but I will not lay the blame upon them as males but as individual souls) is largely responsible for the financial chaos and the loss of billions of dollars in loans and credits to foreign nations.

This day, beloved, the American people one by one are poor by comparison to many [in the West and in Japan], and this is the [direct result of the leadership's] mismanagement of the abundant life God gave. And that abundant life is the gift of the Mother as well as of the Father and it is intended for all. And it has been stripped from this people by the manipulation of the stock market, by international bankers and by the sending of [the people's] monies everywhere upon earth in loans that will never be repaid.

The spending of the people's money on [everything but] the welfare of the people is shocking, beloved. But what is more shocking is that the women of this nation have not risen up en masse to challenge this which shall deprive them and their offspring of a true life and a true harmony of the circle of the whole.

I am definitely for children in the proper nursery schools, in the proper preschool situation. I do not believe that woman should be enslaved to her household twenty-four hours a day all the years of her life until her children are grown. I believe it is healthy for children to bond to one another as well as to their parents. Children at an early age, even at the age of two years, benefit from being in

---

<sup>15</sup>Church's denial of woman's sacred role. See Mother Mary, April 21, 1987, in 1987 PoW, pp. 208-9. Also Jesus Christ, April 3, 1988, in 1988 PoW, Book I, p. 391.

<sup>16</sup>Woman as "Mother of the Universe." See The Life of Saint Issa 12:10-21, in Elizabeth Clare Prophet, The Lost Years of Jesus, pp. 215-16, 274-75.

school together for a portion of the day that they may learn together and also be bonded to those of their generation.

This gives woman the opportunity to develop herself professionally, to develop her skills and her mind. This opportunity can only bless her children and her household. There does not need to be a radical leaving of the household [by either parent], wherein the child is bonded to neither father nor mother and then becomes a psychological debtor upon society. You must understand that there is the balance of the yin and yang for every member of the family.

And, fathers, I appeal to you: your children must know you! [They] must know your example and your courage and your strength and your wisdom. Ye are all rabbis! Ye are all ministers of the Word! Ye are all priests unto God, if you will understand your role and not accept the lie that sex itself has tainted you and made you miserable sinners and that therefore you cannot inherit the graces of my Son Jesus Christ. For he came to set an example for you that you might become truly the incarnation of the Divine Mother[ - of the Word that he was and is].

You should not be shy about aspiring to this. You should not feel that it is something effeminate to worship the Divine Mother or to hallow the presence of your wives as the vessel of myself. There is room for spiritual adoration as well as for physical love. Comprehend this and be free this night by the violet flame of the Holy Spirit from all sin and the sense of sin, all struggle and the sense of struggle!

O hear me, beloved, and know how you have been hindered, lo, for thousands of years by the condemnation of the fallen angels, who refuse to bend the knee before my Son and have sworn enmity with myself as the Woman<sup>17</sup> and with all women. These fallen angels who have taken embodiment have gone forth to make war against your children; and therefore they are left to those who do not care for them properly.

Child education begins at conception, beloved. You can teach your children the high elements of sound and music and meditation and the alphabet as you talk to them when they are in the womb.

O the joy of being the co-creator with God! It is worth some sense of sacrifice, some sense of the power of abstinence, to attract the highest souls of Light to your union. Yes, beloved, the old-fashioned way is the way of victory, and that is the profound love which will liberate you to be man, to be woman.

Let women make their decision to stop smoking and set the example and put the tobacco industries out of business entirely! Can anything stop the woman and the women of America from joining forces to take away from their children and their husbands these degrading substances of drugs, of alcohol, of tobacco - all these things working against the health and the holiness of incoming children?

Ye are mothers of the universe. Ye are fathers of the universe. And this earth is a holy place that has been desecrated by those who have said, "There is nothing holy. There is nothing sacrosanct. There is nothing [godly]! All is debased."

These are the cynics in life, beloved. But I tell you, that cynicism is only a cast of the mind and an overlay. And if you will feel my heart loving you with all of the love of a universe in this moment, if you will feel my presence and the intensity of my love for you, you will know the melting of that cynicism and that negative posture and you will enter into the positive spirals of the resurrection. You will find your life renewed and you will put all these things behind you.

Let the women of this nation set aside these drugs introduced by fallen ones, such as caffeine and all that it represents. So many substances contain it.

Will you not understand your power of example, O women of the world? Will you not understand that the age of the World Mother is come, that the World Mother is closer to the physical octave

---

<sup>17</sup>Rev. 12:13-17.

than ever before and that that World Mother is waiting to work a mighty work through you?

Let women, therefore, stand between their husbands and families and war itself. And what can you do about war brewing in the Middle East? You can start with prayer. You can start with a vigil and a novena. And you can start with reading what are the options that I have seen to it that this Messenger has set forth in this book on *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*.<sup>18</sup>

Know that there are options that ought to be taken and that must be taken by this Congress and this government. There are things that the people ought to know that are not being told, that are hidden even by the president himself. All is not well in this government, beloved, and you know it and you should do something about it.

Nations have fallen in the past and so have continents. Cataclysm has come upon the earth. Who can say what will be the will of God?

You have a right to live. You have a right not to surrender your life to any force, to any cataclysm, to any economic debacle, to any war, nuclear or otherwise. You have a right to live and a right to live in a continuity of being.

May you know that I have never ceased to minister to your soul, not since the hour of my Son's life in his final incarnation upon earth, not since the hour of your many embodiments on Atlantis. I have been the Mother presence, and others with me.

We do not forsake you until you determine with finality that you have forsaken God and want none of him or his Christ. Because that is a freewill action on your part, we cannot intercede - we [who are] of the angelic hosts or of the ascended hosts. You must know this and understand, beloved, that your free will ordains at the superconscious level, the conscious level, the subconscious level and the unconscious level<sup>19</sup> in the four quadrants of your being what will take place in your life.

Therefore, Jesus knocks. You can open the door or you can lock it tight and bolt it from the inside. Neither God nor angel nor Master will revoke your free will. To do so would make you nothing but automatons and robots, which God did not create you to be in the beginning.

Hear this, then, beloved. The reason that heaven does not enter into your life may be because you have not opened the door. Therefore begin with gratitude and thanksgiving and praise to God that you live in a physical body, for in these times, beloved, that physical body is a high-priced commodity. There are in excess of a billion souls who would like to be in embodiment for this grand finale of the Piscean age and they are not, for the aforesaid reason of abortion.<sup>20</sup>

But you are in physical embodiment. You can change in the twinkling of an eye. You can reverse your course! You can be converted by the Holy Spirit to your God and to the religion of your choice. You can be converted to Truth and forsake all error. You can be converted to righteousness and forsake all sin. And you have a right, O men and women of this age, you have a right to receive the Holy Spirit and the power of Jesus Christ to assist you in overcoming every addiction and every habit that has enslaved your soul in this body!

Sooner or later you must decide that you will have your victory over Death and Hell. Whether it is now or in ten thousand years, you must make that decision. You must right all wrongs, seek forgiveness from all whom you have wronged and surely pour forgiveness without end upon all who have ever wronged you. The mercy of God has given you life. Give to all life that mercy and pray for there to be the opening of the portals of birth to many souls who can yet contribute to this civilization.

---

<sup>18</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen: How You Can Heal Yourself and Planet Earth*, pp. 475-566.

<sup>19</sup>These levels correspond to the etheric, the mental, the astral and the physical bodies, respectively.

<sup>20</sup>Considering the number of babies aborted worldwide since 1973 (see note 12 above) and making a conservative estimate of the number of offspring that would have come through them, there are potentially over a billion lifestreams who have been denied embodiment by the decision to abort.

Pray, beloved. And pray without ceasing with a mantra in your heart:  
I can do anything in God,  
For with God in me all things are possible!  
I can become who I really am.  
I can become all that God has intended me to be.  
I can become one with my twin flame.  
I can fulfill my reason for being.  
I do not have to be on the treadmill of a system  
That has failed to enable the people to be free  
To pursue the oneness of God.  
I can be who I AM!

This must become a burning reality within you. You must know that not even the Lord can intercede for you until you determine to intercede on behalf of the right of your own soul to be. The right to be in all octaves and the right to be God [in manifestation], this is woman's right as an example she can set. It is man's right in his lawful and honorable position of father and leader.

I bless you, beloved ones. I trust you will know that I have spoken many words through this Messenger and through Mark Prophet. These may be read and studied by those who have been devotees of my heart. Likewise Jesus has spoken also for many, many years, giving his teaching and his Call of the hour to every one of you to become that Christ.

Therefore, setting all doctrine and dogma aside, walk in the Light that ye are. Walk ye in it, beloved, and walk in the way of Truth. Be willing to pay the price, whatever it is, for no price - [whether it be] persecution or otherwise - could be nearly as costly as losing the right to eternal Life by forsaking that Truth.

I am your Mother whenever and wherever you need me. Therefore, I would sing with you the Hail Mary as I have given it, that you might know that I give the adoration to the Ma-Ray - the Mother Ray, for which my name stands. As I am an incarnation of the Divine Mother, so I too worship the Divine Mother and the Divine Father.

May you, then, play this prayer that has been set to music, that we might sing together and affirm our oneness in our love of the Word that was in the beginning with Brahman, the Word to which you too shall return.

I am never absent from you. Peace. Peace. Peace.

Hail, Mary, full of grace / the Lord is with thee. / Blessed art thou among women / and blessed is the fruit / of thy womb, Jesus. / Holy Mary, Mother of God / pray for us, sons and daughters of God / now and at the hour of our victory / over sin, disease, and death.

This dictation by Mother Mary was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Friday, October 26, 1990, at the Whole Life Expo at the Penta Hotel, New York City. The dictation followed a 1-1/2-hour lecture on "The Lost Teachings of Jesus on Women's Rights," in which the Messenger discussed the revolution Jesus started for woman through his ministry; the later denial by orthodox Christians of woman's rightful role in the Church; the principle of the Divine Feminine as presented in Hebrew, Gnostic and Hindu teachings; and the masculine and feminine natures in both man and woman. The lecture and dictation, which comprise Event I of four events conducted by the Messenger in New York, are available on both audiocassette (3 hr., A90030) and videocassette (3 hr., GP90096). The Messenger will also be giving a lecture on "The Lost Teachings of Jesus on Women's Rights" with a dictation by Jesus Christ at the Whole Life Expo in Pasadena on February 15, 1991.





# Chapter 42

## Beloved Cyclopea - October 28, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 42 - Beloved Cyclopea - October 28, 1990

A Vision of Wholeness for the New Age:

How to Heal Yourself and Planet Earth at the Whole Life Expo in New York

Event II

To Heal an Economy and a City

40 Cyclopeas for 40 Days

Sons and daughters of God, I am come for the consummation of an age and more: I am come for the consummate union of your soul with the living God.

Therefore we, Elohim, manifest and we ensoul this city and vast territories beyond and beneath the continental shelf out into the sea. We ensoul increasing rings of Light until all of planet earth is contained within our aura.

We the Seven Spirits of God come to offer truly an intensification of Light in the chakras of all who can receive it. You have prepared yourselves diligently as a chalice of Light by your invocations and decrees. The hosts of heaven are grateful, for we may lower into you and through you into this place the healing that is so needed by every heart in this city, by the earth itself, by the elementals, by the air, the water, the fire. Every building and molecule of matter requires the recharge of Light.

I promise you this: as Moses was in the mountain forty days and forty nights,<sup>1</sup> as Christ was in the desert forty days and forty nights,<sup>2</sup> so, beloved, if you will take the decree to my name, the decree to Cyclopea, and give it forty times daily for forty days without [skipping a day], I will show you the limits to which Elohim may go to revive and rejuvenate and heal an economy and a city.

Therefore, may you gather [in your homes and places of worship to give my decree on forty consecutive days<sup>3</sup>] and may you return on the morrow that we might complete this cycle [of our releases] in the concluding dictations of this weekend. For God has purposed to send his Messenger to this place that there might yet be the restoration that is needed. It is a time and an hour when prophecy is fulfilled and the economy recesses.

Blessed ones, it may be so, but the individual Lightbearer may yet prosper in Light to bring the kingdom of God, the consciousness of God, into his temple. But the call still goes forth to come into the holy mountain of God and to seek the high places.

---

<sup>1</sup>Exod. 24:12-18; 34:27, 28; Deut. 9:9-11, 18, 25; 10:10.

<sup>2</sup>Matt. 4:1-11; Mark 1:12, 13; Luke 4:1-13.

<sup>3</sup>As soon as you have read this Pearl, begin your forty-day marathon with Cyclopea and see what this Elohim of the Fifth Ray will do for you, your family and your city! You will gain insight and vision, self-knowledge, direction and blessings untold, beginning with a greater oneness with God.

May you understand that we, Elohim, may act only through embodied souls of Light and servants of the Most High who come as Abraham did come (and Isaac and Jacob following him) to build an altar and a tabernacle in the wilderness. Therefore you see this altar built,<sup>4</sup> a consecration unto the I AM THAT I AM; and it is indeed [built] in the wilderness of barren thought - [of thought] not productive of the good fruit of the Light-emanation of the Word.

Thus, the altar stands and the crystal is the chalice of the Flame. And while you are here you are encircled in rings of Light of our Causal Body. We receive each of your hearts individually at your own level and we assist mightily. We desire to help you come into that congruency with your own inner divinity.

It is truly the call of the Ancient of Days to come out [from the fleshpots<sup>5</sup> of Egypt] and be a separate people unto God.<sup>6</sup> “Let my people go, that they might sacrifice unto me!”<sup>7</sup> Thus saith the Lord. And sacrifice in this hour is the Word [embodied and] spoken, the praise given, the dynamic decree offered whereby Light might intensify to offset the Darkness of a karma that is ages old, even 25,800 years [old], as you have been told.<sup>8</sup>

This karma does descend. Yet the Lightbearer in the eye of the vortex of Darkness may yet surmount, may yet overcome, may yet enter Aquarius, may yet greet the oncoming tide and tidal wave of karma with the fiat of the Lord:

“Thus far and no farther! Be still and know that I AM God!”

As I have built the fortress of light at the Inner Retreat,<sup>9</sup> so I build the grid of light around each one who will maintain this forty-day vigil. I do it, beloved, that a grid of light might assist you to magnetize greater Light and that this Light might swallow up the Darkness that each individual upon planet earth will face ere April 22, 2002, does dawn.<sup>10</sup> May that day find you in the secret place of the Most High.<sup>11</sup> May it find you with a mighty momentum of violet flame from your daily decrees.

This world must go through the process of alchemicalization. There are some who will go through it and come out in their Ascended Master Light Bodies at the conclusion of this lifetime. There are others who will see, and even see my presence over the Messenger in this moment with their inner sight, and yet they will not take the proffered gift to make the call whereby earth and her evolutions

---

<sup>4</sup>Refers to the altar on the stage set up in the tradition of the Hebrew patriarchs (see Gen. 12:7, 8; 13:18; 26:24, 25; 33:18-20; 35:1-7; Exod. 17:15). As is traditional for Church Universal and Triumphant, the Chart of Your Divine Self was centered above the altar table with the Charles Sindelar portraits of Saint Germain on the right and Jesus Christ on the left. In the center of the altar table, which was covered with a white silk cloth, was a crystal chalice. Placed directly behind the chalice was a large quartz crystal and three smaller amethyst crystals. A vase of flowers stood on either side of the chalice. To the right were the representative “Books of the Law”: The Holy Bible (Old and New Testaments), Climb the Highest Mountain, The Lost Years of Jesus, and The Lost Teachings of Jesus I and II. For instructions on how to set up your own altar, see Sacred Ritual for Keepers of the Flame, pp. 45-47, or Ashram Notes, p. 15 (Ashram Rituals booklet, p. 24).

<sup>5</sup>Fleshpot. Literally, a kettle of meat. In Exod. 16:3, the children of Israel speak of their sojourn in Egypt, when they “sat by the fleshpots” and “did eat bread to the full.” As the Interpreter’s Dictionary of the Bible points out, “This is a striking statement, for the Israelites are claiming that they had plenty of meat, as well as bread, to eat in Egypt! Meat, however, was not the poor man’s diet.” Webster’s Third New International Dictionary defines fleshpot, in modern usage, as “luxurious plenty: high living; an establishment catering to luxurious and usually licentious tastes.” In this dictation, Cyclopea speaks of the call of the Ancient of Days to come out from the fleshpots of Egypt. The Ancient of Days is calling us to come out from a civilization characterized by the desire for “plenty of meat” and high living.

<sup>6</sup>“Come out from among them . . .” Exod. 33:16; Lev. 20:24, 26; Ezra 10:11; Neh. 9:2; II Cor. 6:14-18.

<sup>7</sup>“Let my people go . . .” Exod. 4:22, 23; 5:1; 7:16; 8:1, 20; 9:1, 13; 10:3.

<sup>8</sup>Karma of 25,800 years. See 1989 PoW, pp. 414, 468-69, 509-10; 1990 PoW, pp. 63-64, 73.

<sup>9</sup>See pp. 479-80, 481.

<sup>10</sup>April 22, 2002. See pp. 71, 73-77, 85-86, 225-27.

<sup>11</sup>Ps. 91:1.

might know a better resurrection<sup>12</sup> from the Dark Night of the Spirit.<sup>13</sup>

We are Elohim and we come in answer to the prayers and the calls of souls of every faith and religion who worship the Divine Mother and the Godhead. Therefore, beloved, prayer is answered even unbeknownst to those who pray. And there are holy ones of God, even in this city, who pray without ceasing.

Yet God should<sup>14</sup> have saved Sodom for ten righteous men. Yet, beloved, that city was not saved.<sup>15</sup>

What, then, is righteousness? What is it to be right with your God? Surely it is to blend oneself with the shaft of Light until one can retrace the shaft back to the Source and in consciousness fly to the Sun and return again. Is this entering into nirvana? Indeed. Is it entering samadhi? Indeed, the samadhi of Love and the compassion of the Buddha.

Therefore, my beloved, remember the Psalmist. Though thou makest thy bed in hell, the Lord thy God is with thee.<sup>16</sup> It is an hour of delusion and illusion when that Darkness oncoming appears to be some sort of a euphoric entering of a golden age without the catharsis that must needs be for the purification of the soul of a planet and a people.

Hearken unto the wisdom of God! Hearken unto Wisdom, therefore, and she shall sustain thee.<sup>17</sup> Let thy people know the Truth! Let them know the truth of the Son of God, of the Christ of Jesus as the Christ of David, as the Christ of Joseph, [favorite] of the sons of Jacob, as the Christ indeed of all those who have come before, even in the ancient days of Atlantis. Let that Christ approach. Receive your Messiah and know that the Messiah of each one is the Holy Christ Self.

I AM with you in the mountain of God. I AM with you in the depths of the sea of your own astral creation. I AM with you in the exalted self and the debased self. I AM with you, prodding you, pushing you, pummeling you until you should know the determination to be that God, that Shekinah glory where you are!

I dissipate the record of sin. Complete the work by violet flame transmutation. Your calls are answered, your calls are multiplied, the increase is given, earth is blessed, karma is transmuted and you receive the reward for righteous service.

Indeed, the dynamic decree service is righteous service.

What a blessing, these hundreds of souls gathered on this island<sup>18</sup> for transmutation so sorely needed! Would to God all of you and thousands more would outsmart the fallen ones who have divided and conquered the children of God and caused them not to come together in holy service for the preservation of their native land!

This city requires a center, beloved. It requires those who will give their Light and their all for the saving of souls. Yet astral thoughtforms and the money beast and fallen angels and a great darkness have kept the Light of the people of Light under a blanket of materialism untold since the days of Babylon and Assyria. And may it be told this day, beloved, that all of this must be transmuted and a people must turn and serve their God.<sup>19</sup>

Therefore you see crisis in the abundant life. You see it in the economy. It is the sign of the drying

---

<sup>12</sup>Heb. 11:35.

<sup>13</sup>Dark Night of the Spirit. See 1988 PoW, Book II, p. 632 n. 14.

<sup>14</sup>Ascended Masters' English usage. Frequently, English usage of past centuries comes into play in Ascended Master dictations. In this sentence, Cyclopea uses should as an auxiliary verb where would would normally be used today. This usage of should was common in the English language until the middle of the nineteenth century. (See The Oxford English Dictionary, s.v. "shall.")

<sup>15</sup>Gen. 18:20-33; 19:1-29.

<sup>16</sup>Psa. 139:8.

<sup>17</sup>Hearken unto Wisdom. Prov. 1:20-33; 3:13-24; 4:5-13; 8.

<sup>18</sup>Manhattan

<sup>19</sup>"Serve ye the Lord." Josh. 24:14-24; Jer. 4:1-4; Hos. 12:6; 14; Joel 2:12, 13.

up of souls who have not bent the knee to confess their Lord. It is the sign of the manipulations of the manipulators. It is a crisis of catastrophic proportions, of which you are seeing but the beginning.

Therefore out of the circle of Light that is the Temple of the Sun<sup>20</sup> over this island, we, the Lords of Karma who serve the evolutions of this planet, must once again pronounce the judgment of God upon those who have misused the Light and the money of the people. Let it be so, beloved. Affirm it and confirm it, for there must be the lightning that descends to cleave asunder the Real from the Unreal.

Yet how shall the righteous be saved?<sup>21</sup> They shall be saved, beloved, because the Light of God shall separate them out from the Darkness. Without this dispensation, beloved, there should no flesh be saved,<sup>22</sup> for it is written in scripture.

Therefore our God does say this hour:

Let the karma be upon those who have done their evil deeds behind the scenes, which now come to the fore and are visible to all of the people of America in the squandering of light as money itself!<sup>23</sup> Therefore let the karma be upon their own heads, beloved, that the children of the Light might live again and again to serve!

This city could have been a city of Light restored from the golden ages of Atlantis, yet it has become a city of Darkness and of crime and of disease and of plague and of death until many do flee for their very lives and their very sustenance. Let it be turned around by Lightbearers! This is your country. This is your city. This is your native universe.

You who are in physical embodiment, you have the authority to make the call whereby we are compelled to answer by cosmic law. But without your call we cannot and do not intercede, for it would be an interference [in your life] and an abrogation of your free will.

My blessed hearts, may you understand as never before your own self-worth and your importance to God, for you understand the mysteries, for you understand the nature of all that must be done and, above all, you have momentum in this service. May you understand that it is difficult to assemble those who know nothing of these things and to expect them to have the sustaining power that is required for the turning around of this downward spiral [in this city] that is as a mud slide.

May you take note of the current ride of the Four Horsemen<sup>24</sup> and keep the vigil for America and the world to the conclusion of this year. For this is the period of the harvest of the entire year, even as the year itself portends the harvest of the ages. As the harvest comes in, let it be transmuted by the violet flame before it becomes a physical mandate that you would not like to see.

I AM Cyclopea, touching now each one on the brow, touching you, beloved, and giving you that

---

<sup>20</sup>The Temple of the Sun is the retreat of the Goddess of Liberty on the etheric plane over Manhattan, New York.

<sup>21</sup>I Pet. 4:17, 18.

<sup>22</sup>Matt. 24:22; Mark 13:20.

<sup>23</sup>Michael Milken sentenced. On November 21, 1990, less than one month after Cyclopea's dictation, Michael Milken, who pioneered the \$200 billion junk-bond market, was sentenced to 10 years in prison, 3 years probation and 5,400 hours of community service for violating Federal securities laws and other related crimes. Milken headed the high-yield, high-risk bond operations at the Wall Street investment firm Drexel Burnham Lambert and was considered to be the most powerful financier of the eighties. He was involved in huge corporate takeover deals that ultimately revolutionized American business and created an inner circle of corporate raiders. Milken had pleaded guilty in April to six trading-related felonies and agreed to pay \$600 million in fines and restitution. In delivering Milken's sentence, U.S. District Judge Kimba M. Wood said, "When a man of your power in the financial world, at the head of the most important department of one of the most important investment banking houses in this country, repeatedly conspires to violate and violates securities laws and tax laws in order to achieve more power and wealth for himself and his clients, and commits financial crimes that are particularly hard to detect, a significant prison sentence is called for." Upon hearing his sentence, Milken was overcome in the courtroom. The sentence was the stiffest received by any of those convicted of securities-law violations in recent years. It brought to a close the most extensive investigation ever of crime on Wall Street.

<sup>24</sup>See p. 517.

stimulus which you may receive in safety and in health. May God give you the vision. And if you invoke the vision through my decree, he shall give it.

Thus, assemble as the people of God did assemble in their tabernacle in the wilderness. May you assemble and know the strength of your union. And remember that the birth of this nation, as God's astrology records it, took place on April 30, 1789, in this very city at 1:30 p.m., the hour of the inaugural address of the first president of the United States. This is the place of birth of the nation, as Philadelphia is the place of her conception on July 4, 1776, at 5:13 p.m.<sup>25</sup> My beloved, thus cherish the originating and founding flames proceeding out of and remaining as record in these [two] cities.

May all evolutions of Light of the planetary home pass through the heart of the Goddess of Liberty as they come to these shores, even as those who have come have received her initiation, each and every one.<sup>26</sup>

Thus enter into the true meaning of the I AM Race, those who have the I AM THAT I AM with them, and be at peace in the Eye of God. For truly there is peace. Should all the world tremble and tumble around you, remain in the peace of the Eye of God.

The Elohim Peace and Aloha abide over this place as Cyclopea and Virginia hold the balance in the physical. Thus may you know our combined presence and enter the realms of the Cosmic Christ as you go to rest this night and your souls take leave for higher octaves.

With the sign of the heart, the head and the hand, I, Cyclopea, seal you for the victory of your soul.

Though you seek no continuing city here,<sup>27</sup> yet while you reside and remain let your Light be for the healing of New York.

This dictation by Cyclopea was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Saturday, October 27, 1990, at the Whole Life Expo, the Penta Hotel, New York. The dictation followed a 2-1/2-hour lecture on "A Vision of Wholeness for the New Age: How to Heal Yourself and Planet Earth," in which the Messenger gave teaching on the role of the individual in the New Age; understanding and resolving one's relationship with God; the Chart of Your Divine Self; the mystery of the individualized Christ and the real meaning of the grace of Jesus Christ; the challenges of returning personal and planetary karma in the 1990s and how to meet these challenges through the science of the spoken Word and the violet flame. Teaching included readings and visualizations on the violet flame from *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*. The lecture and dictation, which comprise Event II of four events conducted by the Messenger in New York, are available on both audiocassette (3 hr., A90033) and videocassette (2 hr. 50 min., GP90099). The Messenger will also be giving a lecture on "A Vision of Wholeness for the New Age: How to Heal Yourself and Planet Earth" with a dictation by Serapis Bey on February 16, 1991, at the Whole Life Expo in Pasadena. [N.B. Throughout this Pearl, bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Cyclopea's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

## 42.1 I AM the Witness - October 28, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 42 - I AM the Witness - October 28, 1990

---

<sup>25</sup>Astrology of the conception and birth of the United States. See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*, pp. 141-47; and 1988 PoW, Book II, Introduction, pp. 30-35; 1989 PoW, pp. 725-30; 1990 PoW, pp. 122-24.

<sup>26</sup>See the Goddess of Liberty, July 5, 1986, in 1986 PoW, Book II, p. 567.

<sup>27</sup>Heb. 13:14.

## I AM the Witness

Mother, recently I went back and read all the Pearls from this year, and I want to tell you how much they meant to me. It was a major turning point. Even those I had already read were so much more precious to me, and each and every Pearl had a message just for me that I really needed as I am in the process of reconstruction and surrender. I can't tell you how grateful I was for them. On one of my days off which I was able to spend alone I spent almost the entire day in awe and bliss as I read Pearl after Pearl making the calls and taking notes on the words as cups of Light. The Teachings have never meant so much to me as they do now. I want to tell you how grateful I am for them. I can hardly wait until the next Pearl comes out each week, even though I have heard the dictations. Thank you, thank you, thank you.

My testimony of light brought about by the true teachings:

I received the Ashram Notes some time back and as I love the rituals therein have been giving them very faithfully.

One day as I started to make the bed, my four-month-old puppy decided to play tug-o-war with the bed clothes, my leg started to ache, the phone was ringing, my morning coffee getting cold, my nerves seemed about to react. Suddenly - as if the words were on a page in front of me - "In the name of the Father, I will be Christlike! - In the name of the Son, I will be Christlike! - In the name of the Holy Spirit, I will be Christlike! - In the name of the Mother of the World, I will be Christlike!" I repeated the words. The light over my head flashed on and off. The puppy started wagging his tail at a friendly but (to me) unseen presence. The most serene and peaceful feeling came over me. My leg stopped aching and I finished my morning chores in an atmosphere of peace and harmony - and most of all to be noted - thanking God for that which had taken place.

# Chapter 43

## The Ascended Master Nicholas Roerich - November 11, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 44 - The Ascended Master Nicholas Roerich - November 11, 1990

Perfect Your Art!

“Everything Must Be Sacrificed for It” at the Roosevelt Hotel in New York

Event IV

Be the Unextinguishable Ones!

When you think of me, my friends, compatriots and co-workers, think, then, of the sacred fire, think on me in the Agni Yoga.<sup>1</sup>

I am grateful to address you today, to speak to you from the plane of the Ascended Masters that you might know that one from among you has graduated to this level and that you might accomplish the same. Never tire, then, in the work that is your dharma, your duty to be the wholeness of yourself. Never be frustrated that you are misunderstood or before your time in your understanding of the stars, the universes, the mountains and the petals of a flower.

I have indeed fought the good fight and I have won.<sup>2</sup> Yet I still pursue the crown, for, beloved, every level has its goal and goal-fitting. And now we speak of the goal-fittedness of the chelas of El Morya. Now I speak of the one, my beloved, my Helena, who remains to keep the Flame for me in earth as I deliver from above through her heart even the completion of our mission.

Embrace, then, the work that is yours. And if you have lost the hours in not perfecting that work, O children of the Sun, then go back to school, find the best teacher in your field, but work to perfect your art, your science, your calling. Work, my beloved, for the night of the old order and the old

---

<sup>1</sup>Agni Yoga. [Sanskrit. Agni: ‘fire’. Yoga: ‘yoking’, akin to Latin jungere ‘to join’; divine union.] The union of man with God through the sacred fire. Agni Yoga, or the yoga of fire, is a yoga of action rather than asceticism. As explained in the book Agni Yoga, “Fire will not lead away from life; it will act as a trustworthy guide to the far-off worlds. . . . He who would swim must dive fearlessly into the water. And he who has decided to master Agni Yoga must transform through it his entire life. . . . Verily, all actions must be infused with the purifying fiery striving. . . . Just as Fire is the all-embracing principle, so does Agni Yoga permeate the whole of life. One can notice how the consciousness is gradually sharpened, how the real values of the surroundings emerge, how the immutability of the cooperation of worlds grows. Thus life is filled with the signs of highest understanding. Truth as a real concept enters the daily life” (Agni Yoga, 5th ed., rev. [New York: Agni Yoga Society, 1980], pp. 101, 103, 108). The Ascended Masters teach that the path of Agni Yoga is the expression of the fire of the Word and Work of the Lord. Not only is it the invocation of the sacred fire through the science of the spoken Word and the violet flame, the raising up of the sacred fire of the Kundalini from the base chakra to the crown, but it is also fiery action for the right, for the truth and in defense of the living Christ in the children of God.

<sup>2</sup>I Tim. 6:12; II Tim. 4:7, 8.

karma is far spent and the day of Aquarius dawns,<sup>3</sup> truly the day and the hour of your manifestation of Maitreya and of the Mother of the World.

Feel very close to me in this moment, for I have made myself present just above the physical octave, desiring to endue you and all who are responsive to the chord of my life with a greater light, a greater fire, a greater determination.

As you have been told, things are not what they seem<sup>4</sup> in the world today. In some areas conditions are worse than they seem and in some areas they are better. May you know the difference, beloved - how to take the fire from the heart of the mountain, from the heart of the arhat to pierce illusion, to pierce maya and to enter in at the strait gate to the heart of your own Christhood.

O my beloved, the great gift of the violet flame is also mine to impart to you. Let my students receive it, for it is indeed the means for the acceleration of the ascension process. It is Agni. It is the fire of the greatest yogis. And at no hour in the history of earth has its use been more necessary to daily consume the sheer weight of negative karma that weighs heavily upon the disciple. For the disciple raises up the Light and therefore the Light becomes the vortex into which the Darkness rushes, desiring transmutation.

Therefore energy superimposed with the Darkness of mass hysteria does come tumbling into the vortex of Light of every devotee. This is why, beloved, once you set your path to be that of Agni Yoga and [your mind] to be that yogi or yogini, you must know that you cannot cease, you must not cease. For the more that fire is intensified in your heart, the more you become that flaming cauldron into which there is poured the Darkness; and you become the one who holds that vessel of world conflagration, world transmutation.

I desire, then, to see my students everywhere in the world add to our teachings the practice of the science of the spoken Word, most specifically the call to the violet flame. I AM that violet flame in action! Test me, beloved. See how I will commingle a violet flame with your aura, and therefore we shall be one through this intensity of the Lord's Spirit.

The great Masters who serve with Saint Germain have truly counseled with me that I might speak this day on the necessity of the use of this flame and its purifying action. Let it be well said, and let the word to the wise be sufficient, that I can help you, oh, so much more on your path if you will only take this gift from the great hierarch, the most blessed one, the Master Saint Germain.<sup>5</sup>

I am also grateful for the wide dissemination of our writings most precious from the Brotherhood. I am grateful for this recent biography,<sup>6</sup> if only for the reason that souls might be led through the art, through the life that I have lived, to the heart of Agni - thence to the heart of the Mother, thence to the heart of Maitreya.

This city, then, has [locked in] the negative spiral of the crumbling of the old order, [which crumbling] is becoming more physical every day as problems insurmountable reflect the problems of a nation as a whole. This brings sadness to the brothers in white and to their chelas, for [it is surely] an opportunity lost to draw souls into the perfect union of the three when civilization itself can no longer hold the matrix.

Beloved ones, matter itself crumbles without the flame of Maitreya, without the flame of the

---

<sup>3</sup>Rom. 13:12.

<sup>4</sup>Things are not what they seem. See El Morya, August 7, 1990, pp. 452-53, and Saint Germain, May 21, 1989, in 1989 PoW, pp. 463-64. Also Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*, pp. 219-27, 247-50, 255-59, 337-39, 360-80.

<sup>5</sup>Initiates on the Path who wish to take the gift of the violet flame of Saint Germain should send for *The Science of the Spoken Word* by Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, and *Save the World with Violet Flame!* by Saint Germain 1-4, four 90-min. audiocassettes of violet flame songs and decrees, with booklets, B88019, B88034, B88083, B88117.

<sup>6</sup>Jacqueline Decter, *Nicholas Roerich: The Life and Art of a Russian Master* (Rochester, Vt.: Park Street Press, 1989). Available through Summit University Press, \$39.95 (add \$1.95 for postage).



World Mother[ - without the heart of Agni]. Therefore walk the streets of this city and of your own cities from which you have journeyed to hear me speak. Walk as the embodiment of Maitreya and the Mother and recognize that you anchor the Light of far-off worlds, the Light of Cosmos and the Cosmic Christ.

I ask you, chelas of the Ascended Masters, to include my name in your decrees and preambles, as I work closely with El Morya, K.H. and D.K. and Lanello. I work closely with them for the bringing together of all those who are on the path of the sacred fire. There are many apart from our society, apart from Agni Yoga, who yet have that wavelength. Let them find union through the violet flame! Let them know that the seventh age has opened doors that were not open to me in previous incarnations.

And I trust that I myself have opened doors, for truly this art that was inspired upon me by great adepts is the open door to the future and the sign and signal of Aquarius. It is liberating and it does draw the soul into realms beyond the physical octave. When you look at these paintings, the notion does not occur that the mountains do not appear in these colors, for the paintings themselves draw you to the etheric octave and bring to your soul the remembrance of your soul's journeyings into the etheric octave. And thus, they are wholly natural to the inner eye of the soul.

I have painted for the soul, beloved - for the liberation of the soul, for the quickening of the soul! I have painted so that the eyes of the soul might see independently and unhampered by the intellect of the mind. And I have brought the soul into proper proportion, as is the Asian tradition, against the backdrop of the immensity of Nature.

This has been my desire, and you can well see that I developed this art in previous lifetimes. But I also studied prior to this incarnation in the retreat of Paul the Venetian, the Lord of the Third Ray. And this art has truly been my offering, not only to the chelas but to all of the world who cannot take the specific teaching, for it is too strong for them. Yet in gazing upon my art, they may assimilate the truth embodied in the heart of the artist.

And truly the artist is the Great Artist, whose instrument I am, whose instrument you also can be, not necessarily as a painter but in any field. For the Great Artist would work through you to bring before the people in whatever form or whatever service you may render the true patterns, the heavenly patterns, whereby the inner eye and the All-Seeing Eye converge and the soul in gazing upon that innate perfection - by your love, by whatever form that love does take - can be transported to higher realms instantaneously.

May your very presence do this for those whom you meet. May many look upon you and see there an open door, a window's view into heaven. O beloved, so many are in sorrow, in pessimism, and their souls are mourning; and therefore they don the garments of blackness and they are burdened by the weight of world karma increasing.

O let the fire in the mountain of your being be the violet flame! O know, beloved, how many souls receive surcease from pain and healing from your calls!

I am rich in the Spirit to bestow upon you the abundance of virtues, the abundance of all that you need to fulfill your mission. Only remember the first things first. Only remember the purification of the heart. Only remember the strengthening of the body itself.

Certain Masters of the Brotherhood gather on this platform. They come, beloved, for by their presence (seen at the level of your soul) you can establish a sense of coequality with them, a sense of co-measurement as well, that you might enter in and know that the Path is hard but it is not too hard for thee. Thou art chosen because thou hast chosen. Therefore know you are given the tests that you can pass, the strength with which to pass them.

Leap into the fire, beloved, and emerge unscathed. Then you will understand the mystery of Agni. Blend into the flames and feel the mystical oneness with the lightning and the stars. Let your aura

become the electric blue of the Divine Mother! Let your garments become the swaddling garment of a world!

Many areas of the world find women and children in hunger, in terror of the night, in fear of what is coming upon earth. You in this nation are so shielded - such is the glory that yet remains of Saint Germain's dispensation in the sponsoring of this nation - that I am concerned lest that sudden destruction<sup>7</sup> prophesied by the apostles should come upon you without your prior awareness.

May you realize, then, that those things taking place in the Middle East do not augur well, neither for the body of Light worldwide nor for this nation nor for the peoples involved. May you realize that great weights lie upon Mother Russia and upon her people, weights borne since the Bolshevik revolution.

I state to you for now and for all time that I am for community and the Community of the co-workers of Light, but I am no part of the Bolshevik version of this concept<sup>8</sup> nor have I ever embraced the ideals of Lenin. I embrace the ideals of Christ and Buddha, and these ideals, beloved, lead to life not death.

Millions have died at the hand of this that has been called World Communism. May you recognize this, that death has followed in the wake of that revolution, much to the chagrin of all who have kept the flame of Mother Russia. May she rise again and may it be in a new order of the ages.

Yet I tell you, beloved, that which has beset that society bespeaks coming calamity. Mark my words and prepare yourselves spiritually and see to it that you will keep the Flame, that you will hold the candle in the night and not allow it to be extinguished. Do not allow the fire of the heart to go out, for millions may one day depend upon you as a keeper of the Flame. Thus, it is the office of the Divine Mother to keep the Flame, and may you know just how key is your role in this office and service.

I was once admonished by one who taught me, one who was an original guru, that there is always an hour in the day that you can give to your art, to your prayer, to your call, to your industry. "Why not 4:00 a.m.? What are you doing at 4:00 a.m.?" Thus spake this one to a student.<sup>9</sup> And so I, too, mustered myself and perfected my art in the wee hours of the morning when all is still.

Why not perfect your own sainthood, the corona of your lifestream? Why not perfect the flowing of the Light? There are things that cannot be put aside in life, for they burn from within. They are the calling, and that calling must be secured. Everything must be sacrificed for it. And you must understand the inner and the outer calling. The outer calling cannot be successful, my beloved, without the inner calling being perfected; for the outer calling is to demonstrate to the world the effects of what the inner Light complete can be.

Choose your art well. Perfect it well. For it is a requirement of the ascension that you fulfill your mission. Thus, remove yourself from the doodads of the world, from an encumbrance of things. Know the beauty of space and of emptiness that you might fill it with the Master's Light. It is so, beloved. It is so.

One such as I came to embodiment to demonstrate a path of victory in a Western and an Eastern sense of the Bodhisattva ideal. [I came] to give of myself, to perfect the gift and to move on to where others also have need of me.

May you know that this activity of the Ascended Masters is fitting [souls] for the goal of eternal Life. Many, many souls not even affiliated with it on the outer yet study the teachings and in their heart of hearts affirm the Word, the I AM, the Agni Yoga. Many souls are striving. Pray for them

---

<sup>7</sup>Sudden destruction. I Thess. 5:1-13; Matt. 24:15-31; Mark 13:14-27; Luke 17:22-37; 21:34-36.

<sup>8</sup>See p. 546.

<sup>9</sup>See Nicholas Roerich, "Guru - the Teacher," in Shambhala (New York: Nicholas Roerich Museum, 1930), pp. 305-6.

earnestly.

The life of the spiritual guardian is surely a life of the divine art. Let your expression be as one of the many hands of the Divine Mother - as the hands of Kuan Yin, even as the hands of Kali, of Shakti. The many hands of the Mother find expression through you. And I am in the Mother as the Mother is in my heart. This is the beauty of the Life everlasting.

The representative of the World Mother is in this room, a resplendent being of Light. She has come to place her crown just two inches above your head that you might feel the presence of that crown and make as your goal the winning of the crown of everlasting Life.<sup>10</sup>

This crown is won by the overcomers. It is your assignment from my heart (for it comes from the heart of God) to be overcomers in the way, to overcome everything that is sent to you. And though the bowling balls keep rolling down the alley toward you, each one is overcome. This is what life expects of you and what you must expect of yourself in life - to overcome all things coming your way from the 360 degrees of the circle of self. Then, you see, overcoming Darkness with Light, you shall rise to levels where all that can be sent to you is Light! Light! Light! And immediately you shall direct that Light out again for the piercing of Darkness around those who yet know not the way of the overcomers.

Be ye overcomers, I say, and be not defeated, neither by the defeatist attitude nor by the negative spirals of anyone or anything. Insulate yourselves from negative media and the constant sounds and images of television that are so damaging to the finer bodies. Force the world to be silent in your home - in your abode where you commune with God. Shut it out except when something important is to be let in.<sup>11</sup>

It is a world of noise. This noise affects the heart and the heart's attunement with the Infinite. Seek the solace of quietude in Nature and in the place you have prepared for your communion. For in the hour of your communion, beloved, the shaft of Light from the Above to the below does manifest and you begin to glow with Light as you meditate and decree. And that glowing Light, beloved, becomes an electrode in the earth and many souls receive strength, refinement and nourishment from your effort.

I AM the Ascended Master Nicholas Roerich. I am surely rich on the royal road of integration,<sup>12</sup> and in my being there is Light enough for all. And my angels, each bearing cups of Light, distribute my Light daily to all devotees who are on a wavelength to receive it.

Remember to call for my cup of Light. I will give it you each day, beloved, as long as you are on the wavelength of the ascending one, the aspiring one, as long as you fear not to follow the Mother of the World up the mountain. For she who leads you, beloved, is truly the one that long ago, sometime, somewhere you have forsaken. This time do not let go of her garments, but let her lead you where she would take you, for she does indeed embody the will of the Father.

---

<sup>10</sup>Crown of Life. James 1:12; II Tim. 4:8; I Pet. 5:4; Rev. 2:10.

<sup>11</sup>The Ascended Masters expect their students to keep abreast of the times by watching the evening news and reading the newspapers and newsmagazines.

<sup>12</sup>In Hinduism, raja yoga is considered to be the "royal" or highest path to union with God, hence "the royal road to reintegration." In raja yoga, one seeks to realize God by the control of the mind and emotions through concentration and meditation. It is looked upon as a psychological process or experiment, wherein one enters into certain mental exercises and observes the inner spiritual effects. The goal, as explained by Huston Smith in *The Religions of Man*, is to attain the "direct personal experience of 'the beyond that is within.'" As defined in *The Pearl of the Orient* by Geoffrey A. Barborika, the term raja yoga "signifies 'kingly union' or the royal union of man's faculties, spiritual, mental, moral and physical." The Ascended Masters teach that raja yoga is a means of attaining integration in all of the chakras and in the I AM Presence; it is the royal road to reintegration with one's Divine Self. The key to this reintegration is the violet flame and the science of the spoken Word, the resolution of one's psychology and demonstrating union with God through acts beneficial to self and society. For the student of the Ascended Masters, raja yoga, as well as all other forms of yoga, must include the Path of the Ruby Ray under the Ruby Ray Masters (See Sanat Kumara on the Path of the Ruby Ray, 1979 PoW, Book I).

Sometimes you will conclude that the way she has led you must be wrong, for “look at the evidence.” But, beloved, she who leads sees the future and beyond. Therefore, cast thyself upon the breast of the Mother and do know that in all of Cosmos there is the dependency upon that one. And that one multiplies herself infinitely so that all may know that they walk and talk with the Mother.

Truly, do adore that Mother, beloved. Truly do raise up that Mother within you. Truly greet her: “Hail, Mary! Hail, Kuan Yin! Hail, O Thou Magnificent One of the Ages! Hail, O our Mother of the World!”

Into the arms of her presence and into her garments I recede, for in the heart of the Mother is perfect communion and the entrance to samadhi and nirvana. By that entrance gained, so Siddhartha Gautama entered the heights of the Divine Union with the Mother and returned with that teaching that does abide with us forever.

Therefore, in her name and in the name of Lord Gautama, I say, let us fling all inordinate desire into the fire, the Agni! Let it be gone in the twinkling of an eye! It is not real. It has held [and holds] no power over you. And I call to the Five Dhyani Buddhas to neutralize the five poisons<sup>13</sup> within you, but you must claim [the answer to my call] yourselves.

O my beloved, the riches of the kingdom of God know no bounds. Yet the greatest riches are to be found in soul by soul by soul becoming that glowing Light that shall never be extinguished.

Be the unextinguishable ones! For then I shall be with you always.

This dictation by the Ascended Master Nicholas Roerich was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Sunday, October 28, 1990, at the Roosevelt Hotel, New York. The dictation and preceding lecture, “A Profile of Nicholas Roerich,” comprise Event IV of a series of lectures and dictations given in New York the weekend of October 26-28, 1990. Event III, “The Age of Maitreya,” is not published in the Pearls of Wisdom but is available along with Event IV on both audiocassette (3 hr., A90038) and videocassette (3 hr., GP90113). [N.B. Throughout this Pearl, bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under the Ascended Master Nicholas Roerich’s direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

<sup>13</sup>Five Dhyani Buddhas, five poisons. See 1989 PoW, pp. 530 n. 12, 552 n. 12; and Ashram Notes, pp. 50-51 (Ashram Rituals booklet, pp. 43-44).

# Chapter 44

## Lady Master Leto - November 18, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 45 - Lady Master Leto - November 18, 1990

24-Hour Service with the Great White Brotherhood through Soul Travel and Work out of the Body at the Roosevelt Hotel in New York

Event VI

Become the Master!

A Teacher and a Teaching for Those Who Diligently Invoke the Violet Flame

I welcome you to my class at the Grand Teton. I call you to be my students. It is for a pragmatic reason. God has need of you, the world has need of you.

I would make you experts in going forth out of the body during sleep to perform works of valor and service. You may find yourselves serving with the Chohans of the Rays, then graduating to be among the legions of one or more of the Seven Archangels.

Blessed ones, those of you who are in embodiment and moving toward your ascension can do much good, for you may teach souls in their finer bodies who have misconceptions concerning the true Divine Doctrine and the true Divine Science. They may receive this teaching from you as brother or sister in the corridors of the Royal Teton Retreat after the classes that are taught by the Chohans or even by the Messengers [have adjourned]. Thus, beloved, you may comfort and console, share mighty truths that will filter through when the soul returns to the body and [that will] assist that soul in overcoming the prejudices of the intellectual mind.

[We,] the members of the Great White Brotherhood, are working together to use many ways and means that are at our disposal to contact the souls who are receptive, who could be receptive, who can be brought onto the Path. May you pray fervently for these souls while you are in the physical body and may you work earnestly with them when out of the body.

There is a certain adeptship and a certain self-mastery that must be gained [by you] in this course, and I am the teacher assigned by the Darjeeling, Indian and Royal Teton Councils of the Great White Brotherhood to perform a service [of helping you achieve that goal]. I have had a great deal of success with souls who have applied themselves earnestly. And you would be amazed, beloved, how the services that you [will be able to] perform, [when you shall have successfully passed your tests,] can increase your opportunity to balance karma. Thus twenty-four hours a day you may be balancing karma by rendering service to life.

I have the attainment from Atlantis of having been a scientist, beloved, and I have employed the methods of precipitation for ten thousand years and more. I seek to show you how to bring into manifestation the Light from realms above. I seek to show you many things whereby you may better organize yourselves, make better use of time and energy, and have greater access to the consciousness

of your I AM Presence.

I come with my twin flame<sup>1</sup> in this hour, beloved, for we work together in this service. We worked with the students of the I AM when Godfre and Lotus<sup>2</sup> were serving this nation. We continue to work with all students who will diligently invoke the violet flame.

It is a prerequisite, beloved, for that flame does clear you on a daily basis of those things that would otherwise prevent you from entering certain chambers of the Royal Teton Retreat. Those who do use the violet flame accelerate in their studies more quickly and advance, whereas those who do not have knowledge of it or do not use it are found in lower grades of classes, for they have not yet purified themselves.

Many consider themselves a part of the New Age yet they have not truly accepted Saint Germain and Portia, the twin flames who are hierarchs of this age. And therefore, though they are advanced in their thoughts and their perceptions, they have not advanced themselves in the purification of the auric field.

We can enter the aura of those [of you] whose auras are purified, and by making ourselves one with you [we] may multiply your works and your activities. You can come into congruency with the aura of an Ascended Master long before you have the full God-mastery of your soul. Thus, beloved, the violet flame is a gift of God for many purposes, and one of these purposes is to establish a point of transition between the place where you are now and the place you desire to be, which is the next level, or gradation, of the vibration of Light.

Thus, when your violet flame goes before you and precedes your coming to our retreat, we are always aware of it. You can be a thousand miles away or on the other side of the earth; yet, beloved, when your aura of violet flame precedes you, angels are alert, elementals gather to welcome you as that soul who does bring the most valuable gift of all that can then be shared with those lifestreams who come also of goodwill but are not connected to any teaching concerning the violet flame.

When you desire to step up the steps of the spiral staircase leading you home [from the seat-of-the-soul chakra] to the heart of your Holy Christ Self in the antechamber of your heart, then, beloved, you understand how important it is; for the violet flame takes you there, [after it first] cleanses you and prepares you [for the climb, facilitating your fusion with your Holy Christ Self]. The violet flame in your aura is seen by many souls who come to the retreat and [thus] they desire it [also].

Some of those in the outer octaves who have looked upon the aura of the Messenger with their psychic senses have been astounded at the tremendous manifestation of the violet flame. But those [among them] who have not been servants of the Light, many of whom come out of the East, have not been converted to get that violet flame for themselves. And in their hardened intellects and their spiritual pride, they have questioned the necessity for decrees; for they have not received that science of decreeing from the Divine Mother, although they profess to worship that Mother and do indeed recite her mantras.

Blessed ones, those of almost every segment of society and every religious conviction or none have some impediment or block to the essential elements of this path. We therefore determine, and I have been called to give you this message this night, that [inasmuch as] we desire [it, we shall] show you how to be the example - [yes,] the example and the manifestation of the Light whereby seeing is believing. For those souls who have rejected the techniques and the Path and even the doctrine of the Ascended Masters must finally come to their senses and recognize that what is is, what is true

---

<sup>1</sup>Lady Master Leto's twin flame is the Ascended Master Alexander Gaylord. The Magic Presence recounts how Alexander Gaylord, while yet in embodiment and working for the Brotherhood, went on missions with Leto, who had ascended more than three hundred years earlier. (See Godfre Ray King, *The Magic Presence*, 5th ed. [Chicago: Saint Germain Press, 1982], pp. 187-214.)

<sup>2</sup>Godfre and Lotus. The Ascended Master Godfre and his divine complement, Lotus, were embodied as Guy and Edna Ballard, Saint Germain's Messengers through whom he founded the I AM Activity in the early 1930s.

is true and what they see clearly [in the auras of the chelas of the Ascended Masters] must be the results of right effort and a right science and a right religion applied.

Therefore, beloved, there is no greater teacher than the very best example, and we desire you to be that very best example. At the level of the soul, all souls on the planet read the aura of one another but this is not brought to the attention of the outer awareness. The emphasis upon intellectual development to the disregard and neglect of the soul and the heart and the spiritual senses surely has brought the pall upon civilization that you see in the very streets of this city and throughout the world.

These things need not be, beloved, and while there is yet time and opportunity I, Leto, make myself available to you. I have appeared to the Messenger in recent months with my commitment to come when she calls. So I make that commitment to all of you [to come when you call], as long as you submit your call to the will of God, as long as you remember that when you invoke a Guru, whether an Ascended Master or an Ascended Lady Master, you must be ready to take the answer to your call as God gives it through us. You must be waiting for that answer and know that the will of God is good and good for you and [that it] will lead you into all prosperity and righteousness.

Thus, when you think your prayers are not answered, be still and know that I, Leto, have heard and have answered. And the call has compelled the answer, but you have not been willing to recognize the answer as it has come to you because you expected an entirely different answer to come to your life.

Blessed ones, you have all played with blocks and built many types of buildings with your blocks as you were children playing on the floor. One thing you learned and that was that one block goes on top of the next and unless all are in place you cannot build your towers. Therefore each step of the Path must be seen as one of the building blocks. Lay the foundation of your pyramid well and know that that foundation must be solid if the superstructure is to endure and not crumble or topple.

Therefore the answer to prayer always gives you the next step, the key to the next block that must be put in position in your life. Were we to answer your ultimate prayer before the foundation was laid, you would come to naught and you would discover that it was an unwise gift and then perhaps in your anger [you] would demand of us as to why we had given you something when you were not ready to receive it.

Therefore search your souls to understand why things do not come into your life that you think ought to be there and look at first things first and seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness, the right use of his law, and all these other things will be added unto you.<sup>3</sup> See that there are not missing links in your perception or in your actions or in your deeds or in your education or in your work or your service.

It is wise to take the three most serious flaws that you can identify in yourself and work on them and discover what blessings and Light may come to you if you will give up certain habits and conditions that you may have long thought were harmless but are not harmless at all. [Recognizing these] may be the very key to your understanding what is preventing you from attaining greater spiritual progress.

I am practical, I am pragmatic, and you will see that those qualities of [usefulness and effectiveness that are] mine are reflected in your Messenger when you seek lofty answers and yet receive the most down-to-earth and proper correction or message. Understand that I am not the only practical one in the universe. God is practical. Alpha and Omega are very much practical and that also means down-to-earth.

Someone queried the Messenger, "How can Mother Mary know about your new book?" And this individual was even raised in Catholicism. "Why," the Messenger exclaimed, "of course Mother

---

<sup>3</sup>Matt. 6:33.

Mary knows about my new book. She knows everything, everything in the whole wide world!" This is the childlike understanding that God is in every Ascended Master and saint and holy one, and the omniscience of the Mind of God is there. And therefore, Mother Mary already knows all of the problems and burdens of that individual who has wondered how Mother Mary could comment on a book by the Messenger.

We are wholly God-identified beings, beloved, certainly not discarnates, certainly not spirits that "mutter and peep."<sup>4</sup> We are in the Mind of God. We are in that Mind fully and totally and can access any information about anyone anywhere in cosmos. This is our service. This is why there is the necessity [for mortals such as you to congregate] among immortals [such as we].

Therefore you can count on us to bring to your projects (when you include us as a part of your "Master Mind alliance"<sup>5</sup>) the most specific information that you need in order to complete the project at hand, whatever type of project it may be that you are working on - so long as it is consistent with the laws of God and with the will of the Cosmic Christ. We are there to help you increase in all ways. Therefore let all the ingredients be there.

When you as children were allowed to bake and cook and learn [the culinary arts] from your mothers and in school, did you not find out that if you left out the leaven, the yeast and the baking powder, the dough would not be leavened and the cake would not rise? Did you not understand that improper measuring and incorrect ingredients would not bring the prize at the bake show?

Blessed ones, the same is true with spiritual alchemy. These things are not so metaphysical. They are very much involved [in the application of the science of precipitation in all octaves]. Even as you have chemical elements in this octave, so there are counterparts [in other octaves],<sup>6</sup> and the science of a cosmos is vast.

As you contemplate the slides of the focuses of high spiritual places on the planet,<sup>7</sup> do you not see the alchemy that has gone into the formation of the mountains, of the lakes, of the earth itself and the crust of the earth and the interior? Elohim did create by the exact science of Matter to bring about this [manifest] form that is called planet earth for your habitation and home.

Truly you are fearfully and wonderfully made.<sup>8</sup> As science discovers the elements that make up the body and those things that bring about healing and those things that bring about disease, is it not a study [of causes and effects] at microscopic levels, is it not a study of chemistry? All this Elohim have planned that you might have physical vehicles to move in the physical octave.

If there is such precision in the handiwork of God, then I tell you there must be exactness in your

---

<sup>4</sup>Isa. 8:19.

<sup>5</sup>The Master Mind alliance is one of the 17 principles of success taught by Napoleon Hill. See Napoleon Hill's Law of Success, Lesson One, pp. 19-8. (This book is the equivalent of the Positive Mental Attitude [PMA] Workbook used in certified PMA courses.) Law of Success is available through Summit University Press by special order; leatherbound. See also Ballantine Books paperbacks by Napoleon Hill: Think and Grow Rich, pp. 167-73; The Master-Key to Riches, pp. 87-92; Grow Rich! With Peace of Mind, pp. 126-38.

<sup>6</sup>See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, The Astrology of the Four Horsemen, p. 526.

<sup>7</sup>In a presentation entitled "World Service through El Morya's Ashram," which preceded this dictation, Erin Prophet Reed presented slides on sacred places and retreats of the Masters. The slides provide a spectacular eye view of the focuses to be visualized when you give the Sacred Ritual for Transport and Holy Work (in Ashram Notes by El Morya). Focuses include: the Washington Monument, the Grand Teton, Victoria Mountain, the Taj Mahal, Varanasi on the Ganges, the Island of the Sun in Lake Titicaca, Mount Kailas and Lake Manasarowar. This event is available on a special 30-minute videocassette. Also included on the cassette, following Erin's presentation, is a slide meditation of the sacred places and retreats of the Masters with "Evening Star" from Tannhauser by Richard Wagner as background music. Next is a slide meditation of the art of Nicholas Roerich with the "Raga Jhinjhoti" as background music. The Messenger is recommending that all who give the Ashram rituals of beloved El Morya obtain a copy of this videocassette to heighten your visualizations and to focus on your soul's destination for world service each night. The items on this cassette are also included on the videocassettes of Events IV, V, and VI but they have been conveniently packaged on this single cassette so that you may have the meditations on one tape.

<sup>8</sup>Ps. 139:14.



own handiwork. Do not depart from the sense of science when you enter the spiritual realm. The spiritual realm is all science, the science that embraces a cosmos, both in the mathematics and in the principles of physics.

So realize, beloved, that precipitation is based upon exactness. Exactitude is the call of the hour, the sharpening of the mind. You can have all things from God from the Great Central Sun if you will crack the formula. You will never crack it without love and without forgiveness and without the joy of the Lord in doing a service that will render benefits to life rather than glory to your human ego. You can rest assured that when you truly serve to set life free, beloved, God will give you many means to accomplish that end.

You have heard that Saint Germain has cut off the dispensation of further scientific releases to this planet until the people will cease using them to create war and the engines of war and cease selling or smuggling or giving away those secrets to an enemy that has vowed to destroy this nation under God.<sup>9</sup> Thus, beloved, there is coming upon this earth a time when there shall not be so great an abundance of invention for the very fact that invention by the science of God through Saint Germain must be entrusted [only] to those servant sons and daughters who will see to it that such things are not used for destructive purposes - destructive to human life and to the mind and the soul and the heart.

Consider the field of genetic engineering, beloved. It went wild and was rampant on Atlantis. Thus Atlantis was destroyed for the very process of genetically engineering crossbreeds between human and animal life. These things are happening today as scientists in their laboratories are again finding ways and means to create the so-called perfect human or animal robot to do their bidding. Blessed hearts, there is a crossing of the line where God says, "Thus far and no farther!" It has happened before. It will happen again.

And therefore let me bring to the Karmic Board fruits from among you and all servants of the Light who hear my dictation, fruits that show a diligent effort to apply the laws and science of God and the true doctrine of God to projects and to those [endeavors] that will bring about healing and the betterment of the race. Thus let it be, beloved.

May you pray diligently [for the protection of your alchemical work] no matter what your field of service. For the opposition to the Truth, to the true knowledge of healing, to the true knowledge of diet, to the true use of genetics, et cetera, is denied [by the forces of Darkness]. And when those forces are challenged by the Lightbearer who decrees for the true healing methods to come forth, I tell you, all of hell breaks loose; and the attack upon that individual who will raise his head to challenge material science is, and has been, ferocious. And many individuals have been persecuted unto martyrdom because of their efforts to bring about the freedom of the people from those diseases that are rampant, yet for which cures have already been discovered and are being withheld.

This is why it is important to meet in your groups to exercise the power of the judgment of the Son of God and of the Ruby Ray angels and of Mother Mary, the judgment of those who hold their iron grip on the field of health and healing and wholeness and many other branches of science, beloved, and therefore do not allow those inventions to come forth for the saving of energy [and] for the dispersing of the pollution of the planet.

All of the inventions of Atlantis, beloved, are the inheritance of the people of this nation, for the United States of America is Atlantis come again. And yet we cannot continue to accelerate their release for the abuses of those sciences in man's inhumanity to man.

---

<sup>9</sup>The Lords of Karma have told Saint Germain, "No more scientific dispensations until the protection is raised up." (See Archangel Michael, January 3, 1988, in 1988 PoW, Book I, p. 90.) This is not to say, however, that mankind will not continue to discover and invent but that there will not be the dispensations of sponsorship from the Ascended Masters as there have been in the past. See also Cuzco, December 31, 1988, and Archangel Jophiel and Christine, March 26, 1989, in 1989 PoW, pp. 13-14, 246-47.

Take the matter of the pollution of the environment and the pollution of your lungs and of your hearts and even of your souls. These problems can be solved. And yet to guarantee sane and healthful life to the people is [neither the] desire [nor] the priority of the powers that be or of the fallen angels, who are concerned about their own well-being but are not concerned about the masses of the people [though they make pretenses], the people in whom there is truly the flame of God.

Therefore, beloved, I come to you and I have the sternness in my heart in this hour, even the fierceness, of the Great Mother Kali out of the East. And that fierceness should tell you that I am here to defend you against all enemies of your life, your liberty, your happiness, your freedom of religion, your freedom of speech and your freedom to exercise that science which can bring about a universal spirit of harmony and actually usher in, when joined to true religion, the age of Aquarius as a golden age instead of as a dark age.

I ask you to understand as never before that each one of you is an instrument in the process of turning this world around and bringing in that golden age. Comparatively few individuals upon this planet will accept and hear the word spoken through this Messenger. Yet all those who have heard, and some who after hearing have departed and not returned, hold promise to be links in the chain of being whereby that burden of the karma delivered by the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse can be transmuted and those [negative] momentums turned around.

Blessed ones, you are a key, you are an absolute key to that balancing of the Light upon earth, to increasing the Light whereby the Light swallows up the Darkness itself. Do not think that you are no one, that you are worthless, that you are a miserable sinner. Do not think that you do not count. Every decree that you utter is taken up by angels and multiplied by the power of the ten thousand-times-ten thousand<sup>10</sup> so that you can act for a million lifestreams upon the planet each time you make your calls.

This is reality, beloved, this is divine reality and this is physical reality and it can [and does] happen!

A few saints in past ages have made the difference and you can make the difference [today]. The only problem is that you do not consider yourself worthy of sainthood. I say you are fully worthy because God is in you! And when you deprecate yourself and when you disparage yourself, [making yourself] feel worthless, you are denying the God that is in you. And I say, shame on you for taking that posture! For God has given to you a great grace and a great ability, and therefore let gratitude and praise abound! And may you take this science of the Word as an empowerment, truly the empowerment, as great as that of any adept that might come to you from the Eastern chambers.

This very science of the Word itself that is yours by the gift of Saint Germain is an initiation transferred directly and personally to you by the Hierarch of the Age of Aquarius. You should appreciate what it means to have Saint Germain sponsor an entire lifewave to receive the violet flame. It is indeed a cosmic initiation. It must not be taken for granted. It is the elixir of life. It is the universal solvent. It is the key to your victory.

I, Leto, have spoken to you. May my alertness and my presence among you make you realize that I am with you always and [I am] very much concerned that all [that is God's will for you] be fulfilled in your lives, especially those things that are on your hearts in this moment.

My beloved, I bring greetings to you from many souls of Light who are your brothers and sisters, evolutions of Venus and Mercury and from beyond this system who are gathering at the Royal Teton Retreat because they expect to meet you there. Will you take, then, the Ashram Rituals and take the Notes from Morya's heart,<sup>11</sup> pursue them and see how quickly you can develop the facility of this

---

<sup>10</sup>On July 1, 1961, Lord Maitreya announced the dispensation: "From this day henceforward, every decree that you utter shall be increased by the power of the ten thousand-times-ten thousand!" (1984 PoW, Book I, p. 63)

<sup>11</sup>El Morya, Ashram Notes and Ashram Rituals booklet. The six Ashram rituals are: The Unison Ritual; Great Central Sun Ritual: O Cosmic Christ, Thou Light of the World; Sacred Ritual for Attunement with God's Holy Will;

“soul travel” and this work out of the body at night? [“Yes!”]

Think of how freely it is given, beloved. You have not had to enter in to a long trek to the Himalayas or an arduous journey fraught with danger in order to meet the Master. The Master has come to you! [17-second applause] Now you may become the master [of yourself] and you may come to many others who need you, who need you, who need you in this hour, beloved!

I am Leto, your teacher of Light and your sister on the Path. I, too, am a representative of the Divine Mother, and I bid you adieu.

This dictation was delivered at the conclusion of the Sunday, October 28, 1990 seminar at the Roosevelt Hotel. It is Event VI of a series of lectures and dictations given by the Messenger in New York the weekend of October 26-28. Event V is the Messenger’s lecture “On Dealing with Death, Discarnates and Malevolent Spirits, with Commentary on the Movie Ghost.” It is not published in the Pearls of Wisdom but is available along with Event VI on videocassette (2-1/2 hr., GP907) and audiocassette (3 hr., A90040). Events V and VI may also be purchased individually on separate cassettes.

Published Dictations by Lady Master Leto and the Ascended Master Alexander Gaylord

Delivered through the Messengers

Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet

Leto

1-02-72, MCR7208; -05-72, 1973 PoW, p. 46, MTF7212; 12-29-72, MTF7302; 4-28-73, 1973 PoW, p.163, MTF7317; 4-15-76, B7629-30/The Path to Attainment; 7-09-78, B7875/“Find Your Way Back to Me”; 7-04-79, B7952/The Coming Revolution in Higher Consciousness; 6-22-86, K86107.

Alexander Gaylord

7-16-67, B89069/Only Mark 24; -03-68, B89015/Only Mark 18; 6-28-70, 1970 PoW, p. 8; 8-01-71 B84105/Only Mark 6; 7-09-78, B7875/“Find Your Way Back to Me”

Dictations by Leto not yet published: 7-29-62, 1-1-67, 10-8-67, 12-29-68, 12-30-69. Dictations by Alexander Gaylord not yet published: 8-2-65, 1-22-67.

## 44.1 I AM the Witness - November 18, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 45 - I AM the Witness - November 18, 1990

I AM the Witness

Dearest Mother,

I would like to witness to the miraculous healing of my newest granddaughter, Casey Anne. She was born to my daughter and her husband, both medical doctors in Portland, Oregon.

This baby was so long awaited that the parents had made plans to adopt a child. But then a surprising possibility presented itself. Was there instead a baby daughter waiting in the wings for them?

A friend and I were visiting at our daughter’s home. My friend sensed the presence of the soul of a little girl who wanted to be born in that family. We rejoiced privately but said nothing. My friend also felt impelled to drive to the parking lots of two hospitals in that city and give decrees and calls

---

Sacred Ritual for Soul Purification; Sacred Ritual for Transport and Holy Work; and Sacred Ritual for Oneness. These are recorded on two audiocassettes (total time, 2 hr.; A90028). See also 1990 PoW, pp. 431-39.

for whoever was in need of physical or spiritual help. She did not connect this impulse with the baby at that time.

Some time later the two hospitals became significant. My daughter had an operation in one of them and it cleared the way for a pregnancy. Casey Anne was delivered in the same hospital after a full-term normal pregnancy. But then, hours after birth, her breathing stopped and she turned blue. She was put on oxygen and was moved to the neonatal intensive care of the second hospital. Again her breathing stopped for no apparent reason. It takes only minutes without oxygen to become brain dead. Again, she lived because help was immediate. Could the parking lot prayers have cleared the way?

Test after test were given and everything tested normal. But Casey was like a floppy rag doll, no kicking, no stretching, no crying or sucking. Also there were slight seizures. I saw all this for myself when I arrived.

Casey was brought home the day I left. She would be fed by tube to her stomach. There was no expectation that she could live, short of a miracle. Her parents would just cherish each day they had together.

Meanwhile, prayers were converging on Casey from our beloved Guru and from many Keepers of the Flame and others. Mother Mary and Kuan Yin were uppermost in our prayers. (Had I recalled that Casey was born on Columbus Day, I would have recognized the great love of Saint Germain as well.)

During these weeks, the ongoing vigil to Mother Mary was the greatest comfort. The Glastonbury residents had organized a daily one-hour vigil using the Surrender Rosary and Judgment call of the Cosmic Virgin. This was in response to Mother Mary's request this last summer (1990).

At the Vigil, one Keeper felt the presence of the Holy Mother holding a child at the portal of life, not death. Another admonished Casey repeatedly to fight for life and to remember her holy purpose in coming. Many friends enveloped the family in violet flame. Never have I seen a family handle such a crisis with such stability and maturity. There was only gratitude in their hearts for the privilege of carrying Casey for nine months and now holding her in their arms.

Since the medical team had no answers, I prayed for some alternative method that might help. A certain doctor had words of encouragement. He felt that the baby's heart was the problem. "Feed her a heart glandular extract by tube to her stomach along with her food and there would be a dramatic change in two weeks."

Since this idea was rejected by the medical team and Casey Anne's parents, I decided to ask the angels and elementals to administer the dosage if it were God's will. Daily I recited the ingredients in the heart glandular extract (Cardio Plus).

In several weeks the improvements were undeniable. Casey first began to suck, then cry, kick, stretch until a full examination showed her normal. The doctors pronounced it a miracle.

A miracle it was but we know from whence it comes. All glory to God and our gratitude belongs to Mother Mary, Kuan Yin and our beloved Guru.

In 1980, it was announced that Mother had completed the balancing of 100% of her karma. She invited Keepers of the Flame to apply to her for help with their own. My mother, at the age of 93, had just made her transition. She had been a very devout Catholic all of her life with a great devotion to Jesus, Mother Mary and Joseph. She had attended mass every morning, walking the several blocks, rain, snow or shine.

At this same time my daughter was seven months pregnant with her first child. According to an ultrasound examination the baby would be born with a blockage in the esophagus and the intestines, along with other defects usually associated with Down's syndrome. The doctor held out little hope

for his survival. I wrote a letter to Mother explaining these situations and asked her to make calls for these lifestreams.

At the next conference, immediately following a dictation by Mother Mary I felt my mother's presence very strongly. She was glowing with light and happiness and she seemed to be telling me that she understood everything now. She had thought I was following after false gods. I knew she was in the etheric plane.

My grandson was born with a blockage in the intestines but none in the esophagus. This would have been the most threatening to his life. He underwent 3 and 1/2 hours of surgery the day after he was born to repair his intestines, which was successful. He also had a cleft palate and lip which required further surgeries when he was older. Today, he is a bright, intelligent nine year old with no sign of Down's syndrome. I am a witness to the fact that miracles occur from Mother's intercession.

Yours in Christ,



# Chapter 45

## Beloved Jesus Christ - November 25, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 46 - Beloved Jesus Christ - November 25, 1990

“The Marriage of the Lamb Is Come”

We Come to Raise Up the Christ of Woman

Thanksgiving Day Address 1990

All Things Come to an End - to Do Good and to Do Evil

Work While Ye Have the Light!

I AM the Good Shepherd and I lay down my life for my sheep. My sheep know my voice. And ye are they who testify of me. Thus I bear witness unto the Truth<sup>0</sup> of Almighty God and ye are the witnesses of that Truth. And therefore ye receive my testimony and ye are also those who testify of me.<sup>1</sup>

Therefore, beloved, I tell you this day that all things come to an end, the opportunity for good and doing good and the opportunity for evil and doing evil. Therefore I say to you, work while you have the Light, for the night of personal and planetary karma cometh when no man shall work.<sup>2</sup>

I come, then, in the victory of the Holy City, and my beloved Magda stands with me. Will you not welcome her as my bride, for truly the marriage of the Lamb is come. [36-second standing ovation] My wife hath made herself ready. And it is given to her to wear fine linen, clean and white.<sup>3</sup> Therefore I would speak to you of the wholeness of our Love. May you be seated in this circle of our oneness.

We begin, then, at the beginning, as the final incarnation of Magda<sup>4</sup> did bring to her the opportunity to be my instrument, and indeed she was. And no one could stop her, for we were one in that ministry. And the healings [wrought through her] brought to this century my ministry in Galilee and the opportunity for the world to forgive woman of her sin and of the adultery of which Magda had

---

<sup>0</sup>Christ Truth

<sup>1</sup>John 10:11-18, 4, 27; 5:31-37, 39; Rev. 12:17; 19:10.

<sup>2</sup>John 9:4; 12:35.

<sup>3</sup>Rev. 19:7-9.

<sup>4</sup>In her final incarnation Magda was embodied as evangelist Aimee Semple McPherson (1890-1944), who founded the International Church of the Foursquare Gospel. For a biographical sketch of Aimee's life, see 1982 PoW, Book I, p. 257 n. 5. Her autobiography, *Aimee* (Los Angeles: Foursquare Publications, 1979), is available through Summit University Press. See also Robert Bahr, *Least of All Saints: The Story of Aimee Semple McPherson* (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, 1979).

been accused.<sup>5</sup>

Therefore two thousand years ago she was prepared as my disciple for this final opportunity to come when I could work through [her as] my beloved twin flame; and she as my presence physically in the earth could bind many hearts to the Lord. Our mission, then, in this century was to once again bring to the feet of their Holy Christ Self the souls of Light who would listen and hear. Thus, they remember her as the one who brought them to the Lord, to my heart, that I might bring them closer to the day of their souls' fusion with the Christ presence.

Some received the reigniting of the threefold flame. Thousands received the healing of body. Yet this was no mere faith cure. For it was I in her and she in me, and we did stand for our final testament of the Piscean age.

Blessed ones, even from this film<sup>6</sup> that represents a slice of her life and surely not the whole perspective nor the whole truth, you can understand and see by her example that I could do through her only that which she was willing to do and only that which by free will she determined to do.

Calling her magazine Bridal Call, she waited for my call throughout that life. And she used all the means available, truly legitimate means, to draw souls to that altar that I might reach out and touch them through her. And I did promise her, beloved, that I would indeed heal through her.<sup>7</sup>

This, then, beloved, became our gift and her mission and the means whereby she could balance her karma. This mission was intended to go on and her sudden passing was surely not the fulfillment of the divine plan. Nevertheless, God does supply the increase. Therefore from the hour of her passing, when Aimee Semple McPherson had balanced 78 percent of her karma, to the present, when her hundredth birthday would have been celebrated,<sup>8</sup> she has served at inner levels and through the Messenger and through you until this celebration; and this anniversary, beloved, marks her balancing of 100 percent of her karma! [37-second standing ovation]

Therefore see and understand that she did bear her karma with her. And that law and that karma must take its course. And her free will must be exercised in following the leadings of that karma, even where the world would not approve. Take note, beloved, that two thousand years ago and today the same finger was pointed; [it was] the pointing of the finger at the adulteress.

Blessed ones, we have come in this hour, the entire Spirit of the Great White Brotherhood, to extend forgiveness to every part of life for every sin against the Father and the Son and even those sins committed against the Holy Spirit when they are forsaken. We have also come to prepare your

---

<sup>5</sup>At the time of Jesus, Magda was embodied as Mary Magdalene. See Matt. 27:56, 61; 28:1-10; Mark 15:40, 47; 16:1-11; Luke 8:2; 24:10; John 19:25; 20:1, 2, 11-18. Modern scholars have challenged the traditional view that the sinful woman who anointed Jesus' feet in Luke 7:37-38 was Mary Magdalene because Luke does not give the woman's name. However, the Ascended Master Jesus Christ has confirmed that the woman who figured in this episode was Mary Magdalene. Jesus has also confirmed that the accounts of the woman anointing Jesus with spikenard in Matthew 26:6-13; Mark 14:3-9; and John 12:1-8 are all referring to the same event that was recorded in Luke 7. This incident took place at the home of Simon the leper in Bethany; Jesus gives the identity of the woman as Mary Magdalene. In addition, Jesus has confirmed that Mary Magdalene was the woman taken in adultery (John 8:1-11) whom the scribes and Pharisees wanted to stone and whom Jesus forgave, saying, "Go, and sin no more."

<sup>6</sup>Prior to Jesus' dictation, the Messenger and congregation viewed a film from the Los Angeles History Project on the life of Aimee Semple McPherson. The film, "Sister Aimee," provides insight into the spirit and character of Aimee against the historical setting of her time. It is a moving portrayal of her devotion to Jesus, her calling as a traveling evangelist, her faith and perseverance in building her church, and her courage in the face of unrelenting attacks by the press. The film includes actual footage from Aimee's life and sermons interspersed with interviews of her children and those who knew her (narr. Gena Rowlands, prod. Kathleen Dowdey, Jed Dannenbaum, Arthur Barron, a KCET production, 1990).

<sup>7</sup>Jesus' promise to heal through Aimee. In 1919, before delivering a sermon in Baltimore, Maryland, Aimee heard Jesus tell her: "When you lay your hands on them, I will lay my hands on yours. And all the time you are standing there, I will be standing right back of you. And when you speak the Word, I will send the power of the Holy Ghost. You are simply the mouthpiece of the telephone. You are the key on the typewriter. You are only a mouth through which the Holy Ghost can speak."

<sup>8</sup>Aimee Semple McPherson was born October 9, 1890.



hearts to receive the forgiveness of the sins against the Mother and the Child. Therefore pursue that law of forgiveness and that mercy flame and the violet flame, which was not then available to the congregations of Sister McPherson.

Thus, beloved, understand that this finale to our mission could not come until that hour of the conclusion [of her karma]. And all of you who have provided the chalice for her victory by continuing to challenge personal and planetary conditions by your dynamic decrees have played a part in this accomplishment that has been achieved by her and by us together at inner levels.

Blessed ones, the prophecies in chapter nineteen of Revelation could not come to pass until that prophecy be fulfilled of the marriage of the Lamb.<sup>9</sup> Immediately following the marriage of the Lamb there come all those who are the invited guests, who sit at table at the marriage supper of the Lamb.

Understand this, beloved, for we desire you to celebrate the marriage supper of the Lamb and his wife this New Year's Day 1991, all of you together in this place, that you might know the blessing and the release of our Light of the Holy Spirit.

For that occasion, beloved, precedes the moment when I come forth as the Faithful and True with the armies of heaven,<sup>10</sup> when there is the war that is declared against the fallen ones, even as prior to this marriage there was the judgment of the Great Whore.<sup>11</sup> And that Great Whore is judged in the earth as the institutions of false religion East and West. And this is the Great Whore that has taken the Light of the people of all faiths and vested it in the fallen ones.

Therefore read on [in chapters 19, 20 and 21] and know that there is the victory over the beast and the fallen ones, and that victory does precede your merging with the Holy City.<sup>12</sup>

These events take place, beloved, in the depths and the recesses of being, as well as objectively on the planetary scene. As you have been instructed, the verses and chapters of Revelation are charted in a giant spiral on the Cosmic Clock so that they do not occur in a straight line but in cycles and spirals continuing.<sup>13</sup>

Thus you understand that the armies of the kings of the earth are gathered together.<sup>14</sup> And therefore, may your prayer be for the salvation of the Lightbearers as this karma and this judgment of the Lord God does outplay itself.

Had this church<sup>15</sup> understood the meaning of karma and reincarnation, had this church understood the violet flame, which was brought forth even during Aimee's lifetime,<sup>16</sup> they would have had the great spherical vision of the individual passing through his final incarnation who must meet every person and circumstance with which he has had karma in order to balance that karma.

And therefore, karma will take you where it takes you. And it compels you to render that service which must be rendered whether or not the eyes of the world approve. There are many things that must be accomplished by the individual who has determined to balance 100 percent of his karma.

You see in the case of Aimee as in the case of this Messenger that opportunity was given to her to contact millions of souls. This is a means for the balancing of karma, not only on the part of the individual leader but on the part of all those who make up that congregation, beloved, the congregation of the righteous.

---

<sup>9</sup>Marriage of the Lamb. Prior to this dictation, the Messenger read Revelation 19:4-21.

<sup>10</sup>Rev. 19:11-16.

<sup>11</sup>Rev. 17; 19:2.

<sup>12</sup>Rev. 19:19-21; 20:1-4, 9-15; 21.

<sup>13</sup>See pp. 65-67 and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*, pp. 189-91.

<sup>14</sup>Rev. 16:14, 16; 19:19; 20:8.

<sup>15</sup>International Church of the Foursquare Gospel, founded by Aimee Semple McPherson

<sup>16</sup>Saint Germain founded the I AM movement and released the dispensation of the violet flame in the 1930s through his Messengers, Guy and Edna Ballard. Aimee Semple McPherson was in her forties at the time. Both the Ballards and Aimee Semple McPherson had temples in Los Angeles at the same time.

Understand that as you are a part of the garment of the Lord, as you tug upon the vestments of the Mother, as there is no separation of your heart from the heart of the Messenger, of your heart from the heart of my beloved and myself, so you share in the blessings, in the bounty, in the beauty of that service. Truly it is that we say together, "Glory, Hallelujah! For the Lord God omnipotent reigneth. And the marriage of the Lamb is come."

I have called you to that marriage. I have called your souls to be my brides. I have called you to be the bride of your Holy Christ Self.<sup>17</sup> Understand that it is also prerequisite to your victory and your triumphing over the forces of Evil in the earth. Understand this, beloved, and know the truth. Seek, then, bonding to your Christ Self through my heart. And I extend my heart to you through the Messenger, to those [of you] who cannot reach me without that intercessor.

Therefore know that there is no reason on earth in this hour for you not to accomplish the goal of that fusion with your Christ Self in this life. For I have sent my Messenger before me; and in this age I have sent woman that woman might be redeemed and that the world in its judgment of woman might also know that inasmuch as they have not acclaimed the Christ in woman, so the Christ shall not appear in themselves.

When I came two thousand years ago, the law went forth that he that denieth me, him would I deny before my Father,<sup>18</sup> before the I AM Presence. Those who cannot see the Christ in me cannot see or receive the Christ in themselves.

But it is the age of the Holy Spirit and the age of the Woman. Therefore, I also did come in the lowly estate of the flesh. And as you have been told time and again, the soul is not perfected in the flesh: the soul is perfected in the Spirit and in the Heart and in the Mind of God. Therefore those Jews who rejected me, beloved, rejected me because they perceived the human imperfections and therefore denied the Christ that shone through and beyond those imperfections.

Now you see, beloved, how woman has been maligned and persecuted and how, through mistreatment through the ages by the fallen ones and being put down, she has accepted herself as unworthy, she has accepted the condemnation of the world; and to fulfill her own self-assessment [she] has degraded herself in all manner of activities from pornography to abortion itself, to the allowing of the abuse of the child.

Therefore I come and we come together as one to see to it that the Christ of woman is raised up, which is to say, the Christ of the soul, the feminine counterpart of [the Spirit of the I AM in] male and female. It is the hour, then, when woman must be honored as being the temple of the living Christ, when your souls must be elevated and no longer subjugated to the condemnations of centuries.

This is the meaning of our Thanksgiving gift to you. For the hour of the judgment of the anti-Woman force in the earth is come. Truly that judgment is come, beloved. Look for it and wait for it and live unto the day when not only Woman but also her seed and her Divine Manchild shall be acknowledged. For the captains and the kings and the mighty men<sup>19</sup> shall be no more, these Nephilim gods who have journeyed to this planet to see that that feminine potential of the soul would be cast down.

Therefore take note, beloved, of those events in the scriptures that follow [the marriage of the Lamb]; for Armageddon must be fought and won and you are the physical anchor point for legions upon legions upon legions of Light. Those who have already joined you from the Great Central Sun and from out the great cosmic heights, are they not also a part of the armies of Karttikeya, Sanat Kumara? Indeed they are.

---

<sup>17</sup>Call to be the bride of Christ. See Jesus Christ, November 23, 1989, in 1989 PoW, p. 765; and May 28 and November 1, 1987, in 1987 PoW, pp. 270, 272, 275, 577, 578, 579, 582.

<sup>18</sup>Matt. 10:33; Luke 12:9.

<sup>19</sup>Rev. 6:15; 19:18.

And these legions of Light shall intensify according to your call, now that the seed of the Wicked One has seen to it that all who are the best of the sons of men in the earth have been shipped off to the Middle East, leaving the West and this nation not under the guardian spirit that it should be under, leaving that point of vulnerability, squandering the Light and the money and the supply of the people when the greatest defense ought to be mounted, as has been preached by me through this Messenger for so long.<sup>20</sup>

Evil men in high places, in the top places of this nation, have at inner levels cooperated with the fallen ones and with the Nephilim of the Twelfth Planet to bring about this situation. It is not the will of God, but it is the will of man in defiance of God. Therefore I say, let the judgment be upon those who would so easily spill the blood of my sons and daughters for their own self-gain and pride! They shall not prevail!

May you see through all that is being broadcast to you as the most amazing propaganda of all time, as you watch the so-called evening news. It is the nightly propaganda put forth to convince you that the Soviets and the United States are united. In one sense of the word, this is true. For at inner levels the fallen ones on all sides move together to destroy the Lightbearer.

There is no greater advocate of the leadership of the Soviet Union this day than the leadership of this nation. And therefore, know that when you see the conscious presence of any person, you are seeing but the surface. You are not seeing what goes on at hidden levels of being.

You do not see the programming from the Twelfth Planet of these individuals who pose as benign leaders. You do not see the inner pacts that they have made and their long-term agenda to rid the earth of the Lightbearer. You do not see how they have directed even the forces that assail you, those individuals in positions of power and even the spiritual wickedness in high places.<sup>21</sup> All the way to Rome, to Moscow and Washington, whether in Church or State, you see the condemnation in inner circles of this Messenger and this Path and this Teaching.

Make no mistake, beloved, you are able in God! And the hosts of the Lord are gathering and they shall continue to gather. For this battle shall be fought and won as God intends if you yourselves make yourselves the instrument of that Light perpetually until these old serpents of ages-old millennia no longer endure.

The hosts of the Lord can make light work of this battle if you will surely engage, if you will surely know that even a fiat of two minutes as you move from one place to another will be used by them and multiplied a million times. I have received grants of [Light for the] greater multiplication of your work. Do not think that the single fiat will not compel armies of Light to move in to first gather and bind the astral hordes and then eliminate them as an x factor as to whether or not the Light shall prevail.<sup>22</sup> We desire to remove from the very bowels of hell and of the astral plane all that the Law will allow us to remove. We require but the Call.

You, then, are surely chosen to be at the marriage supper. You are surely chosen to ride with us in the physical octave and to wear in the etheric your white garments and to know the meaning of the sword that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Faithful and True, even as it proceeds out of the mouth of the Two Witnesses.<sup>23</sup>

So call upon our Electronic Presence! Call upon us that that sword of the sacred Word shall divide the Real from the Unreal as it goes forth out of your mouth according to your dynamic decree! And therefore, rid your mouths of gossip, calumny and condemnation, of words of anger or dislike. For

---

<sup>20</sup>For a list of the Messenger's teachings on strategic defense, see 1989 PoW, p. 804 n. 8. See also pp. 169-90, this volume, and *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*, pp. 381-438.

<sup>21</sup>Eph. 6:12.

<sup>22</sup>Matt. 13:24-30, 36-43.

<sup>23</sup>Rev. 19:11-16, 21; 11:3-5.

then there do come out of your mouths not that two-edged sword<sup>24</sup> but frogs that leap,<sup>25</sup> costing you time and karma. And remember, as I have said, all things come to an end - the opportunity to do good and the opportunity to do evil.

Therefore, according to her flame and her way and our ray, Aimee did devise ways and means to compel them to come in,<sup>26</sup> to come in to the temple and to receive the Holy Spirit. May you take that ingenuity which is peculiar to yourself, and may you work as a team with the Messenger and the ministers and the elders and those who are the stumpers from this Church. May you recognize that you require planning and strength and that you must go forth in a concerted action.

Whatever the traffic will bear, whatever is honorable before God and man, let it be so, that you will find ways and means [to bring this teaching to the children of God on earth] - beginning with prayer, beginning with the absolute determination that the Holy Spirit will be in you and that every foul and unclean spirit will be out of you!

I decree it! You must will it! You must desire it! You must know that there is no reason to wait forever for the coming of the Lord into your temple!

And my beloved will speak to you on the very first day of this conference that comes at New Year's and you will hear her message, as she has come to that moment of her ultimate victory.

Blessed ones, know, then, that I could wish for a greater determination and a greater surrendering of those things that ought never to have been in your beings. The time is short for you to have the opportunity to receive while you are yet in embodiment the Holy Spirit, the cloven tongues of fire from our twin flames! And the time is short for you to vanquish Evil.

Do not dare any longer to live with the notion that you have been struggling with this or that shortcoming for years and decades of this life! Blessed ones, such a consideration, such an attitude is surely a shame and a disgrace to my own presence in your midst and an actual denial that I am the living Christ and that I am your Saviour and that I have come to collect you as I would collect petals to form the mighty rose of Mother Mary's heart.

Therefore, beloved, God is able. God is able to cast out of you any thing that you determine to be rid of. But you must walk and work this path! You must do it! I did not do those things for Aimee. I worked through her. When she was burdened, when she was alone, when she made her decisions right or wrong, she was functioning independently, for she must also gain her God-mastery under the Piscean dispensation.

Therefore, cease to look upon those whom we raise up as somehow being special or favorite sons. I should think that at least in this Community and in this Church you should long ago have abandoned that notion. There are no favorite sons. The living Son of God, the Christ, is the All-in-all in every one of you; and that Christ is waiting to receive you into his arms.

And yet as Saint John of the Cross did deliver the Word, there must be the preparation for that entering in to that oneness. And that preparation is sometimes the very lonely road of karma, the painful aloneness that you experience inside, sometimes when you are with those even closest to you who have no perception whatsoever of the inner agony or ecstasy, the depths and heights that you can reach on your quest for God.

Therefore, beloved, take seriously your path. And take that path with joy. But remember, every day is the last day for someone and the bell does toll for someone. Therefore every day determine that you shall be glued to God, that you shall be in the center of God and that the God in you that descends that day shall be for the casting out of some element of anti-God that must go on that specific day according to cosmic timetables.

---

<sup>24</sup>Rev. 1:16.

<sup>25</sup>Rev. 16:13.

<sup>26</sup>Luke 14:23.

Who can recapture the events of a lifetime? Who can recapture the mistakes of yesterday? No one can. But the violet flame can transmute them. And you can have that energy and momentum to invest it on this day and on the morrow in that new creature in Christ,<sup>27</sup> which you decree you shall be.

Therefore understand that everyone who has ascended from this planet and from situations similar to yours has known the problems that you have known. We were not special or chosen except that long ago we chose to be that Christ. And from the moment we had our victory, we have never ceased to give that Christ to all whom we would meet.

Therefore, beloved, take care that you do not deny your opportunity simply because you think you are too ordinary, too sinful, have too much karma or that it will take eternity to accomplish [the goal]. It is the lie of procrastination. It is the lie of procrastination, I tell you, beloved! And these are abominable sins for which I have no patience.

And this is the compassion of my heart, the full fire of my being. And if I speak to you through the Messenger in sternness, know that you must be stripped of these layers [of the human consciousness] if you are to make it and that the timetables are moving on and you are lingering in the cups of the past. Do not be fooled by your own self-pity. Do not be fooled by anything of the human consciousness.

Work while you have the Light, and understand that it was the freewill application of her flame and mine that enabled Aimee to succeed. There was no guaranteed success in that life except her own will and her own vision.

Stop waiting for someone to do it for you, for someone to come along with magic! And remember it takes more than positive thinking to achieve the goal: it takes a willingness to be a realist about your station in life and about your needs and about your education or lack of it. It takes a determination to go forth from this place if need be and from this valley to multiply your funds by an honest day's work in an area where you can command that salary [that you need to sustain yourself and pay your debts].

I do not have patience with those who are able-bodied and yet claim themselves as the poor. Surely you must be poor [in spirit] and without the Spirit of the Christ when you do not see that you will [only] have [and keep] what you work for. [Surely you must be poor in spirit] when you expect what you need to find its way to you simply because you are creating treasure maps and using positive affirmations. It takes more than this, beloved! It takes a spirit of realism as to what is happening today in the economy. And, after all, the key alchemy to your victory is the violet flame and the decrees themselves.

Therefore learn to create the positive matrix and understand that it is but the first step. Karma has a lot to do with the situation, as well as the resolution of your psychology. And I say to you, be up and doing! If you are not making it where you are, then make it somewhere else! For you have, after all, the whole blessed earth in this [window of] time to find the place where you can accomplish what God has assigned you to do.

You can balance your karma!

But I ask you to look at the lives of the saints who have made it and not at those of the world who will pass through the judgment, who seem to have a life of ease and pleasure. Every saint who has ever made it, every saint in his final embodiment has felt that surge of that fire of that Holy Spirit burning within him, and he has toiled through the day and toiled through the night and won that victory.

If you are not willing to pay that price, if you are not willing to enter into that fire spiral of that God-victory, then I say, pray for that desire, pray for that willingness. Pray for those things to be

---

<sup>27</sup>II Cor. 5:17.

taken from you that stop you short of the daily victories that you know you can have.

This is a do-it-yourself course. And when you do it yourself, I will multiply your works by my grace. I cannot multiply anything if you do not put forth works and the effort and show that you are willing to live a hard life as well as an easy life. For you have had both in many incarnations and this surely is the time to prove what you are made of.

Do you not think, if there were favoritism [between a Master and his disciple] and if the Law would have allowed it, that I would have raised up Magda two thousand years ago and simply dissolved her karma and not required her, as God required it, to return for two thousand years? There is a mythology surrounding my person and that mythology must not creep into your theological awareness. You must understand that we all come under the Law.

Not only would I not desire this but I also would not allow it. For, beloved, it is experience in life that is for the ripening of the soul. Do not take from a child his victory or he will resent you for the rest of his life. God and the saints - even I myself - do not take from anyone the victory, do not bestow the prize until the prize is duly won and until the true effort is made.

I am releasing a flame in this hour. It is the flame that you most need. It is the flame of realism. Realism is the absolute requirement of the hour, not fuzzy thinking, not illusory thinking, not false optimism but the realism of what is taking place on this planet and what are the signs of the times.

I, Jesus, write in the sand, as I was wont to do on many occasions, even as I wrote down the karma and the sins of those who accused Magda. 5EN I have written in the sands of the desert and I have written in the sands of the Himalayas. I have written in the earth the signs in the heavens, and I know these signs. And the exact science of astrology and its use by you is taught by me at inner levels.

Those who will reject my teaching and this science may also reject me. They fear the coming of the Lord's judgment; therefore they seek to deny the prophecy of that judgment. Do not count yourself among them, for they go the way of all flesh and the way of the captains and the kings and the mighty men.

Therefore know that the calculations are true and the prophecies are true. And therefore they have been set forth through the Messenger. And you must look at them and give your violet flame [decrees] for yourselves.

As I said to the daughters of Jerusalem, [so I say to you]: Weep not for me but weep for yourselves and for your children.<sup>28</sup> For it is you that will bear the brunt of the karma of an age. In modern terms I say to you, give the violet flame for yourselves, for your Community and for your Church. For the violet flame is the key whereby you shall balance personal karma, and that balancing of karma will make the difference as to where you will be found in the Lord's day.<sup>29</sup>

Know the meaning of the Lord's day. Know the meaning of oneness. At that point of Light, which may or may not be retained by you in this hour, that single point of Light of which you have a counterpart in the point of Light of your twin flame, I draw a circle to strengthen the inner tie. May you know that any separation between yourself and your twin flame is strictly a matter of your freewill choice, choices made, a karma made, a karma you carry.

Therefore let the boulder of pride and rebellion that separated twin flames in the beginning be removed by the violet flame and never, never, never again underestimate the value of violet flame decrees at every moment, at every opportunity you get. Let the violet flame mantras sing in your heart! [The violet flame] has been the missing ingredient for many a saint who passed into the higher octaves and could not make the ascension or else required decades [of work at inner levels] to do so.

---

<sup>28</sup>Luke 23:28.

<sup>29</sup>The Lord's day. Isa. 2:10-22; 13:6-16; 34:8; 61:2; 63:4-6; Jer. 46:10; Ezek. 30:3; Joel 1:15; 2:1, 2, 11, 31, 32; Zeph. 1:7-10, 14-18; Zech. 14:1; Mal. 4; I Thess. 5:2, 3; II Pet. 3:10-12; Rev. 1:10; 19:11-21; Matt. 24:15-31; Mark 13:14-27.

As I have said, the opportunity to do good will one day come to a close. No man knoweth the hour or the day. The opportunity to do evil will also come to a close. And no man knoweth the hour or the day. I, Jesus, impress upon you with the branding iron of the Lord: Work while ye have the Light!

In this hour I release my flame for the mystery of thanksgiving. Gratitude for the good multiplies the good. May you spend your day in counting your blessings and giving glory to God. Thus shall you find the increase.

I am the magnet of the Sacred Heart. I am the magnet of the heart of roses of Magda. We are one.

[29-second standing ovation. Messenger and congregation give nine Hallelujahs.]

This dictation by Jesus Christ was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Thanksgiving Day, November 22, 1990, at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. The dictation and service are available on videocassette (1 hr. 40 min., GP90109) and audiocassette (90 min., B90036). [N.B. Throughout this Pearl, bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Jesus' direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.





# Chapter 46

## Beloved Lanello - December 2, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 47 - Beloved Lanello - December 2, 1990

The Consummation of the Soul's Flight to Her Lord in the Alchemical Marriage

Lanello's Birthday Address 1990

May You Ever Be the Shining One!

I sprinkle you with holy water as I come in this hour to attend the birth of the Saviour. The Saviour who is born in your heart even as your soul is reborn in him, the Saviour who is Jesus Christ and whose presence (as in the celebration of six months ago)<sup>1</sup> is part of the processioning of the Holy Family with all the attendants, angels and shepherds, wise men, the Lord Krishna and representatives of the elemental kingdom.

Blessed ones, I stand before you tonight in my original garb and identity, for we are of the angelic kingdom; therefore see me as your angel Lanello. And I bring the glad tidings of this great joy - that the Saviour is come to us, that the Saviour is born, that he is the infant Child, that he is the Lord of lords and King of kings!

Therefore know that I join bands of angels who represent our point of origin and we encircle the earth this night, enveloping the planet in [the Causal Bodies of] our twin flames that all might have the quickening of the mind by the power of God Mercury and that the quickened mind might be the vessel of the Christ Mind, whose Mass we celebrate.

As you come to this hour of the Christmas Rose, so the Christmas Eve service is a service of forgiveness and violet flame that you may on the morrow truly eat of the flesh and drink of the blood of Jesus Christ,<sup>2</sup> of your Holy Christ Self, of Alpha and Omega, who reside in the heart of every ascended and cosmic being and angel of Light.

Therefore, beloved, we unveil our offices that you might understand that we serve you as angelic messengers, that we come even as angels came of old and [as that] singular angel [who came] to Joseph to warn him in a dream of the coming of Herod and that [the Holy Family] must escape.<sup>3</sup>

Therefore find yourselves not in that place of a lesser consciousness or a vulnerable state but make haste to enter into the true ancient mysteries. For Egypt was not a land of the dead, but Egypt in the ancient tradition carried forward the supreme worship of the one God, even the Incal of Atlantis.<sup>4</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup>See p. 359.

<sup>2</sup>John 6:53-58.

<sup>3</sup>Matt. 2:13, 19, 20.

<sup>4</sup>Incal was the Supreme God of the Atlanteans, symbolized by the blazing sun. See Phyllos the Thibetan, A Dweller on Two Planets, pp. 25, 29-30, 36, 87-90 in paperback (Harper and Row, 1974), or pp. 25, 29-31, 36-37, 90-93 in hardbound (Borden Publishing Co., 1952). Hardbound available through Summit University Press.

And therefore we were there to reestablish that monotheism.<sup>5</sup>

This was a challenge not merely to the black priesthood of Egypt, beloved; it was a challenge to that reincarnated black priesthood of Atlantis. Thus you see, those who did cause the sinking [of Atlantis], those black magicians who had even entered the office of high priest in the temple, would not relent but would continue to move against those who worshiped the one God and retained the memory of the golden-age civilizations of Atlantis.

Thus, beloved, “Out of this Egypt of the one God have I called my Son.”<sup>6</sup> Thus is the Word of the Lord. And therefore, the purpose of [the Holy Family] remaining in that atmosphere was to assimilate the true ancient traditions of the true concept of the one God.

Understand, beloved, that in this one God, your Mighty I AM Presence, is the annihilation of all pluralism, all polytheism and all separate consciousness of separate identities. Thus, the Law of the One is demonstrated in our Immanuel, for that Law of the One is the coming together of all peoples and kindreds and tongues.<sup>7</sup> And therefore it is a sign unto all people<sup>8</sup> that the Saviour descending may cause them to once again be reborn as sons of God. And that Saviour who is Christ the Lord is born this day and every day.

Do you know, beloved, that Alpha and Omega have for some time desired to see a Christ born every day upon earth, even from the [time] we began preaching in the 1950s? This dispensation has not always been possible for the denial [by abortion or prevention] of the lifestreams who would enter or for individuals rebelling against their path and their karma, being not willing to submit to the living Word and therefore not coming together in holy matrimony or consecrating their lives to that level where the Christed one could be born.

The Lords of Karma seek to make up for lost time. Therefore they call you to the altar that you may request sponsorship from the beloved Melchior, the wise man of the East, who shall surely follow the star of each aborning child and shall be at that place for the protection, with Kuthumi and Djwal Kul,<sup>9</sup> of the little one.

May you know, beloved, that many Lightbearers in this nation and world must be cut free to come into this activity for the sole reason that they might prepare themselves to be mothers and fathers.

Think of the increase of Light on the planet if this mandate [for the birth of a Christ every day] were to be fulfilled, O beloved! And then decree for it and be fierce as you in your next call for labors (after this labor’s victory is won) might ask for that labor involving the entire conspiracy against the birth of the Divine Manchild again and again and again.

I have come to you, then, that you might understand the true embodiment in Jesus Christ of the original high priest of Atlantis, who [later] became the great emperor of a golden age.<sup>10</sup> Understand

---

<sup>5</sup>The Messengers Mark L. Prophet and Elizabeth Clare Prophet were embodied as Ikhnaton and Nefertiti, who ruled Egypt in the fourteenth century B.C. Pharaoh Ikhnaton introduced a revolutionary religion into Egypt based on the worship of the one God. This God, known as “Aton,” was represented in the symbol of a sun disc or orb with diverging rays, each of which ended in a hand bestowing blessings upon all life. Ikhnaton prohibited the worship of the old [Nephilim] gods of Egypt, particularly Amon, the chief god, and ordered their names and images erased from the monuments. These were both embodied and disembodied fallen angels, to whom the black priests had erected their altars. The black priests viciously conspired against Ikhnaton and Nefertiti, eventually murdering them; they reestablished the former gods and obliterated the name and image of Aton and Ikhnaton. See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *Ikhnaton: Messenger of Aton*, 2-audiocassette album, A8243.

<sup>6</sup>Matt. 2:15; Hos. 11:1.

<sup>7</sup>Rev. 7:9.

<sup>8</sup>Luke 2:8-12; Isa. 7:10-14.

<sup>9</sup>The Ascended Masters El Morya, Kuthumi and Djwal Kul were embodied as Melchior, Balthazar and Caspar - the three wise men who honored the Christ Child.

<sup>10</sup>Jesus as the original high priest of Atlantis and great emperor of a golden age. In *A Dweller on Two Planets*, Phyllos the Thibetan tells the story of a mysterious ruler who reigned over the Atlanteans for 434 days. This one, who possessed wonderful knowledge, announced that he was from Incal, that he was a child of the Sun and that he had

the manifestation of the Son of God and adore that Light and that commitment and that unfailing quality of this Lord Jesus Christ, who age after age even in dark ages did keep that flame of the World Saviour and did not forsake his mission.

May you be commended [to his Spirit] in this hour, beloved - to follow in his footsteps and to prove that in this life you also may stand with your Holy Christ Self, may merge with that Holy Christ Self, might have the fusion of your soul to that Holy Christ Self!<sup>11</sup>

It is the goal that you must seek, as we have said. It is the most important victory you can achieve, beloved, for this [fusion] results in the capacity for true ministration of the Word. Nothing can substitute for the fusion of the soul with the Lord, the Holy Christ Self, and hence, not long thereafter, with the Lord Jesus Christ himself.

Blessed ones, you must renew this sacred tryst and know how essential [to your Victory] is the Sacred Heart of Jesus. It is as a magnet of the Heart of God. When you are at peace with your Lord and truly at peace in the very depths of your unconscious being, then you know that Jesus may place his Electronic Presence over you, not only during the Jesus' Watch<sup>12</sup> but throughout the seven days of the week.

Strive for this, beloved! And do not let any [negative] momentum of your past, [any] shortcoming, anything that allows a going here and a going there [cause] you to be divided and conquered. Do not let the things [of the shadowed self] take you from the love of the Saviour, who is born this day in the city of David, even out of the Causal Body of the soul of David, who was Jesus, who is Jesus - who is Jesus our Lord.

Therefore, know that every temptation that beset Jesus and Gautama and all saints who have accomplished [the goal of the ascension] does also beset you. Do not be put back but rejoice! Rejoice in all of your goings and comings, whether through the dark night of the soul (of your karma) or the Dark Night of the Spirit, when you are in that fusion to the Christ and [you] receive not once but again and again the crucifixion and the challenging of your office [as a son of God].

Do not move from the spot where you stand in defense of the Light! For if you allow yourself to be overcome by a single test that Satan or the seed of Satan may give you, know that the devils have a heyday and that they consider that you are set far back. And therefore they move to make mincemeat of you, to "sift you as wheat," as Jesus told Peter.<sup>13</sup>

Satan would have you. You must take the wise counsel that we have given you, the understanding of the tremendous power of your call for the binding of the dweller-on-the-threshold, naming each line of your Cosmic Clock and going after those conditions.<sup>14</sup> Whether you think they are a part of you or not, simply name them. For if they are not a part of you, beloved, and you truly have

---

come to reform the religion and life of the people. Breathing upon a block of quartz, he established the great Maxin Light, the Unfed Fire that burned in the temple. He revised the laws, writing them with his finger upon the Maxin Stone and upon a book of parchment leaves placed under the Unfed Light. These guided Atlantis until her decline. El Morya has revealed that this ruler, who did not actually take on human form, was beloved Jesus. Years later, Jesus embodied as an emperor who ruled Atlantis during an age of great enlightenment when more than 50 percent of the people were fully clothed in their Christhood. See *Phylos the Thibetan, A Dweller on Two Planets*, pp. 132-33 in paperback (Harper and Row, 1974), or pp. 137-38 in hardbound (Borden Publishing Co., 1952); and 1984 PoW, Book II, Introduction, p. 28.

<sup>11</sup>Fusion of the soul to the Holy Christ Self. See 1990 PoW, pp. 31-32, 475-82, 586; 1988 PoW, Book I, p. 266; 1985 PoW, Book I, pp. 279-80; 1983 PoW, pp. 245, 250-51; 1981 PoW, Book I, pp. 156, 319-26; 1979 PoW, Book I, pp. 304-5, 306-7; and *The Astrology of the Four Horsemen*, pp. 53-57, 483-86.

<sup>12</sup>Jesus' promise to be with us during the Jesus' Watch. See Jesus Christ, October 4, 1987, in 1987 PoW, pp. 494-95; and March 26, 1989, in 1989 PoW, pp. 231-32. See also letter from Elizabeth Clare Prophet, December 12, 1987, in 1987 PoW, following p. 618.

<sup>13</sup>Luke 22:31.

<sup>14</sup>Refers to the conditions arising out of the perversions of the twelve God-qualities charted on the Cosmic Clock. For diagrams of the twelve God-qualities and their perversions, see p. 72, this volume, and Elizabeth Clare Prophet, *The Great White Brotherhood in the Culture, History and Religion of America*, figs. 10, 11 and 12 following p. 176.

the mastery on that line, then you will stand to assist other Lightbearers of this cosmos to defeat that dweller; and you will need all of the attainment and the momentum [you can] garner - and the repetition [if but] for the very sake of ritual, for the very sake of the love of Christ.

Understand that ritual is weaving the strong cords round and around and around that pole of being until the Polestar does become a presence so very near and the congruency is not difficult, for you have not allowed one single entity, one single schism in the psyche to come between you and your God. You do not wait till you are healed of your psychology to seek this union. You allow the union you seek with such fierceness of heart, beloved, to be the healing of that psychology!

I desire to make myself clear this night: the fervor and fire of the heart unto its filling of all of your chest cavity is that fiery desiring for union with Jesus Christ, with your Holy Christ Self. And that fire that does intensify and that desire of love that does increase - these are the consummation of the soul's flight to her Lord in the alchemical marriage.

Do you see that the alchemical marriage itself is the dissolving of certain elements of schism in the psyche, some of which you will never know about because they are not accessible to the outer mind? Thus it is true that you do not need to know all [of the] conditions of your psyche [in order] to be healed. But it is also true that you must know a good part of them [in order] to see them coming and to understand their manifestation and to douse them with violet flame and then move on.

Know always as an Ascended-Master God-free being at inner levels (and this I claim for you) that you, at that point of your inner-level God-Identity, do not have those problems and [that] you do have the power to overcome them [as they are wont to manifest in the human].

Therefore you must say, "I am greater than those problems! I will douse them with violet flame and I will move on!" It is a question of the will and the power you give to the will of God in your life and the wisdom that you give to the will of God in your life and the love that you give to the will of God [in your life].

Willing your manifestation of perfection [in the here and now] and then bringing up the rear of the records of past lives [for final transmutation], this is the method. Some of you have pursued the opposite, excusing yourselves for your [imperfection, blaming it on your] negative astrology - excusing yourselves for your human momentums [because you are human] and waiting for yourselves to work through them till you can truly walk the earth claiming your Christhood, acting the part and ministering to souls of Light because you know that that reality of Christ is where you are.

Why don't you begin to be the Good Shepherd? Who or what are you waiting for? [What we see] is almost a lulling to sleep of our very best troops, as though you were falling asleep in the presence of your very Christhood. Let it not be so!

With all humility you may retain the awareness of the lowly estate of the flesh but never a sense of self-criticism or false humility. Let that [false] humility stand aside and let the Christ walk through you and speak! And be that love in action!

And do not go over and over and over again your momentums of rebellion and resistance to the Truth, so much so that you do not even perceive that you have failed your tests and failed them so miserably without even a [hint or a] suggestion to yourself that you were in any way out of alignment. And if a wise fellow chela or the Messenger be not handy, you may continue to delude yourself that you are in a fine vibration.

Let there not be the mocking of God! Let there not be the mocking of true selfhood by the supercilious or the proud human consciousness!

Blessed ones, you have the components. Some of you have left the parts to your fine Swiss watch lying on the workbench for many centuries. You somehow think that the parts are equal to the whole. Well, they are not equal to the whole until you put them together. I say, you all have the parts. Put them together and you will see the fine tuning of that Christ expressing through you.

Know that your areas of expertise are the means whereby the excellence of that Christ can readily manifest, and you can increase a wider circle of excellence and expertise as you move along, accepting the challenges on the cycles of your Clock, minding the change of cycle each day of the month that marks your birth date, noting the change of chakra, of hierarch, of line of the Clock, of God-quality to embody, and anticipating the challenges to [your expression of that God-quality].

There are some here of long-standing who still do not keep that chart for themselves, are not mindful of the changes of the cycles according to the Cosmic Clock and pay little attention to their personal astrology. Well, beloved ones, [as a result] many of you fall in the mud. I am sad to say it. You do not apply the teachings given. All this is given to you not for entertainment but because you need the refinement of calculating your days of victory and knowing that some days require supreme effort to have the victory while others have so much wind for your sails that sometimes you take it for granted and miss the victory even then.

Let us see heroes and heroines! Let us see them now come forward to honor that Christ and be that Christ!

Beloved ones, I rejoice in your love for one another that is increasing. This is the mark of the descending Christ in your midst. It is a joy to behold harmony in so many quarters. And those of you who have deprived yourselves of that harmony, I give you from this night to December 31 to atone for the sins of inharmony throughout this year, recognizing the perversions of all lines of the Clock to be a form of inharmony.

Blessed ones, let us see you establish strong spokes on the wheel of life from the center to the periphery. Now I ask you, Won't you have that great God-harmony through this final week of the year? ["Yes!"]

What a rejoicing! What a joy to defeat those various points where you have allowed yourself to lose your harmony as though it were justified but more so because [the momentum of your inharmony] is a track, and sometimes a ditch, in the astral body.

O beloved hearts, the joy of God-harmony and of those who keep it in this cycle shall surely be a very special prize! The year has a door ajar that will close, and at its closing, as you know, the past will be sealed except on certain days timed by the Cosmic Clock and the astrology of the stars. Therefore let this open door [of this week] be for the cleansing not only of the past year but of many past years that are also opened.

Blessed ones, I have come to you with this special gift in this hour - this message which my Beloved has read to you,<sup>15</sup> that you might observe the signs of those things that can come upon anyone simply by the condition of the biochemistry of the body.

May you realize that some of you have been counseled concerning not eating, such as our beloved Edith Emmert, who took upon herself a "fast for God," [as she called it,] and therefore caused her untimely demise. This blessed one in her own mind's reasoning thought this should be a great gift unto God, a fasting. But God did not require of her to fast but to stay in embodiment and to keep the Flame.

Well, beloved, those who have loved her should rejoice to know that this day she has been given

---

<sup>15</sup>Prior to Lanello's dictation, the Messenger announced that Lanello had asked her to read us an article from the December 13, 1990 New York Times that could "make the difference in our lives and in whether or not we make our ascension." The article was entitled "Animal Fat Is Tied to Colon Cancer: Largest Study of Diet in U.S. Backs Long-Held Theory" by Gina Kolata. Kolata reported on the findings of a six-year study done on the diet and medical history of 88,751 women between the ages of 34 and 59. Researchers found that the more red meat and animal fat consumed, the more likely the individual was to develop colon cancer. The women who ate red meat as a main course every day were two and a half times more likely to develop colon cancer than those who ate red meat sparingly or not at all. No correlation was found between the amount of chicken, fish, dairy products and vegetable fat consumed and the risk of developing the cancer. As reported in the article, the incidence of colon and rectal cancer in the United States is second only to lung cancer.

a pair of tiny wings and that she now has the opportunity to make her ascension from inner levels. And she has worked very hard to receive this gift and will continue to work very hard to qualify herself [as a candidate for the ascension]. It will not be easy for her, beloved, but she has her wings [and she can learn to fly].

And therefore, I come as an angel messenger on her behalf and on behalf of her mentors to tell you that she no longer requires your prayers and that you should direct them to other conditions and other individuals in embodiment. Thus, she shall move on and, passing all tests at inner levels, may one day make her ascension from inner octaves.

I recount to you the scene, beloved, of her passing, when she was received even in the Retreat of the Divine Mother and a council of Ascended Lady Masters did gather around her to literally scold her and tell her that she should not have taken on this type of fasting unbeknownst to the Messenger and to the point where it was too late [to reverse the course] when it was brought to the Messenger's attention.

Blessed ones, therefore you can see there is a folly in not eating. There is a folly in taking matters into your own hands, as others have done in deciding when and where they should conclude this embodiment, for they have "lived long enough," [as they say]. Let not this lie of the sinister force enter the heart or the mind or the soul of any chela on the Path! For, beloved, you should consider it always a plot of the sinister force to take you out of embodiment by one specious form of reasoning or another.

If you are in embodiment, defend your life! Expand it, increase it, multiply it, strengthen yourself and give your life to decrees for God and what service you are able to muster. You will never know what balance you hold for the planet. You will never know how every drop [of your lifeblood], every grain of sand in the hourglass counts for your victory. Do not shortcut the opportunity for victory, not just a simple victory but a complex and masterful victory!

Therefore, extend your life span and heed the dietary cautions. Those who overeat and overindulge and do not deal with momentums of gluttony from past lives also reduce their instrumentation while they yet have good health and put themselves in jeopardy of taking on conditions of disease.

The strong and purified body is the best vessel for the living Christ. Let it be strong in the physical. Let the desire body be strong, perpetually desiring God and pursuing prudence and modesty, caution and surely the contrite heart.

This, beloved, is our word to you. May this body be the temple of the living God for many decades to come, I say - and I speak it of each one of you, for you have much yet to do to graduate with the full attainment of your God-mastery. Let it be with nothing less, beloved.

Give the world something and someone to remember! Give them the gift of your heart to remember you by! They will need those memories, I tell you, beloved, in days when they must stand alone. They will need the memory of you in embodiment and your strength and your determination and your unfailing love and faith.

O your example is as a sun shining! It is the star of the Christ over Bethlehem. It is your Causal Body. Where the world is so full of bad examples, may you ever be the shining one! May you exceed me, beloved. It is my prayer. And I will help you do so with all of the fervor and love of my heart, for I come with Jesus as a ministering angel at his side. I come with Jesus to multiply that act of your Christhood.

O be generous in the giving of the love fire of your heart! For the more you give, the more you are en-fired by Love. Give love and you shall increase love on the planet and in your heart. And after all, beloved, love is the single and greatest requirement for the ascension.

I bid you good evening in this hour, and I withdraw to higher octaves and [to] my mission this night with glorious bands of angels.

We go out, beloved, to see whom we may draw into this Community. Give us the means! Give us the materials! Give us the corrected statements! Give us the Royal Teton Ranch News. Give us the good news of this activity, of every chela and the Messenger and the Path. Give us something we can place in their hands, for they do not hear us with their minds and ears but only with their souls and hearts. And the intellect is strong and its prejudices are strong and the lies told are strong poison.

Give us the tools and we will turn around this condition whereby those of the Twelfth Planet have sought to encircle you, to bind you, to set you up in a prison house of walls of hatred that they have created. I say, beloved, they are as nothing! And if you can develop that co-measurement with God and the God Presence, you can see that they are as midgets before the LORD God.

Is anything too hard for the LORD?<sup>16</sup> ["No!"]

Blessed ones, look at the labors accomplished. Your call, heaven's answer - it is there. Make it and do not be lulled into self-concern, for this remains the disease of this Community: self-concern that begets fear, that begets a holding of the tatters of your karma round about you instead of opening your arms, letting the breezes blow and letting the Holy Spirit blow through you.

You must be free of your human creation and then we will shake the bowers of your Causal Body! And there shall descend such momentums of supply and Light and members that you will wonder where you will put them even on the entire acreage of this beloved Royal Teton Ranch.

With all my love, I give you the kiss of Christmas peace.

This dictation by Lanello was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet during the Christmas Eve Candlelight Vigil, Monday, December 24, 1990, at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. The Messenger's scriptural reading prior to Lanello's dictation was John 1:1-18; Luke 2:1-20. The service and dictations of Lanello and Mother Mary are available on videocassette (1 3/4 hr., HP91001) and audiocassette (3 hr., A91001). [N.B. Throughout this Pearl, bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Lanello's direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

<sup>16</sup>Gen. 18:14; Jer. 32:17, 27.





# Chapter 47

## Beloved Mother Mary - December 9, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 48 - Beloved Mother Mary - December 9, 1990

The Fusion of Your Heart with My Own

You Must Overcome Every Concept of Limitation

Christmas Eve Address 1990

I come with the thunder of an Archeia and I come with the gentle breath of my babe. Know in me the fierceness of the Great Kali. Know in me the archetype of the Blessed Virgin, whom those of earth who have the Mother in their hearts have received even since the hour of my final embodiment upon earth.

So the power of the presence of the Mother that God has given to me has been a mitigating factor against the falsehoods of the false hierarchy of religion East and West. Nothing can separate the child from the love of Mother except it be the intrusion of the false hierarchy of the Mother and the false hierarchy of the Father.

Allow that bond to develop, beloved! Allow yourselves and permit yourselves to be the embodiment of the Mother Flame and you will raise up souls of Light in this Community and throughout the world who shall never be removed from the Rock of Christ Truth, which I bear always. I am always bearing my child in arm, even as my child is the Son with me who does protect my office and become my advocate.

Therefore, beloved, the hour is long past due for myself to manifest with you. As Lanello has spoken to you of the fusion of your heart with your Holy Christ Self and Jesus,<sup>1</sup> so I speak to you of the fusion of your heart with my own as the first step to your becoming one with the whole.

Blessed ones, many months ago I came to the Messenger with the statement of the Karmic Board that the time had come when I should no longer be separate from her nor she from me, that I would place my Electronic Presence over her. In the order of Hierarchy, beloved, the one approached with this initiation must decide [to accept it or not], for it is the most difficult of all initiations. For the hatred of the Mother on this planet is greater even than all of the hatred of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit.

And therefore, the Messenger did assent; and therefore, this has taken place.

Therefore the persecution has increased and the estrangement of some who simply cannot stand in my presence. Therefore you have seen such an onslaught. Therefore you have seen all of those

---

<sup>1</sup>See pp. 597-98.

who have persecuted the Woman and her seed throughout all ages. They come to the fore, for they are blinded by their hatred not alone of the Mother but of that Christ consciousness that she does impart.

O beloved, understand that the quickening [within you] of the love of Jesus Christ and of myself and of God is by the Holy Spirit! And the washing of the waters of the mind that passes through the Messenger is this very gift. And therefore those of the world stand aghast, beloved, for they cannot tolerate the movement of the Holy Spirit and the Mother and the Father and the Son to draw into alignment with the divine magnet of being these ones who come in contact with the Messenger. Therefore they label it brainwashing.

Blessed ones, surely it is the washing of the waters of the mind and of the heart by the Word. Surely it is a washing, even of the fires of the chakras and of the stream of life that has come to be polluted.

Understand, beloved, that even my presence in this Community for some months in a more tangible way has resulted in the stirring up and the bringing out of the hatred of the Mother - whichever mother you may identify, whether it be the Messenger or some other.

Therefore it is a wonderful opportunity. For I have come for a purpose and surely not to glorify the Messenger (though God is always glorified where I am and so may you be [glorified in order] to embody my flame). But, beloved, I have come nearer to you in this wise so that swiftly you could learn what elements you may have in your being of that hatred of the Mother, so that you could resolve them, cast them into the violet flame and have my nearly physical, tangible presence with you - with you, then, to defend you, to at times stand between you and your dweller, to stand between you and the adversaries without.

Blessed ones, surely I am come to consecrate a Community to the Divine Mother. And as you consecrate this Community to me, to my Immaculate Heart and to my rosary, I can enter most sweetly into your beings daily and work many more miracles for you.

Let the desire of your heart be the chanting of the Hail Ma-Ray, understanding that I am truly your Archeia-instructor who comes to you to show you the purification of the chakras and the raising of the Kundalini sacred fire. Truly it is the great possibility in this hour. And the raising up of that sacred fire, beloved, is surely for the victory of your ascension but it is also so that you may carry that ascension flame with you in this body temple and increase it daily.

Surely I have come to you because you are ready, even as the Messenger is ready. You are ready, beloved, in the sense that you are fed up with the human creation, you are fed up with these schisms, you are fed up with any separation of your soul from the Mother!

I tell you, beloved, those who accept my Son and achieve that fusion find that the next step of that fusion must be the fusion with the Mother. Therefore you have desired it. Therefore you have seen it at inner levels. Therefore you have known that I have come, and I have surely come to you with Raphael, with our angels to endow you with my flame.

And we desire to see presented to the world the recordings of my songs, which our musicians are working on diligently. This music, beloved, will bear our Electronic Presence and Causal Body. It will bear our vibration and flame because you have so consecrated yourselves.

The Messenger has given you the teaching on the triangle of idolatry of the Mother, fear of the Mother and hatred of the Mother. This triangle can be overcome swiftly by your adoration of the Trinity. The Trinity, therefore, gives the empowerment of the will, the wisdom and the love of God. Seek that empowerment and with it crush the serpent with the heel of your Christhood! Blessed ones, bruise his head, for thou art the manifestation of the Divine Mother.

Now, beloved, you may understand what turmoil you may have been dealing with, for I come as the Queen of May. I have come the first of May. And look at how my children and my chelas have

wrestled with all manner of human questioning and even depression! And depression is the light misqualified that depresses the Mother Flame in your chakras, beloved. And you think it is tied to this and that condition or disappointment, et cetera, or burden of karma, but ultimately it is the manifestation of the loss of the sacred fire of the Mother, which [as it is misqualified] feeds into that vicious circle of the depression syndrome.

Understand, beloved, that you have questioned and yet we have allowed you to question. You have received many answers through our bands and through our dictations and through the Messenger's teachings, yet some will not listen. Some have not heard. Some have not even considered it necessary to study not only the dictations but the lectures and the comments of that teaching ongoing that does explain how a people can become enmeshed in their karma, how they can become burdened by that karma and by the excessive weight that has descended upon them, how they can become rebellious against Almighty God and even against Jesus, my Son, for requiring them to bear their own load of karmic burden.

All things have come upon you to test your mettle, to test your vision, your faith, your loyalty and your absolute love of those whom we have sent to represent us.

Beloved, this Messenger has not turned you aside, has not betrayed you, has not been faithless in her calling but has kept the Flame for every Keeper of the Flame and Lightbearer of this world and beyond steadfastly. And I do this through her, and I may do it through you if you will cease any further grumbling and enter the new year with the most positive spiral of victory for this Community and Church, which starts with yourself - yourself, beloved.

Your assessment of yourself defines and limits your self-expression. If you think you are of no more worth than a certain level, then you will not perform above that level; for should you do so, all of the theories of the carnal mind should crumble and you should find yourself as the living Christ.

Do you see, beloved? When you entertain any sense of worthlessness whatsoever, or unworthiness, then that is the highest level of expression you reach. And you determine this each day.

Because you have said to yourself, "I am not worthy to be that Christ, I am not worthy to be one with Mother Mary," you act the part and you have placed that ceiling above you. Well, beloved ones, that ceiling does not stay put. Once it was twelve feet high, then it was nine, then it was seven. And pretty soon, if you are going to stay in that box of worthlessness, you will find that the room will shrink and you will know the shrinking-man, the shrinking-woman syndrome.<sup>2</sup>

Do you understand [what I am saying], beloved? That which ceases to grow will cease to be. And therefore if you allow these conditions and matrices of negativity to remain much longer, you will find that they will become the law of your life and you will have a tremendous struggle getting out of them. And if you should ever be cut off, by a path of initiation or karma or whatever, from the direct contact with our Brotherhood through the Messenger or through your own God Presence, then you will know just what an opportunity you have lost.

Therefore I say: The most important resolution that you must make must be made in this hour for the final days of the year, [and it is] that you will cast out the unwanted-child syndrome, you will cast out all of that psychology that limits you as to who and what you are and who you can be.

---

<sup>2</sup>On January 1, 1980, Sanat Kumara spoke of the shrinking-man syndrome: "There is no death but a succession of experiences whereby the soul may elect to become more of its own central sun or to squander the light of that central sun and to watch the diminishing of life in other souls and ultimately within itself. . . . Individuals have become less and less of the Godhead, yet who walks the earth saying today, 'I am not the man that I was yesterday or a century ago or ten thousand years ago'? People are what they are and they think they have always been what they are. But in fact, upon this earth many have been reduced to a lowly estate, without grace, by their own doings and dark deeds. It is the process of self-disintegration whereby the self that is in that process does not perceive the disintegrating self but only the self that remains. . . . Let us realize, then, the price that . . . must be paid by all of us ascended and un-ascended if together we would truly bring to the shrinking-man syndrome the aware-ness of expanding life, exalted life, transcendent life, and the unique I AM Presence, God Flame of each one."

These things are a block to your creativity, to your abundance, to the supply that is most urgently needed in this hour.

See [that block] for what it is and do not return to it except to vanquish it by plunging that mighty sword of Archangel Michael into the very heart of that record! Pursue all other means available, beloved, for you must overcome every concept of limitation that has been placed upon you and that you have accepted.

Do not accept the concept [that you are the victim of the rights or wrongs] of human parents. You are born of Divine Parents! And know that they are perfect and they are your true Father-Mother God. They have never disappointed you, never misled you, never left you alone not to be loved.

Blessed ones, accept the Divine Parents! For to see yourself the victim of human parents any longer, I say, is more than a travesty; it is a betrayal of your Father-Mother God! And after so much teaching of lifetimes, you must come to the resolution that your parents are your parents, whether by assignment, by initiation or by karma. [And in most cases they did the best they knew to do.] You must praise God [for the blessings of life he has given you through your human parents] and move on!

You must know [that whether your parents were right or wrong], your Divine Parents were always there. And whatever [good] you embody today must be the result of your own determination to claim those true parents. They are Alpha and Omega! They are Helios and Vesta! They are the twin flames of Archangel and Archeia! In fact, they are the ascended twin flames of any Masters whom you desire to call your parents.

Beloved, we all embody the Father-Mother God. Each one of us individually is androgynous. We come to you, we offer our all, and we do it again and again.

Do not underestimate the necessity for your decree work. This is a salvation that requires work! Paul said it. Jesus said it. I say it: [“Work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.”]<sup>3</sup> If you are not willing to work, then I say, you will not achieve your ascension in this life. It is as simple as that.

There are students who have come in contact with our teachings and who have been in contact with them for many years, and they somehow think that by [merely] listening to the teaching they are becoming it. I tell you it is not so. The human mind is a good tape recorder and it does record the teaching, but that is not the equivalent of God Self-mastery. The mastery comes when a teaching is applied.

And I tell you, there is absolutely no substitute for intense work with the violet flame, for intense work in dealing with your own dweller[-on-the-threshold] or for [invoking the Lord’s] judgment in situations [of injustice] that beset you. There is a probing that must take place. There is pain, yes, that will come and [there is] a pain that will transcend itself, and you will know the bliss of God if you are willing to go through it.

If you are someone who wants to have a certain painless path, beloved, then know that that is not a possibility on this earth. If you would be transformed, if you would rise even in the very mystery of the phoenix bird, transcending your old self, you must be willing to let go of those things that are painful to let go of, only to put your hand in the hand of the living God.

Shun the familiar when it holds you back! Enter into the grace of God. I tell you, heaven has never been more open to the climb of the ascending ones and never more ready to help. And it is because we see the oncoming Darkness, we see times ahead when [you will have greater] difficulty in achieving what you can achieve today with so little a sacrifice for so great a salvation.

I am your Mother, and I know that you feel in this moment that it is so good to be home with

---

<sup>3</sup>Phil. 2:12.

Mother. Well, I tell you, it is good to be home with my true children. And I shall spank you! And I shall love you! And I shall rebuke you! And I shall knock that pride out of you and see coming forth [from you] the most glorious manifestation of the Son of God. After all, beloved ones, if I may say so, I am among the most successful mothers of this cosmos.[4-second applause]

Precious hearts, do keep that flame! Do not let it go out! I will tell you, there is a record of a few individuals in this Community who in the past twelve months did blow out their threefold flame by anger, and I bring this to your attention. It is possible to do it. It is possible to allow that flame to go out.

And those who engage in a raging type of anger and unleash the contents of their unconscious and do so repeatedly and come to our door and receive the message and the teaching and know precisely how they can call for intercession for the binding of such anger [must heed my warning]. Beloved ones, you never know when that final manifestation of anger will be the moment of the extinguishing of the flame.

All should fear God and fear the loss of that flame within and know that when you approach this altar, when you come and receive this teaching, it is counted unto you for knowledge, it is counted unto you as opportunity, and it is counted unto you as karma. Thus to violate in full, knowing awareness the law of God to such an extent, I say, it is a pity.

And in some cases we have lifted individuals up out of sections of the planet and areas of the world where they never would have had a chance to come out of their old self. We have brought them to the altar, we have given them the teaching; and yet they would not apply it. They would not deal with that human creation. They would not kneel before Jesus and cast themselves upon the Rock of Christ to have that [karmic] momentum broken.<sup>4</sup>

It does take groaning and travail<sup>5</sup> to give birth to your Christhood. And the problem with Western civilization is the indulgence of children [to the point where] they do not arrive at the age of maturity with “the guts,” I shall say, to truly wrestle with what must be wrestled with. You will not enter in unless you wrestle with yourself daily. You will not enter in if you daily postpone the vow and the commitment. Look neither to the right nor to the left but enter into the heart of Jesus and stay there.

Blessed ones, I am here to help you but there is little that I can do with a house divided against itself.<sup>6</sup> “A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways.”<sup>7</sup>

Therefore, let the vision come together through the third eye! Let it be there! And keep your guard, for you are continually tested. And you dip into those low levels of the sine wave, beloved, and then again and again you go into that old habit pattern and it is by the sheer pride of the ego itself. You have the teaching, beloved. Please do not misuse it any longer. For I tell you, it is a sad day when someone must be sent away for the cause [of unbridled anger].

I welcome all of you to my heart in this hour, and I give you this opportunity to kneel in prayer, to ask me from your heart of hearts what you would that I should do for you, what you desire from the Messenger, what you desire, beloved, to be delivered of by the great sword of the Great Kali, which I also wield.

Therefore I shall take up this sword, the mighty sword Excalibur that is the Divine Mother’s from the beginning, and I shall wield it during this period of prayer when the choir shall sing in unison Christmas carols.

I listen to each one of your hearts and your lips that pray. [Choir sings “O Come, All Ye Faithful”

---

<sup>4</sup>Matt. 21:42, 44; Luke 20:17, 18; I Cor. 10:4.

<sup>5</sup>Rom. 8:22; Gal. 4:19.

<sup>6</sup>Matt. 12:25; Mark 3:24, 25; Luke 11:17.

<sup>7</sup>James 1:8.

and “Away in a Manger” while the congregation kneels in prayer.]

I speak to you now as your “Virgin of the Flaming Sword Excalibur.” I ask you to remember me (and to call to me) as appearing in this mode. Therefore you will know that I may perpetually wield the sword Excalibur in your behalf.

I need the call, the will, the commitment and the determination that you will keep your word when you promise to be done with this or that human creation. And I do not suggest that you dally in giving that word, thinking that you may not keep it.

The idea, beloved, is to receive from the Mind of God and your own soul that which is the next step, then ask my assistance and take that step firmly. Be confident that you will maintain the level of attainment required at that new step and [promise yourself that] you will defend your place on the step of the spiral staircase leading to heaven, that you will defend it against all enemies, for it is your place and your attainment, and that you will not allow yourself to be displaced.

Understand, beloved, that those who would receive me unto themselves must know the example of this Messenger, that in receiving myself she herself has borne [a portion of the world’s] hatred of myself in her body and in her life. Therefore when you see a reflection of burden or sternness or solemnness or even determination and much silence, understand that this is what it takes to bear that opposition.

Yet the Messenger knows, as you know, that unless the Divine Mother come into embodiment on earth, unless you also with her shall receive [unto yourselves] the Archeia, this earth will not long endure. For it is the Mother Flame that keeps alive evolutions, civilizations and planets.

Therefore, though the price be high, there is no choice but to pay it when it is time for you to do so. And no true initiate on the Path has ever, beloved, denied that descent of the next initiation. For, you see, there is nowhere else to go; for once it is your turn to be the initiate, if you do not take the step, then the force, who knows the step you should have taken, will attack you [at that level] nonetheless. [To take the next step may require courage, beloved, and fearlessness, but with the acceptance of the initiation comes the protection that goes with it. And this protection will be sustained as long as you maintain your harmony.]

Therefore the Messenger’s motto long ago, which still stands, is this: “The only way to go is up!” Therefore be comforted, beloved, for you are on a spiral staircase and you need take but one step at a time.

I am here this evening, beloved, because some of you have failed to take those steps in the past year, preferring to remain on a lesser rung. I am here to inform you that all of your plans and all of your desires to do this and that and create supply for yourselves and the Church and many other plans will come to naught unless you integrate yourself fully with your own personal path of initiation.

Believe me, beloved, that the Maha Chohan, Jesus Christ, El Morya, myself and others of the ascended brethren will come to you the moment you determine to shuffle off one ring of the mortal coil. Only thus shall you know the flame of immortality before you shall rise to other heights at the conclusion of this life.

May your rising be the true resurrection and the true ascension. For this purpose I have come. And I shall be there at Summit University, for I shall be wherever the Messenger is.

I will prepare you for the fusion with your Christ Self so that you may also bear the burden of my Mother Flame. This, the sword Excalibur, remains that which may be committed to the son or the daughter of God who is prepared to wield it and to defend it.

I make, therefore, the sign of the cross. And I touch you each one in preparation for that day and date when you also might be knighted and be received as ladies of the flame.

I commend your keeping this night unto the Sacred Heart of Jesus, our Lord and Saviour.

This dictation by Mother Mary was delivered by the Messenger Elizabeth Clare Prophet at the conclusion of the Christmas Eve Candlelight Vigil, December 24, 1990.

## 47.1 I AM the Witness - December 9, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 48 - I AM the Witness - December 9, 1990

I AM the Witness

Dear Chelas on the Path of the Ascension,

It is with joy and fervor in my heart that I shall tell you the true story of my mother and her glorious day of overcoming. For what I have to recount is truly likened unto the miracle of the Divine Mother and her appearing in this age.

My mother was born with several holes in her heart and doctors told her parents that she would not reach the age of twenty-one and would certainly never have children. Well . . . what did they know anyway? Not only did she produce three children and live to see her fifty-ninth birthday, but also she received from God the impartation of a Mighty Will and inner fortitude whereby she defied her physical condition throughout her life.

Upon doctors' instruction she was forbidden to run and play as other children, to avoid placing undue strain on her heart. There was always the risk that she might go into heart failure. Instead she directed her attention to higher pursuits, namely a rigorous study of classical piano (which would eventually culminate in her attaining the Diploma of Music) and dedication to the Catholic faith. From the age of six she displayed an extraordinary devotion to Mother Mary and the Rosary. While her sisters played with dolls, she could be found kneeling by her bedside, quietly saying the Rosary.

At age eight, she received a visitation from Our Lady, who expressed her happiness and approval with her daily offerings to the Lord. She also impressed upon my mother's soul the importance of daily recitation of the Rosary for World Peace. She appeared at the foot of her bed, smiling with a garland of pink roses around her head. As a teenager whilst she practiced the piano for hours each day, her younger sister would often hear her playing halt, and silence would pervade from the music room. Sometimes she would sneak up to the door, place her eye to the keyhole and to her surprise there my mother would be, with her Rosary beads, giving the Rosary.

After finding the teachings of the Ascended Masters in 1985, she experienced a gradual decline in her health with signs of weakness more evident. She suffered recurring fluid retention (mainly in her ankles) due to her heart condition, which in turn weakened her kidney function. But her faith and devotion to the Rosary was unremitting as she battled a frail body. One of her favorite sayings was "With God all things are possible."

With her prayers she was as dependable as the sunrise. She would say, "My I AM Presence wakes me up each morning." As a child I have vivid recollections of times when I would be experiencing difficulties and I would ask her to include the matter in her novenas to Our Lady. Always the answer would be forthcoming.

In the summer of 1989, we attended Summit University, Lanto's Quarter. During the twelve months prior to that time, my mother had been saying fourteen rosaries every day (the Child's Rosary to Mother Mary) and without fail I might add!

But it was not until Christmas Day of 1989 that my mother began to suffer a serious relapse.

I returned home shortly after New Years and was shocked to see her. Her face was puffy and swollen, and from the hips downward her legs had blown up with fluid. We tried every natural

remedy available to reduce her chronic dropsy - herbal teas, reflexology, acupuncture, massage, mineral supplements - en a visit to the osteopath. She was bedridden most of the time, ate very little and required constant care. Fortunately we were able to procure some fresh raw goat's milk, which she practically lived on, and she said, "It is the only food I am able to enjoy." She also took great delight in our African violets which had burst into bloom.

Eventually she showed little sign of recovery and was too debilitated to even decree. She told me that one day she had almost drifted asleep while saying her "Michaels" and that she had heard Satan laughing at her.

She would walk half a dozen paces and be trembling and breathless. Although she was terrified about going into a hospital because she was highly allergic to drugs, finally we had no alternative. She suffered too much discomfort and distress.

My mother lasted three days in the hospital and passed away at 5:30 a.m. on the third morning, in her sleep, February 21, 1990.

However, greater things were in store for us all. I shall never forget the precious morning of her passing. I called to Mother Mary, said four rosaries consecrating her Victory and asked to be given a sign as to whether she had made the transition safely.

Shortly after 10:00 a.m., I walked out onto my balcony, looked up and, behold, directly above the hospital, high in the etheric formed out of strato-cirrus clouds, was my mother's face. It was as though the heavens themselves had opened, such was the light released that morning.

The air was serene and crystal clear with white clouds resembling angel wings. There she was, suspended for all to see, perfectly etched out in ecstasy with an aura of radiance around her head. As though she had just awakened, the left side of her hair appeared flat where her head had been lying against the pillow. She looked very much as she did in her early twenties, pure and transfigured in her seamless wedding garment. I knew that I would never again speak with her in mortal tones, but to see her veiled in exquisite glory truly brought me to tears. 'Twas such a moving experience.

She remained there for some twenty minutes while I ran for my camera. I managed to take a photograph . . . don't ask me how, as I fumbled and fidgeted with the contraption.

And then, before my very eyes, another face began to emerge from the clouds. This time the face of a man whom I had never seen before, slightly above and to her right side. He was young, yet ancient and of noble countenance, wearing a more impersonal expression, neither smile nor frown.

It was her twin flame and he held his fingers above her head in a "V" for Victory. Then the breeze picked up with a whisper of a whistle and the whole cloud formation moved towards me. His face enlarged and became clearer until he was almost directly above me. My own mother's face began to fade and in a commanding gesture he looked down upon me. He gazed deeply into my eyes, yet into my soul for several minutes. Then his image was swept back into the clouds. In that moment I knew that my mother was free in the Light of her Presence.

Several days later I picked up a Pearl of Wisdom I had just received. It was a dictation by beloved Jesus delivered through the Messenger, Elizabeth Clare Prophet, on Christmas Day 1989. The words seemed to leap at me from the page.

Behold the Ascended Master Moses, whom you have called God Ling. Behold him in your midst this day, for he was once your deliverer and your saviour. . . .

Thus, going to the mountain, looking on the other side and seeing the Promised Land but not entering in, this was the fate of Moses. I say to you, beloved, you stand on the mountain and you look beyond. And somehow in the mists of the sky and the moment of dawn or dusk you see into the etheric octave, you see the Promised Land. . . .

It is true, no man knoweth his own measure, and it is well. For the suffering servant, the humble



servant and the burden-bearer, surely does awake in the glory of the garments of the Son of God.

...

Praise be to God the Father, I AM THAT I AM, and to his Word Eternal.

For to you dear Mother, I AM the Witness.

Yours sincerely,



# Chapter 48

## Beloved Jesus Christ - December 16, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 49 - Beloved Jesus Christ - December 16, 1990

Become Agents of the Cosmic Christ!

I, Jesus, Have Called You

The Perfecting of the Soul as My Apostle

The Lord's Christmas Day Address 1990

Please Feed My Sheep!

Now from the heart of a cosmos I greet you, beloved, in this hour that you keep the vigil for the servants of God upon earth. I am come to you even as I ensoul the planet in my garments this day.

I come, then, holding the balance in the earth for all conditions untoward you observe and some you do not. I come that I might extend to you even the thread of contact with my heart whereby you should also become agents of the Cosmic Christ to hold this balance to that end and for that purpose that the children of the Light might enter in to this sheepfold.

These are the "other sheep"<sup>1</sup> and therefore these souls are gathered. I place my seal upon them but you must be myself as shepherd to go out and gather them.

Therefore all [of you] on this staff and beyond who have no better occupation shall now be God-taught that you might become spokesmen for the Great White Brotherhood, for myself [and] even for Magda.

Blessed ones, the Law has decreed that the hour may no longer advance that you are not equipped to speak the Word, to comfort, to counsel, to admonish, to raise up and to carry that child-man across the rapids and ultimately across the sea of samsara.

I am with you in this hour by the magnet of Love of the Great Central Sun. I demagnetize from you all those things of which you desire to be delivered,<sup>2</sup> those things which you are through with, throughly so.

Yes, beloved, if you can say to this or that state of consciousness, "Have done with it! I want it no longer!" and mean it with the fire of your heart, I will take it this day. Surely I shall. For the night is o'er, the day is come and it is the day of gladness of the Christ's descent into your temple.

---

<sup>1</sup>John 10:16.

<sup>2</sup>Ascended Masters' English usage. Frequently, English usage of past centuries comes into play in Ascended Master dictations. Here the Master chooses to use the phrase "things of which you desire to be delivered." Although in current usage, the words from which would normally be used (in the sense that one is "delivered from" something), The Oxford English Dictionary shows the "of which" form as obsolete. In former times, the phrase delivered of was often used to mean "to be set free from, released from, rescued from."

I am that Christ! You are that Christ-potential emerging now into the fullness of your mission. The signs in the heavens and the earth all point to this day as the day of the Son of God appearing in you. Therefore let your mouths be unstopped! Let your ears be unplugged! Let your tongues receive the fire of seraphim<sup>3</sup> to consume all misuses of the spoken Word!

I, Jesus, have called you. And in this hour you shall be my manifestation where'er you go. This opportunity comes to you, beloved. Therefore I bid you to ride the crest of the wave; for when the wave of this dispensation moves on, it shall no longer be a choice. And therefore, fit into the cosmic scheme else jeopardize your mission and enter the possibility of becoming misfits insofar as the divine scheme is concerned.

There is a great panorama of life. This panorama unfolding is a giant mural that is in the grand hall of a magnificent building upon Sirius. Before you left that God Star aeons ago, you did study that mural and all of its portents for your life and the future. It does present on succeeding walls in other halls options and turning points, [showing] what shall be the outcome for those who choose a lesser path and what shall be the glory of the Lord upon those who continue to mount, to exert themselves, to move up on the high road, first through the foothills and the mountains and then on to the high places of solitude where only God and man are known.

Therefore, the consequences of all actions and turnings have been made known to all sons and daughters of God and even to the children of the Light in their time and season. Each one in his own heart and time is a prophet of his destiny, for he does read the same record written in his inward parts. And therefore, the consequences of choices are always known and people know what they should have done even at the time they did not do it.

Therefore, beloved, there is indeed a tide in the affairs of men and angels. I come on that tide of Light. I do even ensoul it.

May you contemplate how you can best deliver the message that has been brought to you. May you begin to write the story of your own conviction, your own conversion, your own inner knowing of your I AM Presence, your own confirmation of this path by your own telling and intelling of that Word that you have heard resounding from the altar yet which also originates with your own Spirit of the I AM.

May you come to understand how you came to know the truth of the mysteries of God. Contemplate step-by-step what was required for you and then you will understand what many souls need as points of transition and understanding and then a lessening of the intensity - a going within, a retreat perhaps, a coming to the ranch.

Yes, beloved, souls have need of the necessary food and light and contact with the stars and a great sense of Love and belonging to the Mystical Body of God, which is in truth in heaven and on earth. By compassion and the flame of Love, by identifying with individuals who are at a certain place on the Path, you may personally assemble those teachings that you know are pivotal as turning points in the way.

This is surely the hour for the perfecting of the soul as my apostle. I call you to this, beloved, because it is the hour. It is a cosmic moment when this opportunity is come.

I tell you, my beloved, that I would bring to you the understanding of the first resurrection.<sup>4</sup> The power of that resurrection, beloved, is given to you by the Spirit of the Resurrection when you use the mantra of the resurrection written down by your beloved Mark.

Take that mantra, together with my mantra - "I AM the Resurrection and the Life!" - and know that resurrection's flame must first burn in your heart congruent with the threefold flame and then [it must] ignite the cells and atoms that have become chalices for that wavelength, [thereby] igniting

---

<sup>3</sup>Isa. 6:5-8.

<sup>4</sup>Rev. 20:4-6.

the chakras. Thus prepare this body temple [by resurrection's flame], by violet flame and by the pure water and the pure diet that you need.

Thus, beloved, understand that you may walk the earth in the Spirit of the Resurrection, but the true initiation of the resurrection will come to you only after you have sought and achieved that fusion [of your soul] with your Holy Christ Self and that fusion with myself. For when you contain the fires of the resurrection, beloved, you possess the power (given unto you as an endowment) whereby you may endow other parts of life with a semipermanent immortality, [albeit] that full immortality is not defined until the ascension is attained.

But, beloved, if you desire the ascension, you must seek the resurrection. And if you desire the resurrection and to walk the earth as a resurrected one, then, beloved, you must seek that fusion [of your heart with my heart].

I will tell you about [the soul] who achieves the fusion and another who does not. The one who achieves it has a sense of her own sinfulness, her own uncleanness and her own worthlessness in that lowly estate of the flesh yet, confident in noble purpose and design from Elohim, [she] does embrace the true identity of self and does break the shackles and the barriers and the confinements and the prison house of the psychology of the lower self.

[She] does seek to enter in, does weave the wedding garment, does perfect that seamless garment day by day, does remember that the manifestation, though it may be in the lowly estate of the flesh, yet contains that pearl, yet contains the fire; and therefore [she] does amplify that fire, makes no pretense at being perfect but understands that I AM the All and that [I AM the] perfection in her - that the lesser vessel is the nothing while I AM the All.

I have given this teaching to Catherine<sup>5</sup> and other saints. Those who have truly understood it have not felt debased when they acknowledged that they were the nothing and that I, the Christ in them, was the All. For they understood the process of displacement, the process of transmutation; and therefore [they] could come into the dignity and the integrity of the son, the daughter of God.

These are they who have received the washing of the feet and the cleansing of the blood. These are they who enter into that fusion by adoration, by love, by tears and by washing my feet with those tears and with the hair.

Beloved ones, I tell you, the one who does not enter in is the one who trots about with the self-image that the definition of chela is perfection. But [in that one's mind] the quality of perfection is not the perfecting of the heart but the perfecting of performance, the perfecting of movement, the perfecting of speech.

Now, if this [perfecting of modes] were done to the glory of God and [according] to the true inner and deep understanding of the indwelling Light, it would be a worthy goal. But those of whom I speak are those who come and go like marionettes, even marionettes; and therefore stiff, stiff-jointed, stiffed in their mentality, they march about with a sense of spiritual pride, which they ignore that they have at all. They have no sense that they have missed the point and they cannot get through the eye of the needle any more than the camel can pass through.<sup>6</sup>

This is the mechanization-man response to the path of chelaship. It is an incorrect response, beloved, and it ends [where it began], in spiritual pride and ultimately in the "breaking" of that one, for the fire [of the heart] is not developed. [This response] is [born of mortal man's self-idolatry and his] desire to be a computer and a computerized one, a ["perfect"] robot creation! [It is born of thinking man's<sup>7</sup> desire not to think.]

The foundation of such individuals at the unconscious level is the absolute hatred of God in all

---

<sup>5</sup>God the All, I the nothing. See p. 405 n. 5.

<sup>6</sup>Matt. 19:24; Mark 10:25; Luke 18:25.

<sup>7</sup>Homo sapiens [Homo, from Latin 'man' + sapiens, from Latin 'wise', 'intelligent']: thinking man.

manifestations. And therefore there is an anger that impels such individuals and that anger truly demands that God compensate them for their physical, mental, material perfection and receive them into his kingdom. Without knowing it, beloved, these ones fasten themselves to fallen angels; for [in describing the one who does not enter in] I have described the chela of the fallen angels.

Beloved ones, you must understand that the last mark of such as these is noncommunication. They do not communicate with the Guru. They do not attain true communication with my heart, but they go about being “perfect people” instead of recognizing that the matrix of human perfection must be shattered. That clay pot must be broken and there must emerge the free-form spirit who moves with the Holy Spirit wheresoever it listeth,<sup>8</sup> who enters into that Holy Spirit and therefore does manifest the perfection of the will of the Father and the Son, does manifest that wisdom and that Light and so is in congruency [with the All].

And that perfection is alive! It is moving! It is not mechanical. And it bears the mark of the Light and the lilt of those who truly know that joy wherein they can say, “There is no more night here.”<sup>9</sup>

Let those chelas who are imitating the fantasy of the fallen ones and the ways of mechanization man cease to do so! Let those who admire the world and its levels of a material perfection remember that [the worldly] have not entered in, lo, in aeons! Yet they may perform well. They may be thought well of. They may appear to have genius. But where genius leaves off, beloved, there is the Mind of Christ and many do not have it.

May you understand that noncommunication is a sign of the suppression of the Word itself and [of] the denial of that Word. Noncommunication of the truth, of the details necessary to move on in life and to make an organization run. Noncommunication with the heart of the Ascended Masters, with loved ones, with friend or stranger or with the Messenger.

This noncommunication, beloved, indicates that there is no tie, there is a cutoff. And in that state of consciousness individuals think that salvation may be won by moving about in a robotic manner; and [then] they become angry when, though they may be robotically perfect, they have failed to please their God. Such was the consciousness of Cain, and his offering was rejected.<sup>10</sup>

I find it necessary to speak this message to all who will come to this place on the Path where they must make the effort in the full fervor of the fire of the heart to transcend that former state of the condition of Homo sapiens and enter in to the true walk, the inner walk with God - moving from the known quantity of the mechanics of a mechanical creation to the unknown realms of the free form and the absolute God-freedom of the electron itself that is the sign of the son of God who is never out of alignment with God’s will or geometry and yet is ever new, ever creative, ever approaching the same equation with new input and new energy and moving on with the cycles [of God’s perfection, not man’s]!

For that one knows that nothing can ever be the same as [it was] yesterday. Yesterday is not good enough, for the earth and the entire galaxy have moved on at tremendous speeds into new dimensions, wavelengths, timetables, options.

Thus, beloved, know the signs! Follow your beloved Melchior<sup>11</sup> and understand that in many instances astrology does tell you the limits to as well as the unlimited potential for freedom of creative action. See to it that you are in attunement [with the ebb and flow of cycles] and that you ride the crest of this wave!

---

<sup>8</sup>John 3:8.

<sup>9</sup>Rev. 21:25; 22:5.

<sup>10</sup>Gen. 4:1-7.

<sup>11</sup>The Ascended Master El Morya was embodied as Melchior, one of the three wise men who journeyed to give adoration to the Christ Child. These three adepts from the East charted the exact time and place of Jesus’ birth by astrology. “. . . We have seen his star in the East and are come to worship him” (see Matt. 2:1-12).

I am Jesus, your Lord. I have come to call you to be my shepherds. I have come to compel you!<sup>12</sup> I have come to warn you that you who have not studied my Calls<sup>13</sup> as they have been released in cycles of dictations may come to this place [of my present Call] where you consider yourself not ready.

Beloved, that is not an acceptable state of consciousness. If you are not ready, you must get ready in the next five minutes! Do you understand?

You must make that five minutes five hundred or five thousand years but you must decide that there is a coiled spring in your Causal Body that can be unleashed as soon as you will declare:

There is no more night here!  
For I AM the manifestation of that Holy City where I AM!  
And I do not procrastinate my union with my God  
Or with that City [Foursquare]  
Or with my Christ or with my Divine Mother.  
I enter the Spirit of the Resurrection now!  
And if in my tardiness and in my dalliance  
My entering in may cause me some pain,  
Then I welcome it!  
For I understand that if I would be ready,  
Then the spirit that is anti the living Christ in me  
Must be broken!

Blessed ones, the times and the cycles come again and again but they are never the same. We have spoken and spoken again. The reward for our speaking must be with us and in hand. And if you would tie yourself to that moving star of destiny above you, then you must do it quickly. For the stars of destiny move on. They are bright in the heavens in this moment, but there may come a period in the earth when the earth itself should go through the Dark Night of the Spirit when you will not see the star. You will see it only in the memory of God.

Understand this principle and understand that there is indeed an urgency. There is a warning and things are brewing in the earth. And all that I can tell you of prophecy in this hour is that when things happen in the earth, from this day forward they will happen swiftly and suddenly. And all of your preparation will have had to have preceded those events, for there will be no time to prepare or to react but only to be.<sup>14</sup>

Be, then, in the heart of the Buddha, in the stupa of the Buddha. Make your own Causal Body of Light and your aura that haven, that resting place, that place of samadhi and [that place of] the invocation of the Word, its intonation in the sound of the Om. May you contain in your space the house of the Buddha.

What do I say? I say, let the aura be expanded! Let it be increased by the fire of the Kundalini, by the fire of the chakras! Use the fire you have while you have that Light! Expand the dimensions of your auric field so that you do contain the whole house of the Buddha where you are and so that in that canopy and forcefield of Light there may enter lesser souls from various planes who may be shielded in the day of the LORD's appearing.<sup>15</sup>

For in the day of the LORD there is a tremendous Light and cosmic burst of energy, and it is for the annihilation of the [mechanization-man] misusers of the Light. And it is for the clearing of the entire material cosmos for the descent of the Buddhas and Bodhisattvas of Maitreya, of Gautama, of Sanat Kumara and of myself.

---

<sup>12</sup>Luke 14:23.

<sup>13</sup>The Calls of Jesus Christ. See p. 244.

<sup>14</sup>Matt. 24:15-18; Mark 13:14-16.

<sup>15</sup>See p. 594 n. 28.

Yes, beloved, I come to you now as you see me in the posture of my Buddhahood<sup>16</sup> - that you might see about me and in me those rings of Light and that presence which you think of when you think of Lord Gautama. I reveal myself to you, then, in the Buddhist presence that you might hold that image of me, for those of the Christian world will not. And therefore there must be some who understand the meaning of my Buddhahood. There must be some who aspire to be Bodhisattvas that they might be linked to the layers of my Causal Body that are my Buddha manifestation.

Therefore know the path of the Bodhisattva. Know the sweetness and the compassion, the peace, the fierceness, the strength, the virya!<sup>17</sup> Know the wisdom. Know the ability to rule the city because you rule yourself.<sup>18</sup> Know the geometry of God and expand [your soul-awareness] into it as a Michelangelo.

Understand that you can know many things beyond what happens to be in your outer [conscious] mind. Yes, you can contact the level of genius. And if you do not have [that level of genius developed in your four lower bodies], then let the violet flame consume all records of anger and hatred and fear [that prevent its development]! For these [vibrations], beloved, do surely consume the fineness [and the refinement] of the Mind of God within you - that piercing quality, that manifestation [of needlelike rays] that is able to probe a cosmos and bring back discovery and new dimensions of thought.

You have been limited by fallen ones and by yourselves. No longer accept the limited condition! You need not. For when you step forth from this body you wear, when the day comes that you are called to enter into the octaves of Light and in the twinkling of an eye you have all knowledge of all things in God, your I AM Presence, you will say to yourself:

“I should have made more fervent fiats to break this sound and mental barrier that existed around me as iron bands! I could have walked the earth in a greater fullness of my Christhood had I only recognized that the laws were there to be applied and the call was there to be given. And therefore I could have been more [the manifestation] of God if I had only transcended the density of the lesser self.”

You will wish that you had embodied more of God when there is no longer opportunity, for you shall have been called to the resurrection and the ascension.

Thus, beloved, I bid you this greeting and this message in this hour that you might understand once and for all that heaven is ready to bestow upon you truly bowers of loveliness in an eternal springtime. If you can think of the most beautiful day of spring [you can imagine] and the songs of the birds and the blossoms and the sun in the heavens and all of the joy of Nature, think, then, of the etheric octave.

Think, then, of that opportunity that you do have in this hour. Think, then, of walking and

---

<sup>16</sup>Jesus' Buddhahood. At the conclusion of his New Year's Eve Address, December 31, 1989, Gautama Buddha announced: "Blessed ones, may I present to you as I take my leave of you the Lord Buddha Jesus Christ, the Lord Buddha Kuthumi, who stand before you fully arrayed in their Buddhahood and [fully capable of] taking you on the long, long yet very short journey to your own Buddhahood" (p. 26, this volume). The Messenger writes in her Introduction to the 1984 Pearls of Wisdom: "Christic initiation is a prerequisite to Buddhist initiation. And Jesus is our Saviour who, with Kuthumi, has saved our souls so that we may enter the highest path, following their example all the way to the gate of the City of Light. But look again, for these beloved World Teachers have also attained to their Buddhahood and thus they are fully empowered to take us all the way to the throne of Shamballa, East and West" (1984 PoW, Book I, Introduction I, p. 40). See also pp. 253, 355, this volume.

<sup>17</sup>The virtues of the Bodhisattva: kindness, fearless compassion and virya. See Elizabeth Clare Prophet, 1984 PoW, Book II, Introduction II, "The Path of the Bodhisattva: The Historical Maitreya," pp. 3-16 (also pp. 3-12, this volume). And "The Age of Maitreya," October 28, 1990, on videocassette, HP90113; 2 audiocassettes, A90038. The word virya (Sanskrit) is variously translated as "vigor," "energy," "strength," "manliness," "zeal," "power," "diligence." In Buddhist teachings, virya is one of the ten paramitas ("perfect virtues") that one must practice and perfect as a prerequisite to the attainment of Bodhisattvahood.

<sup>18</sup>Prov. 16:32; 25:28.



talking with me. Think of what we must do to gather these souls of Light. Think of it, beloved, for they are called and they are touched.

Now I say, please gather them! Please feed my sheep! For it is the law of the cosmos that those in this octave must do the gathering. I can do all things and many things for you and through you but you and only you can feed my sheep.<sup>19</sup>

Let us take stock, then, each one, in this hour. Let there be the rejection of negatives as limitations instead of in the sense of the condemnation of sin. Simply look at that which limits you and see how it is a creation of the mind or other minds and of programming. I, Jesus, say to you, you are with God and in God the Limitless One. May you discover this and become an avatar.<sup>20</sup>

Yes, I said “become.” For the process of becoming is the realization in outer manifestation of that which is, was and ever shall be your true [inner] God-manifestation. Therefore I have unveiled many levels of my Christhood and [my] Buddhahood and my Godhood along life’s way, and this is the nature of the grand evolutionary spiral of life throughout a cosmos.

Let the mechanization-man concept of religion tell you that Christ simply is and I will say that even the I AM THAT I AM is not simply that which is. For the I AM THAT I AM is ever moving and even as I speak the Word, the I AM THAT I AM has transformed itself a million times and released all manner of Light rays [and spirals of the Mind of God]. There is nothing but progressive revelation and [progressive] realization of God where you are.

Do not impede the process, beloved, and do not let yourself calcify in a certain mold from now until the hour of your victory.<sup>21</sup> For if you do, beloved, you may not have the victory over Death and Hell; for calcification is the signal and the sign that you have sealed yourself at a certain level. All who do this enter the spiral of mortality - of disintegration, disease and death.

Therefore know this, that your challenge as a son of God, which you are, is to move on in the creative spirals of being every single day and to not accept the defeats of yesterday or its limitations as having any power over the sun at dawn, the sun of your Christ Self, which rises every day from dawn to the zenith of the heavens, whereupon you cry out:

O LORD, I AM THAT I AM  
The fullness of thy Resurrection and thy Life  
within me this day!  
And I AM alive forevermore in Thee  
And in the Central Sun and in the earth!  
Behold, I AM with Lanello:  
Everywhere in the consciousness of God!

I bid you a joyous Christ Mass, ever unfolding unto the fullness of the Christ in you, Amen.

This dictation by Jesus Christ was delivered by the Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood Elizabeth Clare Prophet on Christmas Day, December 25, 1990, at the Royal Teton Ranch, Park County, Montana. The Messenger’s scriptural reading prior to Jesus’ dictation was Revelation 1:1-8; 20; 21. The service and dictation are available on videocassette (1 hr. 15 min., HP91003) and audiocassette (2 hr., B91002-B91003). [N.B. Throughout this Pearl, bracketed material denotes words unspoken yet implicit in the dictation, added by the Messenger under Jesus’ direction for clarity in the written word.] Throughout these notes PoW is the abbreviation for Pearls of Wisdom.

---

<sup>19</sup>John 21:15-17.

<sup>20</sup>avatar [Sanskrit avatara ‘descent’, from avatarati ‘he descends’, from ava- ‘away’ + tarati ‘he crosses over’]: a divine incarnation.

<sup>21</sup>The hour of victory. Every soul of Light has a destined day of victory. If one fulfills all things required of him by God, he will achieve his victory on that day. If not, that day will find him unprepared and will pass like any other day.

## 48.1 I AM the Witness - December 16, 1990

Vol. 33 No. 49 - I AM the Witness - December 16, 1990

I AM the Witness

Christmas Eve is very special to me - not only for the birthday celebration of our beloved Jesus but also for the birth of another great soul on December twenty-four - Mark L. Prophet!

How did I come to know him?

It was in Washington, D.C., back in the years of World War II (1944-1945) that my husband and I were still searching for spiritual sustenance of a higher nature than we had found in the regular Christian churches.

He was very ill in a D.C. Veterans' Hospital much of those years before he made his transition in December of 1945 at the early age of forty-seven.

Alone in the big city, without friends, working to support my family of two boys, seven and eleven years of age, I decided to look through a magazine of a national organization we belonged to and find some lady with whom I could converse on mutual topics of spiritual value.

Checking through the list of officers I liked the name Christel and decided to call her.

A lively little Aquarian, she became a very close friend to this Leo! She told me of "this young man who was going to do wonders for the world." His name was Mark Prophet!

It was the beginning of my knowledge of blessed Mark. Christel told him about me when he came to see her in D.C. Of course I was working so could not meet him. Our first contact was through letters and small Webcor recordings.

From a child beloved Jesus had always seemed to be my guide but I was always eager to learn more. Many of my experiences were of a transcendental nature, but ministers I asked could not give me any knowledge I sought.

As a teacher I have always loved children but could never understand why one baby was born crippled while another was strong and healthy. Why should they come into the world so diverse in ability to cope with life? The Christian church answer I received was, "It's God's will." Why would God have preferences as a loving father? I wasn't satisfied!

Through an unusual experience together, my husband and I began to realize the Bible in its pristine origin had been deprived of the key - reemodiment!

Mark Prophet not only had the answers but a great spiritual understanding of God's Word. He also had the contact with the Ascended Masters. Now I could get the knowledge I was seeking!

After my husband's transition in 1945, I moved to Oklahoma, where I worked as a music teacher and camp director at the Sand Springs Home near Tulsa. I later became supervisor of the home and was responsible for over 100 orphans.

During the fifties Mark guided many of us by the precious Ashram Notes - special rituals for developing our service to the Light!

Each Ashram was to have seven members if possible and serve as a prayer group. I liked to think of them all over the nation as little candles of God, dedicated as a beginning to enlighten the world as Christel had told me Mark was to do!

Mark sent messages to us with prayer directions to pray for various problems of the nation or individuals needing help. There was also the "Order of the Child" which he established and with my life dedicated to children I kept the pledge in my music studio and I still cherish being a member of the Order!

Up until this time we had not met personally - just many letters and small tape conversations.

Mark decided to make a nationwide tour that took him through Oklahoma. I arranged for a meeting in Tulsa at my friend's home and for his stay at my cottage in Sand Springs.

Now it must be remembered that up to this time I had only seen a picture of Mark taken during his high school days.

One of the first questions he asked me was, "What do you think of me?" It really was a similar question that Jesus asked his disciples, "Whom say ye that I am?" Of course the final answer came from Peter, "Thou art the Christ, the son of the living God."

After all the years of working with Mark and knowing his great spiritual devotion I should have sensed the deeper meaning of his question. I admit to the density of the human mind that blinds the spiritual! I shall never forget his look of complete disappointment of my assessment of him when I answered, "I'm surprised you have some gray hair." Why, oh why, did my human take over when my soul knew he was the appointed Messenger of this age!

I say it now - "Mark, you are a special son of God!"

I remember his stature, his face with the long, firm chin, his eyes so direct and penetrating and the large, beautiful hands and their strong, friendly handshake.

At the Tulsa meeting I experienced his great enthusiasm for the Ascended Masters' dictations that he had received. He not only played one but several and it was after midnight when he finished! It was actually too much for the small group gathered that evening as they had never been introduced to the Ascended Masters before. However there was one who fully appreciated the dictations, my dear friend, Shirley, my only Ashram member! We kept the vigil for that part of Oklahoma!

On a subsequent tour of the country he brought Elizabeth and baby Sean to Sand Springs where I lived. I had looked forward to the visit with great anticipation! It was in 1964 during one of those typically hot Oklahoma summer days! My morning was spent preparing a spotless house and making it as cool as possible.

My refrigerator was stocked with vegetables for a salad, and the very best steaks I could purchase, with milk for baby Sean! (We had not yet changed our diets for better physical and spiritual attainment.) Shortly past mid-afternoon they arrived with Thomas. I became so absorbed in conversation with Mark that I even forgot to offer the accommodations of a restroom or anything to eat! Mark never wanted for something to talk about!

Finally it grew late and he mentioned that they were getting hungry and where could they find a place to eat! They had to be on their way! Alas! There was no time to prepare a meal so I took them to a cafeteria near by. It was as though their presence made me forget the mundane needs of the hour in preference to all the pleasure of a spiritual rapport! Beloved Elizabeth with little Sean in her arms sat quietly while Mark did most of the talking, but my love for her was immediate and has continued throughout the years in sincerity and devotion.

One time after I sent a reel to Mark he phoned me and said something that pleased me no end. "We're going to be working together later on, Ruth."

In October 1964 there was a conference in Washington, D.C. It was held in a hotel near a railroad station. Possibly 25 or 30 attended. This was the first one I ever attended. Christel and I had planned to have dinner together when I arrived the day before the conference. When I reached D.C., Mark explained that she had been taken ill. She had refused to go to the hospital as he had advised her to do and had flown to Georgia to be with her daughter.

Late that night he called me and I went down from my hotel room to see him in his car and learned she had passed on and that she was in the Hall of Luxor with Serapis Bey. She did not make her ascension but reembodied to continue her mission into the New Age.

While at the conference I told Mark of my husband's appearing to me after his transition. Mark questioned me. "How do you know it was Matt?" "Well, I thought to myself, I guess I would know my own husband." But, I didn't say anything. I'm sure Mark read my mind which he was very capable of doing. He then gave me a warning. "Be careful, Ruth, as the astral beings can imitate our relatives and friends and appear as the real person but it's dangerous because you can get caught in the astral. So be careful!"

This advice was to hold me in good stead later on when I had an experience that made me glad that I remembered what he had said. One night it seemed that I was on the "other side" talking with my husband in a beautiful green meadow. He put his arms around me and said, "I want you to stay with me on this side." "Oh no! I can't! Remember I have the boys and I have to go back and I can't stay." Then he pulled me toward him and I began to struggle to free myself and then I looked into his face! Mark's words came back to me to beware! What was I looking into? Not my husband's face but a skull. I recognized it was an entity pulling me into the astral plane! I fought and fought! Finally when I came to, my heart was beating very fast and I feel sure, if I had not resisted, my children would have found me dead in the morning and the doctor would have pronounced the diagnosis as heart failure!

I can never thank Mark enough for his warning!

In November of 1965 I phoned Mark and Elizabeth to tell them that I was retiring as supervisor of the Sand Springs Home after twenty years service with children. I asked them if they wanted me to join them in the east or wait and join them in Colorado Springs. We decided it would be best to go to Colorado Springs.

On January 2, 1966, I drove into the Springs and contacted Elizabeth, who had already arrived. I met her for breakfast at the Broadmoor Hotel. La Tourelle, our new headquarters, was not yet available to us and we stayed at a house next door on Beech Street, the former residence of President Chester A. Arthur. After the meal we went to look at the house. Not realizing it was a short distance from the hotel I recall that we got a taxi and were surprised it was such a short ride as it was only a short block.

The Beech Street house was completely empty so Elizabeth contacted a motel owner who graciously brought us a table, chairs, refrigerator, cots and bedding. Fortunately I had "Betsy Nash," my faithful automobile of many years, so we were able to go about town.

I purchased some dishes and silverware at Woolworth's so we could at least eat our breakfast at the house. The noon meal of the day we ate at different restaurants. At that time we were not vegetarians and I noticed an ad at one place "Prime Rib." I thought it would be very nice to treat Elizabeth and so we went in. Strangely there were no ladies there and I noticed that the men stared at us! Later I found out it was one of "those places" on Nevada strip as Mark called it where ladies don't go! My apology to dear Mother!

Margaret joined us a day or so after I arrived. It was some days before Mark, baby Sean, Alexander, Anita, Thomas and the others came.

By that time the owner's secretary had left so we could have access to La Tourelle, the lovely mansion with the "Little Tower." It was empty of course and one night Mark took me over to show me through the house. While we were on the second floor at the top of the circular staircase Mark said, "Do you know who is with us?" and I said, "No." "El Morya is standing with us!" Oh! Was that a surprise! I couldn't see him with my eyes but the vibrations of his presence were very evident. The place was so large we both agreed that we'd never be able to fill it! But in a few months we were bulging at the seams.

I might say this about Mark in relation to the staff. His discipline was kind but strict. We had to carry a notebook at all times for any instructions he might give us as he passed through our department or in the halls. This was so he wouldn't have to repeat an assignment. We were to take

immediate action on the tasks he gave us and not put them off!

Mark expressed to me that he was under great pressure to train a strong staff that beloved Elizabeth could depend on before his transition, which he knew was not very far away.

One night I had an experience with the astral forces that was quite convincing! I awoke - I mean fully awake - and found myself paralyzed with vibrations of a mechanical nature rippling through my body from toes to head. I felt as though they would cause me to actually disintegrate! I could also hear the astral machines producing the terrible effect. I realized then and there something of what Mark and Elizabeth had been experiencing. I struggled to turn on the light but I couldn't move. I tried to call aloud to Jesus but I couldn't speak. And then I mentally called over and over, "Jesus, Jesus, Jesus, come and help me," and finally I was able to reach the bedside lamp. Once it was on, the spell was broken.

I told Mark about it the next morning. How he laughed that great big beautiful laugh and said I was beginning to learn about the astral plane!

Mark always brought all of the problems into the staff meetings. I recall one time when two of the ladies had had an altercation in the kitchen. He brought it right out into the open and asked, "Phoebe, why aren't you speaking to Lola?" Phoebe said, "If I don't talk I won't get into trouble." Mark replied, "There must be harmony in the kitchen!" He explained how important it is to have the right vibrations around the food we eat.

At another staff meeting he was commending each one of us for the improvements we were making. He would take one at a time to illustrate - possibly this one was making progress in not criticizing, etc. He was always admonishing "no CCJ," (criticism, condemnation and judgment). He said these were the very tools of destruction for many a church or family.

Another one he commended for better work organization, etc. Then he came to his secretary. Evidently she hadn't figured she had any room for improvement, so she bristled at his remark to her and rose from her seat accompanied by her sister. They proceeded to the library door to leave the meeting! Indignation was very evident in their attitude.

I shall never forget his firm command, "You come back here and sit down!" There was something in his voice when he said it that they decided to return to their seats. Then we received quite a lesson on ego, pride, resentment and those characteristics that keep us from spiritual development and should not be tolerated in ourselves as staff members or chelas of the Masters!

Alex and I served in the mail room which was directly under Mark's office. I had charge of the Pearls of Wisdom in a shoe box and Alexander had charge of the Keeper's lessons. Sometimes we would get to talking and often we would have a good laugh together. There was something about Alexander that would always set me off into gales of laughter.

One day he was telling me about getting a speeding ticket. We laughed and laughed and finally he said, "Don't tell Mark, will you?" About that time Mark came down the stairs and asked me, "What are you laughing about, Ruth?" "Well, I can't tell you. Alexander told me not to tell." "Alexander!!" in a firm tone. So Alexander told him about the ticket. "Well now, I don't think that's any laughing matter," was Mark's quick evaluation.

He had been trying to take a dictation of a "Pearl" or Keepers' lesson in his office. Attuned as he was to the Masters, you can see how in our ignorance the laughter was responsible for interfering with his concentration on taking the message.

There were nights in the kitchen with the "boys" when Mark and they would have long talks after decrees and often ended in wrestling bouts for fun. He thought of us as his family and was like a father to all of us!

The first year at La Tourelle I became ill with an unusual sore throat. I had checked with a

specialist and taken medicine but I grew worse and worse. Finally I was bedridden and couldn't work in the mail room. Mark came by to see me and did some powerful fiats. Would you believe it, but within the hour I was completely well and was working again! He told me the negative forces had intended to take me out as they didn't want me there to help! You fooled them that time didn't you, Mark!

While I was at the 1964 conference in Washington, Mark and I were discussing reincarnation, or reembodiment, and I told him that my husband could go over his embodiments like a moving picture and how he had been a priest in China. I said, "I don't think I've ever been in China." "Oh yes you have," Mark answered. "You were a teacher of writing there." He never told anyone about a past embodiment unless the Master allowed it. He felt it would help me to understand myself in this incarnation so he told me.

It correlated well with my aspirations in the seventh grade to become a penmanship teacher. I had won a button for handwriting by copying the whole Palmer Method book and was also awarded a teacher's certificate for perfection at that time, had I been old enough to teach. Later in life I had also taken a course in grapho-analysis so I did have a carryover of that Chinese embodiment. One day when I was eating dinner with Mark and Elizabeth, they both pointed to me and said at the same time, "She was a Quaker!" (As you know, Quakers often worship in silence without a minister or spoken prayer.) That explained why at the first conference I had absented myself from every decree session possible because I didn't like the speaking aloud. So I arranged to visit the art museum, the wax museum, anything to avoid the decree sessions!

Elizabeth asked me how I liked the conference. "Oh, I like the dictations. I really don't care for the decrees." She said, "Remember, Ruth, it wasn't until God spoke the Word that anything happened in creation." That made sense as I thought it over. The spoken Word must be very important. I can always thank Elizabeth for those words of wisdom as in my mind I had been thinking, "I wish they'd keep still so I can meditate to create the good!"

I recall a night before a performance of "A Visit to Grandfather's Farm" which I was supervising for the Montessori School which beloved Elizabeth was sponsoring for better education of children at La Tourelle. One of the young men was in charge of making the scenery, which consisted of a Swiss-type house and a railroad station. The farm house was finished except for putting tulips in the flower box but the station was not complete. It became evident the young man had suddenly taken off from the grounds without telling anyone as he was quite new to the teachings and he had had many pulls from acquaintances in town. Actually he was off to make a decision as to whether he wanted to stay or not.

I'll never forget Mark's fatherly concern for him and his relief when he returned and had come to a decision to stay. The project was finished and I might say the same young man is still with us, a real devotee of the Ascended Masters.

Mark was a stickler for detail so before one conference I wrote down all the questions and the answers I thought he would ask me concerning the mail department. Evidently my mind didn't run in the same channels as Mark's and the question he asked I couldn't answer and so I said, "I don't know." He seemed slightly irritated at the fact I didn't have the figures available and he let me have it right then and there! "Ruth, you never know anything!" I'm sure that some would have thought, "He can't talk to me that way in front of all these people. I won't stand for it! I'll just show him. I'll leave!" However, I knew better!! He always gave the admonishment when it was needed and when it would do the most good and sometimes I felt he deliberately did it to see what reaction he would get!

In my way of thinking he was the appointed Messenger and so I gave him the credit for knowing what he was doing, so to myself I said, "You'd better accept it as it may take care of a lot of karma you made in another incarnation - doing the same thing to someone else" - so I held absolutely no

resentment. Later he told me, "Ruth, I hate to chastise you because you always take it so well."

There was a lady in our art department who was getting a divorce from her husband and already had a man in mind to marry. Mark and Elizabeth had counseled with her and told her that if she married this man it would bring her great unhappiness. They asked her to wait on her decision until they returned from a trip abroad. She promised them and also made a vow to Saint Germain to hold off any marriage until their return. One day she came to the mail room waving some papers high above her head. "I have it, I have it! I have my divorce!" Shortly after, she married the man! She had broken her promise to Mark and Elizabeth and her vow to Saint Germain. Interestingly they had in view her twin flame for marriage! I might say here that when the Messengers gave a warning, as they did, it should have been heeded. Later on we found she was not even allowed to leave her home by a cruel husband and was practically a slave. Once she did manage to get to the center for a wedding of a friend. I remember when she came into the front hall how she threw herself weeping into my arms. That was the last time I saw her. She was learning a bitter lesson.

One day while going over some music in the sanctuary on the organ I sensed a beautiful soprano voice singing along toward the end of the piece that I was playing. When the last note was finished the voice continued to hold the tone somewhat longer and I looked around. No lady was in the room so I quickly went to the front hall, to the patio, to the library and then around the house to see who had been near the sanctuary. I accounted for all the ladies but none had been near.

When I returned to the sanctuary I noticed the recorder was on, so I found Al to turn it back so I could hear the music. Yes, the lovely voice was on the tape! I hurried to Mark and Elizabeth and they came and listened. Mark verified that it was an angel singing and explained how the voice manifested in this plane. I do wish we had had his explanation on tape as it has slipped my memory.

One lady from Kansas asked Mark about automatic writing. She was very interested in it and wanted to try some. Mark warned her of its dangers and advised her not to do it. She did not heed him and although she seemed a very stable sort of person, she began to express a complete change from her usual self. In writing to the church her letters began to show that she was under the influence of some evil entity. They contained swear words and obscene language - no sense at all! Eventually we heard from her pleading for help in a mental institution. Mark had warned her! Sadly she did not heed him.

Over the years I have seen the wisdom of following the admonishments of the Messengers even to their advice to staff members when they felt a physical operation was necessary. I recall one lady doctor on the staff who found she had breast cancer. Beloved Elizabeth suggested she have an operation but she believed she could take care of it by her own decrees and prayers.

Not all of us are at that high state of spirituality where we can take care of such problems without some physical medical help. Therefore the dear lady died and I strongly feel that she might be here today had she heeded Elizabeth's advice.

Over and over again I have seen that when the Messengers advise us it is best to heed their words. Those who have been told to have an operation, for example, and did are still with us! Those who thought they could do without one have passed on!

Mark had a wonderful sense of humor. He enjoyed telling stories for some point he was trying to make. One of his favorites was about the rabbi, the priest and the Christian Scientist who died and went to hell. After they arrived they questioned each other as to the problem that had brought them to their destination. It seemed the rabbi had eaten some ham, the priest had eaten meat on Friday. All this he told with much elaboration. When it came to asking the Christian Scientist why he was there, his reply was, "I'm not here!"

One thing Mark stressed with us was not to idolize him or Elizabeth. "As soon as you idolize us you will find some human trait that will knock us off the pedestal!" Numbers of times he emphasized this.

Then came the sad day when Ruth tearfully told me that Mark had been taken to the hospital that very morning. It was his time for transition. He had prepared me for it and I realized that our beloved Elizabeth would be taking over the complete work of the Ascended Masters here on earth. He had put every effort into developing a dedicated staff for her support. His work on this plane was finished but his service to us was not and it continues from the higher realms to this very day.

I shall never forget beloved Elizabeth as she carried out the memorial service for him with such love and dignity. After the final service and cremation at the Chapel of Rest on Fountain Drive, I went back to the mail room that evening to sort out the mail and I thought, "Shall I put Mark's mail in Elizabeth's box?" However I decided to put it in his box as usual. It had been his habit to check the mail daily and often he would reach into the middle of a stack and pull out a letter which had a problem such as a missing "Pearl" or Keepers' lesson. Immediately it had to be traced for any error on the part of the mail room staff.

On this particular night as I was putting the mail in his box I sensed a strong fragrance of musk perfume that Mark sometimes used. It was so very powerful that I motioned to Peter on the other side of the room to join me. "Do you smell what I do, Peter?" I asked. He shook his head, "Yes!" I said, "Mark is here!" We held out our hands as the vibrations were so intense. Gradually six or seven staff members just happened to come into the room. They all stood with outstretched hands bathed in his presence. Then the fragrance moved and they followed him all through the house.

Mark was always so appreciative of music. I can hear his booming voice singing "How Great Thou Art." One day as he was passing through the sanctuary I was practicing on the organ. He stopped and with such tenderness told me, "Ruth, I always love to hear you play." It filled me with such joy that after his passing I promised, "I am going to play the organ for you on Christmas Eve" (which is his birthday).

It happened that there was no service that night and I suddenly became aware of my promise. I was living at the Cheyenne Motel at the time because my room at the center had been taken for an office. "What shall I do?" I thought of going back to the church and then I remembered some organ music I had recorded on tape. I played it and sat back in my rocking chair and sensed Mark's presence as I said, "This organ music is for you, Mark."

It was well-known that Mark was a master of the weather. My latest evidence of Mark's assistance was during a severe storm. I was at the Safeway Store and it was just pouring rain in windy sheets. People had been waiting and waiting to get to their cars so I asked him for a "let up." It happened immediately so I could get to the car but when I arrived at La Tourelle with my pile of groceries, it was still pouring! Once more I made my request for a clear path and he obliged. He had a wonderful affinity with the elementals so that again I had passage to the house without getting wet!

One of the greatest gifts to beginners on the path is the cassette series of lectures by Mark on Cosmic Law. They are so homey, down-to-earth and they explain so clearly the Law. They are also a good introduction to Mark as a person. I often think how wonderful it will be when those of us who knew him so well have to make our own transition, that we will meet him in the heavenly realm with those who have ascended from our midst and the Ascended Masters for that great reunion. What a glorious day to look forward to when we can experience our ascension in the Light!

I have served with beloved Mark and Mother for twenty-five years - the most satisfying and enlightening of my life. I witness to the fact that they are the true Messengers of the age, endowed with the Holy Spirit, refusing all idolatry of themselves - insisting we read, study and use the teachings as our guide.

I personally know of Mark's fervor to create a well-trained spiritual staff for Mother's service as a Messenger of the Great White Brotherhood before he made his transition.

Since Mark's transition Mother has maintained a life of constancy to God's word in the Bible and obedience to the Ascended Masters' dictations for our spiritual understanding and self-discipline to



overcome our negative karma and strive for the ultimate goal, the ascension. Such vast knowledge she feeds her “flock” makes me ask for more time to keep up with the acceleration of the teachings she releases.

“Read, study and apply the teachings” was Mark’s constant advice.

Grateful, grateful, grateful, am I for their love and devotion to mankind and the Ascended Masters. I have been so blessed to know them both and their sincere efforts for our spiritual progress.

To return to December 24, 1990, Happy Birthday, Mark!

Your loving chela,



# Bibliography

- [1] Volume 33, Number 6, footnote 24. Between 1971 and 1981 oil prices drastically increased over 1,800 percent in a market largely controlled by the powerful Organization of Petroleum Exporting Countries (OPEC) cartel. “Over the past decade,” reported Newsweek on March 7, 1983, “OPEC engineered the largest transfer of wealth in history. It threw the economies of the industrialized countries into chaos, and brought some Third World nations to the brink of ruin. It contributed to the unmaking of two U.S. presidents, and left deep scars on an American psyche that took pride in self-reliance.” OPEC was formed in 1960 by five nations - accounting for almost two-thirds of the world’s proven oil reserves and 85% of its petroleum trade - whose stated goal was to stabilize prices through controlling oil production. Today OPEC consists of 13 nations (Saudi Arabia, Venezuela, Iraq, Iran, Kuwait, Qatar, Algeria, Indonesia, Libya, Ecuador, Nigeria, United Arab Emirates and Gabon).

The first major price increase came in 1971 when 23 oil companies signed an agreement with OPEC raising the price from \$1.80 to \$2.18 a barrel. Shortly after the start of the 1973 Arab-Israeli War, OPEC raised oil prices to \$5.12 and Arab producers imposed an embargo against the U.S. for supporting Israel. In January 1974, OPEC capitalized on the crisis and more than doubled prices to \$11.65 a barrel. A gas shortage ensued - although some observers, such as Christopher Rand, have claimed that there never was a shortage and that the oil industry, despite public displays to the contrary, actually welcomed the embargo and profited from it (see Rand, *Making Democracy Safe for Oil* [Boston: Little, Brown and Co., 1975]).

Following the 1979 Iranian revolution and resulting gas shortages, OPEC raised prices to an average of \$14.59 a barrel. By May 1981 the average price was up to nearly \$35. Steadily increasing oil prices had a number of negative economic consequences, including higher consumer prices and unemployment, and were a factor in the economic recession of the early '80s. Cartel prices are notoriously unstable, and by 1981 several factors - principally conservation, energy efficiency, use of alternative energy sources, and a global recession - combined to decrease demand, creating a surplus and gradually lowering prices. In 1983, Nigeria, burdened by heavy debt and other domestic problems, became the first nation to break ranks with OPEC and dropped its price \$5.50 to \$30 a barrel. OPEC then agreed to set prices at \$29 per barrel, its first official price cut. Between December 1985 and February 1986, oil prices plummeted 51 percent from \$27.06 to \$13.26 a barrel. Oil producers competed for shares of a declining oil market and by 1986 all efforts to control the falling oil price deteriorated into an all-out price war.

- [2] Volume 33, Number 7, footnote 7. President Franklin D. Roosevelt, Prime Minister Winston Churchill and Premier Joseph Stalin met in Yalta February 4-11, 1945. Their agreements were kept secret and not revealed until after the war ended on August 14, 1945. The three leaders agreed on the demand for the unconditional surrender of Germany and drew up plans for the division of Germany into four occupation zones under the control of a unified commission in Berlin. They also agreed to reorganize the Soviet-backed Polish Lublin government “on a more democratic basis” to include members of Poland’s Allied-supported government-in-exile

in London. Stalin agreed to “free and unfettered” elections as early as possible. Plans for the founding conference of United Nations were discussed.

The Soviet Union secretly agreed to enter the war against Japan three months after Germany surrendered. In exchange it was to receive territories in Japan and China. The United States and Great Britain acknowledged the autonomy of Outer Mongolia and agreed that full membership in the United Nations would be granted to the Ukraine and Belorussia under the argument that they were independent nations. According to the *New Columbia Encyclopedia*, “the subsequent outbreak of the cold war and Soviet successes in Eastern Europe led to much criticism in the United States of the Yalta Conference and of Roosevelt, who was accused of delivering Eastern Europe to Communist domination” (s.v. “Yalta Conference”).

After the war, free elections were not held in Poland and the Soviet puppet government, with the addition of a few token members of the Lublin government, remained in power. “Following this Polish example,” writes *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, “Soviet authorities elsewhere in eastern Europe where the Red Army was in control thereafter established Soviet-dominated regimes, eliminating political forces that resisted. Thus by 1948 Romania, Bulgaria, Hungary, [East Germany], and Poland were all safely reduced to satellite status: opposition political leaders had been executed, imprisoned, or exiled, and new ‘people’s democracies’ had become part of what was, de facto, a Soviet empire. In 1948 Czechoslovakia, a Western-style parliamentary democracy under Edvard Benes was subverted. With this final coup, an ‘iron curtain,’ as Churchill had said in 1946, was truly drawn across the face of Europe, stretching from Stettin (Szczecin) in the north to the Adriatic Sea in the south” (15 ed., s.v. “International Relations”). See also 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 175-79.

- [3] Volume 33, Number 7, footnote 10. The term “subconscious” is defined as the mental activities just below the threshold of consciousness which can be easily brought to consciousness; the aspect of the mind that is an entity or a part of the mental apparatus overlapping, equivalent to, or distinct from the unconscious. Some psychoanalysts use the term to describe a zone between the unconscious and the conscious. As summarized by Robert M. Goldenson, in psychoanalysis the term “unconscious” is used to denote “the portion of the mind or mental functioning which contains the memories, wishes and impulses that are not directly accessible to awareness, but which have dynamic effects on thought and action. Freud maintained that there are two types of mental contents stored in the unconscious: certain infantile, or ‘primordial,’ wishes and impulses that have never become conscious, but which appear or are represented in dreams, fantasies, magical thinking and gestures; and material, such as memories and drives, that has become conscious for a time but has been expelled from awareness.” Modifying Freud’s concepts, Carl Jung theorized the personal and the collective unconscious. Jung postulated that the personal unconscious “consists of experiences which were once conscious but which have been superseded or forgotten, as well as ideas and wishes which have never been strong enough to make a conscious impression. Some of these memories, thoughts, and feelings may split off from the main body of the psyche, due to traumatic experiences or internal conflicts, and form a constellation or ‘complex’ of their own. ... [The collective unconscious] is the residual of the racial history of man and his animal ancestors. ... It is an accumulation of predispositions and potentialities which in its totality forms the frame of reference with which we view the world. Jung calls these structural components ‘archetypes.’ ... They arise from historical experience and constitute the inherited foundations upon which the whole structure of the personality is built. In a word, each individual’s psyche reflects the wisdom and experience of the ages” (Robert M. Goldenson, *The Encyclopedia of Human Behavior: Psychology, Psychiatry, and Mental Health* [Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday and Co., 1970], 2:1344; 1:652, 653). The Ascended Masters teach that the subconscious is the repository of the “electronic belt,” which contains the cause, effect, record,

and memory of human karma in its negative aspect; the unconscious is the repository of the archetypes of the Absolute Evil of Death and Hell. The collective unconscious is jointly held by the human race; the individual, or personal, unconscious is the result of personal actions.

- [4] Volume 33, Number 16, footnote 27. Jesus Christ, April 19 and May 28, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 186, 272.

Calls of Jesus Christ to Those Who Would Be His Disciples and Represent Him as World Teachers

1- "Come, leave your nets! I will make you fishers of men." (November 22, 1984, 1984 PoW, Book II, pp. 528-34)

2- "Take up the sword of the Spirit and fight for my sheep ere they are lost to the clutches of the drug peddlers and the peddlers of deceit and annihilation." (April 19, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 195-96)

3- Call to the path of the ascension. (May 28, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 269-72)

4- "I call to you to be world teachers." (May 28, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, p. 272)

5- Call for ten thousand Keepers of the Flame. (May 28, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 269, 273)

6- "I call you to be my disciples." (October 4, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 491-98)

7- "I ask that you renew your commitment to giving my Watch, my 'Vigil of the Hours.'" Jesus said: "I promise you that all who commit to be my disciple as a Keeper of the Flame shall have my spheres of Light and my Sacred Heart superimposed upon him or her throughout this Watch each week." (October 4, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 494-95)

8- "Become that Christ! ... It is time for you to be true shepherds and ministers." (November 1, 1987, 1987 PoW, Book I, pp. 577-82)

9- Call to be true shepherds of the children of God. (February 28, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book I, pp. 290-98)

10- "I call you to the House of the Lord, [your Mighty I AM Presence]." (November 24, 1988, 1988 PoW, Book II, p. 654)

11- "I command you to allow that Christ to descend into your temple." (November 23, 1989, 1989 PoW, p. 774)

In Jesus' 1990 Easter address he is speaking to those who have heard his previous calls, have understood and have responded. They are therefore referred to as "the called of God." Because they have answered the Master's calls, now God has called them and they are with Jesus in the Temple of Initiation.

If you wish to be with our Lord in the Temple of Initiation, you need to study Jesus' calls, which are printed in the Pearls of Wisdom. And if you have not already done so, you need to personally respond to Jesus so that you can move on in the cycles of initiation. This is a private matter between you and the Master and not something about which you need write the Messenger.

- [5] Volume 33, Number 38, footnote 14. The Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost. This verse appears in the King James Version of the Bible but is omitted from most other versions. Absent in the ancient Greek manuscripts, it apparently originated in Latin manuscripts of the fourth century. Although commentators tend to reject it as a gloss with no merit, in the Messenger's view this verse harks back to the opening verses of John: "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God . . ."

Scholar John Woodroffe (pen name, Arthur Avalon) writes in his book *The Garland of Letters*: "These are the very words of Veda. In the beginning was Brahman, with whom was Vak, or the Word, and the word is Brahman." In the Vedas (the earliest scriptures of Hinduism), the Mother is associated with the cosmic Principle and Person of Vac, literally speech, word, voice, talk or language. Brahman is the Creator - the ultimate Reality, the Absolute. Woodroffe explains that Vac is spoken of as second to Brahman "because She is first potentially in [Him] and then as Shakti issues from Him." Shakti is a Sanskrit term meaning energy, power, or force. The Shakti is that point of the Feminine Principle who releases the potential of God from Spirit to Matter. As Shakti, the Divine Mother is therefore the dynamic, creative force of the universe - the manifest power of her masculine counterpart.

Based on this understanding of Vac, or the Word, as Mother, I John 5:7 may be read as: "For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Mother, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one." The Messenger believes that John had the mystical understanding of God as both Father and Mother, as Holy Spirit and as Son. Perhaps those who inserted this verse in the fourth century shared this understanding and were attempting to fulfill John's mystical intent. It is also possible that those who later deleted it did not understand the use of the term Word in this light and therefore did not believe that the verse served any purpose.